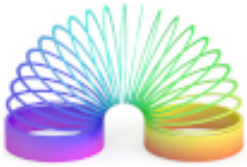
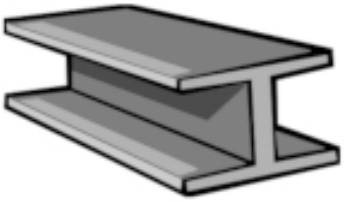




Flexibility vs Inflexibility

AND

Essentials vs Nonessentials

In the Christian Way of Life

Essentials vs Non-Essentials
Flexibility vs Inflexibility
In the
Christian Way of Life

Taken from detailed studies By R. B. Thieme Jr.
The Book of Romans, 1977 & 1979, Series 458 & 459

Compiling and Editing by:
Dr. Frank P. Ferraro

Copyright © 2021 ALL rights reserved
The content of this document is protected by all applicable copyright laws.
Unauthorized use and/or duplication of this material for the purpose of sale or profit to any degree without express permission from the author is strictly prohibited.
Copyright © 2021
Bible Doctrine is a product of the Grace of God therefore this ***UNMODIFIED*** Doctrinal compilation as a reflection of the Grace of God is available to all at NO CHARGE. Duplication and distribution **WITHOUT MODIFICATION** is permitted by all.

Table of Contents

Dedication....11
Preface....12
Introduction to Flexibility and Essentials of the Christian Way of Life....14
Flexibility, Inflexibility, Essentials, Non-Essentials & the Christian Life....15
Distinguishing Essential from Non-Essential....16
Differences in Essentials & Non-Essential Applications....17
The Royal Family Honor Code & Responsibility....18
Flexibility & Inflexibility vs Applications & Principles....20
Flexibility, Common Sense in Non-Essentials....20
Primary Essential of Life....21
Inflexibility from persistent Negative Volition....22
Essential Virgin Conception & Birth....23
Essential Salvation Potential Ingredients....24
Essential for the Humanity of Christ....25
Essentials of the Essence of God....26
Essentials for Knowing God....27
Essential Coexistence, Human Volition & Sovereignty of God....27
Essential of the Righteousness of God....28
Essential Righteousness & Justification....29
Essential Imputation of Righteousness & Blessing....29
Categories of Blessing for Mature Believers....31
Flexibility, Inflexibility & Self Righteousness vs God's Righteousness....32
Inflexibility & Self Righteousness....33
Essential GRACE....34
The PRINCIPLE....34
Necessity for Grace....34
Escrow....35
Categories of the Grace of God....35
Grace Apparatus for Perception....35
Propitiatory Grace....36
Salvation Grace....37
Common Grace....39
Efficacious Grace....39
Imputational Grace....40
The Integrity of God and Holiness Bypass....44
Rebound Grace....45
Logistical-Grace or Alpha-Grace....46
Super Grace A or Near Grace....48
Bravo Grace, Super Grace-B....49
Ultra Super Grace....50
Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God....51
Surpassing Grace....53
Principle of the Wreath, Crown or Cross....54
Alpha Cross or Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God....57
Beta Cross - Wreath or Crown of Perseverance....59

Gamma Cross - Wreath or Stephanos of Glory....59
Delta Cross – Wreath of Rejoicing....60
Epsilon Cross or Wreath of Happiness & Exaltation....61
Omega or Ultra Cross – Wreath of Life....61
Mantel of Suffering from Satanic Opposition....62
Divine Good Decorations for the Wreaths....64
Alpha Oak Leaf Cluster or Sapphire Gemstone....64
Beta Oak Leaf Cluster or Ruby Gemstone....64
Omega or Ultra Oak Leaf Cluster or Diamond Gemstone....64
Extra Blessings in addition to Stephanos Decorations....64
Charlie Grace....65
Essentials of Filling of God the Holy Spirit....65
Essential of Rebound & Filling of God the Holy Spirit....66
Filling of God the Holy Spirit for Reality Orientation....67
Filling of God the Holy Spirit & the Royal Family Honor Code....67
Filling of God the Holy Spirit & Royal Ambassadorship....67
Essentials of Honorable Production....68
Essential Perception & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine....68
Non-Essential Superficialities vs Bible Doctrine....69
Flexibility & Tradition vs Doctrine....70
Essentials of Inflexibility and Bible Doctrine....71
Flexibility & Distraction from Bible Doctrine....71
Essential of Faith in Gnosis to Epignosis....72
Essentials for Flexible Application of Bible Doctrine....72
Essentials vs Non-Essentials & Priorities in life....72
Essentials for Faith Rest....73
Essentials of Faith Rest in Worship....73
Flexibility in Learning Bible Doctrine....74
Essentials vs Non-Essentials & Royal Family Honor Code....74
Flexibility & Royal Family Honor Code....74
The Royal Family Honor Code, and the Home....77
Flexibility in the Church Age....77
Flexibility without Tyranny....77
Laws of Expediency, Liberty & Sacrifice as Flexibility....78
Flexibility & Application of Bible Doctrine....80
Essential Spiritual Freedom & Application of Bible Doctrine....81
Essentials for Problem Solving....83
Essentials & Non-Essentials, Bible Doctrine & Tragic Flaws....83
Categories of Tragic Flaws....84
The First Tragic Flaw....85
The Second Tragic Flaw....87
The Third Tragic Flaw....88
The Fourth Tragic Flaw....89
Flexibility, Positive Volition and a Sense of Humor....92
Flexibility vs Inflexibility & Preconceived Standards & Prejudices....92

Essential toleration of Non-Essentials in the Spiritual Life....93
Essential & Non-Essentials of Norms & Standards....93
Areas of Application of Norms and Standards....95
Norms and standards of Maturity vs Immaturity....96
Essential Bible Doctrine in Frame of Reference & Norms & Standards....98
Essential Freedom and Spiritual Growth....99
Essentials vs Non-Essential Norms & Standards of Weak vs Strong Believers....100
Flexibility & norms and standards....102
Flexibility, Impersonal Love and Christians....102
Essential & Non-Essentials in Observing a Day....103
Essential of Divine Viewpoint....104
Divine Viewpoint for Survival in Disaster....104
Essential Bible Doctrine for Disaster....105
Flexibility & Disaster Essentials....106
Flexibility, Inflexibility & Disaster....107
Essential Privilege & Election & Logistical Support....108
Essential Privilege to sustain Believers....109
Imputed Righteousness, Justification & Blessing....110
Essentials of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God....110
Essential Doctrine for Blessing....111
Essential Bible Doctrine & Spiritual Growth....111
Essential vs Non-Essential Application & Spiritual Growth....111
Essential Morality, Freedom, Establishment & Spiritual Advance....112
Essentials of the Will of God for Divine Guidance....114
Essential Parts of the Will of God....114
Illustration of Failure & the Will of God....115
Flexibility, Bible Doctrine & the Will of God....116
Essential Flexibility to Please God....116
Essentials & Glorification of God....117
Essentials of Flexibility & Inflexibility in the Spiritual Life....118
Essentials of the Local Church....119
Objectivity and Discipline in the Local Church....119
Essential Separation of Church & State....120
Essentials of Union in a Congregation....121
Inflexibility & the local church....121
Essentials of the Spiritual Gifts....121
Essential Dogmatic Monologue in Teaching Bible Doctrine....122
Essentials of the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ....122
Essential Orientation to Reality....123
Conflict and Strife Over Non-Essential Opinions....124
Essential of Thinking in Prayer....125
Essentials for Effective Prayer....125
Agenda for Private prayer....126
Grace Orientation in prayer....126
Principles of Prayer....127

Prayer the Weapon for Spiritual Combat....127
Flexibility in Witnessing....128
Essentials of Witnessing Especially to Jews....128
Inflexibility toward Bible Doctrine & Giving....128
Essentials of Living in the Plan of God....129
Essential of the Divine Decree....129
Essential Orientation to History & the Plan of God....130
Divisions of History....130
Living in the Plan of God....132
Essentials of Laws of Divine Establishment & Bible Doctrine....133
Flexibility & the Unwavering Plan of God....133
Non-Essential Religion....134
Essentials & Flexibility toward Specifics vs Non-Specifics....134
Flexibility, Inflexibility & Security....135
Flexibility & Security....136
Flexibility and Orientation to Reality....137
Inflexibility & Divorcement from Reality....138
Inflexibility & Psychosis....139
Inflexibility, Disaster and Friendships....139
Flexibility Giving Strength....140
Flexibility vs Inflexibility, Essentials vs Non-Essentials and Strength in Life....142
Flexibility, Inflexibility & Alertness....143
Inflexibility in Non-Essentials Destroys Alertness....144
Essential Moral Courage....145
Principles & Essentials of Courage....146
Essential of Moral & Physical Courage....147
Flexibility, Essentials & Moral Courage....149
Flexibility & Leadership....150
Flexibility, Inflexibility & Courage....150
Physical Courage....152
Inflexibility, Cowardice vs Concentration....153
Essential of Historical Crises....153
Essential Bible Doctrine for Crises in History....154
Flexibility vs Inflexibility & The Crisis Personality:....155
Essentials & The Crisis Personality....156
Essential of Concentration....157
Hero Personality....157
Our Crises....158
Mature Believers as the Crisis Personality....159
Essential of Being Alone....160
The Royal Family Honor Code, Spiritual Advance & Crisis Personality....161
Non-Essential of Personality & Personality Change....161
Flexibility & the Crisis Personality....162
Flexibility, Inflexibility & Dangers in Life....163
Flexibility, Inflexibility & Noise, Intimidation & FEAR....164

Flexibility, Inflexibility, Essentials & Non-Essentials and FREEDOM.....165
Essential Freedom for Believers.....167
Essential Privacy for the Believer.....168
Essential Privacy and the Royal Priesthood.....170
Essential Privacy & Flexibility.....170
Essential Freedom, Privacy, Authority & Royal Family Honor Code.....172
Essentials Necessary for Freedom.....174
Freedom Demands Responsibility.....176
Freedom Under the Law Related to Crime.....178
Inflexibility & Criminality.....178
Essential FEAR & Criminal Restraint.....178
Essentials & Non-Essentials in Crime, Sin & Human Good vs Freedom.....180
Freedom & the Laws of Divine Establishment.....180
Freedom, Authority & Spiritual code.....184
Privacy, Property & Freedom.....184
Inflexibility & Freedom.....185
Freedom & Authority-2 Great Issues in Life.....185
Spiritual Freedom & Spiritual Authority.....186
Essential Freedom & Property.....188
Socialism vs Freedom & Property.....189
Privacy, Property & Freedom.....190
Essentials of Privacy.....191
Maintaining Freedom through Flexibility.....192
Essential of Authority Orientation.....195
Flexibility, Inflexibility & Authority Orientation & Function.....195
Essential Authority Orientation.....196
Essential of Authority Orientation vs Influence of Evil.....197
Authority Orientation & the Royal Family of God.....197
Essential Privacy & Authority Orientation.....199
Inflexibility & Rejection of Authority.....200
Essential Separation & Authority Orientation.....201
Essential Separation from Mobs.....203
Essentials of Authority, Divine Institutions & Divine Establishment.....204
Essential Divine Institutions.....205
Divine Institution #1 Volition.....205
Divine Institution #2 Marriage.....207
Divine Institution #3 Family.....208
Divine Institution #4 Nationalism.....208
Authority under Divine Institution #4 Nationalism.....210
Essential Laws of Divine Establishment & Evangelism.....211
Essential Laws of Divine Establishment and Spiritual Life.....211
Essential Laws of Divine Establishment and Authority.....211
Essential Laws of Divine Establishment and the Military.....212
Essentials of Authority Orientation and Submission.....213
Essential Source of Authority & Responsibility for Wielding It.....213

Flexibility for Thoughtfulness....215
Essentials of Thinking & Capacity for Life....216
Inflexibility on Non-Essentials & Communication....216
Inflexibility, Pseudo Intellectualism & Stupidity....217
IQ, Arrogance & Pseudo Intellectuals....217
Non-Essential Education....219
Civil Authority & Education....219
Non-Essential Equality....220
Inflexibility & Non-Essential of Unionism....221
Essential of INEQUALITY vs Arrogance of Equality....221
Equality in Taxation....222
The Myth of Equality....222
Flexibility, Inflexibility & Freedom....225
Flexibility & Inflexibility in Strong vs Weak Believers....226
Flexibility & Inflexibility in Strong Believers....227
Flexibility and Inflexibility of Weak Believers....230
Inflexibility toward Non-Essentials in Weak Believers....230
Weak Negative Believers vs Weak Immature Believers....232
Weak Believers & Emotional Revolt of the Soul....233
Inflexibility & Emotional Revolt of the Soul....234
The Weak Immature Believer....235
Strong Believers Compared to Weak Believers....236
Weak believers, Guilt & Non-Essentials....239
Essentials, Eating, Exercise & Life....239
2 Major Differences Between Strong & Weak Believers....240
Flexibility in Holiday Observation....242
Essential Privacy for Weak and Strong Believer....242
Occupational Hazards of the Strong vs Weak Believer....243
Responsibility of the Strong Believer....246
Essentials for the Strong or Mature Believer....247
Essentials in the Royal Priesthood vs the Royal Ambassadorship....249
Essentials & Non-Essentials & Weak Believers....250
Weak Believers & Failure....251
Flexibility & Essentials in Success....252
Weak Believers & Success....252
Flexibility and Emotion....253
Inflexibility & Self Pity....253
Flexibility, Strength, Missionaries & Esprit De Corps....254
Essentials, Flexibility & Missionaries....256
Key Concepts of Missionary Function with Flexibility....257
Essentials for 21st century missionaries....258
Uniqueness of the Missionary....258
Flexibility & The Aristocracy of Missionaries....259
Non-Essentials of Personal Opinion....260
Flexibility vs Inflexibility With Regard to Alcohol & Drugs....261

Essentials vs Non-Essentials & Love....262
Essentials vs Non-Essentials of Impersonal Love....263
Essentials vs Non-Essentials of Personal Love....267
Essentials of Loving the Brethren & Impersonal Love....267
Essential privacy and Loving the Brethren....270
Impersonal Love & the Laws of Divine Establishment....271
Flexibility & Happiness....272
Flexibility, Inflexibility, Family & Societal Protocols....272
Separation from Family....273
Essentials vs Non-Essentials of Government....274
Essential of Christianity in the Client Nation....275
Essentials of the Pivot....276
Flexibility & the Pivot....279
Essential of Pivot Politics....280
Essentials & Non-Essentials of Civil Authority....281
Civil Authority & Legislation....282
Essential Solutions to National Problems....282
Essentials vs Non-Essentials of Ideal Government....283
Flexibility of Government & Essentials of Bible Doctrine....286
Essential Fallacies of Socialism....287
Non-Essential False Principles of Technological Determinism....288
Non-Essential Socialism vs Essential Laws of Divine Establishment....289
Essential of Nationalism, Government and Civil Authority....291
Essentials of Proper Taxation....293
Essential Thought & Client Nation Success....294
Essentials & Possibilities in Life....296
Essentials & Harmonious Living....296
Flexibility vs Inflexibility and Liberalism....297
Essentials vs Non-Essentials Regarding Evil....298
Precursor to Evil....298
Origins of Evil....298
Evil in Human History....299
Involvement with Evil....301
Essential of Avoiding Evil....302
Evil is Self Destructive....303
Evil Seeks to Build Happiness on Another's Unhappiness....304
Evil is Inevitably Related to Arrogance....304
Evil Does Not Understand Grace Functions....304
Evil is a Principle....305
Evil is Thought Which Motivates Action....305
Good for the Unbeliever....306
Essentials & The Jew....306
Essentials of Client Nation Survival vs Antisemitism....306
Essential of the Righteousness of God & Eternal Heritage....307
Essentials vs Non-Essentials & The Mosaic Law....308

Flexibility, Inflexibility & DEATH.....309
Essentials of Dying.....309
The Believer's Status Quo in Dying.....310
Essential vs Non-Essential Problem of Dying.....311
Essentials for Blessing in Death.....312
Essentials in Preparation for Death.....313
Essentials of Christian Death.....314
Passages:.....315
Glossary.....370
Medals, Decorations & Awards.....380
Roman Awards & Decorations.....381
Assets for the Spiritual Life.....383
Operation Z – The Grace Apparatus for Perception.....384

Dedication

The word of God is alive and powerful, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of the soul and the spirit, and of the joints and the marrow, and is a critic of thoughts and intents of the heart. (Heb 4:12) All Scripture is God-breathed, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness; that the man of God might be mature, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. (2Tim 3:16-17) Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. (2Tim. 2:1)

This compilation of doctrinal principles is dedicated to my pastor of some 40+ years, Col. R. B. Thieme Jr., who, in my humble opinion, was one of, if not the, foremost theologian of the 20th century and most likely many others as well. Without his consistent undaunted dogmatic teaching of Bible Doctrine this document would not have been possible and I would most likely NOT have a clue about the Christian Way of Life. In his physical presence, mental acuity, supreme dedication to the word of God and overriding dogmatic veracity in the presentation of the doctrines of the bible he has been a life changing inspiration to myself and literally hundreds of thousands of other believers throughout the world. I, and these others I am sure, look forward to the honor of standing in ranks before the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ as representatives of the "Berachah Battalion" who have grown up in the Spiritual Life under his phenomenal grace teaching.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Preface

Before a believer begins to study anything related to bible doctrine he must ensure that he is under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit for teaching which requires the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. This can only be accomplished if he will name his sins privately to God the Father in order to be forgiven those and all other sins and to be placed again into fellowship with God and under the teaching and guiding ministry of God the Holy Spirit. **1st John 1:9** states, "If we confess (name or cite) our (known) sins, He is faithful and justified to forgive us our (known) sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness (unknown sins)." This will put the believer into fellowship with God and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in a state of Genuine Humility and teachability and ready to learn Bible Doctrine. If you have never personally expressed faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone the issue is NOT naming your sins. The issue is nonmeritorious faith alone in Christ alone. "He who believes in the Son has Eternal Life; But he who does not obey the command to believe in the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him." (**John 3:36**)

If we are totally objective we must admit to having delusions about some things in life at some time. For myself there is ONE thing in this life which I have no delusions about, Bible Doctrine. Were it not for the teaching ministry of Col. R. B. Thieme Jr. and his consistent clear, concise and dogmatic presentation of the doctrines of the bible I would know nothing of orthodox fundamental biblical doctrine. I have no delusion about my knowledge, calling or spiritual gift; and, recognize that I could not do what he and many other pastors have done, and continue to do, in the constant studying and teaching of doctrine to their congregations. Over the years I have learned innumerable principles from these studies by Pastor Thieme. One of the most important things I have learned has been that "your rate of learning MUST exceed your rate of FORGETTING" in order to advance in the Spiritual Life or to maintain your level of spiritual growth. This amplifies the necessity therefore of constant, consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and ultimately the application of it to life. It is my desire that this document be a source of consolidated doctrine to fulfill that very purpose.

This is a compilation from my notes based on the principles directly derived from the lessons taught by Col. R. B. Thieme Jr., in the period from 1970 to the end of his ministry, specifically from the lessons involving the study of the Book of Romans and various other passages as well. These were taught after many years of Pastor Thieme serving in his ministry of Studying and Teaching Orthodox Fundamental Biblical Christian Doctrine according to an Isagogical, Exegetical and Categorical method. With this in mind be conscious of the fact that some of the terminology, doctrine and principles presented here will be, at best, difficult and possibly obscure for the new or infant believer. It took the Colonel many years of preparation and study to come to the point of being able to extract these doctrines and principles from the original languages of scripture so it should reasonably require some years of study by the believer under his type of ministry to be able to understand what is herein contained. To facilitate this understanding on the part of the reader I have linked segments of this document with others to enable the reader to review or recall concepts, principles and doctrines while reading other parts. I have also included a Glossary of terms which I believe will help in this endeavor.

As one would expect, I have entered some opinions and concepts of my own from what I have learned from my studies of his teaching of Bible Doctrine in later lessons, from later years and from

life experiences and other current materials regarding ongoing historical and social trends. My effort here has been to consolidate the principles of Essentials and Flexibility for the Christian Way of Life in this Church Age in order to provide a place where believers might go to acquire or review concise but detailed information related to these principles. However, nothing contained herein is ever to be construed to have been originated by my personal abilities to extract doctrines from the scripture. Neither is this to be a substitute for consistent daily study under one's right Pastor Teacher in order to develop the momentum needed to reach and hold on to spiritual maturity, the ultimate objective of the Spiritual Life. I have taken the liberty of trying to only add pertinent examples of historical and social trends which I see occurring some time after these lessons elucidated them. If more details and reference passages are desired on the Essentials of and Flexibility in the Spiritual Life or how these principles were derived the original lessons can be ordered from **R. B. Thieme Jr. Bible Ministries**, P.O. Box 460829, Houston Tx. 77056-8829, or by phoning 713-621-3740.

Once again, my objective in compiling these principles of Bible Doctrine is not whether it is considered good or bad, liked or disliked as a message but whether God the Holy Spirit can use the doctrinal content in the life of YOU the believer reading it. I have nothing to prove to anyone in life and it is only getting the message through to the YOU, the reader, that is important to me so that there is something for God the Holy Spirit to use. I have, in fact, attempted to organize these principles into discrete segments or categories. However, as always with regard to Bible Doctrine, these principles resist any attempt at separation into singular units being intricately intertwined into a system of interaction within the Spiritual Life. With this in mind understand that there will be duplication and repetition and one type of Essential or Non-Essential cannot always be separated and individually studied without relating it's impact on and from, very often, several others. However, as we clearly know in life and as the Colonel might have said on occasion: "REPETITION, REPETITION, REPETITION IS INVALUABLE SO GET USED TO IT AND ENJOY IT.

Dr. Frank P. Ferraro

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Introduction to Flexibility and Essentials of the Christian Way of Life

The goal of this book is to provide examples of what is Essential and what is Non-Essential in life. For the unbeliever and believer alike the primary Essentials of life are found in the pertinent doctrines of the bible. For the Unbeliever the prime Essentials include the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions, and of course the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. For the believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the prime Essentials are found in all the doctrines of the Bible which can only be exposed by accurate analysis of the original languages of the scripture using a categorical, exegetical and isogogic approach by a qualified Pastor Teacher. The understanding of and functioning properly under this principle of Essentials vs Non-Essentials produces great flexibility in dealing with life's encounters and dogmatic inflexibility regarding the ESSENTIALS. This information concerning Flexibility in the Spiritual Life and Essentials of the Christian Way of Life are drawn from the bible studies taught by Pastor R. B. Thieme Jr. This book is derived from notes I have accumulated from lessons I have studied for more than 25 years. As I have consolidated this accumulated information it has become painfully obvious that most believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ completely distort the concepts of what is Essential in the Spiritual Life and when to be FLEXIBLE with regard to applications of Bible Doctrine in life.

The principle believers must always function under it to never allow Non-Essentials in life to interfere with consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Most believers are asleep in life from overemphasis on Non-Essentials so that stupidity is the next step for their progression in the Spiritual Life. Negative Volition toward truth, especially Bible Doctrine, produces ignorance which produces **Arrogance** which inevitably leads to **divorcement from reality** which produces inflexibility as does the inability of the individual to concentrate on subjects which don't currently apply to or interest him at the time of them being taught. Some individuals can make it in a crisis with less doctrine than others because they can **CONCENTRATE** on whatever doctrine they possess in their soul. The secret in developing this ability is to be able to think under pressure or follow a good system of protocol.

It is an Essential in the Christian Way of Life to develop Humility as a virtue in order to be teachable and to accumulate Bible Doctrine into the soul. Humility is developed in 3 categories under 3 systems:

- **Organizational Humility** developed as a result of being in some organization or group beginning with the family unit.
- **Enforced Humility** developed as a result of being under the authority of some other individual person or group or in an organization of some sort.
- **Genuine Humility** developed as a result of proper function and orientation to both organizational and enforced humility and is almost completely dependent on self discipline.

Enforced and Genuine Humility are seen as virtue when a person responds to authority and tries to do a good job even and especially when the authority over him is unfair. For the Christian this is the visible influence of invisible Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the soul. This occurs for the believer with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and for the unbeliever who functions under the doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Vulnerability to distraction, failure, and ultimately focus on Non-Essentials in life can only be combated through Humility. Humility comes from the proper function of the Rebound Procedure and Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the

Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

The Key to Prosperity in a family or group or organization or nation is functioning under the Laws of Divine Establishment and having authority orientation. Rejecting Bible Doctrine or any of the categories of absolute truth, which are the primary Essentials of life, especially the Spiritual Life, ultimately produces Black out of the Soul (loss of Absolute Truth content in the soul) and Scar Tissue of the Soul (hardening of the soul preventing accumulation of Absolute Truth) from moving through the 8 stages of Reversionism. The removal of ignorance in the Spiritual Life can only occur by means of the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of the Essential of life, Bible Doctrine. This often becomes an affront to the believer who has been conned into giving up many Non-Essentials things in life as part of his pseudo spiritual lifestyle and this results in his rejection of the Essential of Bible Doctrine out of hand.

All believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ serve God on this earth as Ambassadors for Christ, representing God to man. Believers cannot simultaneously serve God and engage in any Non-Essentials of life which are not a result of focus on God and Spiritual Advance from Bible Doctrine. If they do this it results in Bible Doctrine taking a back seat priority, while Non-Essentials become the primary priority in this lifestyle. Eventually this results in Bible Doctrine being forgotten with the Non-Essentials being used for entertainment and fulfillment of all the Lusts of the Old Sin Nature. As a result there is a loss of perceptive reality as well as loss of the reality of the source of all blessings. Therefore, these believers only have remaining to them the reality of Reversionism and Degeneracy from the conversion of the outside pressures of prosperity or adversity into stress in the soul. As a result of the lack of the Doctrinal Problem Solving Devices and essentially having NO Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is therefore great Self Induced Misery combined with warning, intensive and ultimately dying Divine Discipline. The only recourse for this believer is to function under the **Rebound Procedure** for recovery and engage in consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in the Grace Apparatus for Perception, Operation Z.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility, Inflexibility, Essentials, Non-Essentials & the Christian Life

With the focus on the Christian Way of Life in order to even approach reality the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must properly orient Flexibility and Inflexibility of personal thought, motivation and function. This orientation must be related to Essentials vs Non-Essentials in the Christian Way of Life to establish a true reality for the believer. Therefore it is important to recognize that the purpose of the Christian in this life, in his time on earth, is to “Grow in Grace and Knowledge” and therefore it to basically LEARN about Christ, God, the Plan of God and his place in that plan. The only source of information regarding God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, and the Plan of God is what God has revealed to us in the Bible Doctrine of the Canon of Scripture. We live in an administrative time period of history, a dispensation, where the only source of knowledge of God is from the written canon of scripture. God no longer appears or speaks to individuals or groups but relegates a level of authority to the properly trained and motivated Pastor Teacher who teaches Bible Doctrine in an expository way from the original canon of the bible. The Pastor Teacher receives his authority

based on the content of the Bible Doctrine he teaches and that Bible Doctrine as the directly inspired Word of God is God's authority on this earth. THEREFORE, Bible Doctrine is THE source of Absolute Truth, from the absolute truthfulness and Integrity of God, which is provided for mankind to know God and his plan. It is therefore logical to assume that the most important thing for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ is Orthodox, Fundamental, Biblical Doctrine from the Original Languages of the Canon of Scripture taught by a pastor teacher in a single local church in an expository way emphasizing Isogogics, Categorical analysis and relationship, and Exegesis of the languages of the passages of scripture. Therefore, it is simple to conclude that properly researched, analyzed and presented Bible Doctrine, which is to be learned in a strict academic setting, under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, by means of the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** of **Operation Z** is the **Essential** of the Christian Way of Life. As the believer learns and metabolizes Bible Doctrine under Operation Z and gains an understanding of God's RESPONSIBILITY for him as a member of the Royal Family of God living in a world ruled by Satan he then sees that EVERYTHING else in life is a Non-Essential when put into the perspective of Bible Doctrine. It then becomes clearly obvious that we must be completely and totally INFLEXIBLE about the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and totally FLEXIBLE about the Non-Essentials of life.

Distinguishing Essential from Non-Essential

Essential concepts in Christianity and life in general are always based on Bible Doctrine which includes the **Laws of Divine Establishment** and the **Divine Institutions** which are in fact doctrinal principles. Non-Essentials are everything else in life including opinions based on an individual's background, training, education, functions in life and under environmental factors in life and these do not necessarily contradict nor do they support doctrinal principles. Believers must remain under the high standards of the **Royal Family Honor Code** and avoid falling into the lower standards of anyone who is opposing or attacking them. This demands that they know the difference between the Essentials and the Non-Essential opinions of others. The only Essentials in life are the foundational doctrines of scripture and these must never be compromised and erroneous opinions regarding these Essentials must not ever be tolerated by advancing believers but require separation by the believer from those who promote them. Groups, such as those who think they speak in tongues or who proclaim divine healing in their services, MUST be separated from. On the other hand, Non-Essentials such as dietary considerations or prohibitions, sabbath observance, clothing styles, etc., must be tolerated since they are of no consequence in the Spiritual Life and generally found in immature or negative believers or unbelievers. Thus, in the Christian Way of Life, '**Impersonal Love**' is the toleration of all Non-Essential opinions while separation is the only acceptable choice when and where there is rejection of Essential Bible Doctrine. Bible Doctrines are the only Essential in the Christian life and the mature believer having a maximum of **Metabolized Bible Doctrine** in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul must be totally inflexible with regard to Bible Doctrine. After Bible Doctrine is metabolized and becomes part of the conscious and norms and standards of the soul, the application of that doctrine is subject to the Status Quo of spiritual growth of the individual believer so that application is therefore very flexible. The immature believer lives in a vice versa category with regard to what he is flexible and inflexible about as he grows up in his Spiritual Life by means of Grace . The immature believer is flexible about the intake and metabolization of Bible Doctrine even at times rejecting it or more often neglecting it. He is at times inflexible about the Non-Essentials of life and his applications are often very strict according to Non-Essential standards he has set up based on his background in life. On

the other hand Maturing or Mature believers are inflexible with regard to the Essentials of Bible Doctrines. However these believers must also be very flexible in the application of these Bible Doctrines to the Non-Essential things in life. The immature believers very often function opposite to the mature believer in the Spiritual Life due to lack of sufficient Bible Doctrine for setting correct Norms and Standards, as a result of their norms and standards being based on prior life experiences. When in contact with these immature believers advancing or mature believers must also respect the privacy of their priesthood and function toward them with Impersonal Love and tolerance.

All functions in professions, personal responsibilities, various activities, attitudes toward life and capacity for life are all Non-Essentials of life. The believer can become a strong believer if he follows the principle of recognizing the Essentials of Bible Doctrine from the Non-Essentials in life. Believers who are functioning under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and are consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception MUST be inflexible regarding the Essentials and totally flexible regarding the Non-Essentials. Their position must be that Priority #1 in life is to learn Bible Doctrine and resolve all personal controversies by means of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The believer under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine should never try to change the mind of the legalistic reversionist believer or unbeliever and actually never even engage in debates with them. Advancing Believers must recognize that because of the varying stages of spiritual growth among believers there can be great areas of flexibility in the application of principles. Mature believers cannot and should not tell these people that they are wrong even when they obviously are. Their applications come from former background growth and they must have opportunity to grow under their own Positive Volition through persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine in order to develop correct applications. However, if these other believers are clearly negative with regard to Essentials of Bible Doctrine then advancing believers must simply separate from them since these others will be a great distraction for them from their Spiritual Life functions. People in general don't agree on many things but must tolerate each other for many reasons and relax about things that are obviously wrong but that are not Essentials in life. No one can ever truly correct another person's thinking or attitudes or their false ideas so instead of trying to correct them positive believers must simply separate from them. Every person, every believer is entitled to his own opinions about everything and should hold on to them UNTIL BIBLE DOCTRINE wipes them out. In this life, as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the only thing which makes one wrong or right is how things align with Bible Doctrine. If believers hang on to personal opinions and allow others to do so as well for as long as they want and until Bible Doctrine corrects these opinions then that allows Bible Doctrine to always be the issue. Only Bible Doctrine can remove the prejudices and false standards of the weak and immature believers.

Differences in Essentials & Non-Essential Applications

The **Royal Family Honor Code** demands ridged adherence to the Essentials of Bible Doctrine. Variation in application or differences in perceived Non-Essentials does not permit, nor consent to variation in the Essential doctrines. There is no place for Flexibility regarding Bible Doctrine. This is how reversionism has gained a great hold in fundamentalist Christianity. Norms and Standards in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer MUST emphasize his integrity, honor and

attitude and he must use these standards to tolerate or separate from those with lower Norms and Standards under his function of Impersonal Love. In addition, variations of spiritual growth with their differences in levels of ignorance do not change the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine. All Bible Doctrine is Dogmatic Absolute Truth regardless of a believer's stage of spiritual growth. Therefore about Bible Doctrine the Christian must be dogmatic and inflexible while about application of Bible Doctrine he must demonstrate elasticity rather than tenacity and ductility rather than brittleness and must be lubricated by the Royal Family Honor Code rather than abrasive from his personal **Arrogance**. However, it is Essential to remember that tolerance for varied stages of spiritual growth does not imply toleration of error in the Essentials of Bible Doctrine. The Royal Family Honor Code binds the mature and immature believers in their mutual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul and it does so in such a way as to overshadow their differences of application at different stages of spiritual growth. All believers are therefore bound together as Royal Family of God in a local body of Christ in the local church and at different stages of growth with tolerance, Impersonal Love, recognition of privacy and the advent of objectivity in life and all are factors under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

2 Christians can have made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and yet differ in their attitude toward the Non-Essentials such as food taboos or holy days. 2 Christians can also have accepted the doctrine of eternal security as an absolute but still differ in their attitude toward these and other Non-Essentials. 2 Christians can accept the doctrine of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit which unites them in the Royal Family of God and still differ in their attitude toward Non-Essentials. 2 Christians can subscribe to the eschatology of the pre-tribulational rapture yet differ in their attitude toward Non-Essentials. In Christianity there is a potential road block from self centered opinionated jackasses but advancing believers who are intent on reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God must emphasize Doctrine with Inflexibility and de-emphasize all other aspects of life with Flexibility. Bible Doctrine is the only thing which can clear up the discrepancies and the distortions of the Christian Way of Life found in fundamentalism. Mature believers must hold the line and support the growing immature believers with the strength of the Bible Doctrine in their own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

The Royal Family Honor Code & Responsibility

The solution for the roadblock in the immature believer and his emphasis on Non-Essentials is only from the building up of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. As a first priority in life believers must emphasize and differentiate their advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under the Plan of God as a royal priest and their subsequent production under the Plan of God as a Royal Ambassador for Christ. To adhere to and function under this principle, there must be maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine saturating the mature believers in order for him to support immature Positive Volition believers until they can reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God themselves. The believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is one who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and KNOWS his status in the Spiritual Life recognizing the great volume of Bible Doctrine in his Soul and his own relaxation with regard to other less mature believers whom he would never have been tolerant of in the past. This is the believer who is Flexible with regard to Non-Essentials of life and

Inflexible with regard to Essential Bible Doctrine. This Self Consciousness is NOT arrogance and it makes him aware of the fact that he is mature and that this is a true correct evaluation of his life in light of Bible Doctrine which he understands. He knows he has Norms and Standards from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and has a completed Edification Complex of the Soul. He knows that he meets and overcomes the issues of maturity recognizing this from his experience and by his development of Flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials which he would have in the past been completely inflexible about. He is enjoying Super-Grace and / or Ultra Super-Grace blessing and has undeservedly received much by imputation from God including great testing for the application of the Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. He always sees blessing in his life and that it always involves Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ knowing that his capacity for life is full and recognizes that he is now a different person. The mature believer must be able to identify self as STRONG to obey this command and this is possible only for a very few believers. All Positive Volition believers, at every level of spiritual growth, must be motivated from Metabolized Bible Doctrine to continue the intake of Bible Doctrine so as to help break this roadblock of Non-Essential emphasis in the Christian Way of Life. It can and will be broken by the continued spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond and by the mature believer assuming responsibility for the weak believer.

When believers develop Flexibility in life and strength through it they are moving in life into the arena of reality. They are at last able to cope with and face reality. It is the people who are or begin to become inflexible in life who become Psychotic, Neurotic and Sociopathic. Inflexible people break down under pressure and God often permits great Undeserved Suffering in the life of a strong mature believer to demonstrate the strength of those believers under adverse conditions as a result of their Flexibility. Therefore, Undeserved Suffering is one way with Bible Doctrine to distinguish Essentials from Non-Essentials. This is one of the major things fundamentalists lack in the Christian Way of Life and their Inflexibility over Non-Essentials results in terrible standards so that in the fundamentalist circles there is fighting and hatred over lack of agreement on or adherence to Non-Essentials.

Only in Flexibility in life is there strength and the GREATEST men of history are invariably gentlemen who possessed great flexibility and thoughtfulness of others. The greatest capacity for life comes from this strength of Flexibility. Christianity is infamous today for its Inflexibility and Romanism came to this point of Inflexibility around the 3rd century and has never recovered from it and has never been able to get the "RELIGION" out of Romanism. Religion is Inflexibility about Non-Essentials as in fact is psychosis and neurosis. It is interesting to consider that ALL true problems in life are the result of Inflexibility about Non-Essentials. **Liberalism** (which is in fact **radicalism** today), political, theological and social, is a total Flexibility about the Essentials of life. What we call Liberalism totally rejects the absolute dogmatic nature of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions as Essentials and accepts the degeneracy and apostasy of homosexuality and free love, the greater good for the greater number, and totalitarianism as normal. Abraham Lincoln was this way about our system of government and he said once that he believed that he could bend the constitution a little and was totally flexible about the Essential of the Constitution of the United States.

Flexibility & Inflexibility vs Applications & Principles

From principles can be derived probability but truth is obtained only from facts. People generally cannot understand principles and when presented with an illustration of the principle they ignore the principle and dogmatically jump onto the illustration which is only one of many applications of the principle. The illustration is accepted as the principle or doctrine and they become inflexible about the illustration and totally flexible or ignorant about the principle or doctrine. This is a reverse of what it takes to become great in any field especially in Christianity which requires understanding and adherence to the principles of Bible Doctrine but flexibility with regard to the application of these. Believers MUST learn to distinguish between the application of a principle and the principle itself because every principle will have numerous variable applications. When the application is considered to be the principle or doctrine and the believer becomes inflexible about that ONE SINGLE application he loses the purpose of the principle and its multifarious applications. This is a major problem with believers who are inconsistent in their Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Inconsistency of doctrinal intake results in incomplete understanding of the principles or doctrines which should have flexible applications which are in fact unknown to these believers. When a crisis, disaster or catastrophe comes, if believers have not learned the doctrine and how to distinguish it from its applications, they will be relying on the single illustrated application rather than the all encompassing doctrine and end up being totally confused. Therefore, people who are inconsistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine are useless in any crisis or pressure situation. To have success in any area of leadership requires understanding the Doctrines or principles of function in that area of life and realizing that any given doctrine or principle has many applications and that there must be Inflexibility about the doctrines or principles but total Flexibility about the applications. When teaching in any area one cannot ever be inflexible but must know the inflexible principles and when communicating them must be flexible in the presentation of illustrations.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility, Common Sense in Non-Essentials

If the believer is going to be oriented to reality he must become flexible with regard to Non-Essentials in life. This can also be categorized as good common sense. As one grows up as a believer he must understand that different believers have different Norms and Standards based on their life's background and they are wrong in many of these standards and think God will bless them if they adhere to these standards and also if they can superimpose these standards on others they are doing God's work. As a result of this the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God must be extremely flexible with regard to false standards and Non-Essentials and allow Bible Doctrine to establish proper Norms and Standards in others and not try to bully them into the change. A strong person with strong principles and great Inflexibility regarding Essentials totally avoids and ignores pettiness and concentrates on the correct doctrines for application to every situation. Mature believers must maintain self discipline at all costs and focus totally on Essentials and allow self to be totally flexible with regard to Non-Essentials. While the lifestyle of a mature believer is a non-issue with any other mature believer who has the sense to be under Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and not occupied with other mature believers, that

liberated lifestyle can easily become a distraction to the immature believer or unbeliever. Giving Priority #1 to Bible Doctrine in life requires flexibility in its application to Non-Essentials. This flexibility of application demands certain legitimate functions in the life of the mature believer which distract the immature believer or unbeliever to be set aside when in their presence under the Royal Family Honor Code. Therefore not only is the mature believer responsible for toleration of Non-Essentials in every situation but must also be extremely flexible in the application of Bible Doctrine to these Non-Essentials. The maximum amount of Bible Doctrine in the soul of the mature believer gives him great liberty in life which the immature believer and the unbeliever very often do not understand. This gives the mature believer a great responsibility to not distract them so that their Perception of the Gospel or Bible Doctrine is not hindered. The greater the freedom and liberty the greater is the responsibility in that freedom to mix and blend it with authority, self discipline and recognition that with self discipline he can be helpful to others. As an example, when eating in a restaurant or in mixed company anywhere, asking God to bless the meal, ie saying Grace before the meal, is being inflexible with regard to Essentials recognizing the Grace provision of God for our life support. This is required of all believers under the Royal Family Honor Code. However, participating in the drinking of alcoholic beverages which may offend or confuse an immature believer is a Non-Essential and may need to be avoided in their presence.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Primary Essential of Life

Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is the Primary Essential of life on this earth. Human beings have been placed on this earth to demonstrate that the Justice of God, the Righteousness of God and the Love of God always work in unison at all times. This was the negative contention of Lucifer at his trial for revolting against God. In order to become a witness for the prosecution believers must accept the Plan of God over the plan of Lucifer to rule this world. Our entrance into this plan is by means of Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone with regard to his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all human sin. This makes SIN a non-issue in life and reestablishes the Plan of God vs the Plan of Satan as the true issue.

Because we are condemned at physical birth as a result of the genetic formation of the Old Sin Nature and the imputation of Adam's Original Sin to it, when a person dies before reaching accountability, the point of being able to use their God given volition to choose between the Plan of God and the plan of Satan, they cannot participate in the test of the appeal part of the Angelic Conflict trial, therefore they are automatically saved at their death. God placed them in this life by imputing Soul Life at Birth to each of them in order to have witnesses in this Angelic Conflict appeal, but if they cannot participate due to ineffective volition, God is responsible for them as a result of having given them life in the first place. He therefore takes them to be with him in eternity.

Condemnation of the human being at the point of physical birth results in the POTENTIAL for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in life. The thing which is truly Essential for this potential to ever be realized is the presentation of the Doctrines of the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. If, when a person comes to the realization that God must exist, and expresses Positive Volition

toward knowing about God, then HE, GOD, is OBLIGATED to provide Gospel Information for him. If, when a person hears the gospel and again expresses Positive Volition toward it, he then makes this potential for salvation a reality and is irrevocably eternally saved to be with God and said to be "born again". He receives from God, 39 irrevocable assets for the Spiritual Life in time and 1 revocable asset, the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, which is recoverable again with a Positive Volition exercise in using the rebound procedure. However, if when one hears the gospel he chooses to exercise Negative Volition and rejects the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross, he then makes this potential a continued potential through his life but with persistent Negative Volition toward the work of Christ he ultimately will take his condemnation to the last judgment and the Lake of Fire for eternity.

Inflexibility from persistent Negative Volition

When a person says no over and over again, at God Consciousness, or at Gospel hearing or at any manifestation or representation of divine power, they open up the (gr) 'mataiotes' or vacuum in the soul. The more they persist in this negative attitude toward the truth the stronger the vacuum becomes so that it increasingly sucks all the crap, lies and evil of this world into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This explains how believers can be emotional holy rollers, communists, radical liberals, stupid and saturated with Evil. Once absolute truth is rejected the easier and more available error of the LIE of Evil can be accepted. The more this rejection of truth occurs the greater becomes the acceptance of the LIE and the more it saturates the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The more error and Evil saturates the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the easier it is to continue to say know to any absolute truth of the plan, will or purpose which God may have for one's life on this earth. Therefore, being useless as a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict appeal trial, God may keep this believer or unbeliever in this category alive so that as they continue to say no to the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine they can build up a greater rejection or calcification against all categories of truth as a result of the use of their own volition. The more these believers reject absolute truth the more they accept error and they think, talk and act like communists, socialists or emotional holy rollers and are totally completely mixed up, confused and divorced from reality. It becomes clearly apparent that they have not ever understood the greatest issue of life which is that what you are is what you think and what you think is dependent on acceptance of or resistance to the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine.

Whenever a believer resists any category of the Truth of Bible Doctrine he develops a callous in the soul and as the callous expands in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, he becomes completely blind to that category of truth. Any part of this category of truth, application of it or historical reality dealing with it they are blinded to. This is an all encompassing problem in the Christian segment of our society and for the unbeliever as well with regard to the doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions. It often starts with rejection of the rebound procedure by the believer or some aspect of the Laws of Divine Establishment like the duty of the Christian male to engage in military service or any other category of grace or truth and leads to Emotional Revolt of the Soul and even psychosis. Then eventually other Bible Doctrines are rejected and the believer moves to another local church setting where the teaching of false doctrines will strengthen the blindness more and more. Accepting false doctrines or rejecting divine truth will both build up the callous or Scar Tissue in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this inevitably results in blindness to many categories of the truth from Bible Doctrine. The Jews for

instance were always clear on the truths of Laws of Divine Establishment regarding income tax, functions of authority, universal military training, functions of law and evidence but those parts of the Old Testament Scripture dealing with The Lord Jesus, The Christ they rejected and developed a thick Scar Tissue there. The Jews rejected The Lord Jesus, The Christ in the 1st advent and thus reject the whole concept of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Christ alone.

Amenhotep II heard every form of Bible Doctrine from Moses, Aaron and other Jewish believers and Moses left behind a fantastic testimony for this man who was his nephew by Egyptian law. Amenhotep II continued to say no and the more he said no the more he was blinded to truth and the more you are blinded the greater becomes your **arrogance** and the more your arrogance builds up the more you are divorced from reality. Amenhotep II never came back to reality until his eldest son died in the 10th plague. In his phenomenal arrogance he thought he was ruler of the world since Egypt was the greatest empire at that time and he thought of himself as God. Therefore it was no problem for him to say no repeatedly so that his Scar Tissue of the Soul and blindness was so great and he developed an arrogance so great that God allowed him to continue to say no way beyond what anyone had or ever would. God ALLOWED this Pharaoh to continue to express greater and greater Negative Volition giving him more opportunity to say NO or even yes though he said only no, being totally divorced from reality. Very few people have ever sassed God and lived like Amenhotep II and God allowed this to occur for the specific purpose of evangelizing the ENTIRE WORLD at that time so that all who heard of the plight of the Egyptians as a result of Amenhotep II's persistent Negative Volition and the power of the God of the Jews came to a clear God Consciousness. God gave man free will volition at his creation, the 1st Divine Institution, in the garden for the specific purpose of him being allowed to CHOOSE his direction and possibly act as a witness for God in the Angelic Conflict appeal trial. The very interesting result of the Negative Volition of Pharaoh is that while he said no over and over, many others throughout Egypt and the entire world said YES.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential Virgin Conception & Birth

The conception and pregnancy of Mary the mother of Jesus as a virgin is a primary essential in Christianity. In order for The Lord Jesus, The Christ to be able to redeem mankind from the slave market of sin he had to have been born from a virgin woman who did not have a fertilized ovum as a result of the introduction of male gametes from a human male. The virgin birth was required to bring Christ into the Human Race because the Human Race is enslaved in sin as a result of being condemned at birth from the genetic transmission of the Old Sin Nature during the fertilization of the female ovum by the male sperm gamete. In addition there is at physical birth the imputation of Adam's Original Sin to this genetically formed Old Sin Nature and man would also be condemned by reaching the point of volitional use for personal sin. (**Eph 2:1**) Therefore, every human being is born into the 'slave market' of sin, under spiritual death, and can only be freed by a FREE MAN, who lacks the Old Sin Nature and does not receive the imputation of Adam's Original Sin and does not commit personal sin and is part of the Human Race, purchasing us from the slave market. Since the Old Sin Nature is transmitted by the male gamete to the embryo during the act of copulation when fertilization occurs the virgin birth ensured that Christ was not born with an Old Sin Nature nor

under spiritual death. (**1Tim 2:5-6**) Therefore as a result of being born from a virgin without the combination of male gamete with the female ovum Christ was born without an Old Sin Nature without Adam's Original Sin being imputed and then lived his entire life on earth without personal sin. The Lord Jesus, The Christ, therefore, was the only human being ever to exist in Human History who was qualified to purchase freedom for all mankind from the slave market of sin with his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross.

Essential Salvation Potential Ingredients

- No virgin birth, No salvation potential

The Essence of God must be clearly understood to understand the essential necessity for a Virgin Birth of a savior. The Essence of God is composed of:

- Love
- Sovereignty
- Justice
- Righteousness
- Eternal Life
- Omnipotence
- Omnipresence
- Omniscience
- Immutability
- Veracity

The Lord Jesus, The Christ is God, the 2nd person of the trinity, and therefore is Sovereign and the one who redeems man must die spiritually on the cross and Christ as God is sovereign OVER death and cannot be subject to any death. He is immutable and therefore cannot change and therefore as deity cannot die. He is Eternal Life and Eternal Life is never subject to death under any imaginable scenario. Therefore, *Sovereignty + Immutability + Eternal Life + Omnipotence* means that God cannot die and therefore cannot go to the cross to die a Substitutionary Spiritual Death to free mankind from the slave market of sin. In addition the one purchasing mankind from slavery to sin had to be a mediator between God and Man and therefore had to be equal to both. Therefore God the Son needed to become the unique person of the universe while God the Father and God the Holy Spirit remain undiminished deity. As a result of the virgin birth The Lord Jesus, The Christ is not only undiminished deity he is true humanity combined in a Hypostatic Union but he must also be PERFECT humanity as well, sinless. Since God cannot die a Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross to free mankind from enslavement to sin it takes the Human side of Christ, the GOD / MAN, to die the Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross. Humanity can die on the cross but for the one who dies on the cross to have his Substitutionary Spiritual Death be efficacious and significant HE MUST HAVE FREEDOM FROM THE OLD SIN NATURE, FREEDOM FROM ADAMS ORIGINAL SIN AND LIVE A LIFE FREE FROM PERSONAL SIN. He must be tempt-able but impeccable and this was and is The Lord Jesus, The Christ in his humanity. The virgin birth cannot ever be disassociated from the doctrine of soteriology because the Salvation potential for mankind and the virgin birth of Christ MUST go together.

it ONLY means virgin, ONLY, not ever a young woman. Therefore in comparing scripture with scripture here in **Is 7:13-**15 it can ONLY mean a virgin and never simply a young woman. One of the most effective means of understanding the Bible Doctrine of the Word of God is by comparing Old Testament Scripture with New Testament Scripture. When an Old Testament Scripture verse is quoted in the New Testament Scripture, no matter the source of the Old Testament Scripture text, God the Holy Spirit directed that quotation by the New Testament Scripture writer so that the thinking of God would be quoted properly. The thinking of God in Isaiah chapter 7 is to present a sign to the Jews that cannot be ignored nor refuted. Therefore, since all young women can conceive, it is obvious that when a virgin conceives it is a miraculous event and cannot be ignored, although it IS by many, especially the Jews. The calling of the child "Emmanuel" is extremely significant. Emmanuel == "God with Us". El is God and in this child here, in Hypostatic Union, is the deity of Christ; with us is the humanity of Christ. Therefore in the word "Emmanuel" there is the doctrine of the Hypostatic Union and the absolute uniqueness of the person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ the God / Man.

The potential for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for mankind cannot exist without the absolute UNIQUE person of Christ who is different from God the Father and God the Holy Spirit in that he is Man and different from all the Human Race in that he is also God and PERFECT man. Christ is UNIQUE, different from humanity and from deity, made lower than angels but became greater than the angels by means of resurrection and ascension. Christ is therefore different from God, different from angels and different from man therefore He is the absolute UNIQUE person of the universe. The uniqueness of The Lord Jesus, The Christ is what permitted his efficacious Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross, which occurred prior to his physical death, and was the result of his receiving the imputation and judgment of all human sins. This is the doctrine of unlimited atonement.

Essential for the Humanity of Christ

The Lord Jesus, The Christ had to be a perfect human to be a substitute for the judgment of all sin in man. (**Heb 2:14-15**, **Phil 2:6+8**) He had to be true humanity to be our mediator (**Job 9:32-33**) because a mediator must be equal with both parties in mediation. Therefore the one who is to mediate between God and Man must be equal with both. The cross is the basis for mediation but the one on the cross is the mediator. Therefore, the mediator must be true God and true man and as the God / man he can therefore bridge the gap between man and God. In addition he had to be true humanity in order to become our high priest forever after the order of Melchizedek. A priest is a Man who represents MANKIND before God. (**Heb 7:4-5**, **7:11-17**, **7:24-25**, **10:5**, **10:8-14**) The Lord Jesus, The Christ could not be our high priest until he became true humanity and He is, in fact, the King Priest. In His humanity He is descended as a son of David through Nathan and therefore, the genetic KING of Israel and he is a priest after the order of Melchizedek. The Lord Jesus, The Christ had to be true humanity to fulfill the Davidic covenant (**2Sam 7:8-16**, **Ps 89:20-37**, **2Chron 21:7**) because David was promised a son who would reign forever. This promise to David did not consider whether David was or would be good, bad or indifferent as a man but it was an UNCONDITIONAL promise from God to David and this promise did not take into consideration how the children of Israel would turn out in history either. Recognizing the Essence of God and his Perfection, Immutability and Veracity it is interesting to consider that this as a recorded promise to David along with other promises to Abraham are unconditional promises to these men who are now

PHYSICALLY DEAD as human beings. In order for God to fulfill these promises these men must somehow still be alive and therefore this is a fantastic demonstration that there IS life after death and that in order for these believers to receive the promises of God they and all believers must be able to live face to face with God after this earthly life is terminated. In addition The Lord Jesus, The Christ as the King of Israel and descended son of David is also DEAD as a human being but in order to rule forever according to this promise to David He must also still be alive in some way therefore again a demonstration of the existence of life after physical death for all believers and the security involved with Christ being our high priest intervening for us with God the Father.

There is also a reference in **Is 7:13-**15 to the guaranteed sustaining of the humanity of Christ during his earthly ministry. In this passage, Butter and Honey is baby food for infants after they were weaned. This is saying that the Lord will therefore be physically sustained in the realm of his humanity through his childhood and to the point of the cross where he would receive the imputation and judgment of all the sins of humanity. This was a prophetical guarantee some 700 plus years prior to his virgin birth that His humanity would not die before his purpose on the cross was fulfilled therefore he would not die physically until he had died spiritually in substitution for all sin. Also, by accumulating Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul He would know within the realm of his humanity to refuse GOOD and EVIL and he definitely had human volition and his free will volition would always choose Divine Good and GRACE rather than Human Good or EVIL. This means he would never sin and therefore remain impeccable throughout his entire life. He was tempted many times in many ways that is he was placed into the same situation as any other human being who would often choose sin over Divine Good but never succumbed to the temptations. It also is interesting to consider that Christ having NO Old Sin Nature may not actually have had the same temptations we each have as human beings but would have been in the same situations we are in but completely lack any interest in producing sin or Human Good from those situations. However, He was tempted in ways which we can not even comprehend when He was tested like Adam and Ishah in the garden by means of direct influence of Satan and EVIL from his policy and this occurred in fact 3 times. (**Matt 4**) In each and every case he remained impeccable and refused sin and remained within the Plan of God even to his Death.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of the Essence of God

In the normal functions of life for the believer awareness of God and his plan is Essential and Believers must start by thinking in terms of the Justice of God. The heathen, or unbeliever in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, must understand that once he enters the Plan of God through faith ALONE in Christ ALONE he cannot ever cancel that Salvation which is Adjustment to the Justice of God. It must always be remembered that the Integrity of God is greater than any human failure or success. The Integrity of God is not canceled by people rejecting The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior nor is the Integrity of God canceled because some believers fail to use Logistical Grace for the purpose of spiritual advance as it was intended. Nor does complete lack of integrity in man ever cancel the Integrity of God. God does not EVER REACT to any part of his creation and the when believers react to other people it is simply pettiness. The interesting thing is that understanding and

considering that God is not petty and does not react to any part of what he has created, including me or thee, clearly then NEITHER does he respond in any way to it. God has integrity which is greater than any failure, success or even life in mankind and, in fact, greater than the entire created universe. The Integrity of God is always maintained whether his actions toward man are justification or condemnation, Divine Discipline or divine blessing. This is the ultimate reason for the failure of the appeal of Lucifer in the Angelic Conflict trial. The very function of the Justice of God maintains the Integrity of God and since God is eternal, infinite, invisible and to a great extent mostly incomprehensible, it is Essential that God reveal himself in limited ways in order for mankind to comprehend him and this is through Bible Doctrine, the "Thinking of Christ". God also reveals himself through the use of his power and anyone who has felt some aspect of the power of God is clearly aware of how God exists.

Essentials for Knowing God

Since God is infinite eternal invisible and in fact mostly incomprehensible to man, it is Essential for God to reveal what He wants mankind to know about himself and in this dispensation this only occurs by means of the written Word of God called Bible Doctrine. The content of the bible reveals and vindicates the Integrity of God and through comprehension of Bible Doctrine believers can learn about the Integrity of God and make adjustment to the Justice of God. It is also Essential to understand that MAN must make Adjustment to the Justice of God if he is to have any relationship with God because it was the failure of our original parents in the garden which put us under the condemnation of the Justice of God. Furthermore, maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a result of consistent daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, Operation Z results in the attainment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with its coincident maximum blessing for time and all eternity. THIS reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving one's Super Grace blessings for time is the ONLY means of glorification of God in time. The Believer MUST learn from understanding Self Righteousness vs Absolute Righteousness that man by his efforts only seeks to build up human integrity and such activity is maligning God and totally ignores His Grace. For man to be justified before God he must have the Righteousness of God, which he does NOT IN ANY WAY QUALIFY TO ATTAIN. However, this is imputed to him by God and is only accomplished as a result of faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone.

Essential Coexistence, Human Volition & Sovereignty of God

The greater is the opposition to the Plan of God in creation the greater is the manifest power from God used to over come it without in any way ever tampering with free will. The perfect demonstration of the coexistence of the Sovereignty of God and the free will of man is found in the intense confrontations between God and Pharaoh Amenhotep II with Moses as the divine representative. Throughout Human History this continuation of this coexistence is Essential in order to enable there to be a resolution to the Angelic Conflict. It will be an awesome and phenomenal thing to see the POWER of the Omnipotence of God in action when The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History resolves the problems in the Client Nation, United States of America in this 21st century.

Essential of the Righteousness of God

The Integrity of God is composed of the Righteousness of God and the Justice of God. The Righteousness of God guards the Justice of God and the Justice of God guards the entire Essence of God. Therefore, the Integrity of God is the key necessary to understand Human History, salvation and having a relationship with God. The Righteousness of God being perfect demands Perfect Righteousness and the Justice of God being perfect demands perfect justice. What the Righteousness of God demands the Justice of God must execute. The Righteousness of God as part of the perfect Essence of God and ½ of the Integrity of God demands punishments on various individuals, groups and nations and human history is a record of this punishment in its varied cycles resulting from rejection of absolute truth. Whenever Absolute Truth is rejected it is inevitable that that individual will believe ONLY the LIE, Evil as the plan and policy of Satan, and when any person or group believes the LIE he leads himself down the road to punishment and destruction from the Justice of God. Since the moment of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God believers have been given something which has a great influence on the nation in which they live as well as on their lives, the lives of their friends and all those with whom they are related or in whose social periphery they find themselves. The Justice of God imputed to each and every believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, the Absolutely Perfect Righteousness of God. This is Essential to enable God to bless the believer and therefore all blessing is imputed from the Justice of God DIRECTLY to the Righteousness of God in the believer. God cannot and does not bless believers on the basis of their morality, although it is required, nor on the basis of their production though it is enjoined and encouraged. Neither does God bless the believer on the basis of personality though some Bible Doctrines when inculcated and metabolized will change the believer's thinking and thus his personality. He does not bless based on the believer's giving, witnessing, asceticism, self sacrifice nor anything which the he can do as a result of human effort. The absolute dogmatic fact is that the only reason God can bless sinful man is his possession of the Righteousness of God which is imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. All blessing from the Justice of God is imputed to the believer on a progressive basis. It starts at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God when believers are minus Bible Doctrine and therefore minus capacity for blessing. The blessing begins with logistical support for this new member of the Royal Family of God living in this world ruled by Satan. As believers learn more Bible Doctrine their capacity for life and blessing increases. However, God will not impute blessing to any believer beyond his capacity for to do this would bring about misery and unhappiness in his life. The Plan of God therefore demands that believers recognize the imputation of the Righteousness of God as the basis for Justification and as the basis for the imputation of all divine blessing.

God is perfect and in his perfection God can have nothing to do with sin and therefore nothing to do with man. God provided the potential for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by means of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross. Because the personal sins of all the Human Race were judicially imputed to Christ on the cross we therefore have the potential for eternal salvation. At the point of this becoming a reality WE also receive the judicial imputation of the Righteousness of God which is an Essential component for blessing from the Justice of God. Without the Righteousness of God we are able to receive NOTHING from God. This potential salvation becomes a reality in man with the expression of Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Since the believer in Christ, who is now part of the Royal Family of God, is now living in a world ruled by Satan the antagonist of God it is Essential that God provide Logistical support to

keep him alive in this world lest Satan remove him immediately after his Salvation decision. This could never occur, since God cannot have anything to do with sinful man, except that at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, He provides the judicial imputation of His own Absolute Righteousness to every believer based on that believers expression of Nonmeritorious Faith in Christ. This allows the Integrity of God through the Justice of God motivated by the Love of God to provide the necessary logistics for life on this earth so that every believer has the potential to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Essential Righteousness & Justification

Thus the judicial imputation of God's Absolute Righteousness to the believer at his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is the potential for pleasing God. This is why it is called "JUSTIFICATION". Without the imputation of the Righteousness of God it is impossible to please or satisfy God and absolutely impossible for God to provide one iota of blessing for the believer. Once Absolute Righteousness is imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God it is Essential we fulfill our purpose in time for that imputation which is advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the function of the **Grace Apparatus for Perception**, **Operation Z**. Justification of the believer is the direct result of the **judicial imputation** of the Righteousness of God to him at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Justification as a principle in the Christian Way of Life is simply God recognizing his Absolute Righteousness where it has been imputed. This is the true basis for the potential of all that the believer can receive as blessing from the Justice of God in time.

Essential Imputation of Righteousness & Blessing

The Integrity of God is composed of the Justice of God and the Righteousness of God and as a result of condemnation at physical birth the ONLY contact for man with God is through the Justice of God. The Justice of God is therefore, the source of both cursing and blessing for every believer. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, which is accomplished by the expression of faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, believers receive the imputation of the Absolute Righteousness of God so that he can remain in this life with a purpose. The believer's purpose is the implementation of the plan of the Righteousness of God with resulting divine blessing suitable for the Righteousness of God which resides in every believer. Therefore, all blessing for believers, which is motivated by the Love of God, goes from the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God imputed to and residing in the believer and is therefore totally encapsulated by the Integrity of God. Therefore, there can be no compromise of the Essence of God when the Justice of God imputes blessing to the Righteousness of God even though it resides in the believer because the Righteousness of God protects the Justice of God while the Justice of God protects the Essence of God. The purpose of the believer after salvation is to remain in this life on earth in time and advance in the Spiritual Life to maturity in order to acquire greater capacity for life and blessing so that the Justice of God can impute incredible blessings in time while the believer resides in the world ruled by Satan without functioning under the policy of Satan, and in this way resolve the Angelic Conflict. Believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will receive opportunities for production in the Spiritual Life but no production is ever credited to us for blessing from the Justice of God. Blessing only comes to believers only as a result of the accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul resulting in reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice

of God and gaining increased CAPACITY for the blessings. Because believers are in the Human Race and in the Plan of God they must have rules to enable them to function and have a meaningful life on earth. These rules are the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and the Bible Doctrine of the **Royal Family Honor Code**. These divine laws are provided to enable believers to live in this life on this earth but function in His plan.

The missing link between Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God with its logistical support and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with the unimaginable blessings for life in time is capacity for life which only comes to the believer as a result of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The imputation of Absolute Righteousness at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God completes a "Grace Pipeline" which is an encapsulation by the Integrity of God for all blessing and provision from God to the believer. On the originating end of the Grace Pipeline is the Justice of God and on the receiving end is the Righteousness of God imputed to believers at Salvation. As a result of this system and this Grace Pipeline, the Essence of God cannot be compromised by blessing any believer. In order for blessing to NOT compromise God the believer must recognize and totally understand that nothing he has ever thought, said, or did was the basis for which God blessed him. God only blesses on the basis of His own integrity. The combined attributes of the Righteousness of God and Justice of God form the Integrity of God. Under the principle of Integrity, righteousness demands righteousness and justice demands justice and therefore the Justice of God must do what the Righteousness of God demands. What the Righteousness of God rejects the Justice of God must condemn. What the Righteousness of God demands the Justice of God must provide. What the Righteousness of God approves the Justice of God MUST bless. Therefore, the Justice of God administers what the Righteousness of God demands based on the motivation from the Love of God. Thus, it follows that this Grace Pipeline is Essential for provisions from God beginning with the Logistical Grace provisions for every believer's life to the extreme blessing from the Justice of God to the believer who reaches the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. These extreme Super Grace blessings can be provided only for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God without any compromise of the attributes of God because, in fact, these blessings are given to the Righteousness of God which has been judicially imputed to each believer thus avoiding all possible compromise to God. God gives not to our goodness or deeds but only to his perfection in the Absolute Righteousness imputed to us. It is Bible Doctrine, the "Thinking or Mind of Christ", resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which becomes the basis for the imputation of future blessings for both time and eternity for the believer who advances in the Plan of God.

Every believer will receive a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature, minus Human Good and minus Evil. This Resurrection Body is the true home for the real imputation of blessing and reward for eternity but this blessing is based solely on having capacity for these blessings from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. For the believer who makes it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he will receive incredible blessing both in time and unimaginable rewards above and beyond the ultimate sanctification of the Resurrection Body in eternity. Bible Doctrine, therefore, MUST, because of this, be the first priority in our life for our whole life and the fundamental Essential of the Christian Way of Life. Therefore, the Righteousness of God demands blessing for the believer only when there is maximum capacity for blessing from

maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The Justice of God can provide blessing only where the Righteousness of God resides and where in the Human Race the individual believer has capacity for blessing. To do otherwise would result in the believer who lacks capacity for blessing yet receives blessing to be completely miserable in his life despite having the blessings. Bible Doctrine also must be inculcated every day in order for the believer to be able to survive the disasters which are coming to this nation in every category and still receive blessing in those disasters.

Categories of Blessing for Mature Believers

The first category is that of Logistical Grace support for the believer's entire life providing all the needs in life thereby giving the believer the opportunities needed for advance in the Spiritual Life. Logistical Grace thus is the support structure in X radical of the **Equation of Hope Plan of God** and also through the whole Equation of Hope plan. (**2Cor 9:8**, **Eph 1:3**, **2Pet 3:18**, **Matt 6:33**, **Lam 3:19-27**, **Deut 33:27**, **Ps 37:25**, **Ps 23:1**, **Phil 4:19**, **1Pet 1:5**, **Rom 8:31-32**) The only means available to the believer for his spiritual growth occurs as a result of his receiving Logistical Grace after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This provides all things needed to keep the believer alive including TIME, one day at a time, and also the doctrine to be studying day after day. Logistical Grace therefore is everything it takes to sustain each believer in this life, on this world, without regard to his Status Quo in the Spiritual Life. As a part of this logistical support the believer receives temporal security and as a result of his doctrinal intake realizes that no believer can depart from this world apart from the Will of God. Therefore, not all the forces of hell can remove a single believer from this life without permission from the Will of God. God also provides additional security in the form of guardian angels and the Wall of Fire functions along with the functions of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions including freedom under authority with the sanctity of property and privacy. Most importantly He provides spiritual provisions of Bible Doctrine and a right Pastor Teacher all as part of Logistical Grace.

Therefore, the principles of Logistical Grace and Super-Grace are subjects of total **Afortiori logic** as is their provisions for believers by means of the Justice of God. Believers are supported by Logistical Grace therefore under Logistical Grace they are able to reach, IF they are consistently using Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, Super-Grace status and receive incredible blessing in 6 categories.

- Spiritual Blessings:
  - Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ along with capacity for love life, happiness and blessing.
  - Sharing the Happiness of God
  - The ability to cope with any adversity or suffering in life.
  - Freedom from the slavery to any circumstances of life.
  - The ability to interpret contemporary history and evaluate current events in the light of Bible Doctrine and also to evaluate past history and understand it in relationship to Bible Doctrine.
  - The Flexibility to adapt to changing circumstances as a result of maximum function under the Royal Family Honor Code.

- A total sense of security in relationship to the Plan of God and with The Lord Jesus, The Christ himself so that they can see the Plan of God from the perspective of **Prov 8:33-36** and **Prov 8:18-21**.

- Temporal blessings
  - Wealth received or acquired
  - Success and advance in one's sphere of life
  - Prosperity in social, sexual, technical, professional, mental, cultural, establishment, leadership prosperity and even health areas.

- Blessing by Association for those in the periphery of the believer who is in Super-Grace or Ultra Super-Grace so that this advanced believer becomes a blessing to all in his periphery
  - Direct blessing from God to persons who are associated with the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
  - Sharing of the blessings from God to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with others.
  - Blessings by association occur in 6 areas also:
    - Spiritual - focused on learning Bible Doctrine
    - Loved one periphery - where mature believers in a family bless the others even the PETS.
    - Professional periphery - where mature believers bless those in the organization.
    - Business Periphery of any kind.
    - Social life periphery
    - Geographic or National periphery

- Heritage Blessing factors:
  - Even after the death of the mature believer there is continued blessing by association for those close to that believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

- Historical Impact blessing:
  - Those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God form a pivot which functions under the salt principle of being a preservative for the client nation to God.

- Dying Grace blessing:
  - Lastly for the end of the mature believer's life in time he will leave this life under the greatest possible blessing as the last opportunity for God to bless him in his life.

There is also at many different stages of spiritual growth Undeserved Suffering which is designed for enhanced blessing and accelerated spiritual advance and demonstrates to everyone in the believer's periphery the fantastic grace provision from God for the advancing believer in the Angelic Conflict.

Flexibility, Inflexibility & Self Righteousness vs God's Righteousness

It is Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine which is the great issue in the Christian Way of Life and this is and must be a free will choice. Believers must choose also, when under Positive Volition to Bible

Doctrine, to build their life on the Righteousness of God imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. However, when under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine believers will inevitably select some form of Self Righteousness and live out of step and disoriented to reality and life in general being inflexible with regard to Non-Essentials and flexible with regard to Essentials. This operation on some system of Self Righteousness is developed through **Arrogance** so that the believer will try to dictate to God what His plan is. He assumes that if he tells God often enough that this or that is the Divine Plan eventually the believer will believe it himself and be sucked into some organization which will use this or that or pressure him into some form of working, for salvation and blessing. It is imperative that believers understand that there is nothing any man can ever do which can bring salvation, spirituality or blessing from the Justice of God. It is only what God has done and He tells believers this forcibly when He imputes to us his Absolute Righteousness at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, we must choose the Righteousness of God imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or personal Self Righteousness under which to function in life.

Inflexibility & Self Righteousness

Imputation of the Righteousness of God results in humility orientation whereas the development of Self Righteousness results in arrogant inflexibility, legalism and mental blindness to Bible Doctrine. Once one becomes Self Righteous he becomes inflexible about Non-Essentials and this is what the concept of being 'GungHo' actually is about. People inflexible about Non-Essentials never come around to taking a courageous stand for Essentials. Essentials are all of Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment which are for both believers and unbelievers. Self Righteousness destroys flexibility and the one thing which had characterized the American people up through the 1930's was flexibility and if they had to stand in line they did it humorously but when gas rationing started in the 1970s there was no humor in the lines and in fact there was fighting and violence. The overriding principle is that people who are properly motivated by flexibility are incredible in what they can do. There are no inflexible systems to shut these kinds of people down so that their wonderful abilities to function are never lost through an inflexible system. There must be strong discipline but it must not destroy flexibility. This is demonstrated in the motion picture "Heartbreak Ridge" where Clint Eastwood as a Marine Drill Sargent kept admonishing his Marines to "Improvise, Overcome and Adapt". In any area of life, especially the military and combat functions, there must be strong discipline but that discipline must allow flexibility to exist and function within its parameters. Discipline and flexibility can exist in any area by training people to think while they are being disciplined and to have them accept discipline but not shut down their thinking.

Arrogance makes one inflexible and once he becomes inflexible and on a sin trend he cannot stop it but if a believer is flexible he would rebound and get out from under the sinful trend. Only the individual believer can determine whether Bible Doctrine is important to him or NOT and no one can determine this for him. It is only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which solves a trend toward Self Righteous **Arrogance**. Self Righteousness people have no sense of humor and Self Righteousness people are inflexible about the little superficial things in life. Whenever a joke or story is a little "off color" they become offended by it because they are so inflexible they have lost their sense of humor. Therefore, since Self Righteousness is a level of arrogance, all arrogant people lack a sense of humor. To have a sense of humor a person must have concentration, wit and flexibility. Under arrogance the Self Righteous

person takes himself too seriously and when pressure is added to this as a result of his inflexibility he vacillates and oscillates from Self Righteousness to Self Pity. Flexibility and a sense of humor always travel together. The majority of Jews, in every generation, sought salvation through works and Self Righteousness and because they were keeping the law for salvation when pressure came to them they reverted to Self Pity. Self Righteousness cannot sustain one in pressure except in rare cases of total inflexibility but this is divorcement from reality. In these cases the self pity may be avoided but the inflexibility always destroys the person.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential GRACE

Grace is the plan and policy of God which enables GOD to provide for man without compromise to his divine essence. Grace was as the Plan and Policy of God was laid out in Eternity Past prior to any creation and is based on Who and What God is and is what he provides for man which man cannot ever earn, deserve nor work for. Grace is the genius of God, and doctrine is the revelation and manifestation of that genius. The principle here is that GRACE depends ONLY on Who and What God is and NEVER on any part of Who or What we are. GRACE is provided for man in several categories some limited and some unlimited.

The PRINCIPLE

It is essential to understand that GRACE is the noun which describes what God can provide for man under his system and plan and that it is modified by adjectives to assist in categorizing it into distinct functional aspects of what is provided by God for man. We tend to proclaim things like "Supergrace" as a single word which is often used to describe a type of believer or the level of his spiritual advancement and thus lose the meaning and intent of the modifiers and the understanding of the many varied aspects of GRACE provided by God for the believer in this life. Super ----- Grace is not a class of believer or level of spiritual advancement but is a level of GRACE, a level of provision, provided for the advancing mature believers for his life in time. Therefore the believer must understand the totality of GRACE and how it is provided for man in several categories, some limited and some unlimited, in order to appreciate to any degree what God provides for man.

Necessity for Grace

Mankind can have no contact with or relationship with God because at physical birth he is born physically alive from the divine imputation of soul life to his format soul which is combined with the Biological Life of his human body to give him Human Life. In addition there is the divine imputation of Adam's Original Sin to the genetically transmitted Old Sin Nature inherited from Adam as a result of his fall and his condemnation causing him and all his genetic descendants to be spiritually dead. (**Rom 5:12-14**)

The fact that according to **1Pet 2:3** every believer HAS tasted the Grace of God does not mean he understands the Grace of God or that he is oriented to the Grace of God. Believers must be constantly reminded that a major necessity in the Christian Way of Life is Grace Orientation and in order to be oriented to Grace they need to understand it so that they can function in the GRACE

Plan of God. Believers alive in this world ruled by Satan are in Phase II of the Plan of God and inevitably find that sometimes, rarely, they succeed in the Plan of God and sometimes, more often than not, they FAIL and thus have UPS and DOWNS in their Spiritual Life. This is completely understandable being that every believer possesses an Old Sin Nature, passed down from Adam, which they cannot get rid of and that their understanding of Bible Doctrine is limited thus their orientation to the Plan of God is also limited. Understand clearly that there is no limit in the revelation of the plan but there is great limitation in the believer's personal perspicacity of it.

As a result of a limited understanding of the Plan of God the believer does not realize that when he fails in some heinous or miserable way in Phase II of the plan that he still, because of GRACE, possesses the **39 Irrevocable Assets** from God given at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. So, no matter what the believer's experience in this life may be, and this life is a VERY Short period in terms of eternity, (**Ps 90**) and even if he lives 70 or 80 years or more as a Christian, for this very short time, he represents the Lord in this life and this requires a great deal of understanding of the Plan of God. So, how can a Christian expect to live the Christian Way of Life and have the inner peace, inner happiness and blessing in the midst of suffering and pressure and orient to the Plan of God unless he understands the Grace of God? This understanding requires a maximum knowledge of Bible Doctrine and having maximum **Metabolized Bible Doctrine** in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the HIGHEST virtue in the Christian Way of Life.

Escrow

It is necessary to understand the principle of Escrow with regard to direct blessing from God to the believer in time and eternity. In Eternity Past God the Father as author of the Plan of God made, as it were, a contract with each individual in the Human Race whom his omniscience knew would become a believer and receive the provision of Salvation Grace. In this contract God the Father set aside phenomenal blessings above and beyond anything the believer could imagine and placed them under an ESCROW instrument. This Escrow contract had requirements to be met before the Escrow benefits could be realized by the beneficiary. The requirements for any and every believer to realize his escrow benefits from God are that in his life on this earth he must reach the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Since this can only occur by means of consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and **Grace Apparatus for Perception**, **Operation Z**, this means in essence that the believer has to make proper use of his Logistical Grace support mechanisms. Upon reaching and HOLDING his position in Spiritual Maturity this believer has then fulfilled the requirement to receive these Escrow benefits. However, if the believer fails to meet the requirements of the Escrow contract his benefits will remain under Escrow for all eternity and he will never be able to realize them.

Categories of the Grace of God

Grace Apparatus for Perception

All of the potentials for the receipt of GRACE as provisions from God are realized ONLY by the believer and only through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the mechanics of the **Grace Apparatus for Perception**, **Operation Z (GAP)**. Understanding that the greatest virtue in the Christian Way of Life is accumulating a maximum level

of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there must be a means of accomplishing this based on GRACE. This process involves the Grace Apparatus for Perception as a part of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit for the believer in time. This Grace Apparatus for Perception works at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and also similarly during the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by the believer. At the point of Positive Volition at Gospel hearing this process of GAP involves **Common -------- Grace** and **Efficacious -------- Grace**. During the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by the believer it involves Operation Z under GAP. Under this grace system, God the Holy Spirit teaches the Human Spirit Bible Doctrine when it is presented by a qualified Pastor Teacher. At the same time He moves this Bible Doctrine received by the Human Spirit into the Left Lobe of the Soul for perception or understanding by the believer. Here it awaits a decision of acceptance or rejection. When it is accepted as part of FAITH PERCEPTION God the Holy Spirit again moves it from the Left Lobe of the Soul into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where it effects and modifies the content of all compartments in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul being then available for application to life.

Propitiatory Grace

1John 2:2, is the Grace of God seen from the perspective of God and the standpoint of Propitiation which requires we examine in part at least the Essence of God.

- Absolute Justice
- Absolute Righteousness
- Perfect Love
- Eternal Life
- Sovereignty

These parts of the Essence of God are sufficient for the understanding of propitiation and Grace. The unquestionable fact is that God MUST be consistent with his own character or essence. People often say, even Satan impugned the character of God in saying, that a God of LOVE, cannot cast his created creatures into an Eternal Lake of Fire. God is and always has been and always will be perfect and He is immutable and if therefore if God were inconsistent within himself HE COULD NOT BE GOD. Immutability, as a component of the Essence of God, infers TOTAL STABILITY in the character of God, therefore, God cannot change and cannot be inconsistent. THEREFORE, the Love of God must always be tempered by the Absolute Perfect Righteousness of God and the Absolute Perfect Justice of God making it IMPOSSIBLE for God to LOVE any creature who is UNRIGHTEOUS. Clearly and obviously Unrighteousness is an INSULT to the Absolute Perfect Righteousness of God and therefore the only thing which God can do to the unrighteous is to JUDGE them. At physical birth man receives the divine imputation of soul life to his format soul which is combined with the Biological Life of his fetal human body forming Human Life. As a result of Adam's Original Sin failure and the genetic distortion resulting from that, every human being is born spiritually dead. Every human born into this world has this genetic distortion passed down through the male gamete during fertilization resulting in the possession of a genetic Old Sin Nature. Therefore, EVERY human being is JUDGED at the moment he emerges at physical birth, when he opens his mouth and cries, demonstrating to the world his possession of human life. In addition there is the divine imputation of Adam's Original Sin to this genetically transmitted Old Sin Nature causing Adam and all his genetic

descendants to be condemned and outside of the Plan of God. (**Rom 5:12-14**) Therefore every newborn human being is instantly judged as a result of his possessing an Old Sin Nature, having Adam's Original Sin imputed, lacking a Human Spirit and being under spiritual death. Consider that every time a person is born into this world IT IS AN INSULT TO THE CHARACTER OF GOD. The sweet innocent beautiful little baby is born into this world possessing a VICIOUS DESPERATELY WICKED OLD SIN NATURE. Each and every person alive including ME and THEE have this vicious desperately wicked Old Sin Nature, and we USE IT REGULARLY. Therefore God cannot have anything to do with us and simply our birth and presence with this Old Sin Nature and our basic unrighteousness is an incredible INSULT to the Absolute Perfect Righteousness of God. Therefore, God can have nothing to do with us and as a result of being born spiritually dead we are TOTALLY INCAPABLE of initiating and having any kind of relationship with God who possesses eternal spiritual life and Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice.

The issue put forward by Satan in the appeal of the Angelic Conflict Trail is whether the Love of God works with the Justice of God and Righteousness of God consistently in all cases and in all situations. Satan questioned this principle indicating that from his distorted perspective this was not so. In the garden the Love of God motivated the provision of everything for Adam and Ishah under his GRACE policy until they violated his prohibition at which time they came under the consideration of the Righteousness of God and Justice of God. There are periods of time in the Plan of God when we, as believers are, and Adam and Ishah as our first parents were, under unusual blessing and also periods of time when we are and they were under the "casual" blessing of Divine Discipline. There are times when we are under great pressure and adversity and times when we are not. All of this is an expression of the Grace of God motivated by the Love of God demonstrating the absolute perfect consistency in the functions of the Essence of God toward his creation. We can only understand this through our own consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, to understand Grace we must start at the cross where Grace was first administered to us and we must understand that we gained Eternal Salvation NOT by anything we have said or done but by the simple nonmeritorious act of accepting the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ for OUR PERSONAL SINS.

Salvation Grace

When we begin to use our Old Sin Nature we produce in part personal sin. Personal sins are those things which violate standards which God has set up, like the Decalogue, the Sermon on the Mount, Categories of Mental Attitude, Verbal and Overt Sins described in the scripture, ETC. Understand clearly that In the Plan of God, Sin has no place because it is a violation of the "rules" or "principles" of the Plan of God. However, you must also clearly understand that in the Plan of Satan, Sin has no place either since the Plan of Satan is designed to attempt to bring about perfection in the life of man. Satan is attempting to produce a perfect environment for man in replication of what God has promised to do for man and SIN inevitably destroys his attempts. In granting the appeal of Satan at the Angelic Conflict trial, man was created by God to be tested in the garden with a volitional choice between GRACE provided through the LOVE of God with Divine Good vs EVIL and its production of Human Good as the Plan of Satan and SIN was not part of either end of this testing spectrum. SIN is a volitional choice to accept the temptation from the area of weakness of the genetic Old Sin Nature. Sin, therefore, is a result of the fall of man and the development of the genetic distortion

which resulted in the formation of the Old Sin Nature when man came under the Plan of Satan but was, most likely, a result which was unanticipated by Satan.

Therefore to keep the issue of the Angelic Conflict straight for the entire history of mankind and to again provide the means of man entering the GRACE Plan of God instead of remaining after Adam's fall under the EVIL Plan of Satan The Lord Jesus, The Christ went to the cross and received the imputation of and judgment of all human sins. This resulted in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death which was an acceptable payment to God the Father for the sins of man so that God the Father was satisfied or **PROPITIATED** by his Substitutionary Spiritual Death. This keeps the issue for man in the Appeal of the Angelic Conflict trial a choice between the GRACE Plan of God and the EVIL Plan of Satan and the Divine Good Production of the Plan of God vs the Human Good Production of the Plan of Satan.

Therefore, the only baby born into this world which God ever liked was the infant Jesus, who was born from a virgin woman who was NOT impregnated by a human male, resulting in this baby being minus the Old Sin Nature and born trichotomous with BODY and Biological Life, Soul and Soul Life and Human Spirit with Eternal or Spiritual Life. From the point of the virgin birth of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, He was the ONE baby who always had fellowship with and always remained in the Plan of God. When He reached the cross He was, in his humanity, the possessor of perfect righteousness and being perfect righteousness and accepting the imputation of all human sins, this satisfied the Righteousness of God the Father. In addition to this when He was judged by God the Father for our sins and thus died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for them this satisfied the Justice of God the Father. This total satisfaction of God the Father by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross is PROPITIATION. Thus, God the Father is Propitiated by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross, HE IS SATISFIED WITH THE PAYMENT FOR HUMAN SINS.

Therefore, a primary principle of SAVING or SALVATION GRACE is that your salvation did not depend on your efforts or work and the maintenance of your salvation does not depend on YOU. You can be the SORRIEST person ever to live with a saturation of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins and as phony as a lead nickle and rotten to the core, evil and vicious and you can do this for all of your 70 years of life and if you have made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone THEN YOU ARE STILL GOING TO BE FACE TO FACE WITH GOD WHEN YOU DIE IN HEAVEN. This is Salvation -------- GRACE. Your salvation did not depend on you in the first place. God is going to save you regardless of anything you have or have not done after your nonmeritorious decision to accept the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ for your sins and despite everything else in your life. Therefore, you will be in heaven when you die just like any and every other person who has expressed faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone NOT BECAUSE OF WHO AND WHAT YOU ARE BUT BECAUSE OF WHO AND WHAT GOD IS.

If way down in your thinking even your subconscious mind you think that you can commit some sin to lose your salvation you are saturated with ARROGANCE and functioning in total blaspheme but you are still saved and still going to end in heaven. This is Salvation -------- GRACE. However, you are totally confused and if you remain so you will NEVER orient to the Grace of God because THERE IS NO SIN YOU CAN COMMIT TO LOSE SALVATION. This is a major point in legalism which says basically you have done something to gain salvation now you have to be careful in living because you might do

something to lose it. SIN does get you out of fellowship with God and out of the Plan of God being in carnality where you receive Divine Discipline from the Love of God through the Justice of God in varying degrees for being OUTSIDE of the Plan of God. The Divine Discipline is NOT for the sin which was already judged in and paid for by Christ on the cross. So, neither SIN nor anything else you can think, say or do can neutralize what GOD has done in the provision of your regeneration and Eternal Life. Thus it is clear that God's Plan and the Grace of God are greater than any sin any believer has or can ever commit and to think otherwise is absolute **ARROGANCE**. The fact is that you are not that good of a sinner and no one ever has been nor will be that good a sinner to neutralize what God has done in providing salvation by his GRACE system.

At the point of this Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by the unbeliever he now becomes the beneficiary of SALVATION ------- GRACE (**Eph 2:8-9**) whereby he receives 39 irrevocable assets and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for living in time in the world ruled by Satan under his satanic policy of Evil. Salvation Grace includes many aspects of making the new believer "set apart" to God in this world of Satan. This includes creation of a Human Spirit into which God the Father imputes Eternal Life, the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit placing each believer into union with Christ and putting him under both retroactive (to the point of the cross in judgment for sin and rejection of Human Good and Evil) and current (for the believer's logistical support in time) positional truth and MUCH, MUCH MORE. By this action the new believer becomes part of the Royal Family of God and has a supernatural mechanism for functioning in this new Spiritual Life.

Common Grace

For all of mankind as unbelievers who make positive decisions at God Consciousness (understanding God exists and wanting to know more about him) GOD provides COMMON Grace, so that when God fulfills his responsibility of providing GOSPEL information to this unbeliever God the Holy Spirit makes this information about the GOOD NEWS, the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for all human sin, LUCID for this unbeliever. This enables the unbeliever to make a clear decision regarding Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. He will either accept or reject the information in the gospel but the understanding of the importance and ramifications of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or rejection of Christ is provided to him by God the Holy Spirit under COMMON ------ GRACE. "Common Grace" is the unearned, undeserved action of the Holy Spirit directed toward every human being in history who desires knowledge of and relationship with God in some way. By "common" is meant the message of salvation is made perspicuous the same for every human being in every period of history despite the failure of all human beings to understand spiritual phenomenon as a result of the universal spiritual death of mankind.

Efficacious Grace

God provided a mechanism by which man can initiate a relationship with him totally based on Nonmeritorious volition under his plan of GRACE. This mechanism removed the issue of personal sin and relative righteousness under sin by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of the perfection of Christ on the cross for all sin so that any human being wanting a relationship with God simply has to accept this mechanism of judgment for all sins. IF (3rd class condition) the unbeliever chooses to accept the proposition of the Gospel of Christ and accept his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross, (maybe he will and maybe he won't using Free Will Volition), God again provides some

assistance to the Positive Volition of this person, who can still have no contact with God, by means of EFFICACIOUS ------- GRACE. In Efficacious Grace, God the Holy Spirit again takes this feeble, useless Positive Volition of the faith of the unbeliever and presents it to God the Father as an effective nonmeritorious system of accepting the provision of salvation as a result of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross. In essence, God the Holy Spirit makes the expression of faith alone in what Common Grace has made understandable "effective" for salvation. This is EFFICACIOUS ------- GRACE.

Imputational Grace

Imputations are things provided by God and given to man which occur in 2 categories:

- **Judicial Imputations** where there is no home or recipient affinity for the imputation.
  - These are part of GRACE provisions from God and man does not earn nor deserve any of these and there is no obligation for God to provide them.
- **Real Imputations** where there is a home or recipient affinity for the imputation.
  - These are the result of man's makeup and he deserves each and every one of these. These are required of God generally based on the requisite consistency of the character or Essence of God and they are not really part of the undeserved unearned provision of GRACE.

Both categories will be presented here for a clear understanding of imputations in the Christian Way of Life but it should be remembered that GRACE is what man does not earn nor deserve but which is provided for him by God and nothing else.

At the point of the creation of Adam we are told God created him in his own image, Trichotomous, having a physical Body, and nonphysical Soul and Spirit. After the creation of the physical body of Ish, Adam, God then imputed to Adam LIVES, plural as a judicial imputation. He Breathed into his nostrils the BREATH OF LIVES (Gen 2:7). This infers that God when he constructed the physical body of Adam from the chemicals of the prior creation of the earth, so that he would only be able to LIVE in the environment of the earth, he also built into that body a capacity or capability to house a human soul and human spirit. God's breathing into Adam the BREATH of LIVES has been interpreted as meaning that he breathed into him the SOUL lives needed for both Adam and Ishah at the same time (Gen 2:7) and it also has been interpreted to mean he breathed into him Soul Life and Spirit Life with no mention, however, of Biological Life. So consider that God built this manikin of "clay" from the chemicals of the earth and there Ish stood an inanimate body with the capacity for having an Eternal living soul and a Human Spirit as well. At that point, when God IMPUTED to Ish LIFE as a Judicial Imputation, we must consider that this imputation either was accompanied by the imputation of or the activation of Biological Life in his physical body, Soul Life and Spirit life to fill the capacities in the physical body for each. This resulted in Adam having the first instance of Human Life. Because his physical body was perfect and his Eternal Soul and Human Spirit untainted he was able to have a relationship with God directly and the life he possessed was EVERLASTING life which could have been perpetuated FOREVER. However, the fall of Adam caused him to commit spiritual or Human Spirit suicide where he ended up killing his Human Spirit, in essence destroying in his physical body the CAPACITY to have or house the Human Spirit. In addition this produced in his physical body a genetic distortion which resulted in the production of the Old Sin Nature as part of the ongoing perpetuated tainted genetics of the human being. This corrupted his perfect body's genetics so that it could no longer continue living an unending Biological Life and then Adam was removed from

the garden with his wife Ishah in order that they no would longer be able to have access to the TREE OF LIVES and in this way perpetuate their Biological Life (Gen 3:24). The Tree of Lives was also the means of appreciating the grace benefits and spiritual blessings which God had given them immediately after their creation without any spiritual growth, but they had rejected those gifts and now lacked capacity for them thus could not appreciate what was in the Plan of God any longer.

Imputational Grace as *Judicial Imputations* began thus with the imputation of LIVES to Adam and later Ishah (It is said that her lives were taken from Ish, man, and thus he named her ISHAH "from man" or "woman" because of that.

Real Imputations then began when The Lord Jesus, The Christ came into the garden and proceeded to judge and condemn Ish, Ishah, the Serpent and Satan for their part in the fall of man. The curse imputed to Ish, who was then Adam, was the necessity to Work to be able to continue to remain alive, and to transmit the genetic distortions of the Old Sin Nature and the lack of the capacity of the physical body for a Human Spirit to his progeny. The Curse imputed to Ishah was to bear children with pain and to constantly desire to USURP the authority of her husband over her. The Curse to the serpent was to lose its legs and slither on the ground to move (I like to think the Serpent was a magnificent DRAGON with magnificent wings and powerful legs therefore this was a great loss for this magnificent creature) and the curse for Satan was to have his newly acquired "headship" or rulership over the earth be crushed by The Lord Jesus, The Christ and then subsequently be relegated to the Lake of Fire as per the judgment rendered at the Angelic Conflict Trail.

When procreation was made part of the Biological Life functions of humans Adam's reproductive gamete cells, the sperm, passed on at the point of fertilization of Eve's Ovum the genetic distortion which resulted in the Old Sin Nature as part of the genetic structure of the physical body of all human beings. Also this genetic corruption resulted in the lack of capacity to have a resident Human Spirit and also because of a degraded genetic human body structure this eventually results in physical biological death. Therefore in the procreated Human Race Biological Life begins at conception when the male sperm cell fertilizes the female ovum passing all of these characteristics to the new Biological Life.

IF the newly conceived Biological Life comes to term after approximately 9 months of pregnancy, and IF it is to remain viable and receive life at birth, then, at **Physical Birth**, Imputational Grace continues with the Judicial Imputation of (heb) Neshemah the Breath of Life to the emerging fetus providing Eternal Soul Life to fill the physical body's capacity to have a soul and in combining it with the Biological Life of the fetus there results Human Life in the newborn. At the same time because of a lack of the capacity to contain a Human Spirit and the possession of a genetic Old Sin Nature, the newborn, being now physically alive is also spiritually dead and receives the Real Imputation of the culpability for Adam's Original Sin but does not receive the Judicial Imputation of "HUMAN SPIRIT" life. Therefore every newly born human infant is thus BORN physically alive but spiritually dead and absolutely and totally unable to have any relationship with God based on his own efforts. Consider that we are spiritually dead and have no spiritual life but GOD is a spiritual being with eternal spiritual life so how can we communicate with him? Take some time and go to a nearby cemetery find a grave which looks impressive or not and wait there until that person talks to you. Can he? Of

course not! He is physically dead and we are physically alive. This analogy is pertinent with spiritual death as well. We as spiritually dead creatures CANNOT in any initiate or maintain any communication or relationship with God based on our own efforts and, in addition, because of the result of having an Old Sin Nature and therefore producing our own personal sins GOD can have nothing to do with us either so long as SIN is an issue.

At the virgin conception the embryo and fetus carried in pregnancy by Mary, the mother of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, did not possess the genetic distortion of the Old Sin Nature and therefore did possess the perfect genetic structure of Biological Life, including the capacity for a Human Soul and Human Spirit BECAUSE her ovum was not fertilized by a human male. (Is 7:14) Thus at physical birth the fetus of The Lord Jesus, The Christ emerged as Biological Life and received from God the Father the Judicial Imputation of both Eternal Soul life to the format soul and Human Spirit Life to the Human Spirit forming Human Life in that infant so that he was born trichotomous just as Adam was created. If he maintained this status quo without committing any personal sins, AND HE DID, then he would be qualified to be a Substitutionary sacrifice for ALL human sins.

At the point of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for all human sins, God the Father imputed to The Lord Jesus, The Christ all human sins as JUDICIAL Imputations which he did NOT deserve and then God the Father judged them in his human body. Because The Lord Jesus, The Christ possessed the Absolute Righteousness of a perfect sinless human being this satisfied the Righteousness of God the father and because he was without sin and had maintained a status of advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and yet was being judged for sin this satisfied the Justice of God the father. Therefore God the Father was propitiated, SATISFIED, by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross.

At the point of any unbelieving human being making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through Nonmeritorious Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, accepting the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ for one's sins, the new believer receives the Judicial Imputation of 39 irrevocable assets for living a new spiritually oriented Christian Way of Life life on this earth including a regenerated capacity to have a Human Spirit in order to be able to receive Eternal Human Spirit Life in order to enable him to have relationship with God in time and live with him in eternity. In addition these assets include all forms of Logistical Grace support to provide for spiritual growth of this believer to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. There is also provided the Judicial Imputation of the Righteousness of God which provids the mechanism for the justification of this believer and which is the sole target for the reception of ALL blessings from the Justice of God to the believer.

For the believer who is consistently positive to Bible Doctrine and who engages in the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine on a daily basis there is also the Judicial Imputation of multiple levels of testing for the purpose of blessing and to accelerate his spiritual advance. These systems of testing include:

- Providential Preventative Suffering – designed to purge arrogance from the believer
- Momentum Testing (4 Categories) at 2 levels
    - Basic Momentum Testing
    - Advanced Momentum Testing

    - Thought
    - People
    - System
    - Disaster
- Evidence Testing (2 Categories)
    - Related to God
    - Related to Man

There are clear descriptions of the levels of testing for believers as they move toward and through Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God at each level of the Christian Way of Life in the **Interlocking System of Arrogance** under the Arrogance Skills.

During the believer's lifetime there are many blessings provided for him through the mechanism of Logistical Grace support. However, these are what God KNOWS are NECESSARY to provide the opportunities for the individual to be consistent in his advancement in the Plan of God and Christian Way of Life. However at the point of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as a result of persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the believer receives the Judicial Imputation of Escrow Blessings for Time or Super Grace blessings (Way beyond Logistical Grace) in 6 categories DIRECTLY from God. These blessings include 5 categories which are imputed immediately and 1 which is held in reserve for the transition period of the believer from time into eternity. They are:

Spiritual
Material
Association
Historical
Heritage
Dying

If the believer continues to move forward in the Spiritual Life after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving his Super Grace Blessings and IF his persistence brings him to the point of Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he will also receive the Judicial Imputation of Ultra-Super Grace (Way beyond Super Grace) blessings which are phenomenal, unimaginable enhancements or expansions of the blessings he received upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

For these believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or beyond there will be the Judicial Imputation of SPECIAL Categories of Escrow blessings and Rewards at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ to be enjoyed for all eternity. In addition any and all believers who move even 1 step forward in the Plan of God and the Spiritual Life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God will receive some reward at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ and some blessing above the Judicial Imputation of the Perfect Resurrection Body for eternity but the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will receive absolutely fantastic blessings and rewards for their entire unending lifetime in eternity with God.

The Integrity of God and Holiness Bypass

The Righteousness of God and Justice of God are the Holiness or Integrity of God which is totally offended by us from the point of our physical birth on. But the Integrity of God is satisfied from the point of the birth of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on through his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross. The Lord Jesus, The Christ lived 33 years in absolute perfect righteousness in Phase II of the Plan of God but this was not enough and he had to make SIN a nonissue in the choice for man as part of the appeal of the Angelic Conflict Trail, between the Plan of God and Plan of Satan. He had to go to the cross and take our place in judgment for sin. We believers, therefore, tasted (**1Pet 2:3**) the GRACE of Propitiation when we made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by nonmeritorious faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone accepting his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on our behalf. Christians have all now passed the point of Propitiation having made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God so that NOW in Phase II all believers are NOW under the Holiness Bypass. **1Pet 2:3**, says "If you have tasted of the GRACE of God, AND YOU HAVE"; where the "IF' sets up a 1st class condition meaning that every believer who has made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God HAS for at least 1 short moment in time tasted the Grace of God being saved by means of **Salvation Grace**. **1Pet 2:3** refers to the moment of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God where GOD provided under his GRACE plan **39 irrevocable assets** and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for each believer for his life in time and this occurred in a point of time but is perpetuated FOREVER into eternity. The fact that the believer has tasted the Grace of God does not mean he is oriented to the Grace of God. Believers must be constantly reminded that a major necessity in the Christian Way of Life is Grace Orientation and they need to understand it to function in the Plan of God. Consequently, according to **1Pet 2:3**, we begin to orient to the Grace of God by looking at Phase I of the Plan of God, Salvation, where we HAVE tasted the Grace of God at our volitional choice for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The Holiness Bypass results in GOD being FREE to LOVE us as believers apart from overriding interference from his Holiness because the Righteousness of God and Justice of God were satisfied at the cross by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ. However, the Love of God as motivation for GRACE toward believers must function through the Righteousness of God and Justice of God providing BLESSING or DISCIPLINE according to the status of the believer in the Plan of God. Therefore, God can love us and be GRACIOUS in bestowing his LOVE benefits to us without being inconsistent with his character or essence particularly the Righteousness of God and Justice of God. God also is consistent in his LOVE for us when he provides varying levels of Divine Discipline even extreme Divine Discipline when we fail to remain under the GRACE provisions of his plan falling into carnality. In addition one of the GRACE provisions of the 39 assets received at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is the IMPUTATION of and Sharing of the Righteousness of God the Father and God the Son. Therefore, God can share his LOVE, both benefits and admonitions, through his justice to the righteousness we possess after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God bypassing the judgment from the Integrity of God. This is in fact, the actual reason, why we remain alive in this world today. We are here today because of the GRACE of God and because His love is free to act toward us. If God had to look down on any of us and consider us from the perspective of his righteousness alone we would instantly be removed from this life by his justice. On the basis of who and what we are we DO NOT DESERVE to be alive now nor deserve anything in this life in the Plan of God and we will not deserve ANYTHING in eternity either.

Rebound Grace

Having Positive Volition toward Divine Good, thus the drive toward production of Divine Good by the believer means he chooses for himself, GRACE. When believers have Positive Volition toward Divine Good it means they are being consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and the use of the rebound procedure appropriately THEN they are actually choosing for themselves the Grace of God. Having chosen the way of GRACE this is the best possible thing a believer can do choosing it on the basis of who and what God is not ever on the basis of who or what we are.

In Life in time, in Phase II, the believer will produce sins and then must understand and use the grace provision of "REBOUND". The only solution and primary issue when carnality exists is the understanding of and use of the rebound procedure as per **1John 1:9**, **1Cor 11:28-31**, ETC. In Proverbs chapters 1-4 this principle is expounded on as well. The believer in Phase II of the Plan of God EXITS the Plan when he commits any Sin, in whatever category, at whatever level, which puts him out of fellowship, no longer having his soul controlled by God the Holy Spirit thus out of the Plan of God and into a state of Carnality. However, all sins were judged in the humanity of Christ at the cross and paid for with his Substitutionary Spiritual Death. The Case under scrutiny is "God vs The World" in which The Lord Jesus, The Christ in his perfect righteousness received willingly the imputation or and then was judged for all human sins and paid the penalty with his Substitutionary Spiritual Death as our substitute. For the believer to be forgiven for his sins and put back into the Plan of God and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit he simply must under the GRACE Rebound provision CITE this case and that is ALL.

At this point of being in carnality, whatever GOOD this believer produces is Human Good and Unacceptable to God, whatever sin he produces is repugnant to God and totally rejected by him. This believer IS IN Phase II of the Plan of God but out of Phase or out of Sync with the Plan of God. He has not however lost his salvation and he remains in union with Christ and cannot get out of it. The function of Divine Discipline for this believer is to wake him up to the fact that he is out of sync with the Plan of God and motivate him to use this rebound procedure to get BACK in Phase with the Plan of God. This function of the commands of **1John 1:9**, **Ps 32**, **Ps 38**, **1Cor 11:31** (a few of the many passages regarding Rebound) is totally compatible with GRACE and does not violate in any way the Integrity of God. Our instructions per the Greek of **1John 1:9** are to NAME, CITE, ACKNOWLEDGE, (gr) Homologeo, our sins and BECAUSE God the Father has already judged them and received and been satisfied with payment for them in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ, he cannot judge them again, therefore he is faithful and justified to FORGIVE us when we assume responsibility for them by NAMING them to him. This is a nonmeritorious function and any feeling or emotion involved with it is therefore inconsequential. By the consistent use of this GRACE procedure we can remain in a status quo under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit where we can assimilate Bible Doctrine and whereby we can again produce Divine Good.

You might feel sorry for your sins or want to do something to Make Up for them but this does not mean a thing to God and those people who feel sorry for their sins ALWAYS DO THE SAME SINS AGAIN. Feeling sorry about sins does not now nor ever correct the situation of sin and at BEST it is Human Good and Human Good as the production of the Plan of Satan is not the solution for anything

in the Plan of God. One thing which the believer must get straight in his thinking is that HIS ATTITUDE toward sin is meaningless and it is ONLY God's attitude toward SIN which counts. From God's Perspective of **Propitiation** ALL human sins were imputed to and judged in Christ and his Substitutionary Spiritual Death was satisfactory to God the Father thus ALL sins are now a non-issue with God. His only requirement for us is that we take responsibility for being OUTSIDE the Plan of God by ACKNOWLEDGING that it was our personal sins which put us there, by NAMING them to HIM as part of the "God vs The World" case. By acknowledging our sins He guarantees FORGIVENESS for those we name and in his matchless GRACE also provides for our purification from all unknown or forgotten sins and in this GRACE process there is no way to find any Human Good or human effort. All the this Work was accomplished by God through Christ at the cross thus all the credit goes to God the Father and God the Son and God the Holy Spirit under the system of GRACE and the for entire process of learning these principles of Bible Doctrine. Therefore the Forgiveness of Personal Sin which the believer commits in his life is based on what God accepted as judge at the cross, what The Lord Jesus, The Christ did on the cross and what God the Holy Spirit revealed to us in Bible Doctrine. This is the basis for REBOUND ------- GRACE.

Logistical-Grace or Alpha-Grace

Rom 8:32b is looking at the provision of salvation from the perspective of man as the ENEMY of God we can see that at the cross, God the Father did not spare his unique son, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, from judgment. Therefore as per **Romans 8:32** how can he not freely give to us as Christians, members now of his royal family, ALL THINGS? Understand that when The Lord Jesus, The Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all the sins of the entire human race, past, present and future, all human beings were his enemy. According to **Rom 5**, Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for his enemies, sinners. Understand also that for God to provide a means of spiritually dead man to have a relationship with him being spiritually alive, was the MOST DIFFICULT thing for him to do, yet he did it. When The Lord Jesus, The Christ died the Substitutionary Spiritual Death he therefore did the MOST for his enemies. In essence God provides an OPTION a Mechanism and man simply has to accept it. God cannot force man to do it and man cannot do it by means of any of his own activities or efforts. Now if a person accepts this Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross on his personal behalf for all his sins THEN he instantly becomes the child of God and in this dispensation of history he is part of the Royal Family of God. So, if The Lord Jesus, The Christ did the MOST for his enemies WHAT CAN HE DO FOR HIS ROYAL FAMILY? The fact is that after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Christ and God can do MUCH MORE THAN THE MOST for his family.

Therefore, the whole concept of GRACE in the Plan of God is that God can now do MUCH MORE for believers as Royal Family than He ever did for the unbeliever by providing the potential for their Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This begins with the LOGISTICAL, ALPHA or LIVING GRACE for the believer in Phase II of the Plan of God and believers should therefore be oriented to GRACE based on the fact that the MOST was done for them when they were HOPELESS, HELPLESS AND USELESS and ENEMIES OF GOD, and now that they as believers are still HOPELESS, HELPLESS AND USELESS but no longer enemies being part of the Royal Family of God He can do for them MORE than the MOST.

Because the new believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God has now become a part of the Royal Family of God, in order for him to live in this world ruled by Satan he must be supported by God the Father. This is an OBLIGATION of God to provide all the support for the life of this new believer in order that he might, maybe he will and maybe he won't based again on his Free Will Volition, move from spiritual infancy to Spiritual Maturity and become part of the tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict. This is LOGISTICAL ------- GRACE by which God provides all the food, shelter, clothing, employment, transportation, Pastor Teacher and Bible Doctrine needed for the believer to advance in the Spiritual Life with this still totally DEPENDENT ON THE BELIEVER'S VOLITION. Therefore, Logistical Grace is the obligatory provision of God for EVERY believer from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through all Eternity. It is what is Essential in order to keep the believer alive in the world under the rulership of Satan because he is residing in enemy territory. (**1Pet 3:18**) There can be no spiritual momentum nor spiritual growth apart from the provision of Logistical Grace. Logistical Grace includes life support, keeping the believer alive, as long as it is God's will, and includes the provision of the Gospel of Christ and Bible Doctrine for the believer under Positive Volition. In addition it is the ultimate in security which DOES NOT depend on financial status nor on what one does in life so that if the believer is alive and breathing it is only as a result of this Logistical Grace provision from God. The believer may not have everything he desires in life, having limited funds or limited time with various problems of one sort or another but GOD is his security if he is alive. The more Bible Doctrine one learns thereby gaining a greater understanding of the principles of the **Royal Family Honor Code** the more he also understands that his security is from God via the imputation of Logistical Grace Support. Logically for the believer, if it is GOD who keeps him alive, AND IT IS, it is God's RESPONSIBILITY to provide his security. The importance of Bible Doctrine then becomes obvious in order to understand that part of our Logistical Grace support is having enough TIME in life in order to fulfill the Plan of God for our life. THIS IS SECURITY.

What most believers do not recognize is that they will have Logistical Grace whether they are good or bad, advancing or retrogressing, Grace oriented or Evil oriented BUT this Logistical Grace support is designed specifically to provide what they would need to advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and thus fulfill the Plan of God and glorify God in time. This is LOGISTICAL ------- GRACE or LIVING ------- GRACE. As a part of Logistical Grace support believers will be given in their lifetime all the environment necessary for sustaining life in order to use the the time given and the spiritual provision of Bible Doctrine for spiritual advance. Positive Believers will have the necessary privacy and security needed to maintain the intake of Bible Doctrine no matter the historical climate. Positive Believers, especially in this Church Age, are the line combat soldier in the Angelic Conflict and everything must be and in fact is provided for sustaining these Christian warriors. Logistical Grace has preserved Bible Doctrine for over 3500 years and it is provided so that positive believers can fulfill the requirement to learn Bible Doctrine. The Pastor Teacher, with his spiritual gift, is the believer's Drill Instructor to teach doctrine and he is also provided under Logistical Grace. The bible, which has been preserved in written form for some 3500+ years, is the field manual and the Local Church is the classroom to prepare the believer for what ever spiritual combat comes into his life by means of the intake of spiritual food as Bible Doctrine. The Pastor Teacher, as part of our Logistical Grace support, having the Spiritual gift of communication, does not earn nor deserve his gift but HAS BEEN GIVEN THE GIFT TO PROVIDE FOR BELIEVERS, SPIRITUAL FOOD.

Logistical Grace is the support provided by God for the new believer alive in the world ruled by Satan, which it totally antagonistic to the believer and to God. While he advances from infancy as a believer to maturity all that he has, is or will be is from God as Logistical Grace Support. These are the logistics to keep the believer alive and give him the EQUAL OPPORTUNITY to use his volition to advance in the Plan of God and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Provisions of Logistical Grace for some may be more fancy than those for others but they are still Logistical Grace provision designed to provide what is essential for that believer in his advance in the Spiritual Life. These variations of logistics do not indicate nor represent maturity blessing which cannot be appreciated until the believer breaks into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Prior to reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God there can be no such thing as true blessing from God because maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine is essential for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and bringing with it the CAPACITY for the blessings to be received at that point. God gives us the day, the time, the air we breath and clothes we wear and the food and shelter and transportation we have, one day at a time, in order to give us the EQUAL potential to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive the incredible Super Grace Blessings already set aside for us in Escrow.

As this believer advances from infancy to adolescence and then transitions into spiritual adulthood he will receive testing so that he can exercise his use of Bible Doctrine to solve his problems at progressive levels of the advance in the Plan of God. This testing, for which Logistical Grace is the support structure, begins with Providential Preventative Suffering, to remove as much arrogance as possible from the believer. This continues with continued spiritual advance and moves through 2 stages of 4 categories of Momentum Testing including thought, people, system and disaster tests all to be handled with Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the believer's own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. (**Rom 8:28**)

Super Grace A or Near Grace

IF the new believer functions under his Logistical Grace support system using his assets from God to advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, maybe he will and maybe he won't, (Free Will Volition again) he then is eligible for EXTREME blessings directly from God. This is a direct result of developing great capacity for life and blessing from his advance to Spiritual Maturity via maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. These blessings will come to him in 6 categories and be far above the logistical support he has received during his life to that point. These blessings are called SUPER ------- GRACE meaning SUPER ABUNDANT Grace Blessings. (**James 4:6**, **1Tim 1:14**) These are the Escrow benefits as blessings God has set aside for every believer from Eternity Past waiting to be realized by the believer's fulfillment of the Escrow requirements. The 6 categories which go far above and beyond the Logistical Grace support (**Eph 3:20**) needed for spiritual advance include:

- Spiritual blessings as lucid comprehension of a maximum level of Bible Doctrine.
    - Sharing the perfect happiness of God
    - Occupation with Christ
    - Capacity for life, love, happiness, blessing
    - total appreciation of grace
    - The ability to face undeserved suffering in life

    - The ability to correctly interpret contemporary history and evaluate current events in the light of the Word of God.
    - Freedom from slavery to circumstances in life and adaptability to changing circumstances becoming the greatest innovator in time of historical disaster
    - Grace orientation
    - Freedom orientation
    - Authority orientation
    - Common sense
    - A total sense of security, whether in prosperity or disaster
- Temporal blessings as prosperity in many aspects of his life
    - Wealth, either received or acquired
    - Professional prosperity: great influence, leadership dynamics, success, promotion, recognition in one's sphere of life
    - The ability to assume responsibility and authority without emotional inspiration or pseudo motivation
    - Social prosperity, great friends
    - Sexual prosperity with one's right man or right woman
    - Technical prosperity or mental prosperity: the ability to think, and concentrate increase
    - Cultural prosperity: maximum enjoyment of drama, art, literature, music, history
    - Establishment prosperity: enjoyment of freedom, privacy, protection of life and property from criminals and reprisal.
    - Health.
- Blessing by Association for those people associated with this believer.
    - Those in association or relationship with this believer are blessed either directly by God or indirectly from the overflow of his Super Grace provisions
    - Blessing by association for loved ones
    - Blessing in business life, social life, and in a local church.
    - Geographical blessings to the believer's city, state and nation.
- Historical Impact for the nation in which he lives (Because The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History through the mature believer in the Pivot)
    - He carries generation and stabilizes his generation and becomes a stabilizer for future historical generations
    - Tranquility and impact without disturbance in the ebb and flow of history
    - He rides on the crest of the wave of blessing and rises above historical disaster
- Heritage Impact (**2Tim 1:5-6**) as continued blessing for the children or parents of a believer when he dies.
- Dying blessings making the final aspect of the LIFE of the believer the greatest experience and source of blessing for the believer's life
    - The curse of death with its pain and fear is removed (**Ps 116:3-4**, **Ps 116:8-9**, **Ps 116:15**)
    - We call this DYING ------- GRACE.

Bravo Grace, Super Grace-B

Every mature believer will receive a period of time to enjoy these blessings before moving ahead under his own Positive Volition toward advanced Spiritual Maturity and into the "no man's land' of

satanic system distraction and testing. If the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God continues his momentum in the Spiritual Life after reaching Spiritual Maturity, maybe he will and maybe he won't, (Free Will Volition again) then he will move into the realm of great pressure in life, from satanic systems to dissuade him from continued advance, which will again be supported by God with the original Logistical Grace which combines with the Super Grace blessings (**Phil 4:5**) to enable this believer to overcome this pressure from Satan to prevent his further advance in the Spiritual Life. (**2Tim 2:10**, **3:8-12**) This is BRAVO ------- GRACE which combines all the aspects of the Alpha Grace or Logistical Grace provisions from God with the 5 categories of his Super Grace blessings for time to enable the believer to resist and overcome the pressures from the satanic systems placed against him. BRAVO ------- GRACE is the support for the believer moving from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God toward SUPER Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in what can be considered status of the No Man's Land of Spiritual Maturity being under SUPER ------ GRACE – B.

Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and Sharing the Happiness of God begins at the point of reaching the border of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and coming under Super-Grace A. As the believer moves from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through No Man's Land under Super-Grace B toward Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and Sharing the Happiness of God become part of his Bravo or Super Grace B provisions which is his Logistical Grace support in crossing no man's land. As the believer moves into the greatest battlefield in life where there is the greatest pressure in life leaving Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and moving into the No Man's Land under Bravo or Super Grace B, he is ambushed by the reversionistic believers God has kept alive just for this purpose. He cannot cross No Man's Land without understanding and concluding the Total Depravity of Man once every DAY. He will be ambushed by EVERY reversionistic friend he has ever had or ever will have and by all the subtleties of Evil and the satanic systems and this is where the greatest distractions to Bible Doctrine will occur and where even family and loved ones get into distracting him from Bible Doctrine. This will require the use of every bit of Bible Doctrine he has ever learned but it is worth the effort which will strengthen his resident doctrine and keep his priorities straight with Bible Doctrine as Priority #1.

Ultra Super Grace

Ultra-Super Grace is the blessing which comes from reaching and holding Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. IF the believer moving through No Man's Land continues his momentum in the Spiritual Life, and again maybe he will and maybe he won't based on his Free Will Volition, and reaches Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he will be confronted with the greatest testing imaginable in life just as JOB was. This is Evidence Testing and is the believer presented as the greatest example as Evidence for the Prosecution in the Angelic Conflict Trail to refute totally the satanic impugning of the character of God. However as a result of the incredible Logistical Grace support from God with the Bravo or Super Grace B combination he becomes eligible for ULTRA ------- SUPER ------- Grace provisions from God. Blessings from God directly which cannot be imagined for time. These blessings will come as additional support for the believer who will received maximum imaginable testing in time as EVIDENCE Testing in 2 categories:

- In relationship to Man and his systems
- In relationship to God and focus on him and his systems.

Because of the Logistical Grace and Bravo Grace support and the ULTRA-SUPER Grace blessings this believer will not be daunted in his motivation to continue his momentum to Maximum Glorification of God and pleasing God in time as he fulfills the entire Protocol Plan of God for the believer in this Church Age. (**2Tim 3:8-12)** This is ULTRA ------- SUPER ------- ABUNDANT ------- GRACE.

Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God

After reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and moving into No Man's Land when there is persistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and continued spiritual advance the final objective of the Spiritual Life is reached, Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with its Ultra-Super-Grace Blessings. This is by no means "sinless perfection" but is a place of maximum blessing in time and also a place of maximum antagonism from all the forces of evil which include:

- Satan or his Fallen Angels
- Reversionistic believers as primary actors
- Reversionistic Unbelievers as well

The believer who reached this pinnacle of the Spiritual Life in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receives from God his Ultra-Super Grace enhanced blessings will also receive the highest decoration for a believer in eternity. In Ultra-Super Grace the believer is not perfect but resides under a principle never to exist before so that NO ONE CAN ATTACK THE BELIEVER UNDER ULTRA-SUPER GRACE WITH IMPUNITY. **(Phil 1:28-30**) Those attacking this believer will receive maximum misery from their Divine Discipline. Ultra-Super Grace is maximum blessing in life and maximum enjoyment in life for the believer who has reached and held Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This believer is always under pressure but the pressure intensifies his happiness and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. In fact the greater the pressure on the this believer who is under Ultra-Super Grace blessings the greater will be his blessings and the greater the misery to those who bring this pressure on him. He will be the recipient of Maximum Satanic Opposition under Evidence Testing and be given the **Mantle of Suffering** decoration for time and as part of his reward in Eternity. This was situation of Moses when he married his 2nd wife the Ethiopian Woman and his sister Miriam pressured him constantly and this resulted in leprosy for her. The believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God also has maximum historical impact and is the preserver of his generation and also has blessing by association to the maximum. In Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under Ultra-Super Grace this blessing by association will leave a heritage impact for future generations. The historical impact of the believer under Ultra-Super Grace punctures the sick society which has helpless people made helpless by their government to enable them to only be able to live on welfare under government slavery. The sick society always encourages the criminal and are soft on criminals, communists, moslems and all enemies of Freedom and God. The sick society is also is anti-military, as seen in the United States of America since the 1960's, because the military represents the Laws of Divine Establishment from the standpoint of national freedom and they are also anti Law Enforcement where the police officer represents the Laws of Divine Establishment from the standpoint of local freedom. The greatness of the believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and under Ultra-Super Grace is to puncture the sick society and destroy the sick society.

When this believer reaches the final destination of Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and comes under Ultra-Super Grace, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and Sharing the Happiness of God are intensified to the maximum and Christ is glorified to the maximum. This believer is completely pure in the soul and free from contamination and infiltration from Evil the satanic policy influencing his thought processes. In addition there is total freedom from Human Good. EVIL is the thought processes in the soul and expression or application of that thought is in part Human Good. Therefore lacking the influence of evil there will be no production of Human Good. This results when the believer is crossing no man's land the great spiritual pressure battlefield and he successfully passes all the tests of ambush over and over again therefore the only production he will have in life will be Divine Good. Reaching Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God then means that believer will be totally free from any hangup of any kind so that everyone in his periphery will hung up on him and as a result they attack him and are cursed for it while he receives maximum blessing from it.

The pressure of No Man's Land is what will then move the believer into Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and under Ultra-Super Grace. In this status every blessing he received in Super-Grace A and under Super Grace B is now vastly intensified. This was Moses during final 1/3 of his life, the 40 years of traversing the Desert with the Jews. Under Ultra-Super Grace all blessings are intensified, Occupation with the Person of Christ, Sharing the Happiness of God, Material Blessings of all kinds, Wealth, Professional success or promotion along with all the Blessings by Association. For the believer under Ultra-Super Grace blessing by association comes in 2 categories:

- While living.
  - In Business, Social Life, Family Life, ETC
- While dying and after death.
  - Heritage Impact on the generations which follow
  - Historical Impact on the nation in which you have lived

This is often why reversionistic believers are blessed in the midst of their reversionism and between bouts of terrible Divine Discipline when they receive blessing because of their association with their mature parents of close friends. Or at times with parents being blessed by their children being under Ultra-Super Grace. Blessing by association is a factor of life which cannot ever be ignored and when a believer under Ultra-Super Grace is in any organization that organization and its leadership will be incredibly successful. The concept is that you never know when you are going to run into a believer who has reached some level of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God so when you do hang around them and let some of the blessing rub off.

The believer who has reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is under Ultra-Super Grace will be the most highly decorated believer in eternity like Paul, Moses, Isaiah, Jeremiah, David, and others who all will have HUGE areas of heaven to administer. (**Phil 3:12-16**) When a believer is under Ultra-Super Grace it is the ideal situation in life because his enemies and those who despise, malign, seek retaliation or revenge against him and all those whose arrogance has been challenged by his very existence who would do anything and everything possible to destroy him though none of it will work will simply intensify his incredible blessing. How wonderful it would be to have all those who gossip, malign, seek to destroy or want to retaliate or seek vengeance

against one have all this turned against them with double Divine Discipline and then for him to receive intensified double blessing. The only consideration for this believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is when is the Lord going to be ready for him to cross the high golden bridge to enter eternity. In addition this believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under Ultra-Super Grace will WALK right through historical disaster and come to the greatest things which God has for him in life after historical disaster even the disaster of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline on his nation. (**Phil 2:12**, **2Tim 2:10**, **Rom 8:28)**

Surpassing Grace

The Lord Jesus, The Christ keeps each believer alive in order to give us enough time to reach Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive Ultra-Super-Grace blessings. In eternity each believer will wear a uniform which will be greater than any uniform in Human History as the uniform of the Resurrection Body exactly like that of The Lord Jesus, The Christ after his resurrection. These uniforms, worn over the Resurrection Body, will wear decorations for the believers who advance in the Spiritual Life with special decorations for those believers who make it to and beyond Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. When the believer stands before the Judgment Seat of Christ there is only ONE answer for those who do not receive these special decorations and blessings, "NO EXCUSE SIR", since He provides everything for each believer to reach that status. He gives to us a Right Pastor Teacher, a positive congregation, the preservation of Bible Doctrine, the sustaining of life with food, shelter, clothing, and any other necessity for each day, science and technology. We therefore have all the Alpha Grace support of all things from Logistical-Grace needed for consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. If when we stand before the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and we do not receive the maximum Surpassing Grace blessings of the Alpha Cross, Beta Cross, Gamma Cross, Delta Cross, Epsilon Cross, Omega or Ultra Cross which we should receive we can only say, "NO EXCUSE SIR". The believer must remember always that even if or when he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receives Super Grace A and B blessings, he is to still remain consistent in advancing in RANKS to reach further into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore he is to remain under authority either of a Pastor Teacher or for the Pastor Teacher of the word of God itself. Surpassing Grace is that which is Above and Beyond Super Grace (**Phil 3:20-21**)

Surpassing Grace blessings are for the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and received their Escrow Super Grace A Blessings for time in their life and hold their position to the point of receiving dying grace. These are the incredible rewards (**Eph 2:7**) which are eternal rewards and blessings which believers receive at the Judgment Seat of Christ when his function as Royal Family of God, Royal Priest and Royal Ambassador for Christ is evaluated. These are the Escrow benefits as phenomenal blessings and rewards (**1Cor 3:13-14**) set aside by God for each individual believer in Eternity Past waiting for the requirements of the Escrow Contract to be fulfilled. These **rewards** are presented by the analogy of the decorations which **ROMAN** and other military organizations presented to soldiers who distinguish themselves by their service. The Romans used a system of metal buttons or coins attached to the sash of the tunic and for extreme valor there were woven golden wreaths of various designs. In other military organizations these special valor decorations were in the form of crosses like the Iron Cross for the **German soldiers** or the Victoria Cross for the **British soldier**. If the believer during his life in time has been

consistent in his spiritual advance especially if he has reached Spiritual Maturity and maintained his status as a mature believer then his Escrow Benefits will be realized at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. These eternal rewards include a myriad of rewards for all believers under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine similar to the coins or buttons of the Roman Tunic Sash.

These are, however, special blessings and exceptional rewards for the believer who has advanced in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and has received Super-Grace A blessings, Super-Grace B blessings, or Ultra-Super-Grace blessings and avoided or minimized Human Good functions in his life. However, there are a multitude of other blessings which are designed as rewards for any and every believer who has made any level of spiritual progress as advancement in his Spiritual Life in time. These varied blessings are not specifically addressed in scripture except to note that they will exist.

Principle of the Wreath, Crown or Cross

The Greek word STEPHANOS is equivalent to the Latin which is for Civic Crown while the Greek means Wreath. The Wreath or Crown or Cross is a Roman or Greek or Modern derived decoration of the highest order and is something to be worn on the head or suspended around the neck as a display of the great progress in the Spiritual Life this believer has made as a result of using the Grace provisions from God. The Wreath in fact glorifies GOD for all eternity when a believer qualifies to receive it. However, the exceptional blessings which go with each and every Wreath VARY tremendously. There are definitely 3 and possibly MORE than 3 of these Wreaths or Crosses for the mature believer under Surpassing Grace Blessings. (**Eph 2:7**, **2Tim 4:8**, **1Thes 2:19-20**, **1Pet 5:4**, **1Cor 3:14-15**)

All believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will not only have maximum love for The Lord Jesus, The Christ under Occupation with the Person of Christ but they will love the rapture of the church as the parade in which they will receive and display their formal decorations. NOT everyone will be decorated and be able to display their decorations ONLY those who have it coming based on their level of successful completion of the previous campaign, life as a believer in time. This campaign starts for the believer the moment he enters the Plan of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive **39 irrevocable assets** for our Spiritual Life in time and eternity and we also are given a specified time on this earth AFTER salvation and then we depart from this life by the rapture or death. There will be decorations and a parade which begins with the rapture as all believers of the Church Age will pass in review. The Lord Jesus, The Christ will then give decorations to all the Royal Family of God who have made advances in the Spiritual Life and to those who who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he will give the various Stephanos or WREATHS of honor. These special eternal decorations and their rewards are for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. All are acquired as a result of the proper utilization of Logistical-Grace support given every believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. In fact, everything in the life of the believer depends on that Logistical-Grace support from God. The wreath is something we will wear but there are incredible variations of blessing and reward which go along with each wreath and in fact every decoration. These are all representative of the fantastic blessings which the believer has received in time and will be receiving in eternity above and beyond the Resurrection Body which will be minus

the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good. (**Phil 3:20-21**) In addition for various Divine Good productions in the Spiritual Life (**1Tim 6:18-19**) based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine and being under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, there will be Oak Leaf Clusters or Precious Gems to adorn the Wreaths or Crosses which that believer receives. (**Heb 11:9-13**, **James 1:25**, **James 2:12-13**)

The result of having been persistent in acquiring maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul includes the ability to attain and hold Maturity Adjustment or Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God while receiving Super Grace A, B, or Ultra-Super Grace blessings (**Phil 3:12-14**) and acquiring Surpassing Grace blessing in eternity. (**Heb 11:5-6**) These are special blessings and rewards for this believer in eternity over and above what other believers may enjoy in heaven. There will be vastly varying degrees of blessing and reward for believers in heaven and the LOWEST degree is fantastic beyond imagination while the highest is far, far beyond that. The Judgment Seat of Christ is for the evaluation of believers where by all believers will receive rewards for their level of spiritual advance and those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond will receive phenomenal blessings, rewards and decorations for all of eternity and who will be in a higher category of ultimate sanctification. (**2Cor 5:10**) The Lord Jesus, The Christ will give these blessings to the believer in the beginning of the eternal future after he receives his Resurrection Body.

Crowns, wreaths or crosses are used to designate Surpassing Grace rewards and blessing for the Church Age Royal Family of God in eternity. At the time of the writing of the New Testament Scripture the **Roman military** had the greatest system of rewards and decorations EVER. No roman soldier who ever was decorated was ever ignored after that. In the United States military when even a private receives the Medal of Honor then EVERYONE in every service of any rank after that MUST initiate a salute with him. This is military courtesy for the Medal of Honor recipient who is ranked higher than any other rank in the services. Thus (gr) "Stephanos" being a military term is appropriately used for the highest decoration for the Royal Family of God. In the roman system of military decorations lower decorations were worn lower on the uniform and the highest decorations for their military were worn on the head as the Stephanos or Wreath or Crown. There were a great variety of spectacular decorations for these soldiers including:

- Arm Bands of Bronze, Silver or Gold == to the Bronze Star or Silver Star.
- Necklaces == to the Crosses, Distinguished Service, Navy, Air force
- Metal Discs or Coins == Campaign ribbons or medals on a diagonal leather harness strap
- Silver Spear Head decorations for officers == Expert or Combat Infantry badge today.
- The highest decoration of all the (gr) "STEPHANOS" or WREATH or (lat) CIVIC CROWN
    - The "Stephanos" WREATH == Medal of Honor or Victoria Cross etc.
    - Gold Oak Leaf Wreath - Lowest wreath
    - Gold Laurel or Ivy Wreath – Next in Rank
    - Woven Golden Grass Wreath – Highest decoration available
    - There was a guaranteed stipend of at LEAST 50,000 per year until death.
- These decorations all carried with them financial rewards.

There are 6 of these highest decorations for mature believers found in the doctrines of the bible. Therefore when a believer receives the "Stephanos" or Crown, Wreath or Cross, he has the highest decoration for all eternity which he will never lose and which will glorify God forever. Consequently

those who glorify God the most receive the highest decorations for eternity. For Old Testament Scripture believers who reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Cities are related to their rewards. These Wreaths are the decoration for the Resurrection Body which will forever throughout all eternity glorify The Lord Jesus, The Christ beyond anything else which will be seen in heaven. This wreath will be breathtaking in its glamour and beauty and will give anyone who sees it an INSTANT response of Glorifying Christ. The Wreath will be an indication to all that the wearer of such a wreath during his time on this earth also glorified Christ more than his contemporary believers and more than most other believers with few exceptions in all generations. {In order to provide a clearer doctrinal understanding of the blessings available to believers in eternity under surpassing grace I have deviated significantly from the classification system used by Col. R. B. Thieme in his lessons on Surpassing Grace. After a careful review and analysis of the lessons he taught regarding Surpassing Grace I have made these changes. For consistency I have chosen to use the Greek alphabet as the classification index. I believe this will make the overall scope of surpassing grace more understandable to the believer. If you desire the original classification system contact **R. B. Thieme Jr. Bible Ministries**.}

- **Alpha Cross** == The Stephanos or Golden Wreath or Crown of Maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God for reaching and holding Spiritual Maturity and receiving Super-Grace or Ultra-Super Grace blessings. (**2Tim 4:7-8**)
- **Beta Cross** == The Stephanos or Golden Wreath or Crown of Perseverance for traversing No Man's Land and receiving Super Grace B or Bravo Grace blessings. (**James 1;12**, **Rev 2:10**)
- **Gamma Cross** == The Stephanos or Golden Wreath or Crown of Glory as the highest decoration for the Church Age believer only for the Pastor Teacher for fighting successfully in the Angelic Conflict and leading believers to various levels of Spiritual Maturity.
    - This will have variations depending on whether the Pastor Teacher has reached Maturity adjustment to the Justice of God or traversed No Man's Land or entered Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- **Delta Cross** == The Stephanos or Golden Wreath or Crown of Rejoicing for successful Witnessing and / or Evangelism.
- **Epsilon Cross** == The Stephanos or Golden Wreath or Crown of Exaltation or Happiness ONLY for Pastor Teachers as a result of believers under them advancing in the Spiritual Life receiving lower rewards at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ but not the Stephanos or Wreaths. (**1Thes 2:19**)
- **Omega or Ultra Cross** == The Stephanos or Golden Wreath or Crown of Life the highest decoration for the believer in the Church Age for reaching Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving Ultra-Super Grace. (**Phil 4:1**, **1Thes 2:19**, **1Pet 5:4**)
- **Oak Leaf Clusters** or **Precious Gems** to adorn the various crosses or wreaths awarded for various production in the Spiritual Life including that of the Pastor Teacher for anyone he has led to spiritual maturity.

- **Alpha Oak Leaf Cluster** or **Sapphire** == For the Pastor Teacher leading believers to Spiritual Maturity who then receive the Alpha Cross and are beneficiaries of Super-Grace A blessings, to adorn his Alpha Cross or Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness).
- **Beta Oak Leaf Cluster** or **Ruby** == For the Pastor Teacher leading believers to Spiritual Maturity who enter No Man's Land and who become beneficiaries of Super-Grace B blessings, to adorn his Beta Cross or Wreath of Perseverance.
- **Omega** or **Ultra Oak Leaf Cluster** or **Diamond** == For the Pastor Teacher leading Believers to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God who become beneficiaries of Ultra-Super-Grace blessings, to adorn his Omega Cross or his Wreath of Life.
- **Glory Oak Leaf Cluster** or **Emerald** == For the Pastor Teacher leading men to discover their spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher or Evangelist possibly to adorn his Gamma Cross or Wreath of Glory.

Alpha Cross or Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God

Alpha Cross == **Wreath or Crown of Maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness)** (**2Tim 4:7-8**) and represents total fulfillment of spiritual progress in attaining Spiritual Maturity. This is the decoration for attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God at any level including Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, moving into No Man's and receiving Ultra-Super-Grace, Super-Grace A or Super-Grace B blessings in time. This is a decoration for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is receiving Super Grace A and is called home by the Lord while taking his R&R in the periphery of Spiritual Maturity. It is also for the believer who is advancing in No Man's Land toward Ultra Super-Grace when he is called home and also for the believer who reaches and holds Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is receiving Ultra-Super Grace.

This **Crown or Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God** == the Medal of Honor for all those believers who reach and break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and It comes in 3 categories:

- For Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
- For Perseverance in No Man's Land
- For Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God

Believers start at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God as an infant believer knowing NOTHING of the Spiritual Life or Plan of God. He then advances in the Spiritual Life ***IF*** he maintains his status of having the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and has persistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine so that he eventually passes through adolescence and reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. When he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he receives a Super Grace blessing package in 6 categories. By maintaining the status of any level of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and upon receipt of the last category of Super-Grace blessing, Dying-Grace, this believer at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ will receive the Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness) as do all believers who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or surpassed it. This is not for miss goody two shoes or little Lord Fauntleroy and does not require being a very good little boy or girl in the Christian Way of Life. It simply requires fulfilling EVERY

divine objective which God has established for the believer in time by advancing in thinking from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is total fulfillment of the objectives of the Spiritual Life and only means "righteousness" in terms of being a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for advanced Divine Viewpoint thinking capacity. Every believer who maintains his status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will receive this but ***there is also another decoration for the believer in*** **Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God** ***who receives his Ultra-Super Grace blessing enhancements.***

The Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness) is HONOR in the sense of fulfilling divine statutes or duty toward God. Righteousness is (gr) Dikaiosune = Adjustment to the Justice of God, and represents the development of the Greek sense of law and indicates refinement of Abstract Thought. It is therefore a word for CIVIL VIRTUE, OBSERVANCE OF LAW, FULFILLMENT OF ONE'S DUTY. It is used as a state of life and fulfillment of duty toward God and is the perfect way to describe breaking into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving Super Grace and going on to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving Ultra-Super Grace. The Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness) or Alpha Cross is for fulfillment of the duty and responsibility of the Royal Family of God whereby the believer breaks the maturity barrier and fulfills every objective designed by God in GRACE for every believer. The final objective for the believer in Christ in this life is to reach Ultra Super Grace and it is OPEN to each and every believer. The final objective for the believer in Christ in this life is to reach Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive Ultra-Super-Grace blessings and this objective is OPEN to each and every believer. However, one can only reach this objective by strict academic and self discipline and by recognizing the authority of one's right Pastor Teacher and getting under his teaching and STAYING THERE. This can be accomplished by any and every believer and results in going into dying grace like a smooth cruise from life into eternity and is as easy as POURING WINE FROM A CUP.

Therefore, the believer receiving the (gr) "Stephanos" of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness) receives an additional set of blessings and rewards for eternity. It is for holding the ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and for moving through No Man's Land and for moving into Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and involves an additional set of blessing and rewards for eternity. It most likely is given in different categories or classes for each level of Spiritual Maturity which a believer reaches. This may require some differences in the Wreath or simply additional Oak Leaf Clusters or Different Gemstones to adorn the Alpha Cross or the Golden Wreath of the believer. This, as will all of the Surpassing Grace decorations, will glorify God forever and there is no excuse for any believer not having this one. So this is a wreath worn forever in eternity for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and continues there or advances further into maturity and in addition to the decoration itself there will the blessings of position and authority in eternity as Surpassing Grace. This wreath is total fulfillment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and then moving out of this life into eternity under Dying Grace blessings. This wreath will be the most common of the decorations in eternity for those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and hold this status to the end of his life. All believers in the class of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Perseverance in No

Man's Land and Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will have one decoration in common the Wreath of Righteousness, though this may be in different configurations or have additional adornments. Those who receive this *decoration will also be given great areas to rule in eternity.*

Receipt of this Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness) means that this believer has received the Super Grace blessing package in time as Super Grace A, Super Grace B or Ultra-Super Grace. This is the 3rd class Civic Wreath like the laurel or oak leave wreath one for the Roman soldiers. This decoration signifies that this believer has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or persevered in No Man's Land or reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this will glorify God forever.

The pastor who leads his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he receives the Alpha Cross or Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness) for himself reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and an Oak leaf Cluster or possibly a sapphire to decorate his Alpha Cross for leading other believers to this status quo. This Alpha Cross brings with it great blessing in eternity. This is called in the bible the Wreath (gr) Stephanos or Crown of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness) (gr) Dikaiosune, and connotes the fulfillment of the objective or reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in time.

Beta Cross - Wreath or Crown of Perseverance

This is for the believer who moves into No Man's Land and receives his Super-Grace B blessings and support, the combination of his lifelong Logistical Grace and his Super Grace A blessings from reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, as he moves toward Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This believer has used this "Bravo-Grace" as he crosses No Man's Land even to the point of reaching Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving Ultra-Super-Grace and thus receives the Bravo Cross. The Pastor Teacher who passes through No Man's Land himself also receives the Beta Cross and also Beta Oak leaf Clusters for leading believers to No Man's Land where they receive Super-Grace B blessings. (**James 1:12a**)

Gamma Cross - Wreath or Stephanos of Glory

When any pastor is faithful and consistent in the study of Bible Doctrine he first grows in the Spiritual Life himself and eventually will reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and if persistent move beyond this status toward Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and then he can lead his congregation to his level of Spiritual Maturity by his continued communication of the Bible Doctrine he has learned. His personal consistent study of Bible Doctrine advances the Pastor Teacher and also prepares the pastor for his teaching which is specifically designed to bring his congregation along with him through Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond if possible. This is ONLY for the Pastor Teacher who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receives Super Grace or Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receives Ultra-Super Grace ***AND*** leads some members of his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. (**Phil 4:1**, **1Thes 2:19-20**, **1Pet 5:4**) This is the highest decoration available to the Pastor Teacher and is a special decoration for faithfulness in communication of Bible Doctrine on the part of those with this spiritual gift. (**1Cor 3:11-16**) Therefore, the only one who is eligible to receive this decoration is the Pastor Teacher who

reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and LEADS some members of his congregation by his faithful teaching of Bible Doctrine to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, into No Man's Land, or Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. There are surely variations in this crown based on if the Pastor Teacher brings his congregation to the point of receiving Super-Grace A, B, or Ultra-Super Grace blessings for time. For leading his congregation to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where they receive Ultra-Super Grace behind himself he receives the unique decoration the Ultra Cross the Crown of Glory. For the pastor who leads his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God receives the Alpha Cross for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving Super Grace and Alpha Oak leaf Clusters for leading believers to this status quo. The Pastor Teacher who passes through No Man's Land himself receives the Beta Cross and Beta Oak leaf Clusters for leading believers to No Man's Land where they receive Super Grace B. Having reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and having received his own Ultra-Super Grace blessings he receives the Wreath of Life, the Omega or Ultra Cross and for leading members of his congregation to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where they also receive Ultra-Super Grace behind him, he receives Omega or Ultra Oak Leaf Clusters to adorn his Omega Cross or Wreath of Life and the unique decoration of the Gamma Cross the Crown of Glory. Therefore, in order to be eligible to receive this decoration for eternity the Pastor Teacher must already have received the at least one of either the Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness), the Wreath of Perseverance or the Wreath of Life. He MUST be a male believer with the gift of Pastor Teacher and have a congregation of at least 3 believers whom at least 1 has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, traversed No Man's Land, or Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, the faithful, persistent, consistent Pastor Teacher who studies and teaches Bible Doctrine in a dogmatic expository fashion will be the HIGHEST decorated person in Eternity. However, the Pastor Teacher cannot grow by listening to others teach Bible Doctrine but must engage in his own study using Isogogic, Exegetic, and Categorical approaches to the word of God.

Delta Cross – Wreath of Rejoicing

Witnessing for The Lord Jesus, The Christ provides rewards in time and in eternity. There are 3 rewards for the one who Witnesses for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

- **HOPE** - in time, which has to do with seeing again in the eternal future those whom the believer has witnessed to and who have responded with Positive Volition at Gospel hearing. This is the anticipation of meeting people again in eternity which the believer has had the pleasure of leading to the Lord. His HOPE or CONFIDENCE is not regarding just the events at and after the Rapture of the church and the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ but this is in addition to that throughout eternity. This is the seeing and confronting the FACES of the people that have been led to the Lord who will be there with him in eternity and there will be happiness for all eternity with regard to these people.
- **JOY** - also in life which is inner happiness in life as a result of seeing people making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This is one of the greatest happinesses in life knowing that these friends and loved ones will spend eternity with with him. This is his reward in time as inner happiness which comes from being on this miserable earth for this short time and as a result of presenting The Lord Jesus, The Christ to others and they respond to this. This is the

greatest thing which can be done for any human being, leading them to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.

- **Wreath** or **Crown of Rejoicing** - In addition to these rewards there is reward for eternity provided for any believer who has successfully witnessed for Christ and has provided the proper, accurate information resulting in an unbeliever making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. (**1Thes 2:13-20**)

Epsilon Cross or Wreath of Happiness & Exaltation

Epsilon Cross is the Stephanos or Wreath or Crown of Exaltation or Happiness for Pastor Teachers as a result of believers under them advancing in the Spiritual Life receiving rewards at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ but not having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. (**1Thes 2:19**) Obviously then there are going to be a very large number of buck privates and non-commissioned officers in heaven who will be somewhere in between but there is no excuse in heaven's Table of Organization for everyone NOT having become a general or admiral. The Wreaths or Stephanos for the believers who reach and hold some level of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God do not express the entire range of decorations given at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ but only the HIGHEST and those who have reached a maximum level of growth in the Spiritual Life in their lifetime. There will be other decorations for every level of advancement in the Spiritual Life however there will be many people who will pass before the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ and will receive nothing except the burning of their Human Good and the experience of incredible regret and shame. Therefore, there are actually many levels of Decoration of which the Cities for the Old Testament Scripture mature believers and Wreaths for the Church Age mature believers are only the highest levels. All believers who receive a Decoration for their level of advance in the Spiritual Life in time will glorify God for ever and have special blessings and rewards for all eternity.

The roman system was to give any soldier who won a decoration a certain amount of money and some land. The system of decoration for the soldier was described in some detail along with their placement on the uniform. Whatever rewards are within the sphere of the advancing believer from infancy to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God are unknown to us and not revealed and they would most likely be analogous to the roman soldiers at Paul's time. These decorations started with campaign medals worn across the chest on a leather band or on a belt. Even today in the United States Army, Navy, Marine Corps, Air Force you can tell the whole history of a service man's life in uniform by the decorations and markings of his uniform. In the roman army the decorations started on the arms and moved up on his uniform so that the highest decorations would be worn on his head as a wreath woven of Gold which would be comparable to the Medal of Honor.

Omega or Ultra Cross – Wreath of Life

The Ultra or Omega Cross is the Wreath or Crown of Life is only for believers who reach and hold Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive their Ultra-Super Grace blessings in time. (**James 1:12**, **Rev 2:10**) This is the decoration for the believer who attains Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Status **Phil 2:13** which is said to be "above and beyond his will and good pleasure". This Decoration is worn on the body of the believer who reaches Ultra Super-Grace. This is the final objective for the believer in the Christian Way of Life, reaching and holding Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving Enhanced-Super or Ultra-Super Grace. Therefore his daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the Filling

of God the Holy Spirit is concentration on the "word of life" which leads to the attainment of the Wreath or Crown of Life the Omega or Ultra Cross the decoration which sets this believer above all others in heaven. This decoration is accompanied by the **Mantle of Satanic Opposition** for the Evidence Testing which the believer has endured for a period of time as part of his Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under his Ultra-Super Grace blessings. This believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God does not receive this Decoration and its reward for suffering but for his continuous Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine after Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with its Super Grace blessings has been achieved and held. Therefore this wreath will only be given to believers who reach and hold advanced maturity and receive Ultra-Super Grace the highest peak of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and leave this life under dying grace.

Therefore this believer will wear the Alpha Cross or Wreath of Righteousness the Beta Cross or Wreath of Perseverance along with the Omega Cross or Wreath of Life as a result of his reaching and holding Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God until his death. In addition he will also wear the Mantle of Suffering having reached and held his position against all pressures from Satan in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The Pastor Teacher then also receives Omega or Ultra Oak Leaf Clusters to adorn his Omega Cross or Wreath of Life along with his unique decoration of the Gamma Cross the Crown of Glory for leading members of his congregation to follow him to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Mantel of Suffering from Satanic Opposition

The Mantle of Suffering Decoration is ONLY for the believer who has reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is receiving his Ultra-Super Grace blessings in time. This believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under Ultra-Super Grace is well known to Satan and his demons. This believer receives as the highest decoration in time, a **Mantle of Undeserved Suffering** resulting from passing through Evidence Testing which is transferred with him to eternity. This is opposition from Evil and all the satanic forces both visible and invisible and is in **Phil 3:10** participation in Christ's suffering throughout his life (Not the Cross nor the temptations of Satan). This is the constant pressure which occurred because The Lord Jesus, The Christ was under pressure from Satan and his followers constantly. Just prior to this Mantle being presented to the believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God there is incredible intensified pressure where he must decide between Bible Doctrine and friends, loved ones and situations in life. There are many decisions to be made there and many pressures because once in this status he will receive the highest and greatest accolades available in this life. At the same time he will have maximum glorification of The Lord Jesus Christ and also please God. Obviously, Satan does not like it when Christ is glorified by the believer who has reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receives Ultra-Super Grace. This undeserved suffering of the Advanced Mature believer is a high honor and brings with it a great decoration but it requires preparation for it. This status of the believer who has reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is receiving Ultra-Super Grace blessings is as if God permits Satan to use every device possible in that last stage of Spiritual Maturity to prevent the believer from making the final great step into receiving Dying Grace and then awaiting Surpassing Grace for Eternity. This is

undeserved suffering testing for this believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as EVIDENCE for the Prosecution in the Angelic Conflict Appeal. This final stage of suffering for the believer is extremely important for the believer to wade through but it is not really a problem IF Bible Doctrine remains Priority #1 in his scale of values and he has bravo grace and Ultra-Super Grace support with maximum Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and maximum Sharing of the Happiness of God. This undeserved suffering is from:

- Satan or the Fallen Angels
- His system of Evil
- Reversionistic believers as primary actors
- Unbelievers contact occurs

In the undeserved suffering of Evidence Testing of Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under Ultra-Super Grace blessings no matter what is done to the believer nor how much or what type of suffering he has in life it intensifies his blessing in time and also for eternity. Receiving the Mantle of Suffering blessing resulting from total satanic opposition intensifies happiness as just simple happiness. As per **Rev 2:10**, Believers in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under their Ultra-Super Grace blessings are NOT to fear what they will be enduring and this infers Divine Good for these believers. This intensive undeserved suffering which results in presentation of the Mantle of Suffering will have all those who do not like this believer and who despise him and oppose him because of his attainment of Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God turning against him. These are the forces of the satanic system of EVIL for ruling this earth and include all angelic and human activities within Evil directed against this believer. However, for this believer the MORE he is pressured the greater will be his blessing and happiness. This is the greatest place to be in life for any believer since there will be great opposition but it will be based on the incredible spiritual advance and victory which has been attained and the more it intensifies the greater will be the happiness and blessing. A believer has not lived in Ultra Super Grace until he has about 40 people who despise him so much that they turn colors if he is within 100 yards of them. God just takes these oppositions and pressures and makes them into a nice decoration and hangs this around the neck of the believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This decoration will endure through eternity and is a bit higher than the Stephanos or Wreath of Righteousness for reaching Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving Ultra-Super Grace.

Therefore, under the principle of the Mantle of Suffering, the greater the pressure on the Advanced Mature believer the greater are his blessings and the *greater is the misery brought to those who bring this pressure on him*. Perfect examples include the situation with Moses when he married his 2nd wife and his Sister Miriam pressured him and this turned to leprosy for Miriam. (**Deut 24:8-9, Num 12:1-10**) Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under Ultra-Super Grace blessings is the ideal situation in life and the believer's enemies, those who despise, malign, seek retaliation or revenge against him and all those whose arrogance has been challenged by his very existence who would do anything and everything possible to destroy him will find that none of it will work but simply intensify his already incredible blessings. How wonderful it will be for the believer in Advanced Maturity to have all those who gossip, malign, seek to destroy him, want to retaliate against him or seek vengeance against him, see this turn against them with double Divine Discipline

while he receives intensified double blessing. (**1Pet 3:14**, **Phil 1:28**) His only concern at this point is "when is the Lord going to get ready for me to cross the high golden bridge to enter eternity".

In Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God when under Ultra-Super Grace there are only 2 kinds of people surrounding the believer those with total response to him and his position and those totally antagonistic to him. The result is the same for both groups in that those who respond to him are a great blessing and those who antagonize him simply enhance his blessing from God while they receive incredible Divine Discipline. In Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God everything is strange in life and the believer may tumble down into the strangest places and come up smelling like blessed roses under Ultra-Super Grace. (**Matt 5:10-14**)

Divine Good Decorations for the Wreaths

Alpha Oak Leaf Cluster or Sapphire Gemstone

No pastor can lead anyone in his ministry beyond his spiritual growth. The Alpha Oak leaf Cluster or the Sapphire Gemstone is exclusive for the Pastor Teacher who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and received Super Grace A blessings himself or beyond and led believers under Positive Volition to the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This Alpha Oak Leaf Cluster or a Sapphire gemstone will adorn his Alpha Cross or his Wreath of Adjustment to the Justice of God (Righteousness).

Beta Oak Leaf Cluster or Ruby Gemstone

Beta Oak leaf Cluster or Ruby Gemstone is for the Pastor Teacher who leads those who are following him through No Man's Land who before they reach Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God are called home in physical death or at the rapture. These are received by the Pastor Teacher for believers in his congregation who have reached No Man's Land and received their Super-Grace B blessings under Bravo Grace but have not reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Many believer reach Super-Grace A and move into No Man's Land and get partly across and having been alive for 80+ years the Lord says "Your time is Up" and takes them home while in No Man's Land of Super-Grace B. This Oak Leaf Cluster or Ruby Gemstone will adorn the Pastor Teacher's Beta Cross or Wreath of Perseverance.

Omega or Ultra Oak Leaf Cluster or Diamond Gemstone

The Omega Oak leaf Cluster or Diamond Gemstone is for the Pastor Teacher has reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and received his Omega or Ultra Cross or Wreath of Life and who leads those who are following him through No Man's Land to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. These are received by the Pastor Teacher for believers in his congregation who have reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and received their own Ultra-Super Grace blessings. This Oak Leaf Cluster or Diamond Gemstone will adorn the Pastor Teacher's Omega Cross or Wreath of life for all Eternity and contribute to his having the highest possible Resurrection Body decorations.

Extra Blessings in addition to Stephanos Decorations

The Stephanos or Wreath could never be compared to what the athlete or soldier was to receive when he went home after having received it. Nothing can compare to what believers will receive when they leave this life and go HOME and receive Surpassing Grace blessings IF they have reached

and held some level of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. These Wreaths are reserved as the HIGHEST decorations for the believers who reach some level of Spiritual Maturity and hold that status until they are called home under Dying Grace. The Wreaths or Crosses and Oak Leaf Clusters or Gemstones are only the **DECORATIONS** and there will also be included many other aspects of reward along with the overt decoration. Believers who reach Spiritual Maturity in time will wear the decoration but the PAYOFF will be owning or controlling vast areas of space. Wearing the Decoration signifies the extent of the universe he will control. These Wreaths or Crowns are for the New Testament Scripture believers only while Old Testament Scripture believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond receive a different variety of Decoration and Blessing related to Cities.

Preparatory Bible School Teachers are in line for decorations in leading children as far as they have come in their own Spiritual Life progress. For every decoration received under surpassing grace there are other rewards which are not mentioned which are beyond imagination and which will make eternity absolutely fantastic. There is therefore great advantage in the glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for the recipient of any decorations at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.

Charlie Grace

The world becomes a prison for punishment and discipline for the believer who fails in the Spiritual Life and falls into the 8 stages of reversionism. This is GOD trying to get the attention of these believers in his Royal Family of God and bring them back into his plan. God often uses these reversionistic believers to teach and test advancing and mature believers. Therefore those individuals, often believers, who attack the believer in no man's land or the Ultra Super Grace believers are kept alive to add to the blessing provided for these believers in successfully resisting the attacks and passing the testing. This reversionistic believer is not a beneficiary of Surpassing Grace but receives his resurrection body as his ultimate sanctification and nothing else.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of Filling of God the Holy Spirit

It is Essential that all believers distinguish between the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in the Old Testament Scripture time and that in the New Testament Scripture or Church Age times and that he distinguish between the Indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit. In the Church Age, The Lord Jesus, The Christ is absent from the earth and is seated at the right hand of God the Father. Once the difference between these is clearly understood then the purpose of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit during the absence of Christ from the earth will be understood. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is not designed to bring ecstatics or emotionalism to the believer but to fulfill the functions of the Royal Family of God as enjoined by the New Testament Scripture Epistles. During the millennium when The Lord Jesus, The Christ is present on the earth then the purpose of Filling of God the Holy Spirit is appreciation of Christ and only then is it related to an ecstatic and emotional response. It is imperative to realize that believers in the Old Testament Scripture did not have the Indwelling nor Filling of God the Holy Spirit except in a few very special situations where it was termed Enduement.

With regard to spirituality in the Church Age, it is an absolute statue quo of the believer such that either God the Holy Spirit controls the soul and he is spiritual or God the Holy Spirit does not control the soul because he is out of fellowship in sin and thus carnal. In this status he is grieving God the Holy Spirit and when he is perpetually out of fellowship from persistent Negative Volition in reversionism he is then said to be quenching God the Holy Spirit. (**Eph 4:30**; **1Thes 5:19**) Any and all functions of the Christian Way of Life in this Church Age require the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in order for believers to glorify The Lord Jesus, The Christ. (**Rom 8:2-4**) The Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine demands Filling of God the Holy Spirit since all perception involves God the Holy Spirit teaching the Human Spirit of the believer and carrying the perceived and understood doctrine under faith to become (gr) 'Epignosis' or Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. (**John 14:26**, **16:12-14**, **1Cor 2:9-16**, **1John 2:27**) All divine guidance depends of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit (**Rom 8:14-16**), thus to be guided by God you must be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. All Christian worship depends on the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. (**John 4:24**; **Phil 3:3**) Effectiveness in witnessing or prayer or any other Christian function or production depends on the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. (**Acts 1:8**, **Eph 6:18**) Glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in the human body of the believer is related to the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. (**1Cor 6:9-10**) Imitating God (**Eph 5:1**), or being in partnership with the divine essence (**2Pet 1:4**) depends on Filling of God the Holy Spirit. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is the key to effective function in this Church Age as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and it is doubly important for the missionary to be under Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

Essential of Rebound & Filling of God the Holy Spirit

Any time a believer faces a panic situation concerning something happening in his periphery such as this illegitimate government being in power because of stealing an election in 2021 or it using an excuse to ration gasoline when there is plenty of it in 1976 or whatever, he MUST grab a promise from God. Hang on to that promise until equilibrium is reestablished in the thinking and then extract and apply Bible Doctrine rationales from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to that situation. This must then result in arriving at a doctrinal based conclusion about the situation and therefore a doctrinal solution to the problem. There is a black out among believers in their failure to use this Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) process in their lives. Believers start in the use of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) by the use of faith under concentration to accept Bible Doctrine when it is taught thus metabolizing it into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. They must then use faith and reverse concentration to claim a promise from God (there are over 7000 of them in scripture) and hang on to it to stabilize their thinking. The most basic concept for the effective function of the Spiritual Life is the ability to **rebound** and then to claim a promise from God. The concept and principle of rebound revolves around the fact of Eternal Security for every believer so that there can never be any sin or failure on the part of a believer which should cause any guilt reaction, however, he must be able to admit his sins to God (**1John 1:9**) and only to him because God is the only one who can forgive him and restore him to fellowship in the Plan of God. Then, when again under Filling of God the Holy Spirit, which is Essential for all functions in the Spiritual Life especially Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, believers can begin to arrive at the solutions to every situation in life.

Filling of God the Holy Spirit for Reality Orientation

REALITY for life as a Christian is based in Bible Doctrine. Believers must take Bible Doctrine into their life when they realize that God the Holy Spirit is confirming their status in the Royal Family of God. God the Holy Spirit inserts Bible Doctrine into life first through the Human Spirit of the believer for his recognition of the reality of life. The combination of God the Holy Spirit and the insertion of Bible Doctrine into the Human Spirit is what is Essential for reality orientation and for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit + Bible Doctrine in the Human Spirit is the initial stage of the beginning of the construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul which becomes one's insertion into reality with Bible Doctrine. As a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ one cannot face reality properly unless it is faced with Divine Viewpoint which demands insertion of Bible Doctrine into every given circumstance or situation. Once Bible Doctrine is inserted by God the Holy Spirit into the Human Spirit it is also transferred to the Left Lobe of the Soul as (gr) 'Gnosis' for a clear understanding or comprehension of it. It is at this point that the believer, himself, must decide to accept or reject that doctrine. Acceptance of Gnosis doctrine by faith results in God the Holy Spirit carrying that Bible Doctrine for efficacy into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and merging it into the compartments of the soul to develop a Frame of Reference, Norms and Standards, Divine Viewpoint of life and thus be able to apply it to every situation in life.

Filling of God the Holy Spirit & the Royal Family Honor Code

The Royal Family Honor Code relates the divine plan of grace to the real function of grace. The Royal Family Honor Code demands cognizance of and dependence on the Integrity of God which is composed of both the Righteousness of God and Justice of God. The Royal Family Honor Code functions by means of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit which is a mandated Essential to execute and fulfill the Royal Family Honor Code. The Royal Family Honor Code demands respect for the Righteousness of God in all believers. The more doctrine believers metabolize the more they are awestruck by the concepts of God. Therefore they must learn to respect the Righteousness of God in all believers even those whom they have natural antagonisms for.

Filling of God the Holy Spirit & Royal Ambassadorship

The Royal Ambassadorship of the believer is the source of the believers Christian production or 'works', which are NOT EVER counted as a reason for his blessing. This can be a function of one's spiritual gift or obedience to the commands for service functions such as witnessing and prayer. Maximum spiritual production requires Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, therefore, it becomes obvious that attainment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God results in maximum effectiveness of the function of the Royal Ambassador. As with any function in the Spiritual Life which is meaningful, the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is Essential for the proper function of the believer's Royal Ambassadorship. Any Christian service apart from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit constitutes Human Good and Human Good, which is always motivated by EVIL, is the enemy of the Modus Operandi of the Royal Ambassador. Any and everything a believer does in his life becomes a part of his Royal Ambassadorship for in effect the believer makes a pulpit or altar of all of his circumstances in life. From Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God every believer is always in full time Christian service. The Lord uses His Ambassadors in business and therefore, this is full time Christian service for those believers. Believers would be far better off in the Christian Way of Life if they recognized their business, or whatever means of earning a living they engage in, as part

of their function as a Royal Ambassador. The Lord uses ambassadors in the area of their professions and these can be the woman in the home or the student in school or in the Local Church. In any of the circumstances of life these are the areas of full time Christian service for each believer. No matter one's profession or occupation he IS in full time Christian service.

In Ancient Rome many believers fulfilled their ambassadorship as slaves. At no time in history has God ever ordered slaves to get out of slavery to try to escape or break away or revolt against slavery. He commanded that a slave should remain a slave and realize he is God's free man. He also commanded that a free man should realize he is God's slave. Basically, Paul said, SERVE THE LORD and don't run around and try to change or solve the problems of society. Serving the lord is not being a revolutionist nor functioning in conspiracy or as a traitor against your nation. (**Rom 13:1-7**) Therefore, believers as ambassadors are personal representatives of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in all areas of life and society. Every believer is obviously then in the Plan of God and lives life under the principle of full time Christian service and all believers are ambassadors for Christ from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to the point of physical death or the rapture of the church. Therefore, the true vocation of all believers is representing The Lord Jesus, The Christ as a royal ambassador in this life and the avocation for all believers is what they do in life to make a living.

Essentials of Honorable Production

Like all production in the Christian Way of Life Mental Attitude motivation must precede and be compatible with the policy of grace for it to be legitimate. This means that there must be the Filling of God the Holy Spirit or the believer cannot function in his ambassadorship properly. Production outside the function of the royal ambassadorship of the believer is useless and will be considered at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ as 'Wood, Hay, and Stubble' to be burned prior to entering the eternal state with a Resurrection Body. Honorable motivation is Essential and therefore this includes the importance of Rebound to recover and maintain the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and enable the application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to the production efforts. Therefore, false motivation destroys good production and good motivation can only exist from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential Perception & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine

The primary issue for the believer is and must always be Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The main issue in the life of the believer NEVER has anything to do with stopping social Evil because the only true way to get rid of social Evil is to remove all Old Sin Natures from all people. The command to be consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is for believers in phase II of the Spiritual Life and must be fulfilled by consistent use of Positive Volition during their time on this earth, in this life. This is the main function of the **Royal Family Honor Code**, to keep the believer aligned with Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God in order to achieve Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and execute the Plan of God. It is ONLY Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul

which results in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and provides the impetus for fulfilling the Royal Family Honor Code. Just as acquiring the "thinking of Christ", requires daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception Operation Z, and subsequent advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, the Royal Family Honor Code delineates relationship with other believers in this world in terms of representing The Lord Jesus, The Christ as a royal ambassador and NOT trying to solve social problems in life. An Essential part of this function for the believer is the consistent use of the rebound procedure to place the believer back under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit to enable operation under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. By avoiding carnality or by instantly recovering from it using the rebound procedure and thereby maintaining consistent Filling of God the Holy Spirit, the believer advances rapidly to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Since the primary Essential in the life of the believer is Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine in order to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and fulfill the Plan of God for his life, he must not devote his life to anything aside from Bible Doctrine and never focus life on solving any Evil or problem in society.

Non-Essential Superficialities vs Bible Doctrine

The Mental Attitude Sins of fear, worry, anxiety and even guilt complex reactions can be the source of human panic. There are certain things in life which believers can do without but which lurk on the borders of one's consciousness, no matter where they are or who they are with, and these include:

- Fear
- Worry
- Anxiety
- Guilt Reactions
- Emotional Revolt of the Soul

Bible Doctrine when metabolized into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is designed to eliminate these Non-Essentials of life. If believers succumb to these pressures in normal times imagine what they will do when disaster arrives. Peter understood that believers must be constantly reminded of the Essential of having Bible Doctrine as priority #1 in life. Having learned this lesson himself, he has said he considers it his duty to arouse believers, by means of a reminder, of the Essential importance of Bible Doctrine and of concentrating on it. He did this because he was facing death and would soon die but was concerned about helping others learn that Bible Doctrine must be the first priority in life for all believers. He also said that death does not destroy Bible Doctrine and it is the only thing in life which believers can take with them in death. Bible Doctrine is the most precious and valuable thing in life and whatever a person does with his life in time it is only what he does with regard to Bible Doctrine which is meaningful. IF, Bible Doctrine is the reason believers continue to live in this life, and it certainly is, then obviously Bible Doctrine must be Priority #1 in life. Obviously believers must not spend their life renouncing the superficialities of life but recognizing them as superficial and even enjoying them as superficial. Believers under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine can enjoy these superficial things but never let them distract or interfere with Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. One should not deprive self of the superficialities of life because a time may come when he will be totally deprived of everything but will still have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Believers are very often distracted by self and certainly do not need the "temptations of the world" as the superficialities of life to distract them. As long as these kinds of things are recognized as superficial and not depended on for anything in life believers will remain stable. Nothing which is superficial in life can ever be depended on for any sustaining or stabilizing effect and must never interfere with the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Overreacting to the superficialities of life creates in that life, Self Righteousness and all forms of **Arrogance** either leading to or coming from the Apostasy of Reversionism. These two systems must never become part of the Christian's Way of Life. When they exist in the believer's life he cannot continue momentum in the Spiritual Life because there is no possible way to be under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and Arrogant and even survive in the Christian Way of Life. As a result of this kind of interference in the Christian Life that believer will be a major target for Divine Discipline from the Justice of God from the moment he becomes involved in these systems until he is removed from this life by God under the Sin Unto Death. Arrogance is subtle and is a constant daily irritant to the believer because it is the underlying foundation of EVIL, the plan and policy of Satan, the first arrogant one, who rules this world. There are believers who deceive themselves and call Arrogance spirituality and Self Righteousness being a good Christian. This simply neutralizes any possibility of assigning the proper priority to Bible Doctrine in order that it may be learned and applied to life. Believers must never allow Non-Essentials in life to interfere with consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The unfortunate reality of life is that most believers are asleep with stupidity and involvement in Arrogance the next step for them. Bible Doctrine is the only Essential which the believer must constantly face and must learn it as reality, saturating the soul with it.

Flexibility & Tradition vs Doctrine

Believers must be able to distinguish between tradition and doctrine. My dear departed wife, Karen Sue attended Texas A&M University before we met. During our time together she would constantly remind me that if something was done 2 times then it was tradition. Needles to say we had MANY traditions between us. To know Bible Doctrine means one can accept and be flexible about tradition but never allow it to distract one from the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. In addition, Believers must learn to listen to concepts and ideas with which they disagree without reacting in order that they might maintain objectivity. **Aristocrats** are more flexible and magnanimous than the "little" men and greatness and development of flexibility is associated with aristocracy. A believer cannot ever reach the status quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, and come under Super-Grace until flexibility is part of his life. It is imperative that believers understand that the correct application of newly learned doctrines is not related to the inflexibility of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of those Doctrines but to the flexibility of its application under the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories). One of the most difficult things for a person, especially a believer, to do and one of the greatest tests of flexibility is being able to change personal opinions when it is discovered that those opinions were wrong. To have this ability to change wrong opinions when faced with the truth the individual must be divorced from the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Once one's thinking goes wrong and there is refusal to change when confronted by truth, degeneracy sets in and this does not require immorality nor criminality but only that one enters into the myriad of gates of entrance to the **Interlocking System of Arrogance**. Arrogance always divorces the believer from reality especially where God is concerned. Therefore, even though people, especially believers, may be erroneous in their thinking,

if they have the flexibility to completely reverse their thinking they will be able to advance in the Spiritual Life.

Essentials of Inflexibility and Bible Doctrine

The greatest issue in the life of a believer must always be Bible Doctrine in contrast to all the details of life which will at one time or another include:

- Family
- Friends
- Loved ones
- Social life
- Sex
- Status symbols
- Business
- ETC.

Any distraction to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is a detail of life about which one must exercise great flexibility. About Bible Doctrine the believer must be indefatigable as well as persistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization. Bible Doctrine is motivation and momentum for fulfillment of the Plan of God and very often believers are distracted by family, responsibilities, and the myriad protocols of society.

Believers must remember all doctrine is Essential for spiritual growth and they are not here to prove to anyone that what they are doing is right nor detail to the world what God expects all Christians to do. Believers are here to learn Bible Doctrine and must be flexible and objective enough in reception of it to realize that when they are rebuked by a passage to accept it as from God the Holy Spirit and when commended by a passage to thank the Lord that this lesson has finally been learned and patiently wait for the next. The Royal Family Honor Code is designed to get the believer into line with the Plan of God and the function for the believer in the Spiritual Life. **The Royal Family Honor Code** demands inflexibility concerning Essential Bible Doctrine and total flexibility concerning the Non-Essentials of application of that doctrine. This is accomplished by the Royal Family Honor Code in effect telling the believer to, MIND HIS OWN BUSINESS, unless he is in authority in which case he must mind the business of others under him as well.

Flexibility & Distraction from Bible Doctrine

Very often the only reason that parents distract younger believers from Bible Doctrine is because the young believers are weak in that they are immature believers. Young believers must accept parents for what they are and must be flexible and have learned in the Royal Family Honor Code flexibility with regard to superficialities. No believer must ever blame his own Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine on others but only on self. Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the Essential of life. Any overreaction toward a distraction from Bible Doctrine is Arrogance and Arrogance is blindness to Bible Doctrine. Arrogance is destructive to concentration and concentration on the teaching of Bible Doctrine is the means of persisting in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. Concentration is also the means of engaging in the application of Bible Doctrine to life under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. (**2Pet 1:12-15**)

Essential of Faith in Gnosis to Epignosis

(gr) Epignosis knowledge is Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is usable for application to life, circumstance and experience. (gr) Gnosis is knowledge of Bible Doctrine which is understood in the Left Lobe of the soul after grace perception under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and **Operation Z**. It is Essential for the believer to convert gnosis to epignosis by means of Faith, in Stage 1 of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories). In essence this is accepting what has been perceived as Absolute Truth. Therefore, 'resisting' Bible Doctrine is understanding Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe of the soul after perception but not accepting it and converting it to epignosis in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul by FAITH. In order for any doctrine to be effectively and accurately perceived the believer must have a spiritual IQ functioning and this can only occur if he is under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and functioning under the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** Operation Z. The subsequent conversion of the Gnosis knowledge of doctrine to Epignosis knowledge also requires the Filling of God the Holy Spirit along with FAITH in accepting what is perceived. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone results in the provision of Logistical Grace support whereby every believer is given everything necessary to enable him to move ahead in the Spiritual Life. Therefore, the believer with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine can perceive Bible Doctrine without regard to his own intelligence level and it will be completely perspicuous to him. He can metabolize that doctrine by Faith and place it into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul for addition to his memory and categorical storage areas and then subsequently use it to build a proper biblical Frame of Reference, Norms and Standards and Divine Viewpoint for life.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials for Flexible Application of Bible Doctrine

The basic concept of flexibility vs inflexibility in Essentials vs Non-Essentials revolves around the fact that absolute truth in 3 categories, the Gospel of Christ, Bible Doctrine in Scripture, and the Laws of Divine Establishment including the Divine Institutions, is the only Essential of Life and everything else in Non-Essential. Therefore the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must constantly be completely INFLEXIBLE with regard to absolute truth and constantly FLEXIBLE about its application to Non-Essential situations in life.

Essentials vs Non-Essentials & Priorities in life

Developing or having Capacity for life demands that all believers establish priorities in life. Setting priorities is impossible until one personally learns to think, because one cannot have priorities in life if he is always functioning on emotion. The consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine gives capacity for thought which will give capacity for life as a result of establishing Essential priorities in life. All priorities must be categorized into Essentials and Non-Essentials and this applies to all categories of life including military, law enforcement, coaching, teaching, family, business, etc. Above all else this principle concerning distinguishing between Essentials and Non-Essentials is a basic principle of the Christian Way of Life. Consequently, Bible

Doctrine in the Christian Way of Life is THE PRIMARY, NUMBER 1 Essential and must have Priority #1 in the life of the believer and the believer must be INFLEXIBLE about Essential Bible Doctrine perceived under the function of the **Grace Apparatus for Perception**, **Operation Z**. However the believer must be totally FLEXIBLE when it comes to the application of that Bible Doctrine to life, people and circumstances. For this reason there are 3 divine laws as part of the **Royal Family Honor Code** which supersede the law of liberty, which gives great freedom of action, for the mature believer:

- Law of love directed toward immature believers
- Law of expediency directed toward unbelievers
- Law of supreme sacrifice directed toward God alone.

Essentials for Faith Rest

An absolute dogmatic truth is that God's Grace supports all believers, "the good, the bad and the ugly", all who have the Absolute Righteousness of God imputed to them at the moment of their personal Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. As a result of the believer having God's Absolute Righteousness, God is REQUIRED to and always will support him living in the world ruled by Satan. This is THE foundation of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories). Therefore when the believer faces a circumstance in life where there is something missing which is Essential for life, he must simply remember God is responsible for his Logistical Grace support and this TEST is therefore simply a Logistical Grace test and all Logistical Grace MUST be supplied by God. No matter how one chooses to look at things, it is obviously the Integrity of God which sustains believers on this earth and never their behavior, talent, efforts and especially NOT their Self Righteousness. The Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) has 4 stages which include:

- Faith in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
- Claiming Promises of God
  - This serves to stabilize the mentality of the soul to neutralize the fear panic ploy and enable proper thinking when under pressure situations.
  - This is Reverse Concentration for doctrinal recall of scriptural promises to support and stabilize the believer.
- Building recalled doctrines and promises into rationales, for dealing with all situations and circumstances.
- Coming to doctrinal conclusions based on the developed Divine Viewpoint to control and overcome the situation.

Essentials of Faith Rest in Worship

All Worship, with the exception of Faith Perception, requires reverse concentration in stage 3 of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) when recalling doctrinal principles and one cannot have this function without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This cannot occur without the Grace Apparatus for Perception where Bible Doctrine is transferred into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul by faith and through the Grace ministry of God the Holy Spirit. Prayer, Praise, Singing, Communion, Giving, etc., all worship requires stage 3 of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) reverse concentration to extract previously learned Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The believer cannot be engaged in reverse concentration of the Faith Rest Drill unless he has a great deal of Metabolized Bible Doctrine already in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to recall. The Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) involves the Perception, Cognition,

Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, claiming promises to stabilize the individual's mental state, but the most Essential function of the Faith Rest Drill is to rationalize doctrinal principles from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine and Promises of God which have been accumulated from the Grace Perception of stage 1 and Reverse Concentration of stage 2. There is only one form of worship which does not require the function of the believer under stage 3 of the Faith Rest Drill, and that is learning of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Learning Bible Doctrine is the most fundamental form of worship and requires the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, self discipline, concentration, good manners, thoughtfulness of others, authority orientation and Grace Orientation and it is the only system by which believers acquire indestructible wealth.

Flexibility in Learning Bible Doctrine

Bible Doctrine feeds both of the permanent lives which believers possess. The soul life, conscience, norms and standards are all fed by Bible Doctrine as a result of faith perception under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. The Everlasting or Eternal Life received at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God into the human spirit is also fed by Bible Doctrine during the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, Operation Z. Again, believers must remember ALL doctrine is Essential for spiritual growth and that they are not here to prove what they are doing is right or that it is what God expects all Christians to do. Believers are here to learn Bible Doctrine, the thinking of Christ, and they must be flexible and objective in reception. **The Royal Family Honor Code** is designed to get believers into line with the Plan of God and proper function in the Spiritual Life. The Royal Family Honor Code demands inflexibility regarding the necessity for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and total flexibility regarding the application of that doctrine to the Non-Essentials of life.

Essentials vs Non-Essentials & Royal Family Honor Code

The Royal Family Honor Code allows both the mature and the advancing believer the privacy to make an issue of Bible Doctrine and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ above all else using their own volition. The variations in their concepts regarding Non-Essentials is tolerated and not subject to criticism or judging of any sort. Thus 'loving the brethren' as part of the Royal Family Honor Code includes respecting the privacy of the priesthood in all believers and neither being intolerant nor condemning them regarding Non-Essentials. Therefore as the believer grows in the Spiritual Life he will discover that a great many points in Christianity are Non-Essential to Christian fellowship.

Flexibility & Royal Family Honor Code

The Plan of God is sustained in Human History by the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions and by the Royal Family Honor Code. The Royal Family Honor Code is the Christian Way of Life and is a code of flexibility where mature or advancing believers tolerate other believers who have erroneous ideas without judging OR correcting them. This is toleration of the legalist who is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine in order to allow his personal spiritual advance to occur but it is also the separation from the legalist who is under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine or The Lord Jesus, The Christ as a reversionist. Believers therefore must learn when to tolerate and when to remove self from the mixed up person who is in the Apostasy of Reversionism. This is learning when to love and when to leave.

God in Eternity Past provided a perfect plan for the Christian Way of Life, which is not a lot of Non-Essential nonsense and superficiality passed on by imbeciles. It is unthinkable that ANYONE would dare to dogmatically state that a Christian must do or avoid certain things or he cannot be Christian. These people are incredibly stupid and totally divorced from any doctrine and all reality. In all cases these superficial taboos are inconsequential and the actual issue always remains only Bible Doctrine. Only through Metabolized Bible Doctrine can any believer decide what he should be doing. This is a matter of the privacy of the royal priesthood. Christianity is Bible Doctrine and the Christian Way of Life is the Royal Family Honor Code and the Royal Family Honor Code is flexibility where by believers tolerate each other's erroneous Norms and Standards while each learns Bible Doctrine at his own rate and to his own level to correct HIS norms and standards within the framework of the privacy of His priesthood. No one can use Christianity to change others but Christianity through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will use the believer under Positive Volition and in fact change him. Some of the worst blaspheme is to infer or claim that God is sponsoring some system of legalism. No consistently positive believer can have the temerity to insert their own stupid, superficial, idiotic ideas into the Christian Way of Life under the GRACE Plan of God. The Imputed Righteousness of God, Prosperity and Happiness by means of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine are the Essentials of the Christian Way of Life which demand inflexibility. These Essentials must be emphasized but flexibility must be maintained with regard to all other Non-Essentials. The objectives of the Christian Way of Life are summarized by the **Equation of Hope**. The manner by which these objectives are accomplished and the Modus Operandi of the attainment of them is bound into the Royal Family Honor Code.

Functions of the Royal Family Honor Code provide for variations in the norms and standards of believers in every stage of Spiritual Growth. Surrounding the principle of 'live and let live' are a series of encapsulating Bible Doctrines which give living and breathing space for all believers to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in their own time at their own rate using their own volition. These include the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions and the Royal Family Honor Code. All of these emphasize the principle of freedom of volition, privacy, property and 'live and let live'. There must be privacy in order to permit others to have lower and/or different standards than those an advanced believer has, which may be wrong to him but right to these others and right for their particular stage of growth. Therefore it is imperative to realize that God permits variations in standards for believers in different stages of spiritual growth under his Grace Plan. Such Royal Family Honor Code principles as, Impersonal Love, Privacy of the priesthood, inflexibility regarding Essentials, flexibility regarding Non-Essentials all result in orientation to spiritual reality. These also result in Christian common sense and elimination of subjective perception and the inclusion of objective perception of Bible Doctrine in the framework of the body of Christ. Therefore, based at least in part on the imputation of the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, each believer must live his own life as unto the Lord. No believer is required to meet the standards of other believers but must meet God's standards for THAT stage of his spiritual growth. Always remember that believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and members of the Royal Family of God are not responsible to others but only to God for their personal standards at any stage spiritual of growth.

As a result Bible Doctrine always remains the true issue in life as it must be. Therefore only Bible Doctrine has a right to and in fact MUST intrude on the privacy of the priesthood in order for the

believer to not retain false standards which originated prior to the start of his Spiritual Life which would result in it ending with the Sin Unto Death. Bible Doctrine must intrude on the privacy of the royal priest for his spiritual advance and growth in grace. Therefore everyone in the Grace Plan of God grows in the Spiritual Life from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine as it intrudes on their soul changing their Norms and Standards and providing building material for their Edification Complex of the Soul. Consequently, all believers with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine must be tolerated and accepted into the body of Christ no matter their level of spiritual growth. They will be as different overtly as people can be but all have a right to acceptance into the body of Christ as they grow in Grace. The overt factors of their lives are no business of any other believers and they must have the same opportunity to advance in privacy to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as all mature believers have had and therefore, must be tolerated in their personal areas of legalism or antinomianism so that they can have the same chance of growth all others have had. Therefore variations of standards and differences of opinion must be tolerated under the principle of Impersonal Love in the Royal Family Honor Code and also the privacy of the priesthood which gives different believers at varied stages of growth the same opportunities for spiritual advance.

All believers, under the principle of privacy, must allow other believers the right of self determination and must never become a distraction to them and must be very flexible with regard to them. Believers at times might commit sin which is not within the area of weakness of other believers and therefore they may be looked down upon and/or despised. As a result of this occurring they will be distracted from Bible Doctrine and therefore there the other critical believers have failed to make the issue the Integrity of God rather than sin. Flexibility is one of the most important functions of the Royal Family Honor Code and if the believer fails to function under it he will do what Moses did at Meribah and criticize other Christians when he should be emphasizing Bible Doctrine and the Integrity of God. Every time a believer judges, maligns or tries to superimpose his standards on others who have little or no Bible Doctrine he obscures the true issue of Logistical Grace which is and always has been based totally on the Integrity of God.

So believers must WAKE UP. *God does not reject nor punish believers on the basis of Non-Essentials therefore it is presumptuous, even blasphemous to reject believers who God has accepted. Therefore, always consider that every person in life as a believer is in some part of the Plan of God.* See the **Equation of Hope**. All of the Plan of God in this Equation is outlined and based on imputations which produce potentials which demand Bible Doctrine for confidence which produces reality. Different believers fit into this Plan of God in different parts of the outline as demonstrated by the entire Equation of Hope. The 'X' radical is for the unbeliever and gives the potential for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. The 'Y' Radical has 3 stages for the believer, Infant, Adolescent, Adult or Mature. The 'Z' Radical has 3 stages for Spiritual Maturity, Super-Grace A, Super-Grace B, Ultra Super-Grace. In each varied stage of growth there are varied required divine standards to be met. God only requires the believer to have the standards for their own stage of spiritual growth. For example the infant believer is only expected to have standards of limited spiritual growth and so on for different stages of spiritual growth. No one has a right ever to try to superimpose his standards on other believers.

The Royal Family Honor Code, and the Home

The proper environment for children is a home which has no legalism but maximum wisdom and common sense from the 2 parents who are mature believers. Children must be trained under proper authority without despising the authority of the parents and without hating Christianity. They should grow up under Grace principles and Bible Doctrine instead of legalism and the irresponsible restrictions of 'religion' which is epitomized by making a big deal out of the sabbath. Bible Doctrine and common sense coupled with the Royal Family Honor Code function of flexibility results in 2nd generation mature believers and this is the importance of the home and proper schooling.

Flexibility in the Church Age

This is where believers must rightly divide the word of truth during this Church Age. The Royal Family Honor Code demands the believer distinguish between the Essentials and Non-Essentials in his life. The only true Essential for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the accumulation of Bible Doctrine into residence in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. Therefore the Non-Essentials become everything else in life. About the Essentials believers MUST be INFLEXIBLE and about the Non-Essentials they always must be COMPLETELY FLEXIBLE in the application of their accumulated Essential Bible Doctrine to them. Therefore the Christian Way of Life is a life of flexibility with the only place for inflexibility being toward Bible Doctrine. There is no place for tabooism in the Christian Way of Life and those who subscribe to taboos must simply be tolerated in flexibility *as long as they remain under Positive Volition* toward Bible Doctrine which is the only thing which will change their consideration of taboos. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of every believer establishes the Norms and Standards on which priorities are established and rated. Therefore, without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer operates under erroneous norms and standards and has false priorities for life. The Lord Jesus, The Christ distinguished between the Essential of Bible Doctrine and the Non-Essential of motherhood when he berated the horsey Arrogant Woman. (**Luke 11:27-28**) The Lord himself was inflexible about Bible Doctrine but totally flexible about Non-Essentials. The point here was that it does not make any difference who your mother is because this is a Non-Essential. The real issue was brought to the forefront then as bible doctrine and He ignored the false issue of motherhood but He did not insult this woman arbitrarily but to make the point of what has to have the overriding importance for all believers. (**Heb 10:35-36**, **Rom 3:3-4**)

If Bible Doctrine becomes the Essential in the believer's life and he is inflexible concerning it, then all Non-Essentials of life will be approached with great flexibility. However, inflexibility regarding Non-Essentials has destroyed even great empires as demonstrated in the history of the Austrian Empire under Franz Joseph. Being inflexible regarding Non-Essentials in life makes the believer into a walking destruction waiting to happen. (**Prov 8:33-36, John 14:26, Rom 14:1-4, 20, 21-23, 15:1-2**)

Flexibility without Tyranny

Flexibility does everything in love except succumb or yield to tyranny and bullying. This means the believer can supersede the law of liberty with the law of love in any situation. When a person says a wrong thing because he is lacking Bible Doctrine and the mature believer knows it is wrong and knows what is right, as a result of knowing the true doctrine, this mature believer can become wrong when he argues about this Non-Essential concept. Being right is often most right when you

simply keep your mouth shut especially with regard to Non-Essentials. All believers must remain flexible and know when to shut up and when to take a stand for a principle of Essential doctrine. Because the mature believer knows the weak or immature believer is wrong, confused and without Bible Doctrine in his Norms and Standards he therefore can, IN FLEXIBILITY and with moral courage, ignore the areas where the weak believer is wrong so that Bible Doctrine can remain an issue. There are times when the mature believer becomes confused and allows his liberty to distract the immature believer from Bible Doctrine. This is the error of the mature believer only. The client nation to God requires a pivot of mature believers to perpetuate its existence and the only way to achieve this and to develop maturity in immature believers is to provide the environment for these immature believers to maintain consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. When the mature believer errs and allows his liberty to distract others he is not following the principle of flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials and inflexibility with regard to Essential Bible Doctrine.

Therefore mature believers should not create false issues by inflexibility but make the issue of Bible Doctrine by flexibility of application in the field of Non-Essentials. In this way he will maintain his standards and capacity for life along with Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and make it possible for the immature believer to see Bible Doctrine as the issue rather than the personal life of the mature believer as the issue. In addition by refraining from retaliation or bearing a grudge mature believers maintain their standards of maturity and comply with the Royal Family Honor Code while they avoid being bullied and tyrannized by weak believers. Mature believers may at times appear weak without courage or standards and may be maligned or judged and may even make things worse by erroneous applications but by staying relaxed and using humility and having no arrogant hangups to contend with they will be vindicated by making Bible Doctrine the issue. Flexibility in application to Non-Essentials avoids the tyranny of legalism and strife in the Royal Family of God. (**Rom 14:15-16**)

Laws of Expediency, Liberty & Sacrifice as Flexibility

When Christians are in contact with the unbeliever they are free to carry on and do things in life following a Modus Vivendi along the lines of Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth. There are times when they should set aside their liberty and expediency to reach some of these people so as to have some means of evangelizing. This is the law of expediency directed toward the unbeliever to provide him with the information so that Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God becomes a possibility as a result of the function of common grace from God the Holy Spirit.

Advancing Believers develop liberty during spiritual growth and develop habits compatible with the Bible Doctrine they have metabolized. There are immature believers who cannot see the Bible Doctrine in the mature believer's spiritual growth because they are immature and cannot get away from getting eyes on people, things or on self. The immature believer can be in the arena of early spiritual growth or a weak believer in reversionism. Therefore, there is a time when the believer will set aside the law of liberty for the law of love and not make an issue of his freedom or false principles as a maturing believer. Even when the weak believer is wrong and he is right, he will restrain his responses and give lee way to the immature believer in order to make the issue about Bible Doctrine. The strong believer is the advancing believer who sets aside his liberty under Bible Doctrine for expediency with all things for all men. In addition the law of love very often

supersedes the law of liberty as well. Also the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God engaged in undeserved suffering has the law of supreme sacrifice superseding the law of liberty.

There is no substitute in military life for the inculcation of group and self discipline by the individual soldier. This carries over into the Royal Family of God so that the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is basically a training session preparing the believer for spiritual combat so that he will be instinctively under the control of Bible Doctrine in both adverse and prosperous situations. There are many shades of gray found in the field of being flexible in the application of Bible Doctrine and only black and white inflexibility in the area of the Essentials of Bible Doctrine. The Royal Family Honor Code emphasizes the application of doctrine to Non-Essential concepts and being flexible regarding that application while being totally inflexible about the PRINCIPLES of Essential Bible Doctrine. When the believer restrains himself from reaction or acquiesces to immature believers who are making stupid applications it is because he is strong in Bible Doctrine not weak.

One of the greatest weaknesses in life is being inflexible as is demonstrated by being thoughtless of the feelings of others and that they may not be at the same stage of spiritual growth and don't have the same doctrinal standards as one does. This often results in cruel or at least thoughtless behavior because this believer has failed to take cognizance of that which exists in this common spiritual combat situation. In this spiritual combat believers must have an officer in charge who is wise when it is difficult to make decisions because of the combat situations he is in. This commanding officer must be in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of every believer and he is in essence the maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine the believer has accumulated in his soul. Without the officer of Bible Doctrine the believer will inevitably be totally wrong when he is sure he is absolutely right and though he may at times be right in principle, he will be wrong in application. In the application of Bible Doctrine to life there are many shades of gray while in the study of Bible Doctrine there are always clear black and white principles.

An example is that all food is designed by God for sustaining the body and it is not sinful or Evil to eat any kind of food. This is not the issue of bacterial or substance contamination but of sinfulness. The truth in the Christian Way of Life is that it is not sinful, immoral nor Evil to eat any kind of food or drink any kind of beverage. Doctrine tells us that food, whatever the reason it was prepared, or wine or alcohol of any kind is from God for sustaining our bodies. However, under the law of expediency, it might be best to stop eating certain foods or drinking certain beverages in the presence of a person who thinks it is wrong to be doing so. This is a flexible application of an inflexible doctrine in the presence of a weak believer.

In the spiritual combat of the Angelic Conflict institutionalized genius is found in the Pastor Teacher who if he persists in study and is academically prepared will be able to communicate the information which gives us the innovative ability to serve and honor the Lord throughout our lifetime. Individual believers, being in many different circumstances of life but having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, will be fully prepared to meet the situations of life with confidence. They being under the control of the Bible Doctrine which is inflexible and yet can be flexible and innovative in application so that they can come up as a great human being. Sensitivity, as is described in the Royal Family Honor Code, is to be aware of others and their

situations in life and to treat them with thoughtfulness and courtesy. Therefore, it is clear that inflexible doctrine produces flexibility of application.

However if the believer is minus the inflexible doctrine because of neglect or rejection, he moves his inflexibility into the area of application. In order to make correct application of Bible Doctrine to situations in the Spiritual Life, Bible Doctrine must be resident in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. You cannot apply what you do not know! There must be doctrinal orientation in the Frame of Reference, Memory Center, Vocabulary and Categorical Storage areas of the soul and as a result this is built into the Conscience with its doctrinal norms and standards and these all are related to the Self Consciousness, Emotion and Volition of the soul. When a person has learned pertinent, accurate Bible Doctrine it is inflexible and forms a stabilized base for application to the circumstances of life. When in the presence of others whether unbelievers or believers, immature, advancing or mature, he must have varied flexible applications of that Bible Doctrine for each situation. He must not simply take a stand regarding doctrinal concepts but MUST be flexible UNLESS the situation involves Essential principles of Bible Doctrine. Bible Doctrine is perfect and is dogmatically inflexible and is the thinking of The Lord Jesus, The Christ therefore it MUST never be compromised. Our responsibility as believers in the Spiritual Life is to study diligently and consistently in order to be saturated with this thinking and thus be able to be inflexible in these Essentials of Bible Doctrine. A most important principle and function within the Royal Family Honor Code is that a mature believer does not ever interfere with the choices and opinions of other believers UNLESS these reject or contradict Essential doctrines.

Flexibility & Application of Bible Doctrine

The Royal Family Honor Code demands that all believers under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine be tolerated within the framework of his maintained privacy from the exercise of his own volition to remain private, so that he can objectively assimilate Bible Doctrine taught in his Local Church. However, if such a believer is under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and destroys his own privacy by judging, maligning or gossip against other believers he must be removed from the congregation. If a believer is under Positive Volition to bible doctrine and yet destroys his own privacy by judging, gossip or maligning about others he also must be removed from the congregation where his Positive Volition could have carried him to Spiritual Maturity. His decisions to intrude on the privacy of others forestalls the possibility of spiritual growth in that Local Church and he must be removed from that congregation to move to another Local Church or gain his doctrinal input through other sources. This is the difference between Essential Bible Doctrine and Non-Essential applications. When a believer rejects Essential Bible Doctrine principles he must be separated from the congregation of orthodox believers and it is his reversionism which is what causes him to separate self or motivates him to gossip, malign or judge others and thereby be separated from the congregation. It is acceptable to do almost anything in life and still be a member of the advancing local church except to gossip, malign, or judge others. Gossip, maligning and judging others in a congregation causes THEM to NOT be able to enter the congregation and objectively take in Bible Doctrine. The ones causing this MUST be removed from the congregation after being proven by evidence that they are disruptive gossips.

There cannot be and in fact are no variations in the Essentials of Bible Doctrine but many variations in the application of Bible Doctrine to Non-Essentials can, do and should exist. Non-Essential applications are often accurate for the immature believer without maximum Bible Doctrine in the

Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but not absolutely accurate nor important to the mature believer with more Bible Doctrine. These applications are tolerated even though they are wrong because the person who does not know any better is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and will grow and replace these false norms with accurate ones. Non-Essential erroneous application is related to immaturity and lack of knowledge of pertinent advanced Bible Doctrine. To deny the validity of this distinction between Essential and Non-Essential truths is to live in the realm of inflexible error or puritanical arrogance. Differences in diet, holy day observance, dress, grooming, occupation or other such Non-Essential things must never be the basis for denying a believer the correct and accurate teaching of Bible Doctrine.

While tolerance in doctrinal application is a function of the Royal Family Honor Code apathy or indifference to the distinction between Bible Doctrine and error is never to be tolerated. One may be wrong about Bible Doctrine applications but when he is indifferent to the fact that some doctrine which he has believed is completely wrong this should not be tolerated. There may be differences in the application of inculcated Bible Doctrines because of differences in spiritual growth and the levels of Bible Doctrine accumulated in the soul but there is one body of Essential doctrine where variance becomes error and misinterpretation becomes apostasy. The Royal Family Honor Code demands rigid inflexible adherence to the Essential Bible Doctrines taught from the word of God. Without this one's Norms and Standards cannot be changed in the soul and thus one can have NO advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Variation in the application of doctrine does not give consent to variation in Essential Bible Doctrines. Believers must learn to distinguish between Absolute Bible Doctrine and the variations of its application to changing situations. The Bible Doctrine which is learned by the believer is absolute and taught in an absolute dogmatic way. The application of this Bible Doctrine is based on the level of spiritual growth of the individual believer. For the mature believer most often applications are correct, however, for immature believers applications may very well be in error. It is imperative to see the distinction here because variations of spiritual growth and different levels of ignorance DO NOT CHANGE the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine.

Essential Spiritual Freedom & Application of Bible Doctrine

It is Essential that all believers live life as unto the lord and not to please nor retaliate against mankind. This is only possible through constant intake of Bible Doctrine as a result of effective function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the **Grace Apparatus for Perception**, **Operation Z**. Spiritual freedom is the heritage of the royal priesthood of the believer in the Church Age. Privacy is emphasized as part of this freedom but decisions 'as unto the Lord' are another part of it. Believers can and often do things as unto the lord and they may be correct or incorrect but whichever the case privacy must be emphasized for objectivity to be retained in approaching Bible Doctrine. Each believer has the right and freedom to determine application on the basis of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine he possesses in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul not on the basis of Bible Doctrine others possess. Where Bible Doctrine is consistently taught and perception of it occurs on a consistent daily basis there is no problem in application as the Bible Doctrine will eventually instill proper norms and standards into the Frame of Reference of the soul. The problem occurs when the believer is under some level of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, rejecting or neglecting it, or where doctrine is not available on a daily basis leaving the believer in a state of spiritual anarchy. Therefore, this places the issue for the Royal Family of God with

acceptance by God, which is the true norm for the right to Christian fellowship. The Principle is that man cannot rightfully reject whom God has accepted and every believer has received the Righteousness of God and is therefore accepted by God. Having a narrow application of standards for Christian fellowship is Essentially the result of either arrogance or ignorance of Bible Doctrine. The key to maintaining or rejecting Christian fellowship is based on the attitude toward Bible Doctrine by the believer where Positive Volition with erroneous application should be accepted while Negative Volition always must be rejected and separated from.

Therefore, the Royal Family Honor Code binds the Strong, Mature believer and the Positive Volition Weak, Immature believer together in a mutual system of advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This is the true body of Christ the Royal Family of God. Believers under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine are bound together in order to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and glorify The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Believers are bound in the mutual advance in the Plan of God in such a manner so as to overshadow the differences between them in the area of Non-Essentials. These Non-Essentials include the fact that many believers are ignorant of Bible Doctrine but under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and therefore totally wrong in their applications to the Christian Way of Life. The function of the Strong, Mature believer is NOT to straighten them out but to make sure they have a clear way to learn Bible Doctrine so that they, through personal Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, can establish their own Norms and Standards for the Christian Way of Life. They are not to be made subject to hero worship nor to spiritual bullying and the resulting legalism. The Royal Family Honor Code demands rigid inflexible adherence to the Essentials of Bible Doctrine taught in an expository fashion from the word of God by qualified and prepared Pastor Teachers. Without this Essential dogmatic rigidity Norms and Standards cannot be changed in the souls of believers and there can be NO advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The responsibility for the believer is to build up the Essentials in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that everything he does in life is based on Norms and Standards derived from the absolutes of Bible Doctrine. Believers must learn to never push their standards of life or activities on others in their periphery and never acquiesces to participate in activities which don't fit the Norms and Standards developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

There is a great catastrophe coming in the future unless the rapture occurs first and this will call for the greatest possible moral courage from the believer. When a person does things which do not line up with their own Norms and Standards he is a WEAK person and cannot be depended on in a disaster because he will fall apart and betray others to the tyrants and will lie to save and ensure his own position and security. As long as personal function relates to personal Norms and Standards that person will be strong and when Norms and Standards are based on Bible Doctrine these will be extremely strong. When Norms and Standards prohibit some activity or action the believer must simply say NO to these. When others try to push a believer into activities or functions which violate his norms and standards then he can remind them in any fashion he chooses of his right to his own opinions and privacy. The more Bible Doctrine which is learned the more the believer recognizes the validity of the distinction between Essential and Non-Essentials in truths. It is mandatory that every believer under Positive Volition have privacy to learn Bible Doctrine without being persecuted by the tyranny of legalism or the intolerance from superficialities of life. One form of this tyranny or legalism is to ridicule a person into doing something against their own Norms and Standards. NO

ONE is perfect and believers do not speak as experts who are perfect but as ones who know Bible Doctrine. No believer can reject what God has received and thus no believers is ever rejected because God has received him but some must be separated from to prevent personal distraction from the true objective of the Christian Way of Life, Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization and proper Application of Bible Doctrine.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials for Problem Solving

Believers must be neither ahead of or behind time considering his contemporary historical period but right on time with Bible Doctrine and must realize that it is not physical strength which will carry one in life but the spiritual strength as a condition of the soul which will make all the difference. The smartest way to solve difficulties, adversities or disasters is not from the use of physical force or strength. What we have in the soul is that which is most important in life and heroes must be mental men not muscle men. "Whatever a man thinks so he is" (**Prov 23:7**), indicates clearly that what we are is what occurs in the soul and the brain must constantly be working. The problems of the future will and those of the present do now require **moral courage** from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Personal relationships in life should not be worshiping the physical beauty of either male or female but LIFE MUST BE FOCUSED ON WHAT IS IN THE SOUL. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God must always keep it clear in his thinking that good, just warfare is not simply violence but is clean, effective tactical killing without emotion for the purpose of preserving FREEDOM. Believers must make a consistent transition to Bible Doctrine from their physical strength or emotional courage. Those who have or have had great physical strength are or were courageous because they have strength but this is only physical courage and will never enable them to handle the day to day problems which occur in life. This is clearly demonstrated by soldiers who return from war and cannot cope with civilian life. Having a strong healthy body is not a handicap unless this is given the wrong priority and set above the development of the soul. Believers must not worship at the shrine of physical strength or physical beauty else they remain mentally and spiritually ridiculous. The believer's priority must be given to soul development from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. He must clearly understand that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History, globally, regionally, nationally, locally and above all INDIVIDUALLY and that he will remain alive as long as Christ wants him that way. Stonewall Jackson clearly understood this and knew that whether in battle or in bed believers are totally safe wherever they are when The Lord Jesus, The Christ is caring for them. When God gives believers a day he intends for them to spend it on something of true value not just the priorities of physical beauty and physical strength and He intends for them to emphasize their personal spiritual development as their most essential priority.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials & Non-Essentials, Bible Doctrine & Tragic Flaws

The concept of the Tragic Flaw is taken from Greek Drama which is all written in the form of poetry and was used in connection with the hero of the Greek Tragedy. This hero was always a very successful and prominent person but he always had 1 weakness which led to tragedy. In theology it

is the term for the flaw in the character of a believer who thinks of self as being under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and yet he has a flaw which hinders him from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Since Bible Doctrine is the only means of advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in time, it is vital to approach Bible Doctrine with total objectivity and concentration on the message. The distraction of the believer from approaching the study of the bible from the standpoint of objectivity is the basis for the doctrine of the tragic flaw. This flaw is based on the believer's failure to distinguish between the Essentials and Non-Essentials of life. For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ the ONLY Essential in life is Bible Doctrine while the Non-Essentials are all other aspects, subjects, concepts, idiosyncrasies and foibles of life. Reality in the Christian Way of Life is defined in terms of being inflexible regarding Essentials and being flexible with regard to Non-Essentials. For any believer who is advancing in the Spiritual Life what originally appears to be Essential may become a Non-Essential through restructuring the Norms and Standards through the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine. Lack of or disorientation to reality occurs when the believer is flexible with regard to the Essentials and inflexible with regard to the Non-Essentials of life. Only with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can the believer sort out the Essentials from the Non-Essentials and only Bible Doctrine can provide a true Scale of Values and proper Norms and Standards.

Categories of Tragic Flaws

There are 4 great tragic flaws which can effect believers who are under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and which destroy their flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials. There will always be at least one Tragic Flaw which precludes the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine by the positive believer. Every person who is or has been given any level of authority will most likely demonstrate at some point some character flaw related to it. Authority is delegated to only a few and when a person lacking capacity has authority they will most likely abuse it in some way. Most people who are given authority will never have capacity for it and will therefore handle their authority poorly. It only takes one tragic flaw with regard to the principle of the Royal Family Honor Code concerning Essentials to cause failure in the Christian Way of Life. Always keep clearly in mind that as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ the only single Essential is Bible Doctrine about which one must be completely inflexible. Non-Essentials encompass all other aspects of life and require flexibility in the application of Essential doctrine to them. Therefore, Bible Doctrine is the key to life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. All believers have sins, failures and weaknesses before and after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, but these are not tragic flaws. Tragic Flaws for believers are in fact the thing or things which ultimately keep a believer from the consistent learning of Bible Doctrine. Every tragic flaw of every believer is based on failure to distinguish between Essentials and Non-Essentials in the Christian Way of Life. Therefore, the tragic flaw is whatever neutralizes a believers consistent continuation in the study of Bible Doctrine. Bible Doctrine is a systematic structure in which one concept is based on another and life today, tomorrow and in the future depends on all the doctrine which can be absorbed during this lifetime. There are 3 basic causes for failure to distinguish between Essentials and Non-Essentials in life:

- **Lack of proper Norms and Standards** in the conscience which are Essential for effective orientation to reality. Sociopaths are devoid of true norms and standards. This tragic flaw is one in which reality is the illusion of a self centered Modus Operandi so that one never gets in touch with actual reality. If the sociopath becomes positive to Bible Doctrine he will eventually

develop a system of proper norms and standards and always has a better chance than the neurotic or psychotic individual.

- **Neuroses** where individuals fantasize about reality and relate to reality but only in the area of interpersonal conflict. They have some sort of instability which oscillates from positive to negative so that *emotional instability* becomes his tragic flaw and he lacks the perseverance to stick with the inculcation of Bible Doctrine.
- **Psychoses** where individuals are divorced from reality and the disorganization of their mind and soul results in inability to tolerate the demands of their environment so that their *stress and unrest* becomes their tragic flaw.

Abnormal persons do not see reality as being an Essential but as being a Non-Essential and become very inflexible about it and therefore are out of touch with reality. They are focused in the areas of selfcenteredness, self pity and false Norms and Standards therefore divorced from or disassociated from reality. The Royal Family Honor Code has its functions related to Essentials vs Non-Essentials because Christians divorce themselves from reality by expecting God to perform miracles for them when they have any reality based problems or even imaginary problems for which they want instant solutions. These Christians lack the function of the rebound procedure and do not see life as problems with divine solutions, blessings and good times.

The First Tragic Flaw

Admiration + Emulation == Tragic Flaw #1

This is the Non-Essential image which prevents the intake of Bible Doctrine. This is found in the person who sets up an image, hero or idol of sorts which they try to live up to and emulate. This one is very often the person who many others try to emulate. These individuals are highly capable in their field but have no knowledge of anything which is Essential in life. This tragic flaw is worshiping the idol which they themselves have created and often leads to **Iconoclastic Arrogance**.

By the time most people have become physically mature they have generally erected some idol in their Soul, an image which they admire. This image is related to the Norms and Standards of their conscience in such a way so as to be a goal in life or a system for emulation. Therefore, they carry an image in their soul which is a sum total of their Norms and Standards and something they desire to emulate. In other words this is the person they want to become. A female may create her image from being stage struck about some famous actress. These are LITTLE GIRLS who are stupid about actors who in fact are nothing in life and spend their entire life being imitators of their betters. These girls set up an image of certain actors or actresses and practice copying all their attitudes and habits. Such an image of an admired person is a Non-Essential and all actors and actresses can be classified as totally Non-Essential. This little girl becomes totally inflexible toward this Non-Essential and copies everything about the admired actress or actor and thereby destroys herself as a human being because of being totally inflexible about Non-Essentials.

A male as a result of his great arrogance and false norms and standards creates an image of masculinity from some stupid muscle bound body builder who most likely also has developed muscle in his brain as well. This “HE MAN” image is a Non-Essential and being inflexible about such an image results in distortion of one’s life. A true MAN has **moral courage** and has something in the soul

which allows him to take responsibility for things which he did not have anything to do with, this was Dwight D. Eisenhower. This true MAN was brilliant, thoughtful, gentlemanly and kind and was a real man. This tragic flaw is a Non-Essential image, usually of unreality, which has been created in the mind and admired and is what the flawed person wants to be and what he thinks is wonderful, attractive and / or successful. A mature person learns to admire greatness or attractiveness without trying to emulate it, This is the person who forms real Norms and Standards on the basis of the reality of who and what he is related to God, his training, his social life, etc.

This can also be the copying of the expressions and attitudes of someone like General George S. Patton by first Lieutenants who are mixed up and disoriented to reality because this copying is a Non-Essential. No one ever needs to emulate any other great person but each of us must become a plodder or a plugger and build a life which represents self and personal norms and standards. The most stupid thing any person can ever do is to set up an image of someone who is admired and then emulate that image. Instead of emulating the flair of another person people should emulate the plodding and determination these others used to learn their job and function in it to the best of their ability. This flaw is demonstrated in the woman who wants to be a fireman, a coal miner, a combat soldier, a police officer, etc and these women are inflexible with regard to Non-Essentials. Take a man who is brilliant, sensitive, thoughtful, gentlemanly, kind and low profile who goes on an ego trip by becoming inflexible about a Non-Essential and creats an image in his soul called manliness where he imitates a jackass who is rude, thoughtless, ignorant, etc., in the area of Non-Essentials. No one can ever be inflexible with regard to Non-Essentials and ever achieve anything in this life. When a person works overtime in creating an image to emulate he is in fact destroying his own life. Such images inevitably are destined to be smashed and this sort of modern idolatry is probably the worst idolatry ever because it destroys the capacity for living in both believers and unbelievers. When believers don't wake up and stop picking the worst people to imitate and worship they end up flip flopping in life and dying the Sin Unto Death.

Everyone has people that they have admired, this is not a bad thing, but reality must be faced that the individual person is not the person he is admiring and his job is to plug along in life to reach his point of attaining what is maximum for him. This becomes, for the believer, only a matter of plugging along under self discipline and learning, understanding and functioning under the Royal Family Honor Code. Believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must come to realize that every believer can be just as great as any other great person if he simply plugs along and learns his job and functions in his own way maintaining flexibility in the Non-Essentials and remaining teachable in learning his job. Learning any job well means there must have been in that person great self discipline and the learning of a myriad of little details and the development and use of a proper and accurate scale of values while remaining inflexible on the Essentials of life and flexible on all the Non-Essentials. A person who tenaciously clings to an image he has created becomes a hollow shell and a fool and is non-teachable and becomes totally phased out with regard to the reality of life. A persons greatest asset is to always remain totally oriented to reality.

Flexibility in all Non-Essentials things is a great strength and one never develops moral courage if he has a tragic flaw of trying to emulate an image of someone who he considers great. Without moral courage there will be no capacity for life and this one will go no where in life and will spend his whole life in inordinate ambition and arrogance and never know what life is really about. This person will be

always excusing himself for personal failures and blaming others for these failures. Every person must become his own person and it is alright to admire the personality or accomplishments of others but each person MUST be his own person. Believers must learn that entertainers are slaves to and depend on the approbation they receive from their audiences and they are, by and large, the most superficial and shallow people who spend their lives imitating other people. Others are to enjoy their entertainment work but not ever emulate them. The very last person who should ever give an opinion or have their opinion about any important subject considered important is an actor, actress, or entertainer in any field. Most of these people are so shallow that they are easily led astray by our current brand of radical liberals and almost all of them are extreme socialists and in effect radical communistic liberals and when they have any serious opinions, if these were ever carried out, this nation would be destroyed almost instantly. This is in fact what is actually occurring in the United States today in the early 21st century.

The Second Tragic Flaw

This is the arrogant presumption pattern where individuals who are successful or brilliant in one field have a presumption, based on being qualified by some self established or social standard as being successful, that they are brilliant in all fields. This is demonstrated in the Interviews of Socrates. One must recognize that when one is great in a single field he is most likely not an expert concerning ANY other things. Winston Churchill clearly demonstrated this pattern in his failures and strategic errors in World War II. This type of flaw is why generals have a staff and a good general or president or good leader in any area listens to his CAREFULLY SELECTED staff members when making crucial decisions. Because a person may be brilliant in one area of life does not mean he is or can be a great theologian. It is difficult for a person who has succeeded in one field to put themselves under authority and learn something in the Essential field of Bible Doctrine. These are the people who are wealthy, won some contest or event or have come into public notice and achieved public attention. This very often brings with it arrogance when they are successful or even pseudo successful. These are the people who are brilliant in certain fields or they can even be successful and dumb, but they assume, through their arrogance, that they are expert in any field or subject. Therefore, as a result of their arrogance, they feel qualified to express opinions on any subject which may come up. They can never simply say "I don't know". For instance, a great entertainer or artist is one who becomes inflexible in Non-Essentials by assuming in arrogance he is an expert on Sex. In reality they actually know less than anyone else because anyone who is as divorced from reality as entertainers, knows nothing about sex. This applies to all areas of Non-Essentials in life. From these types of people opinions concerning how to run anything, especially the country, must never be solicited or considered nor should principles related to theology ever be extracted from them. These people are most often totally naive about the Essential things of life and experts only in their personal field of interest. While a person may be brilliant in one field and an expert he is not qualified to deal with all fields and when he tries the result is inflexibility in the Non-Essentials of the areas of his ignorance. The news media have contributed to this fiasco by constantly interviewing successful or famous people and interrogating them about things about which they know nothing and are not qualified to express an opinion. Because they are famous, wealthy or successful and ARROGANT and inflexible in the Non-Essentials they come up with some erroneous or idealistic idea which is then taken for truth by those people who know nothing. One of the most tragic things about Winston Churchill was that because he was successful in 1 political field he considered himself expert in other fields. This occurred in both World War I and World War II and

caused a great deal of difficulty in both wars. He was totally correct about communism and brilliant about dealing with them but in areas of strategy and tactics for the military he was totally ignorant. His interference and the problems he caused in World War II resulted in the ultimate destruction of the British Empire where the British Empire was the greatest stabilizing influence in western European history.

Only arrogance presumes when successful in one area that one is qualified or expert in other areas. This applies in military functions, business, economics, education, etc. The principle of the general staff in the military developed by the Germans was the solution to this destructive tendency in the military. In the realm of theology there must be developed a whole system of theology not just the daily intake of the same gospel concepts. People should always recognize that the more one concentrates and becomes expert in one field the more he excludes other fields from his concentration about which, therefore, he does not have qualification for rendering opinions. Therefore, the more one succeeds in one field the less he can know in other fields because his concentration is totally focused in one field. As a result, in avoiding or correcting this tragic flaw it is the avoidance of arrogance which becomes the issue.

The Third Tragic Flaw

This is one assuming that having a good personality is greatness in a person. Personality Flair may accompany greatness but it NOT greatness and in fact great flair of personality can actually obscure the real person. Many people who ride on their good personality never settle down and learn anything, do anything or accomplish anything in life since that requires perseverance to avoid discouragement. Greatness can only be added to a person by self discipline and perseverance in learning and operating in one's chosen field. Therefore, personality can either be a manifestation or an obfuscation of the real person. In addition having a good personality is a Non-Essential in life and those who confuse good personality with greatness are divorced from reality. The Essential of life is found in the function in the soul and the Non-Essential is in the personality which, in fact, covers the reality of the soul. The historical fact is that most truly great people have terrible personalities. Consider:

- George Washington
- Johnathan J. Jackson
- George Patton
- etc.

Personality is not ever the issue in any area and must never be applied to the right Pastor Teacher which a believer chooses to learn Bible Doctrine from. Believers under their right Pastor Teacher must be inflexible about the message he presents and totally flexible about his personality as the teacher of doctrine. When the believer is inflexible about the communication of Bible Doctrine by his Pastor Teacher it will result in the pastor's personality not ever being the issue and only the message being the issue.

Immature believers often thinks that greatness is found in those who have a pleasing personality. While it is true that many people have great personalities it is not true that great personalities make a great person. General George S Patton had incredible flair but was great because of his fantastic military genius, aggressiveness and professionalism. What the average person fails to realize is that personality often obscures the real person. This was the case with General Jake Devers and Admiral

Spurance. It is also true that personality may often reveal a person but this revelation is most often a disguise as much as a manifestation of the real person. Therefore believers especially must come to realize that having a great personality does not imply greatness. Errol Flynn had a great personality but was only great in the area of histrionics. This in no way is meant to downgrade personality but place it in its proper perspective because it is what people see of a person. However, no one can see inside the soul and it is what a person thinks in his soul which actually makes him what he really is. Personality, great or flawed, indicates only that there is a person who exists behind it. Personality can also be the area for the function of great hypocrisy so that personality in itself may not be greatness but in fact may be a complete reflection of EVIL resident in the soul. Personality can be and in fact is used by some to set up a system of hypocrisy so that this person gains his own ends as a result of his personality. A cowardly person may have a good personality but the coward is still a coward. In reality having a good personality is a Non-Essential in life and those who confuse good personality with greatness become inflexible in the Non-Essentials and are thus divorced from what is real in life and are living in a dream world. In this area the Essential is the actual function or thinking of the soul and the Non-Essential is that which covers the soul for others to see, the personality. The reality of life is that most truly great people do not have good personalities and in many cases people often use their obnoxious personality to ensure their privacy in public.

A perfect analogy is that when considering Human Life, the Essential is the proper function of the human body while the Non-Essential is the style of the clothing covering it. By being inflexible about the Essentials of Human Life the person emphasizes the health of their body while being flexible about the Non-Essentials giving a de-emphasis on the clothing covering the body. Personality does not necessarily reveal the person at all and the Essential in any person is found in the Norms and Standards of the conscience of the soul and the Non-Essential is the personality which puts up a front for the soul. Therefore for the believer whose norms and standards are to be constructed from Bible Doctrine he must must be inflexible about Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but flexible about the Non-Essentials of personality. This allows believers to avoid judging others whom they are naturally antagonistic toward. This provides the person with the low profile or un-intensive personality the same opportunity to be evaluated positively as the one with the overtly dynamic personality. Anyone who has the responsibility for evaluating people must be aware that the same opportunity must be given to the low key individual as to the overtly bubbly person. Within the realm of theology and the function of the Pastor Teacher the message is the Essential and the man is the Non-Essential. The believer must be inflexible about the Bible Doctrine communicated OR NOT as he may choose but totally flexible about the man communicating it whether this pastor has a pleasant or obnoxious personality. This makes the personality of the Pastor Teacher a non issue in the Spiritual Life and the accuracy of the Bible Doctrine he teaches the only issue.

The Fourth Tragic Flaw

This is the arrogant subjectivity in overemphasis of one's personal problems when listening to Bible Doctrine being taught either in a congregation or in front of a recording device. If the believer is saturated with his own problems, difficulties or adversities in life he will make the interpretation of any given passage fit into the solutions or causes for his personal problems and not hear the actual interpretation. When attending bible study with a problem the believer can be so full of subjectivity

that he cannot concentrate and get the actual doctrinal information presented. This results from failure to push personal problems to the back of the mind when bible study starts which results in subjectivity in the study of Bible Doctrine. If the believer brings problems in to study time and the study does not deal with his problem he switches his soul into thinking of problems and fails to learn the subject of the Bible Doctrine taught. This results in the loss of the systematic structure of theology with which he would be able to meet all problems and difficulties of life. Again, all problems of life are Non-Essentials and the structured systematic theology of Bible Doctrine is the ONLY Essential of life. This structured Bible Doctrine will so develop the soul that the believer will be capable of having great blessing, happiness, and security in all situations of life whether prosperity or adversity. Personal problems must never be a distraction to the learning of Bible Doctrine, EVER. Therefore, for the period of time in which you study Bible Doctrine you MUST submerge your problems in order to remain objective to what is being taught. For the believer who is consistently positive toward Bible Doctrine the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception results in:

- Self discipline + Filling of God the Holy Spirit == Objectivity

This brings to him the concentration and authority orientation Essential for learning anything. Authority orientation (**Rom 12:3**) requires that the believer put aside his problems and maintain objectivity during the study of Bible Doctrine. This inflexibility toward Bible Doctrine leads to concentration on the teaching by the Pastor Teacher. Having a focus on personal problems during bible study to the exclusion of what is being taught as Bible Doctrine is inflexibility in the Non-Essentials. For the believer the reality factor is bible study and the listening to the teaching of Bible Doctrine the word of God while divorcement from reality is to think about and focus on personal problems. The failure to set aside problems while in bible study injects arrogance into the function of the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** and thus subjectivity, therefore, this believer is Essentially saying that his problems are more important than the word of God. Lacking concentration during bible study results in inability to assimilate Bible Doctrine. This is a type of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and results in there being a lack of a categorical system of theology in the soul, so that there can only be, from this believer, a series of responses or reactions to current personal problems in life. (**2Cor 10:5**) Bible Doctrine is the Essential of life which demands Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization under strict discipline and the utmost concentration giving inflexibility in determining the reality of life. Our attitude toward Bible Doctrine must be inflexible and what the bible says about anything must be our reality. (**2Pet 1:12-21**) When there is a difference between what the bible says is reality and what we are experiencing in life, the bible is ALWAYS right and our experience is ALWAYS wrong.

Personal problems, difficulties or adversities in life are Non-Essentials which demand application of Bible Doctrine and at the same time flexibility, pliancy, manageability and therefore regulation and restraint during the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception. The believer must restrain himself when listening to bible teaching. He must not, ONLY tune into the teaching when something seems to be applicable to his problems or when he can distort scripture for his personal problem solutions. He must listen to the interpretation which is Essential before attempting the application and must not spend his time thinking about personal problems else the Grace Apparatus for Perception will not function for his edification. This is the believer who claims Bible Doctrine does not work for him, and is why the Grace Apparatus for Perception is not providing him with any

saturation of Bible Doctrine in his life. The real problem lies in the lack of self discipline, self regulation, self restraint and is a total arrogance on the part of this pitiful believer. As a result of failure under the Grace Apparatus for Perception this person continues to think that their problems are more important than anything else in life and become totally inflexible about personal problems and completely disassociated from reality including the reality of the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Therefore, personal problems must never become a distraction to objectivity in approaching bible teaching. Whether the believer is in the local church or in front of a recording device he cannot think about personal problems and listen to bible teaching at the same time. Everyone has personal problems in this life but all believers must be flexible about the problems of life and know when to think about problems and when to ignore them. The person, the believer, who has trained himself to think only about their problems, is involved in Selfcenteredness, Egocentricity and Megalomania, therefore saturated in the **Interlocking System of Arrogance**.

Therefore, one of the most important things in gaining capacity for life is timing and knowing when to think about problems and when to forget about them and concentrate on something else. If one focus' on problems to the exclusion of all else he obviously has no self discipline. This why God the Holy Spirit in the Grace Apparatus for Perception functions for our benefit in providing the focus and concentration needed for inculcation of Bible Doctrine. This is the purpose of silent prayer prior to engaging in perception of Bible Doctrine in order to use the **Rebound** procedure and re-acquire the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and get under the self discipline needed for the Grace Apparatus for Perception to function properly. Under this self discipline the believer is regulated so as to approach Bible Doctrine with objectivity and concentration. In addition, authority orientation demands that bible teaching must overrule preoccupation with personal problems. Therefore it is the Essential Filling of God the Holy Spirit which restrains occupation with personal problems as a Non-Essential during bible teaching. (**Rom 12:3-**)

When the believer is rational without illusion he is flexible in the Non-Essentials and inflexible about the Essentials. In fulfilling the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception of Bible Doctrine the believer must understand the actual interpretation of a passage of scripture in terms of grammar, syntax, exegesis, isogogics, and of course contextual application. Bible Doctrine WILL solve all the problems of life but the believer must learn the doctrine first. Inflexibility regarding Non-Essentials divorces the believer from the reality of what a passage of scripture is actually teaching. Every passage must be understood based on what it is actually teaching and not what one wants it to teach. Always remember that Bible Doctrine is not designed for the believer's convenience but for edification and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Correct interpretation of Bible Doctrine is Essential while subjective distortion of Bible Doctrine to justify self or solve personal problems is Non-Essential. Such distortion becomes arrogant presumption and egocentric subjectivity presuming that every passage of scripture is related to ones current personal problem. Consequently instead of objectivity in approaching doctrinal teaching for the purpose of receiving the correct interpretation this believer subjectively distorts what is heard to relate it to his immediate problem so that his approach is subjective and he does not profit from the teaching at all. This tragic flaw neutralizes Positive Volition, hinders spiritual advance and produces both self centered and sociopathic reversionism and arrogance. To be inflexible about Essentials of Bible Doctrine and flexible about Non-Essentials of application the believer must comply with **2Cor 10:5.**

Flexibility, Positive Volition and a Sense of Humor

Since Flexibility toward Non-Essentials is the order of the day for believers it is this plus Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine that keeps a believer from being a weirdo and losing his sense of humor. This flexibility in the use of doctrine supports him in life by his understanding and applying Bible Doctrine and developing and using common sense all which prevents the development of arrogance and selfcenteredness the ultimate destruction of the Spiritual Life.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility vs Inflexibility & Preconceived Standards & Prejudices

Until a believer becomes strong or mature from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul certain background prejudices and preconceived standards will exist in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which are out of harmony with the Christian Way of Life and Grace policy of God. These false impressions and prejudices must be corrected by Bible Doctrine the only absolute criterion and correct means of setting standards in the soul. However, immature believers must not be bullied or influenced by those mature believers whom they admire in order to set standards of life in their soul higher than they have capacity for because this violates the Royal Family Honor Code and may produce a permanent casualty in the Spiritual Life. The only exception to this is in the home where parents have a right and in fact obligation to set standards for their children and demand compliance with them. Children often totally fail in life when they reject standards set by their parents or others in authority over them. Whether the standards are good or bad is never the issue but the authority which sets them must be respected. No one can make it in life nor be happy in life if they are anti-authority or not properly authority oriented. Standards set by parents may be wrong but it is wrong added to wrong to disobey the authority of the parents and doing so never makes a right.

Each believer as living life as unto the Lord must have privacy for learning Bible Doctrine and correcting errors in his personal Norms and Standards. There is no substitute for learning Bible Doctrine and storing it in the soul in order that the only Norms and Standards upon which one operates are from this Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own conscience and from no one else's. Since the Lord is never unfair and the Point of Reference for the believer is the Justice of God and God never puts on him more than he can handle, even though inevitably he makes his own misery, he must never react to the failures of others and with regard to his own failures he must ONLY address corrections based on doctrine and Grace. Therefore to be fully convinced of the validity and appropriateness of one's Norms and Standards demands the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception of Bible Doctrine communicated from one's right Pastor Teacher rather than being influenced by spiritual bullying from members of a congregation or from the nuances of admiration and attraction by others. The issue is and must always remain the content of Bible Doctrine and not finding 'lovely' people to associate with. Every believer needs Bible Doctrine from their own right Pastor Teacher and not particularly face to face with the Pastor Teacher. Bible Doctrine is necessary not people and the both the doctrine communicated and that which is inculcated must be accomplished under strict academic authority. Personal rapport between the believer and Pastor Teacher is NOT EVER the issue primarily because different believers, at differing

stages of spiritual growth, are all still living life as unto the Lord and no one has any right to interfere with this. This means that under the privacy of the priesthood any group of Christians or any congregation has this right and privacy of volition given by God to take responsibility for their decisions and the development of their own personal norms and standards. Every Pastor Teacher must give an account to The Lord Jesus, The Christ at the Judgment Seat of Christ regarding his presentation of proper Norms and Standards from correct Bible Doctrine or NOT and for the Pastor Teacher, this is a HUGE issue.

Essential toleration of Non-Essentials in the Spiritual Life

Emphasis for the believer should be on living life as unto the lord and also to the principle of toleration of differences of opinion in the area of Non-Essential application of Bible Doctrine. A primary Essential doctrine of the Christian Way of Life is that as long as a believer is alive, God has a plan for his life and this is absolute and dogmatic. So if a believer finds himself alive in uncomfortable or devastating situations he MUST remember, as long as he is alive, GOD HAS A PLAN FOR HIS LIFE. When a believer thinks that God does not have a plan for his life he is rejecting this Essential. This is an Absolute Dogmatic Doctrine and all believers are here to use the opportunity of this life to advance in and be blessed in and glorify God in that plan and ultimately to die and ultimately be resurrected in that plan. *THIS IS AN Essential DOCTRINE*. There must be recognition, acceptance and agreement on the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and there must be tolerance of the Non-Essentials derived from one's background of environmental application, religious legalism or heathenistic Modus Vivendi. All people have backgrounds and environments under which they have grown up and lived and there are people which they have admired and whose views on some things have been accepted as truth or reality. All individuals have developed Norms and Standards in life and for believers many of these become Non-Essential. Therefore believers in this Church Age, members of the Royal Family of God, Spiritual Aristocracy are part of a dynasty which will never die out and which will be perpetuated into the eternal future of God's heaven. As a result of these facts and principles there now is an area of incredible Essentials which must be learned, perceived and made to become part of the Norms and Standards of one's soul. Only the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can discern between the Essential and the Non-Essential in life and therefore he is required to be tolerant. The more a believer grows spiritually the greater is his responsibility to the family of God. The more a believer grows spiritually the greater is his responsibility to be sensitive to the feelings and opinions of others in the sense of toleration under the principle of Impersonal Love.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential & Non-Essentials of Norms & Standards

Everyone has personal standards in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. They are developed beginning in early life from background upbringing, environment, education, employment, etc. Therefore, all people have norms and standards built into what we call a conscience and everyone learns these from every area of life and develops particular attitudes and opinions based on their interactions but, for the most part, these are all Non-Essential standards. When situations occur in

life where decisions are required, application is made from the standards developed throughout life concerning such things as dress, behavior, diet, exercise, speech vocabulary, etc. Every believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ has a right to these standards as long as there is no conflict between them and any Essential doctrine. Believers must ultimately come to realize that most things in life are Non-Essentials and the truly Essential aspect of the life is the fundamental of the Spiritual Life, Bible Doctrine. With regard to Non-Essentials in life a person should never stick their nose into the business of others. One should never try to change others ideas or opinions since everyone has a right to his own standards and the application of those standards to his own personal situations but no one has any right to try to apply these standards to others except, of course, where one's own children are concerned. Therefore, it is obvious that people all have different views on different subjects and the standards of one may be totally different from those of others, however, for all believers Bible Doctrine is the ONLY true Essential.

Flexibility must be the Mental Attitude of the mature believer with regard to the problems of personal associations. These problems include various taboos and systems of Legalism to which individuals often subscribe. Both the omission and commission of these 2 controversial situations are covered by the principle that the mature believer, with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, has standards free from legalism and taboos, which are based on Bible Doctrine. Immature and Legalistic believers and weak negative believers must be dealt with using Impersonal Love and never must the mature believer lower himself to their standards. When these principles are followed immaturity cannot win out against maturity unless the mature believer retaliates, retorts or fights with maligning, judging, gossip, etc. When the mature believer fights back against the false standards of the immature, he has adopted those very standards and thereby loses the battle every time EVEN IF HE IS CORRECT. Mature believers must be very cautious regarding the grounds upon which they choose to get into reciprocal action with other people and must never abandon the high standards from Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Standards of Impersonal Love must never be wiped out with violence or revenge of any kind. The mature believer must live by the mature standards formed from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The mature believer has no hangups and does not ever try to prove anything to others or prove that he is better in some area of life. Christianity under the Royal Family Honor Code sanctions tolerance for immaturity and recognizes that all people in varying stages of growth will have varying standards. The Christian Way of Life under the Royal Family Honor Code realizes these varied standards are needed by people so that Bible Doctrine will be the primary issue and thereby allow immature believers to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God based on THEIR OWN personal volition. Every person at some point in his life has Norms and Standards which are stupid based on prior background and false principles. Mature believers must allow each person to lose these hangups by means of their personal choices to engage in consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and accumulate it into the Stream of Consciousness of their own Soul.

Soul Life will always exist in the Soul for both believers and unbelievers and it is in the soul that these norms and standards are developed and no matter what occurs in life one cannot ever lose Soul Life since it was imputed by God at physical birth and it cannot ever be taken back. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, God's Eternal Life is imputed to the regenerated Human Spirit and there is nothing that can ever be done to lose that Eternal Life. No person can ever lose

his status as a human being having soul life and as believers we cannot ever lose our status of Royal Family of God having Eternal Life. When you engage in consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine it immediately enters the Human Spirit under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit and is immediately transferred to the Left Lobe of the Soul where the believer then can understand it and can accept as truth or reject this Bible Doctrine. Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe of the Soul is (gr) 'GNOSIS' or academically understood doctrinal knowledge and available as information but NOT for application nor to set up standards in the conscience of the soul. If and when the believer accepts this doctrine as truth and believes it by faith, it is then cycled under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In the Right Lobe of the Soul it builds the Edification Complex of the Soul by building more and more advanced doctrine on the foundation of the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. In the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul this doctrine moves into the memory and vocabulary storage areas and merges into categorical storage as well and is then used to set up new standards in the soul and remove old standards developed from prior life experiences which are contrary to the Absolute Truths of the Plan of God. The norms and standards of the weak or immature believer are based only on his background and they may be weak or strong standards but if he is positive to Bible Doctrine and consistently exposes himself to it these old norms and standards will be destroyed and replaced by Bible Doctrinal Standards during normal spiritual growth. If these false norms and standards are destroyed by spiritual bullying or persuasion from a prominent person then there is nothing to replace them and there is a break from the advance in the Spiritual Life toward Spiritual Maturity. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God has norms and standards based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine and thus has a tendency to be intolerant of the immature believer and this is his occupational hazard.

Areas of Application of Norms and Standards

There are 2 areas of application of one's norms and standards in life:

- Essentials of Bible Doctrine
  - Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
  - Rebound by naming sins to God directly never to another person.
  - Mandates and Promises from God for the believer, ETC.
- Non-Essentials of life and non-critical doctrines
  - Holy Days as special days.
  - Not eating certain foods for any reason.
  - All other areas of life including all legalistic and religious taboos.

In the area of Non-Essentials the mature believer must tolerate the immature believer's peculiarities and the immature believer should never judge the mature believer's indulgences. There are wide variations in things which are permissible for Christians to do and NO ONE has any right to try to tell another believer what their Modus Vivendi should be about these Non-Essential things. The true problem is that most Christians have become inflexible in the development of their norms and standards as a result of their ZEAL for The Lord Jesus, The Christ. We must remember that there is freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment and also under the Royal Family Honor Code. No one has any right to interfere with the privacy and property of others for any reason nor does anyone have any right to tell others what they can think, say, do, have as property, etc. No one has a right to ever coerce others to give their money to any cause as well.

There are always believers who think they know all things about the Christian Way of Life and are trying to be the doctrinal source or the conscience for others. This occurs with unbelievers as well where very often wives are nagging, husbands are bullying, mothers correcting adult children, etc., and none of this has anything to do with Christianity. In effect believers must personally work to retain their privacy regarding their position concerning Essentials or Non-Essentials in life. Every believer must develop his own personal Norms and Standards but ONLY from Bible Doctrine and therefore, every royal priest has the right to privacy and conviction which is compatible with his personal stage of growth. It should be blatantly obvious that one believer cannot adopt the standards of a more mature believer without the needed background of Bible Doctrine to support them. When trying to copy another believer one may emulate the person in asceticism, legalism or maturity; but he is adopting patterns of behavior and new characteristics without the Norms and Standards to back them up. Without the Essential norms and standards from Metabolized Bible Doctrine he finds himself under incredible pressure and often snaps becoming psychopathic or sociopathic even as a believer. When the immature believer emulates others, from that point on, for his whole life, there is no standard of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for the spiritual Modus Operandi which he participates in. Having no Norms and Standards for the things he is participating in he is immediately thrust into the status of being highly unstable and susceptible to every false Doctrine and principle. He is never able to get straightened out so that it is only a matter of time for him to reach the stage of being liable to the Sin Unto Death having a totally destroyed Spiritual Life. Each believer must stay with his own Norms and Standards and not ever try to adopt the Norms and Standards of others until he has the doctrine to support them. The principle is that no believer can operate on the basis of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of ANOTHER BELIEVER EVER.

Norms and standards of Maturity vs Immaturity

The immature believer in the privacy of the priesthood, living life as unto the lord but observing certain food or activity taboos which are related to his background and standards of conscience is not going to be right about many things, many times. If one takes away his taboos this immature believer will be instantly destroyed. The principle is that if one takes away a person's individual Norms and Standards and there is no Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to replace them he will be destroyed. His motivation in life is destroyed along with the relationship between his conscience and function in life and sooner or later something will come along and totally destroy his life.

There is arrogance in those who feel they must try to straighten out these immature believers. Clearly recognize that the key to resolution of the Angelic Conflict is that everyone must have the same opportunity to hear and accept or reject the Gospel of Christ and Bible Doctrine on their own initiative. When there is restraint from trying to change the standards of these people they may eventually hear Bible Doctrine along the way and make their own applications. In this way they may become stable persons with stable normal growth instead of having been bullied into a course of action which later they may react to. As a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ what one does in life must always be based on Bible Doctrine and every believer must have a chance to learn Bible Doctrine based on his own volition. He cannot be learning Bible Doctrine while bullying or being bullied by those trying to straighten him out. As an example; in reality the believer who eats only

according to taboo standards must understand along with the mature believer that these standards are not disapproved by God. Since God accepts his standards of eating even though he is wrong about his conclusion that one cannot be spiritual without eating in this way, why would a mature believer try to change him? It is a proper function for the mature believer to simply leave him alone.

Another problem lies with the immature believer who is tempted to judge the mature believer who eats what he wants to when he wants. This is where the privacy of the priesthood as a basic part of the Royal Family Honor Code must be applied. This person's privacy must be respected both when they are absent and also in public when they are present. Respecting privacy in public is part of professionalism in any area of life especially where leadership is involved. Therefore the mature believer must tolerate while the immature believer must avoid maligning, judging, and gossip and to live and let live is the standing order of function for the Royal Family of God. The more Bible Doctrine a believer has the greater his responsibility to be sensitive to those under him if he is in a position of authority or leadership. Mature believers must take responsibility for being aware of and sensitive to those around them and avoid hurting their feelings or using a sense of humor to make them uncomfortable or hurt them. This is legitimate Christian sensitivity and nothing gives the believer the authorization to be boorish and ill mannered or stupid and arrogant regarding the feelings and functions of others. Each believer must live life as unto the Lord and the Positive Volition believer whether immature or mature is not required to meet the standards of other believers in these various stages of growth. Instead they must meet the standards of God for THEIR OWN stage of growth which makes Bible Doctrine the true issue.

Therefore it should be clear that God has different standards for different stages of spiritual growth and God is flexible therefore as believers we must also be flexible and understand the variations in standards of other believers. Divine standards for infant believers are not the same as those for mature believers. The mature believer must carry the burden and assume the responsibility for toleration of the immature believer. Therefore, as long as the immature believer does not assume that his observation of a taboo or ascetic function is the means of spirituality or blessing from God he is in no danger of falling into reversionism. However, he must not ever think he is more spiritual because of his ascetic functions and he may have difficulty when doctrines are taught which oppose his old standards. He may resent these new principles and temporarily or even permanently go into reversionism not liking what has been taught. For any immature believer to assume that any taboo or the observation of any 'holy day' is being spiritual or advancing in the Spiritual Life to maturity is apostasy. Though it is apostasy and incompatible with Bible Doctrine it can and may in fact be straightened out if this believer remains under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine. While he is wrong in his assumptions, he must be able to continue to take in Bible Doctrine according to his own volition without anyone making an issue over these Non-Essential concepts. The major principle here is that the mature believer should never try to straighten out people but allow Bible Doctrine to do so with regard to Essentials and Non-Essentials in life. Both mature and immature believers must understand that abstinence from certain foods or drinks does not advance the believer to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God nor does it contribute to the believer's glorification of God. Only tolerance by the mature believer gives the immature believer a chance to correct immature standards and convert those standards with grace norms.

Essential Bible Doctrine in Frame of Reference & Norms & Standards

If Bible Doctrine which is in the Left Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is accepted or "believed" by faith then it becomes (gr) 'epignosis' doctrine and changes the norms and standards of the believer. If the Bible Doctrine from the Left Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is rejected it will not ever be able to be cycled into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as Absolute Truth and therefore will never become (gr) 'epignosis' knowledge available for application to life. At physical birth the individual has in the soul, soul life imputed by God and at regeneration or Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he has Eternal Life also imputed by God to the Human Spirit regenerated by God the Holy Spirit, this is the reason believers are said to be "born again". When a doctrine or principle of doctrine taught by God the Holy Spirit to the Human Spirit and transferred to the Left Lobe of the Soul is accepted by faith, God the Holy Spirit then transfers it to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and into the Frame of Reference where it becomes reality. There is obviously a strong relationship between the intake of Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth. A mature believer has completed development and deployment of the 10 Problem Solving Devices and has a completed Edification Complex of the Soul. He has a Doctrinal conscience growing out of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore, the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God has the ability to make application to all situations and circumstances in life from his own conscience, his doctrinal norms and standards, and this is the source of all application of doctrine in life.

Believers must stay with their own Norms and Standards and not ever try to adopt the Norms and Standards of others until they have the doctrine to support them. The immature believer who learns Bible Doctrine and grows and advances in the Spiritual Life will glorify and honor the Lord having new Norms and Standards, not from being bullied or coerced, but from learning Bible Doctrine in his own time and at his own rate. It is ONLY Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which changes the Norms and Standards of the conscious and no one should ever violate their own taboos unless there is a basis from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Soul. Once there is a Bible Doctrine basis in the conscious this changes applications so that this individual has more flexibility toward the Non-Essentials. No one can have flexibility with regard to the Non-Essentials without Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. For the believer this encompasses all the doctrinal principles throughout scripture while for the unbeliever it is the understanding of the Bible Doctrine principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Flexibility must NEVER be put before Bible Doctrine, flexibility always FOLLOWS Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. There is no place for flexibility concerning the Essentials of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, about Bible Doctrine there must be complete dogmatism while about the application of Bible Doctrine there must be demonstrated elasticity rather than tenacity and ductility rather than brittleness and the believer must be lubricated by the Royal Family Honor Code rather than abrasive as a result of his personal arrogance. THEREFORE, having tolerance for varied stages of spiritual growth in other believers does not imply toleration of error regarding the Essentials of Bible Doctrine. Glorification of God and the execution of the Plan of God can only be accomplished through the teaching and Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This eliminates all other functions of human life, all which are the Non-Essentials of life and related to the Royal Ambassadorship of the believer whereby he cannot and never does advance in any way. Therefore, Bible Doctrine is the inflexible mass and base for the believer but from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of

Consciousness of the Soul there must be flexibility directed in application to the Non-Essentials of life. This is the strength which results in survival under pressure and disaster from the use of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and function under the Royal Family Honor Code. The Royal Family Honor Code had an equivalent in the Old Testament Scripture times and has one for the tribulation times by which people will survive in the worst disasters through flexibility in the Non-Essentials.

Essential Freedom and Spiritual Growth

Believers must have freedom to grow spiritually and that means privacy and freedom to build the Edification Complex of the Soul and develop and deploy the 10 Problem Solving Devices along with doctrinal Norms and Standards in the conscience at their own rate. Therefore, there must be an environment in life for this growth and thus privacy above all else must be protected. Everything done in the organization and function of the Local Church and in fact in the nation must focus on the protection of the privacy and freedom of the Human Soul so that the individual can accept or reject God, and the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ can take in Bible Doctrine and develop norms and standards based on that Doctrine and be able to operate freely on those standards OR NOT! Therefore the Laws and Judicial functions in a nation should ultimately emphasize Privacy, Volitional Freedom, Property and Life as the key factors in addressing, defining and curtailing criminality. No person can live any part of his life based on the soul functions of another person therefore there must be privacy of the royal priesthood and believers must build personal standards based on Bible Doctrine and thus become spiritually self sustaining. Believers must be free to learn Bible Doctrine according to their own desires and when doctrine is presented they must have the right and ability to accept it and built it into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul OR to say NO and reject it. If the Pastor Teacher or anyone else forces Bible Doctrine into the Soul of a believer or by counseling believers circumvents the proper function of their soul, this becomes a crutch in the life of that believer which is extremely difficult for him to stop relying on. As a result the believer cannot develop his own Spiritual Life nor the proper norms and standards of the conscience in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul.

The believer must be free to say NO to Bible Doctrine under 2 conditions:

- Lack of understanding of the doctrine.
- Complete understanding of the doctrine but rejection of it.

In both cases this will keep the doctrine from being converted to Essential energy for application to life. The process of complete Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is taking that which we understand in the Left Lobe of the Soul and converting it to spiritual energy by accepting or believing it by faith. This is a part of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit who takes this accepted information of believed Bible Doctrine and moves it as energy to build our Edification Complex of the Soul and develop and deploy the 10 Problem Solving Devices onto the Forward Line of Troops of the Right Lobe. As part of this function in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is then construction of doctrinal norms and standards in the Essential conscience. The mature believer must have an Essential conscience where there is a minimal amount of prejudice but maximum tolerance. This minimal prejudice is based on the norms and standards from the background of one's life while the maximum tolerance is based on norms and standards of Essential Bible Doctrine. (**1Tim 1:5**; **1Tim 1:19**; **1Tim 3:9**) Ultimately the believer's conscience must be based on Essential Bible Doctrine not human background understanding.

On the other hand, the reversionist believer has no Edification Complex of the Soul, lacks the 10 Problem Solving Devices, has no Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and therefore lacks an Essential conscience. Therefore, a "pure conscience" is a mature conscience where the norms and standards are based on Bible Doctrine not Human Viewpoint background. The "apostles of apostasy" and "teachers of evil" always possess a distorted conscience because reversionism involves a Right Lobe of the Soul lacking Bible Doctrine and they live based on a personal Frame of Reference from Human Viewpoint background, personal memories, categories, vocabulary and their norms and standards are strictly Non-Essential. The reality of life is that from Non-Essential norms and standards you can only make Non-Essential application to superficialities in life. (**1Tim 4:1-2**) These believers are not and cannot be demon possessed but by concentration and focus on the doctrines from demons they develop and adhere to Evil policies incompatible with Bible Doctrine. Therefore, without Essential Bible Doctrine their conscience is sealed with a branding iron of EVIL. This is what occurs in the focus on and practice of Legalism in the Christian. (**1Cor 8:7**)

Essentials vs Non-Essential Norms & Standards of Weak vs Strong Believers

The best food in the ancient world was sold just outside the heathen temples after the best animals had been sacrificed to the heathen gods. This food was all offered to an idol and the idolatry temple would sell the offerings to help financially sustain the temple and its priests and priestesses. The person who worshiped in the Jewish temple associated this good food with idolatry and as a new believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ did not think he should eat it because it violated his new norm and standard. There is nothing wrong with that orientation but it is not a true application of Bible Doctrine. Food itself is a Non-Essential and the this application is a Non-Essential application from a personal standard, however, it is still a matter of the privacy of his priesthood. Another believer who has never identified with idols goes to the same place and buys the wine and beef and enjoys it. The new believer seeing this other believer buying this idolatrous meat and wine wants to judge that person who purchased this excellent food from the idol's temple stores. Neither is wrong as long as they both MIND THEIR OWN BUSINESS. However, both are wrong when they stick their nose into the other's business and try to superimpose their standards on the other. In situations like this when any standard of any person is wrong Bible Doctrine must be what corrects it and believers must be allowed the chance to grow at their own rate under privacy and correct their own standards. Doctrine must always be the primary issue for advancing believers not a conflict of personal standards.

Establishment concepts guarantee 2 principles based on the Laws of Divine Establishment involving Authority for both civil and spiritual areas. Under these concept the principle is that the immature believer will not judge the mature believer whose standards are different from his as a result of a far greater intake of Bible Doctrine. The Mature believer will not be intolerant of the immature believer whose standards from his viewpoint are pitiful because of a lack of time in grade for taking in Bible Doctrine. Therefore TOLERANCE and no JUDGING is the standing order for believers in the local churches of God. These principles are arrived at by understanding and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and the authority detailed therein. Therefore when a believer comes into conflict with the standards of another person he must back off and give them privacy. All individuals

have differing norms and standards in life and a person is not to try to superimpose his standards onto another because that is how an individual's standards are destroyed. This is how children get sucked into crime and how such things as homosexuality get started. As long as a personal standard does not violate an Essential doctrine believers must not violate the privacy of the individual who adheres to that standard whether it is a true or false standard. However, when some standard held by another in our periphery violates an Essential doctrine we must correct that error or totally avoid the person.

Paul had standards before God and man both. (**Acts 24:16**) He would not ask for money because of his standards toward both men and God. However, if a believer was out of line he rebuked him ruthlessly for being in violation of Essential doctrines. Where Non-Essential application of standards from doctrine were concerned he was most tolerant of all men. Therefore, by this means the mature believer is to possess a conscience compatible with grace. (**2Cor 1:2**) Therefore, the Communication of Bible Doctrine must appeal to the conscience and norms and standards of the believer. (**2Cor 4:2**) The teaching of Bible Doctrine commends itself to all men's conscience and when it is effectively taught individuals have the right and responsibility to say YES or NO to it. However, when the absolute truth of Bible Doctrine is rejected then a false standard will always take its place. It is the function of the norms and standards in the conscience of the individual which is the basis for Spiritual or Laws of Divine Establishment service. (**2Tim 1:3**) In addition the norms and standards of the conscience are related to unjust suffering and the purpose of Metabolized Bible Doctrine is to establish solid biblical Norms and Standards in the conscience. Lack of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul means that the Norms and Standards of the conscience have to be formed from one's secular background, environment and training and lacking Bible Doctrine means that the believer will operate just as the unbeliever operates with the same kinds of Norms and Standards. There may be many false norms in the unbeliever, therefore, the weak believer may also be full of goofy opinions but the strong mature believer can tolerate these opinions unless they are in violation of the Essential Doctrines of Christianity. It is obvious that people disagree on many things which are not Essential things in life and these things are generally universally tolerated. Normal and correct spiritual growth in the Christian Way of Life takes the goofy norms and standards and replaces them with Bible Doctrine which eventually will wipe them out totally. When, due to inconsistency in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, it does not do this then that believer has false Norms and Standards and for him, "doctrine does not work".

When a believer uses another believer as a crutch to emulate or seek counseling from because of his own lack of growth in the Spiritual Life and he depends on him for orientation to life that believer has no true norms and standards. All true Norms and Standards in the Christian Way of Life are based on individually Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the individual's Soul. Therefore, believers are to tolerate false Norms and Standards in others but NEVER IN SELF and this gives the immature weak believer the privacy and freedom of his priesthood to develop his own correct Norms and Standards through Metabolizing Bible Doctrine and not on the basis of spiritual bullying. The immature believer functions properly under the Royal Family Honor Code in loving the brethren through restraint in judging, maligning, vindictiveness and retaliation because he does not have enough Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe to understand nor appreciate the Norms and Standards of the mature believer and must give him his privacy.

Flexibility & norms and standards

Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the only way to truly change the Norms and Standards of the conscience. For the believer there cannot be flexibility regarding the Non-Essentials without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. (**Rom 14:14-**) However, there is no excuse for the strong mature believer to depart from the Royal Family Honor Code and his doctrinal standards and retaliate or retort against anyone. Retaliation by the strong believer when involving Non-Essentials is a departure from his Norms and Standards and also from the Royal Family Honor Code and involves the principle that 2 wrongs don't EVER make a RIGHT. In these cases the strong believer is robbed of his strength from Bible Doctrine and the manifestation of this strength which is flexibility concerning Non-Essentials in life. Having doctrinal standards and flexibility in application is **Moral Courage** and part of the Royal Family Honor Code. Therefore, strong believers are not to abandon their standards to succumb to the weak believer who is legalistic, petty and implacable. However, they must refuse to become involved in an argument over Non-Essentials and publicly refrain from antagonism of these weaker believers. This may involve some self sacrifice on the part of the strong believer in restraining his own liberty. Having good manners the strong believer never turns a party or dinner into a debate over Non-Essentials because social gatherings should never become a contest of opinions. If eating certain foods was morally evil then there would be no virtue in abstinence since food would then be an Essential concept in the Spiritual Life. Food is not an Essential concept in the Spiritual Life and thus, as such, falls into the category of flexibility and Non-Essential. With Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul believers will have divine standards and their Impersonal Love will be so great that they will have total flexibility about Non-Essentials and move from their function under the law of liberty to the law of supreme sacrifice, expediency or love very easily. The only things which will carry the believer in this life are Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Impersonal Love for Mankind. The believers who maintain Impersonal Love and Metabolized Bible Doctrine will inevitably be successful in all that they do in life.

Flexibility, Impersonal Love and Christians

Believers must ultimately realize that all Christians have different standards because all are at different stages of spiritual growth and therefore there must be flexibility with regard to other Christians. The variation in norms and standards is due to variations in the level of understanding of Bible Doctrine and it must be remembered that given a chance to engage personally in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine believers who function consistently under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine WILL change their own standards. No believer is perfect and it is totally improper to ever make an issue of another persons sins or failures because they are disliked or stimulate one's own Mental Attitude Sins toward them. The ultimate of hypocrisy is to continue to sin in life yourself and still make an issue of other's sins. Avoiding this pitfall recognizes the privacy of the priesthood as a basic tenet of the Royal Family Honor Code and the principle of LIVE and LET LIVE which overflows from the Laws of Divine Establishment into the Royal Family Honor Code. Therefore, all believers must have equality of opportunity to engage in personal Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine based on their own free will decisions. This emphasizes the flexibility in Non-Essentials mandated for the advancing or mature believer and is a GREAT STRENGTH. However, Vacillation or Oscillation from point to point or

concept to concept is weakness but flexibility in the application of Bible Doctrine is great strength and the strongest people are those who can bend to a given situation without breaking down. Therefore, the stronger or more mature the believer is, the greater is the flexibility in his Modus Operandi. Unfortunately for these strong mature believers the greater the flexibility the more they are totally misunderstood. This emphasizes the importance of Impersonal Love in the fulfillment of the Royal Family Honor Code. The fact that the mature believer does not fawn over every person in their periphery will cause them to be greatly misunderstood by immature or legalistic reversionistic believers. It must be clearly understood that Impersonal Love emphasizes the Norms and Standards, the character and integrity from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, of the subject, not the attractiveness of the object. It also emphasizes orientation to authority as the only means of learning Bible Doctrine. The result is that the mature believer through flexibility in Non-Essentials has become oriented to reality and thus is free from arrogance and hangups, liberated from inordinate ambition, sensitive to the feelings of others, courteous, poised and capable of moral courage decisions.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential & Non-Essentials in Observing a Day

The concept of observing the day as to the Lord is an open door to legalism. God does not intend for us to spend the whole day on Bible Doctrine because we would totally burn out if we tried and this would cause our Spiritual Life to be out of balance. In addition the principle exists that when a believer takes in Bible Doctrine for it to be of any value to him he has to be able to use or apply it to life therefore God will provide testing for each positive believer as he accumulates more and more doctrine. When a believer makes the mistake of constantly taking in Bible Doctrine then the testing very likely can overwhelm his ability to apply that doctrine to it and he therefore fails and runs the potential of destroying his own Spiritual Life and moving into reversionism saying “doctrine does not work”. God does intend that we spend time on other things including the Essential sanity of work and then also Bible Doctrine. God intends for us to laugh and have pleasure and does NOT intend for the time devoted to pleasure to equal that devoted to work because this also is out of balance. When pleasure in any form is continued for long periods of time then it ,in fact, becomes work and very hard work. Ecclesiastes tells us that there is time for everything and there must be a stabilizer among that time because the Human Race is weak from the Old Sin Nature and tends toward Sin and Human Good. Therefore, when an individual has too much free time he then gets into functions under the Old Sin Nature of Sin or Human Good. The fact that people no longer have to work 12 hours a day means that they have much more free time to sit around and think of ways to Sin or do Human Good. This inevitably results in the destruction of freedom and a life with this constant Evil influence driving the function of Sin or Human Good. When people motivated by Evil in their thinking dream up “good” things and have too much time to parlay this thinking into Sin, Crime or Human Good actions, these always result in some of the great functions from EVIL.

This is why pastors who constantly study doctrine are sane because all the study required for proper doctrinal teaching is very hard work and thus breeds sanity in them. Because of work we arrive at bible study tired and exhausted and SANE. Work is thereby related to time and because it is related

to time it is through hard work people find sanity. In the United States of America today this is why there has been a dramatic change in the youth and people in general because of having TOO MUCH FREE TIME. The people who settled this land had to work and build things just to sustain their life and they were very sane people and the people who wrote the constitution were also very sane and did not have time for the goofy ideas put forth by our radical liberalism today. The original settlers did not concern themselves with pollution of the environment, everyone being equal, demanding support from the government, ETC. People today have too much free time and they have mostly been educated beyond their capacities and at the same time **Brainwashed and Propagandized** into radical liberalism and when this occurs the people develop great arrogance and inordinate ambition. When these people, who should be doing menial labor jobs, have the inordinate ambition to think they are able to run a company or other large organization, which they are absolutely not capable of doing, they are thereby avoiding the work God has assigned to them and their capabilities and as a result they lose their sanity because of being in the wrong kind of work. Because many people have not had enough to do for too long a time, most end up being assigned to the wrong kind of work or NO WORK AT ALL and very few are still truly sane. These people have actually truly gone crazy and have completely lost track that as human beings we only have 1 day at a time to live and enjoy. The understanding of our allocation of time is part of capacity for life and every person must have something which they must work hard at doing, and even as Students, they must STUDY hard instead of constantly playing. Most students do not engage in either of these things and don't study nor concentrate on their subject matter and as a result graduate with a diploma and insanity and are totally disoriented to life. They have been educated into a system of Arrogance where they refuse to take a humble or menial job but want to start at the top in an organization. Today the government has caused the creation of a situation where in organizations children can start at the top with nothing in the way of understanding having been required of them in order to be earning a MINIMUM WAGE of $15 per hour. The concept of Minimum Wage in itself is completely Evil and the legislating of this into law in this country in some states is the absolute EVIL of concentrated human good and is criminal and totally destructive to the young people in the new working generation.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential of Divine Viewpoint

It is always better to scrub floors for 5 cents per hour than to ever take anything from the government. It is always honorable to work no matter what the job may be, whether it is professional or menial but receiving government WELFARE is Evil. However, properly motivated charity is not Evil and is also Honorable and people who cannot support themselves must be taken care of by systems of charity. This is Divine Viewpoint related to Laws of Divine Establishment principles.

Divine Viewpoint for Survival in Disaster

The only thing which will prevent an economic depression in any a nation is a war and in war there will always be a lot of suffering because many people will have to work for low wages just to

continue to live. In this and every other situation in life, Divine Viewpoint is Essential to survive both pressure and prosperity situations in life. You may work for the worst person in the world who is cruel, vicious and unfair but you can survive having Divine Viewpoint in the soul. **Ps 33:17-20** describes survival in economic depression through functions under Divine Viewpoint. Very often economic depression is part of Divine Discipline to both nations and individual reversionists under the influence of evil. (**Ps 105:16**, **Jer 11:22**) The existence and predominance of the teaching of false doctrine and perpetuation of the LIE in time of depression intensifies the depression. This was the result because of the function of holy rollers in the 1930's and of the Salvation Army. (**Jer 14:13-16**+**18**) However, God protects the believer with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine in all adversity in life especially during economic depression. (**Job 5:20**, **Rom 8:35**) Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the solution for the believer in depression thus advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is both the way to restore the economy and also to deliver the nation. (**Is 37:30-31**)

Essential Bible Doctrine for Disaster

Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the Essential for survival in disaster and believers in disaster cannot simply call upon the Lord for help and deliverance but must be able to apply PREVIOUSLY Metabolized Bible Doctrine to the situation. The unusual high pressure circumstances of catastrophe, disaster and adversity require focused application of the inner resources of Bible Doctrine by the believer. There must have been consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine prior to pressure situations in life and then this doctrine must be applied by the individual to all situations in life, both adversity and prosperity. The inability to concentrate or think under pressure is, by definition, cowardice and combined with fear it is that which destroys the power of reasoning during any crisis. It is Essential that believers think in a crisis for thinking is the only means of application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to a situation. Therefore, to have success and survive in disaster requires the application of Bible Doctrine which is thinking in terms of Bible Doctrine pertinent to the disaster situation.

Since World War II most problems in the United States until the 1980's had been individual problems or local problems. Since the 80s until today these things have been the same BUT now we see the breaking out of national disaster in the form of anarchy spread into many if not all of the large cities with huge riots and destruction of property, even murders. When national disaster occurs the problems which must be faced are those which one cannot solve with money nor police nor medicine nor psychologists because none of these will be available in a true national disaster. There are no real solutions to the problems of national disaster except what the believer may have in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and his ability to think with it. This will be the source of the only solutions in the national crises coming to the United States of America in this 21st century. Having an isolated ranch or some "safe place" outside the cities is not the solution and believers have no idea where they will be and no idea when a crisis will begin. The only thing they may have is their own 2 feet with their fat head on top. Those feet can take them to a panic area where they will be frightened to death or they can take them to something reasonable which makes sense and will glorify God. This is THINKING under pressure from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The Non-Essential superficialities of life never carry anyone, especially the believer, in any pressure situations especially national disasters or catastrophes.

Flexibility & Disaster Essentials

The only real preparation for disaster for the believer is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in order for him to be able to go it alone. Ultimately every individual must go it alone in life and this can be a wonderful experience when there is capacity for life as a result of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul which results in a gain in prosperity in all areas of life. Without capacity for life, promotion, prosperity or leadership, that one gains is meaningless and in many cases misery. Believers must avoid selfishness, arrogance, being flexible about Essentials and inflexible about Non-Essentials and total divorcement from reality. This nation has had and continues to have greater prosperity than any nation in human history except the Roman Empire. However the citizens are themselves destroying it and the nation as a whole. They have no capacity for the prosperity and have been led away from prosperity by the Evil principles of socialism, welfare state functions and government confiscation of property in evil illegal taxation. They have accepted all of this under the LIE of universal brotherhood, equality of all, and helping the downtrodden under universal Emotional Revolt of the Soul. In this 21st century the times are very challenging and Bible Doctrine is the only source of stability and support which is available. However, believers must remember that historical disaster does not abrogate the Christian Way of Life and does not alter the challenges nor the objectives and purposes of that life which go right on despite the disasters.

In any historical disaster Christians with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul should have a great sense for survival never being too proud to do anything it takes to remain alive to fulfill whatever purpose God has for them. Christians must never quit with regard to Bible Doctrine until the Lord takes them out of this life and they should never be stupid enough to fold their hands over their bloated starving bellies and just give up and quit life. Believers should and must be properly motivated by Bible Doctrine to change their standards of living to whatever is needed to survive while the Plan of God for their life is shaped for the situation and their motivation is joined with it. They should and must use their ingenuity in any survival situation so that no believer should ever be guilty of giving up like what occurred with American soldiers in Korean prisoner of war camps. When God gives us a day to live, no matter the situation we are living in, he intends for us to use it for something functional. Believers must divorce themselves from all their hangups and stop thinking in terms of anything ahead of Bible Doctrine and must lose the source of hangups in life which is **ARROGANCE**. It is Arrogance and the resultant hangups in the soul that keep the believer from advancing in his relationship with the Lord and also surviving in any historical crisis. The proper use of Bible Doctrine will be to wipe out arrogance and provide the doctrinal sense of what it takes to survive in this life. God intends for believers with Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine to survive in any crisis or disaster BUT he also gives opportunities to make decisions for survival vs not surviving, fighting vs giving up, **courage vs cowardice** and each believer will PERSONALLY have to make every one of these decisions. Historical crises gives believers a chance to bring their out courage and use it and be flexible about Non-Essentials and survive. Crises also provide the opportunities to engage in many positive things including having a good sense of humor about having to eat garbage or bugs for survival. There are many things which must be learned about life and must, at some point, be put together with the application of Bible Doctrine and very often some crisis in life provides opportunity for this to occur.

Flexibility, Inflexibility & Disaster

The believer must have courage which is the ability to think under pressure in disaster and catastrophe. If the believer can concentrate under normal circumstances of bible study, if he can understand the debaters systems used by Paul then he will have the ability to think under pressure. Believers must be able to recall and use rationally and logically the Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of their own Soul. This provides common sense and orientation to reality with inflexibility regarding the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and total flexibility with regard to all doctrinal applications and all other Non-Essentials. There can be no cowardice if one has a procedure for all situations and these procedures and priorities must be so important that upon entering into disaster or pressure situations one simply continues doing the procedures properly under the umbrella of his priorities so that he will function without cowardice. The ability to think under pressure is one of the greatest virtues of life and is the difference between courage and cowardice, and between being a **crisis personality** and a total failure falling apart in historical disaster.

Courage is the ability to concentrate and think in pressure situations and the believer cannot apply or use the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul unless he can concentrate under pressure. Only with concentration can Bible Doctrine be applied correctly to disaster, adversity, crisis or catastrophe and even to every form and level of prosperity. Believers only learn to concentrate under the strict academic discipline of properly conducted bible study and even having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine without the ability to concentration results in doctrine one cannot ever apply. For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ there is an obligation to learn to concentrate. A believer who is easily distracted during bible study is one that when disaster comes cannot possibly be counted on and would inevitably fail. Therefore the principle to focus on in disaster situations is to ONLY team up with people you know who can concentrate under pressure. There is a natural streak of cowardice in every person and the only way to overcome that cowardly streak is through effective concentration. People cannot survive in disaster if they cannot apply what they know so that they remain totally divorced from reality. Arrogance divorces the person from reality and produces inflexibility as does the inability to concentrate on academic subjects which don't apply to one's immediate needs or do not provide any level of interest at the time. The secret to courage is to be able to think under pressure OR follow a system of protocol. If a person cannot think when things are normal they must have a protocol or regimented system to force them into standard procedures of thinking and function. Most people will not make it during critical disasters NOT because they don't have stockpiled ammunition and food or a place to hide but because they don't have the ability to take the principles of Bible Doctrine and through concentration make application. This is inflexibility with regard to Non-Essentials and flexibility with regard to the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and this must be reversed if a believer is to survive and thrive in disaster.

The **pseudo intellectual** will not ever matriculate in the course of the Dynamics for disaster because they are very destructive toward freedom and think they have all the answers to everything, when in reality they have none. Flexibility + Bible Doctrine in application is true strength but flexibility - Bible Doctrine is total weakness as per the Royal Family Honor Code. Flexibility without Bible Doctrine produces unhappiness, uncertainty and defeat. This is how many people who are considered strong give up on patriotism and are ashamed of the nation because of failures in it

with regard to policies toward communist nations, illegal aliens, moslems, terrorists, criminals, etc. Believers must remain strong for the principles of freedom and cannot ever give up, withdraw or fall apart under disaster pressures. There are many "defeated" people in this nation who are smart enough to realize the implications of signing treaties with Red China and Russia and realize the stupidity of allowing in illegal aliens and giving them amnesty and allowing moslems in the country and in the government but are not strong enough in the soul to handle that which is required to correct the problem. Believers, therefore, must function under the Royal Family Honor Code and with flexibility regarding Non-Essentials and inflexibility regarding the Essential of Bible Doctrine. Pseudo intellectuals are, and always will be, superficial intellectuals, under constant Divine Discipline to the point of the Sin Unto Death and there have been and today are many believers in this category who will be in heaven but their lives on this earth are total failures because they totally lack Divine Viewpoint thinking.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential Privilege & Election & Logistical Support

Election orientation demands the understanding of privilege and that saved persons are under privilege. All believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ have instant privilege and in fact are said to be Elected to Privilege. Instant privilege for believers in the Church Age comes from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the 39 irrevocable assets we receive at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Election of the believer cannot be divorced from the Essence of God especially that part of the Essence of God where God knows all the facts from Eternity Past by means of his omniscience. It should be a humbling revelation for the believer when he awakens to the fact that God knew all about him from Eternity Past, ALL his failures and successes and still he called him to salvation and elected him to privilege when he made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. As a part of God's system of privilege the believer has a motivating factor which means that as long as he is alive, no matter how great his prosperity or devastating a disaster from war, economic depression or any disaster of a nuclear nature on the earth or whatever horrible things may occur, GOD will sustain him *because he is privileged*. This status quo belongs to the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ throughout all of the dispensations of Human History and there are 3 categories of privileged persons:

- The Lord Jesus, The Christ is a privileged PERSON
- Believers in the Old Testament Scripture times are privileged
- Church Age believers are privileged

To better understand the concept of being privileged in the Plan of God believers should think in terms of ELECT as a means to describe privilege. (**Ps 139:1-6**, **Heb 4:13**, **Acts 5:17-20**, **15:8**, **15:18**, **Matt 6:8**)

There cannot ever be true privilege without all the facts and any system of privilege which does not take cognizance of ALL the facts is not a fair system of privilege. This is the area of failure of the genius of Satan in putting his system together. The Divine Decree of God express the privilege system under the output called election. The concept of election emerges from the decree along with the principles of **foreknowledge** and **predestination**. The Perfect Integrity of God, knowing

from his Omniscience all the facts regarding any individual in history has the right to set up a system of privilege and in this system both the worst and best believers and all those in between are still alive and doing well. Election is a system of privilege designed in Eternity Past by the omniscience of God related to his self knowledge and knowledge of every aspect of creation. Election is thus a part of the Plan of God and is part of the output of the Divine Decree which relates the believer to the Plan of God in terms of Grace and not in terms of sin or any failure of any kind. Therefore, the emphasis in the election of the believer is on GRACE not sin thus the sinner believer will have food, shelter and all other necessities for life just as will the advancing Christian who will be sustained just as the Christian who is influence by or saturated with Evil or producing vast amounts of Human Good will be sustained. Election in the Plan of God sets up a system of privilege which does not depend on morality. Americans think of privilege in terms of morality, wealth or levels of success and it starts with how they treat and train their children. Privilege must be related to INTEGRITY not morality. There is a true morality related to integrity but there is also a Self Righteous morality. (**2Thes 2:13**, **1Pet 1:1-3**, **Eph 1:4-5**)

Essential Privilege to sustain Believers

Believers sin and are sustained, they rebound and are sustained, they are under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit or involved in Human Good or social action, they advance and retrogress but always they are sustained by the Logistical Grace provision of God because the issue is NOT what they do or who they are but who and what GOD IS. What is good or bad in relationship to Freedom, the Laws of Divine Establishment, other people and even God is not the basis for the believer's privilege and the sustaining Logistical Grace provisions for life, it is the Integrity of God which is the true issue in the Christian Way of Life. Believers are constantly defeated by their own thinking in this area. The technical terms found in the bible used for privilege are the means by which one can distinguish immorality and sin from GRACE. Election is related to Grace and not related to Sin, Human Good or Evil and is not an encouragement of the believer to be involved in any of these things. Election is designed to bring the believer and his thinking to focus on who and what The Lord Jesus, The Christ is and to the place of loving Christ. Whether the believer fails or succeeds determines whether he will admire, respect and recognize the authority of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and thereby come to love him or NOT. Believers must firmly establish the idea in their thinking that God will give the same sustaining Grace to them as good, respectful believers as will be given to horrible, vile and evil believers and that all believers will have the same sustaining Grace. The principle is that the provision of Logistical Grace from God applies equally to all believers and there are no exceptions and only prejudice in any believer resents it. Resentment of the provision of Grace Logistics for failing believers does not recognize that if God can do this for some idiot believer who is a terrible sinner today he can also do it for the good advancing believer. No matter the status of any believer in failure in the Spiritual Life God provides continual logistical support. SO, how much more will he do for those who follow his plan and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The only way to stabilize one's life is by stabilizing the thinking by appreciating Logistical Grace in light of election. Believers must never even imagine that they can lose their salvation.

Election of the believer means he has very special privileges in the Plan of God and as he advances toward and reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he has the privilege of sustaining his nation during historical crisis. There will always be an individual or group who make it in the Spiritual Life and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and avoid the **Interlocking System**

of Arrogance. These will always have respect for authority and be oriented to life knowing when to be flexible and inflexible and when the **Royal Family Honor Code** demands they move and when they should stand still. Therefore all those elected to privilege have the opportunity to contribute to the deliverance of their country in crisis and to provide the foundation for it's great prosperity.

Imputed Righteousness, Justification & Blessing

The Plan of God demands we recognize the imputation of the Righteousness of God as the basis for justification and these as the basis for the imputations of divine blessing to the believer in time. This blessing comes in 2 categories, Logistical Grace and Super Grace the first is a requirement of God to sustain the believer in time the second is a benefit for the believer who uses his logistical support to advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Logistical Grace Support is for life and all the needs for sustaining life giving opportunities needed for advance in the Spiritual Life. It is the support structure in the **Equation of Hope** Plan of God. (**2Cor 9:8**, **Eph 1:3**, **2Pet 3:18**, **Matt 6:33**, **Lam 3:19-27**, **Deut 33:27**, **Ps 37:25**, **Ps 23:1**, **Phil 4:19**, **1Pet 1:5**, **Rom 8:31-32**) The only chance for the believer to have any level of spiritual growth is by means of Logistical Grace which provides TIME as one day at a time. Logistical support is required of God and God even kept Elijah alive providing him food and water in his hiding place in the desert despite his being overwhelmed and locked into in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. No believer can depart from this world apart from the Will of God and not all the forces of hell can remove him from this life without permission from the Will of God. God provides our security in the form of guardian angels and a Wall of Fire protection along with the functions of the Laws of Divine Establishment with freedom, authority property and privacy all as part of Logistical Grace. Logistical Grace and Super-Grace are totally subjects of Afortiori logic as are their provision for us by the Justice of God.

Therefore, believers are supported by Logistical Grace and under Logistical Grace they have the opportunity to reach, if they consistently use Positive Volition, the status quo of being beneficiaries of Super-Grace blessing in 6 categories. This will bring to the believer the flexibility to adapt to changing circumstances through maximum function under the Royal Family Honor Code and a total sense of security in relationship to the Plan of God and with The Lord Jesus, The Christ himself so that they can see life from the view of Proverbs. (**Prov 8:33-36**, **Prov 8:18-21**)

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God

Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God requires maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. As a part of the spiritual blessings that accompany the Status Quo of Super Grace in Spiritual Maturity we enter into extreme Personal Love for God which is Occupation with the person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Occupation with the Person of Christ is essential and one cannot break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine and not be under Occupation with Christ. Occupation with the Person of Christ is the final advanced **Problem Solving Device** and it supplants all the Mental Attitude Sins of one's life. It sets aside inordinate ambition, inordinate competition, and inordinate

affection and it also results in verbal sins disappearing so that there is no more gossip, judging or maligning in this believer's life. This is a totally relaxed Mental Attitude and it is directed toward the Lord but has great repercussions with regard to other people so that there are no circumstances which cause the believer to be upset or disturbed. This is the ability to have one's eyes on The Lord and not on other people nor things nor self in self pity. Self pity is one of the greatest of all deterrents to effectively living the Spiritual Life since this person is not at all interested in Bible Doctrine but only in those things which can help IMMEDIATELY assuage their bad feelings. The person involved in Self Pity is totally unstable and not willing to sit down under academic discipline and study Bible Doctrine day after day to grow out of his self pity and into a properly functional Spiritual Life.

Essential Doctrine for Blessing

Doctrine is thought and it is more valuable than anything in life and it is described as the thinking of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. (**1Cor 2:16**) Metabolized, Believed or Accepted, Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is what brings capacity for life and blessing and this is an essential necessity in order to allow the Justice of God to impute blessing to the Absolute Righteousness of God imputed to and resident in every believer. As long as the believer is alive he need only apply Bible Doctrine to his life and thank the Lord for his life and the blessings He has bestowed upon him.

Essential Bible Doctrine & Spiritual Growth

Within the spiritual realm there are various categories of believers, some infant, some children, some adolescent, some adult and some mature. There are in all of these categories of spiritual growth certain things which all believers must adhere to. In other words there are basic essentials of doctrine which must be understood, accepted and adhered to because if they are not then these believers fall into a category of error or apostasy. Some of the essential basic doctrines include:

- Eternal Security
- Deity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ
- True Humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ
- The Hypostatic Union of Christ
- "Blood" atonement achieved by Christ
- Reconciliation with God the Father achieved by Christ
- Redemption for man achieved by Christ
- Propitiation of God the Father achieved by Christ
- The existence of the Pre-millennial tribulation
- And others

These are essential principle doctrines for all areas of spiritual growth no matter the category or level of growth of the believer and must be understood and accepted and adhered to by all believers.

Essential vs Non-Essential Application & Spiritual Growth

There are areas of application pertinent to each category of believer as well and the application begins for all believers based initially on their background and rearing in their early life. Believers make applications to life from what they have learned or failed to learn in the home, school, the military, work environments, etc. All of life's background is the basis of situational application and

any of these applications may be right or wrong when the application is derived from the Laws of Divine Establishment or NOT. Respect for authority is an essential of life and one cannot advance in any way in any aspect of life without it. There cannot in any way be learning, especially of Bible Doctrine, unless there is respect for the authority of the one teaching. For the infant Christian who came up in a Christian home he may have been reared in a legalistic environment and has become an observer of certain holy days or the strict sabbath or he may apply certain parts of asceticism to diet such as no drinking alcohol. For the mature believer these things may not and should not be an issue because of his having much more doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but on the part of all believers in all categories of spiritual growth the attitude must be total toleration when their differences involve Non-Essentials. However, if the infant believer is mixed up with regard to the essential doctrines that is totally different since that is ERROR and should be corrected. In all cases of Positive Volition and continued growth for all believers, the misapplication of doctrinal principles in the non-essential areas must be tolerated and these believers allowed to grow spiritually at their own rate and in their own time. Every believer, for all of his life, will make application of Bible Doctrine based on life's background until he has saturated his norms and standards with accurate Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Metabolized Bible Doctrine will ultimately demonstrate, as the absolute norm and standard, that some applications from old norms and standards are wrong and then substitute, as the new norm and standard for that believer's life, doctrinal principles. Always consider and remember that application of Bible Doctrine to life is a matter of the privacy of the priesthood. Antithetical applications are acceptable unless they are in the area of contradiction of Essential Doctrines. Therefore it is obvious that all believers will have ESSENTIAL and NONESSENTIAL Applications and it is only the understanding and adherence to Essential Doctrines which is critical in spiritual growth.

There should always be a great area of non-essential toleration in life because no one has any right to try to superimpose their ideas of life on any others. Most people generally have the strongest and most dogmatic opinions about non-essential things in life such as grooming, diet, exercise, etc. What you wear or how you fix your hair or whether you wear makeup, etc., is actually only your business. Toleration is simply another way to express the principle of the privacy of the priesthood. Spiritual freedom contains the same components as secular freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment. The believer must have privacy and be allowed to possess his personal property in privacy and freedom. There must be, in the pastor of the Local Church, authority to protect that freedom and present dogmatic accurate Bible Doctrine from the pages of scripture. No pastor nor anyone else in the Local Church has any right to ask any believer for any of his property (money included) or to try to convince the believer that God does not want him to have any property and he should give it all to the church. Property and Privacy are integral parts of freedom and the privacy and property one has under the Laws of Divine Establishment are doubly protected by the authority of both the secular and spiritual areas of life. Remember, MONEY is property. This is why the laws of giving in the scripture so very strongly base all giving on the believer's individual volition and spiritual growth and not on any emotional appeal or someone begging for help.

Essential Morality, Freedom, Establishment & Spiritual Advance

Believers are to function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and because of this are restrained from crime. Under the Royal Family Honor Code believers have a double restraint because to whom much is given MUCH MORE is expected. The Royal Family Honor Code demands that all believers

restrain self from crime as members of the Royal Family of God not just members of the Human Race. Morality is an essential for fulfillment of the Laws of Divine Establishment as a human, but honor is also essential for the function of the Royal Family of God in time. The Decalogue, the 10 Commandments, defines morality in terms of the Laws of Divine Establishment therefore, human morality is essential for the function of human freedom. Therefore, the Decalogue defines freedom in terms of sin and crime. Certain sins and crimes are direct attacks on human freedom. The greatest enemy to advance in the Plan of God is crime because it deprives a person of the freedom to be evangelized, to take in Bible Doctrine and to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. However, it takes more than just freedom for spiritual advance but also requires privacy and property to be able to move ahead to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. In other words, it takes doctrine, privacy, money, food, shelter, clothing, transportation and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, to be able to advance in the Plan of God. When the believer advances to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he must remember that the police and military both function to protect his freedom from enemies both inside the nation and also outside the nation. The importance of understanding crime as an attack on freedom is because it is the principle essential for us to understand the means and principles which God uses to sustain us in life in order that we might advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, as a result, morality is required to be exercised by all the Human Race. These concepts are emphasized by the Decalogue which deals with the principles of Morality found in the Laws of Divine Establishment vs crime and sin which are anti-establishment and anti-freedom.

For the believer in the Church Age, any part of the Mosaic Law which deals with the Laws of Divine Establishment still applies to him in the Church Age. Along with the morality defined by the Mosaic Law believers must also have freedom from Mental Attitude Sins and tolerance, as a function of Impersonal Love for Mankind, for idiotic attitudes and applications of others regarding the non-essentials of life. The believer is, therefore, honor bound to support the Laws of Divine Establishment while advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is simply supporting the freedom by which there is opportunity to advance in the Plan of God. Living the Christian Way of Life is the Filling of God the Holy Spirit combined with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which advances the believer to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where he becomes the beneficiary of Super Grace Blessings for his life in time. However, the morality of the Laws of Divine Establishment cannot provide the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but does provide the freedom by which we can acquire the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and thereby advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, the Laws of Divine Establishment are part of the Royal Family Honor Code and our responsibility to the Laws of Divine Establishment is well documented in the New Testament Scripture. (**Matt 21:22**, 1Pet 2:13-14) Since believers are all aristocracy as members of the Royal Family of God they must therefore have the highest possible standards in life. There are 2 Categories of divine standards operating in this world, Morality as the function under the Laws of Divine Establishment for believers and unbelievers alike and for the Royal Family of God, the Royal Family Honor Code. Therefore believers are not against or antagonistic to morality because the Royal Family Honor Code which includes the Laws of Divine Establishment also includes morality.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of the Will of God for Divine Guidance

All things depend on the Will of God and nothing is certain apart from the Will of God. This is an absolute and completely essential understanding necessary for divine guidance which is finding and following the Will of God. This is the most basic concept of divine guidance and until the believer learns where to put the emphasis for guidance he will be constantly guided by emotion, people he admires, how he feels, spiritual bullies, people who are nice to him, thoughts which pop into his head but NOT EVER BY GOD and especially NOT BY THE Will of GOD. Because God is so wise He gives each believer only 24 hours, or one day at a time, and worked it out so that he is always able to do what God wants us to do in that time without curtailing anything else which must be done. There are shortcuts available and there is time allocated for prayer and time to not pray, time enough to stop to always think "is this the Will of God or not". Believers MUST know the Will of God in certain areas of life and this must become a reflex of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God for applying Bible Doctrine to given situations. For the advancing or mature believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, doing the Will of God is, in reality, his life. The basic concept of the Will of God after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is engagement by the believer in daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The believer DOES NOT have to wonder on any given day "is it the Will of God for me to study Bible Doctrine today?" because this must be a routine reflex part of daily function for the believer under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine. You should not pray about who you should date or marry because that aspect of life should be addressed by the Metabolized Bible Doctrine which you have accumulated already in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. When the believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God unless he has a special gift involving prayer for others he has a limited amount of prayer time and a lot of reflex action time based on the Bible Doctrine already assimilated in his soul.

Essential Parts of the Will of God

For each and every believer the Will of God always includes:

- **Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul** of the believer (**Ps 32:8**, **Is 58:11**) as the first essential and if the believer inculcates enough Bible Doctrine then as he grows up spiritually aspects of the Will of God will become much more clear.
- **The Filling of God the Holy Spirit** is another part of the Will of God and God wants every believer to spend as much of their life under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit as possible. The Christian Way of Life is built around the Filling of God the Holy Spirit not the temporal things in life which are there for others. So for proper function in the Christian Way of Life in determining the Will of God one of the major priorities must be how to get under and stay under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for as long as possible. (**Eph 5:15-16**)
- **Maximum growth in the Spiritual Life** is another essential part of the Will of God and God emphatically desires every believer to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by growing BY MEANS OF HIS GRACE PROVISIONS. (**2Pet 3:18**)

Illustration of Failure & the Will of God

Obviously, the Apostle Paul used Bible Doctrine and the concepts of the Royal Family Honor Code in determining the Will of God. Thoughtfulness of others, no revenge motivation or function, Impersonal Love for all mankind, flexibility in non-essentials and absolute INFLEXIBILITY regarding Essential Doctrine. Through these concepts and some others the **Royal Family Honor Code** answers most of the questions regarding the Will of God for the life of the believer and adding it to the **Equation of Hope** will give believers 85 % of the Will of God for their life. The Greek or gentile believers of Macedonia did a very good thing when they were motivated by the Royal Family Honor Code principle of Impersonal Love and a clear understanding of the function of Christian giving to make a great financial offering and prepared this for transport to Jerusalem. Unfortunately, Paul used this as an excuse to become divorced from reality and in opposition to the Will of God. This was inflexibility in a non-essential and in the process he shut out the Royal Family Honor Code. He clearly understood the Will of God for him was to go to Rome and Spain but he rationalized his desire to go to Jerusalem. Paul justified his trip to Jerusalem since he was the chief administrator of this great offering but this was part of his emotional distraction. Therefore, it is clear that even for this incredible Super Grace believer a good thing had been rationalized into a system of self justification to postpone the Will of God for his life as his going to Spain and he thus avoided his primary responsibility of missionary function west of the Adriatic Sea. For Paul, and all missionaries, rationalization of good doctrinal teaching and good Christian production is not their responsibility nor their prerogative, nor that of the Pastor Teacher or individual Christian worker. Bible Doctrine communicators are not responsible for distortions and rationalizations which occur from their accurate teaching since there is always someone who takes things out of context and wants to erroneously apply them. Doctrine is to be learned, understood and inculcated not distorted and no believer should ever use doctrine to express their own arrogance and divorcement from reality. Therefore, obviously, irrational aberration or any distortion of Bible Doctrine is strictly prohibited by the Royal Family Honor Code.

Paul thought that the doctrine he understood and could present to the Jews in Jerusalem could change their thinking about Christ but forgot that when people live under Negative Volition nothing can change them except their own volition. The emotional pull to Jerusalem, most likely as a result of his guilt for killing so many Christians, caused Paul to become inflexible to the non-essential of distribution of the monetary offering from Macedonia in Jerusalem. This function did not require Paul to accomplish it and his responsibility actually was to get local church administrators to do it. Paul, like every believer, should have been inflexible about the Essential of Bible Doctrine and the Will of God and inflexible about crossing the Adriatic which divided the eastern from western roman empire. For Paul, going to Spain was an essential while going to Jerusalem was non-essential. Therefore, virtue is always canceled by inflexibility in the non-essentials. Legalism has virtue but legalism is the inflexibility which cancels the effectiveness of the virtue. There is nothing wrong with a believer trying to adhere to the Decalogue or some system of taboos he has developed but when these become for him the Christian Way of Life that is inflexibility regarding Non-Essentials. It is essential for the believer to go to the right geographic place where God wants him but also to do so in God's perfect timing. Therefore, one of the worst things which can be done in life is to do the right thing at a wrong time because this demonstrates inflexibility in the non-essentials.

Flexibility, Bible Doctrine & the Will of God

When we think we are going to do this or that or go to this or that place God often changes the picture much to our surprise or shock and fortunately, for the advancing or mature believer, Bible Doctrine gives us the flexibility to go with the Plan of God rather than our preconceived notions. Very often when a little doctrine is learned and then more and more is inculcated, the believer often discovers that his personal sincere desires, which he misconstrued as the Will of God and the Plan of God, have become very different. No matter how much these have changed or how different they have become, Bible Doctrine gives the flexibility to go with the Plan of God which for the advancing believer is in fact the only way to go. Believers are where they are because they are under the Will of God no matter where they are and if they simply stay with Bible Doctrine they can enjoy wherever God sends them. Therefore, the best laid plans of life are very often set aside by the magnificent Will of God and believers must be sensible and flexible enough from Bible Doctrine to defer to the Will of God when issue is made between personal desires and the obvious Will of God and they are not always the same. For each and every believer determining the right place and time belongs to God alone while preparation belongs to the believer who has the understanding of the importance of Bible Doctrine. The real secret for all believers is that they must continue to be consistently persistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential Flexibility to Please God

All believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ who live in this Church Age between Pentecost of 70AD and the Exit Resurrection of believers prior to the tribulation, the Rapture of the Church, are both Royal Ambassadors and Royal Priests. This Ambassadorship, which is representing God to Man, emphasizes production while the Priesthood, which is personal representation before God, emphasizes spiritual growth. The more a believer grows in the Spiritual Life the greater is his flexibility which is part of his service to The Lord Jesus, The Christ as ambassador. Pleasing God is a function of the royal priesthood and is the result of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine residing in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul resulting in attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, those who remain under the authority of the Old Sin Nature cannot please God, (**Rom 8:8**) however, all rational spiritual worship is pleasing to God. (**Rom 12:1**) That which is pleasing to God is always related to Bible Doctrine and the basic functions of the royal priesthood. (**Heb 11:6**) In **Eph 5:10** Paul states that Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is both Worship and pleasing to God. (**1Thes 4:1**)

From Bible Doctrine comes the motivation and momentum to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and continue to take in Bible Doctrine. Bible Doctrine must always be Priority #1 in the life of the advancing believer. Learning Bible Doctrine ultimately requires the application of Bible Doctrine which is in effect a function of the royal ambassadorship. As a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ one's ethnic or social background, race, etc., do not matter because all believers are royal priests and royal ambassadors. The function of the Royal Priesthood relates to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and advance in the Plan of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The Royal Priesthood also relates to the principles of the **Royal**

Family Honor Code and requires privacy for this advance to occur. The function of the Royal Ambassadorship relates to production in the Spiritual Life and application of certain principles of the Royal Family Honor Code to situations in life. Therefore the Royal Priesthood relates to pleasing God while the Royal Ambassadorship relates to respect for mankind. Consequently, each has a different objective in its function:

- The Royal Priesthood relates to inflexibility with regard to Essential Bible Doctrines
- The Royal Ambassadorship relates to flexibility of application of Bible Doctrine regarding non-essentials.

The proper function of the Royal Priesthood under the **Grace Apparatus for Perception**, **Operation Z**, results in the imputation of phenomena, direct divine blessing at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The proper function of the Royal Ambassadorship in flexible application of Bible Doctrine to all non-essentials results in Divine Good production in the Christian Life. Therefore, flexibility leads to orientation to reality and common sense so that as a Royal Priest the believer represents self to God and as a Royal ambassador he represents GOD to man. The objectives of the Christian Way of Life and the Royal Priesthood and Royal Ambassadorship are fulfilled in the function of the believer under the Royal Family Honor Code. (**Rom 14:18**)

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials & Glorification of God

Glorification of God and the function in the Plan of God can only be accomplished through the teaching and Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This absolute dogmatic truth eliminates all other functions of human life and relegates all these things to being non-essentials of life and related to the royal ambassadorship of the believer which is NEVER the means of spiritual advance in any way. Believers ARE Royal ambassadors representing God to man and are responsible for production based on and a manifestation of spiritual growth. No production or work the believer ever can accomplish can ever give even one iota of spiritual growth. Blessing, spiritual growth and glorification of God ONLY come from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and application of Bible Doctrine under his royal priesthood. Production in the Spiritual Life is ALWAYS the RESULT of spiritual growth and motivated by Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and NEVER is it the means of spiritual growth. Spiritual Growth therefore requires objectivity and freedom from interference and is why God has provided the **Royal Family Honor Code**. The Royal Family Honor Code, designed and put into play for the Royal Family of God in this Church Age, has something for every believer in every stage of spiritual growth. For the immature believer who is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine there is the principle of the privacy of the priesthood which forbids these immature believers from judging and maligning those who have advanced beyond them. For the mature believer there is Impersonal Love, flexibility and toleration regarding the non-essentials of the life which forbids the interference with the immature believer and his spiritual level of growth. The overall objective of the Royal Family Honor Code is to allow the believer, in any stage of spiritual advance, full use of the privacy of his priesthood with freedom from distraction and interference so that he can, by the use of his own

free will volition, be inculcated with Bible Doctrine and glorify God. The objective of the functions of the Royal Family Honor Code is to secure the advance all believers to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and fulfillment of the Plan of God. The Plan of God for the believer in time is fulfilled with the imputation of 6 categories of direct blessing in time and the confidence of the imputation of blessing and rewards at the Judgment Seat of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for all eternity. Therefore, through the attainment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God not only is the Plan of God fulfilled but also God is glorified. The Royal Family Honor Code is therefore designed to glorify God. (**Rom 15:6-**)

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of Flexibility & Inflexibility in the Spiritual Life.

There is no substitute in military life for the inculcation of group and self discipline. This carries over into the Royal Family of God and the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is a training session preparing the believer for spiritual combat so that he will be instinctively under the control of Bible Doctrine. Generally, issues in life should be lucid and clear even though they may be at times difficult to understand. There are always shades of gray found in the field of being flexible in the application of Bible Doctrine to these issues and there is only black and white contrast with being inflexible in the area of Essential Bible Doctrines. The **Royal Family Honor Code** emphasizes the application of doctrine to non-essential concepts and being flexible regarding it while being inflexible about the principles of essential doctrine. When the mature believer backs off or acquiesces to the immature or weak believer who is making stupid applications it is because he is strong in Bible Doctrine not weak. If there is a great weakness in life it is being inflexible regarding non-essentials in life. This is demonstrated by being thoughtless of the feelings of others and the believer not considering that they may not be at the same stage of spiritual growth as he is. These others may not have the doctrinal standards he may have developed from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This thoughtlessness often results in being very cruel because one has failed to take cognizance of that which exists in this spiritual combat situation. In this spiritual combat believers must have an officer in charge who is smart and correct when it is difficult to make decisions because of the intensity of the combat and this commanding officer must be one's own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Without the officer of Bible Doctrine deploying the **Problem Solving Devices** onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul the believer will be wrong when he is sure he is absolutely right and in fact may be right in principle but totally wrong in application. In the correct application of Bible Doctrine to life there are many shades of gray while in the study of Bible Doctrine and assimilation of it's principles there is always black and white contrasts.

In World War II the German soldier was innovative and controllable in combat and had options for innovation because of institutionalized genius in the German system. In the spiritual combat of the Angelic Conflict institutionalized genius is to be found in the Pastor Teacher who, if he persists in consistent study and is academically prepared, will be able to communicate the doctrinal information which gives the believer the innovative ability to serve and honor the Lord throughout his lifetime. As individual believers, being in many different circumstances of life, with maximum Metabolized

Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul they will be fully prepared to meet the situations of life with the confidence. They will be under the control of the Bible Doctrine which is inflexible and yet be flexible and innovative in the application of it so that they can come up as great human beings. Sensitivity as found in the Royal Family Honor Code is to be aware of others and their situations and to treat them with thoughtfulness and courtesy. Therefore, recognizing that the principles of Bible Doctrine are inflexible we can see clearly that the application of Bible Doctrine requires great flexibility. However, when the believer is minus inflexible doctrine he moves his inflexibility into the area of application causing distortions. Unfortunately, inflexibility in the wrong place or time is weakness while inflexibility in the right place is strength. The objective of every growing or mature believer must be to give all believers a chance to take in Bible Doctrine so that every person can from his own privacy make his own applications. Privacy, as we clearly know is an essential part of freedom and the normal person would not think of taking money from a person's pocket and thereby violating their privacy and property which are both part of their freedom. Why therefore would one try to superimpose his personal standards on others whether they are good or bad standards. The only superimposition of standards which should ever occur is to ensure the avoidance of gossip, maligning or judging which is violating privacy and thus freedom. The inflexibility of saying no to certain things in life is acceptable in private life but not when it comes to interfering with others and their decisions for their life. When in the presence of other believers, immature, advancing and mature, all believers must have varied flexibility in the application of Bible Doctrine. They must not ever staunchly take a stand regarding anything but be flexible unless it involves essential doctrines.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of the Local Church

The local church is the authorized system of organization for believers in this Church Age and must remain autonomous. It is the place for the teaching of categorical, exegetical and isogogical biblical doctrines in a status of enforced humility under strict academic and self discipline using extreme concentration.

Objectivity and Discipline in the Local Church

Immature believers are to be received into the local church for the purpose of learning Bible Doctrine and not for judging their often erroneous opinions. The strong or mature believers do not receive the weak for bullying or intrusion into their privacy nor do the immature believers reciprocate by judging the strong with regard to the liberty in their actions. In the Local Church both mature and immature believers live side by side for the sole purpose of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which is the only means of spiritual advance to glorify The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Objectivity and strict academic discipline are destroyed by strife between believers. Though the immature and mature believers are in different stages of spiritual growth, all require consistent presentation of Bible Doctrine and persistent intake of Bible Doctrine. Immature believers under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine are not reversionistic but simply ignorant of Bible Doctrine. The immature may not be negative to Bible Doctrine except as they are distracted or led astray by their background norms or by distractions from criticism or bullying. As a result of being ignorant they do not always have Bible Doctrine as the basis for their Norms and

Standards. Thus the Pastor Teacher must control the congregation both the immature and mature believers. As a part of any congregation believers must never, ever, say anything against any Pastor Teacher but when there is disagreement they must always simply leave the congregation quietly. Not only must the Pastor Teacher teach Bible Doctrine but he must enforce the Royal Family Honor Code in dealing with the privacy of the priesthood for every believer under his authority. All believers have strong opinions based on the experiences and background inculcation in life and under the privacy of the priesthood these must not ever be forced on others. The privacy of the priesthood in the proper function of the local church always demands live and let live.

Essential Separation of Church & State

The cila and carbidous of Christianity are the erroneous extremes practiced by believers in the name of Christianity. The state should not be subordinated to the church as in romanism after Gregory the Great and the church should not be subordinated to the state and Erastianism is also totally wrong. These are both completely erroneous extremes whereas the correct principle is total separation of church and state. The government responsibility is to protect the church and its civil rights while the church sustains the state by means of the formation of the pivot of mature believers. Therefore Church and State must be kept separate and the authorities of each must always be separated. If a pastor of a local church runs for office and makes it he must no longer be associated with that local church. The authority of state is found in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and the authority of the church and Royal Family of God is delegated under spiritual gifts sovereignly bestowed by God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Even the source of each authority demands total separation. Christian duty to the church is summarized by daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Christian duty to the state is summarized or epitomized by obedience to civil authority or military authority whenever the situation arises. There is no excuse for conscientious objectors and no excuse for a Christian being rejected in the military for section 8 instability.

Civil world power is designed for collective temporal peace and prosperity while spiritual power is designed for individual peace and prosperity both temporal and eternal. Separation of church and state is therefore essential for personal freedom. In South America there is little separation of church from state thus when given the opportunity these peoples very often revert to communism since they only have a choice between these two options. Obedience to civil authority and honest payment of taxes protects the lawful citizen from loss of their freedom as a result of the actions of enemies within and without. (**Rom 13:1-7**) Tax monies <u>should</u> be used for the development and maintenance of Law Enforcement and Military establishments, maintaining small government and never ever becoming involved with socialism, communism, islam nor any of the welfare state functions. However this does not preclude charity by individuals or non-governmental organizations to help the poor and the state can even exercise a modicum of charity for the poor but never turn charity into socialism as it has been today.

Church and state must be separated and the authorities involved with either must never mingle in any way. Authority of state is civic under the Laws of Divine Establishment while the authority of the local church is spiritual and comes from Bible Doctrine and the Royal Family Honor Code. Authority of state is ideal when founded on the Laws of Divine Establishment while that of the

church is ideal when founded on the Royal Family Honor Code and is recognized under the spiritual gifts sovereignly bestowed by God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. When a nations president or ruler governs according to the principles outlined in the United States Constitution and the Laws of Divine Establishment he is a double blessing to the nation. When the president or ruler governs according the Marxist theory of the greater good for the greater number while, at the same time, being ruled by degeneracy and apostasy from evil he is a double curse to the nation or the local church whichever applies.

Essentials of Union in a Congregation

Union and fellowship between immature and mature believers in a congregation gives objectivity to the teaching of Bible Doctrine. The only thing which should divide and separate any congregation is Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. It is much better to have all categories of believers in a congregation in order to make the doctrine taught not cause reaction in any single group. This fulfills the principle of spiritual freedom by granting equality to every believer so that he has the same opportunity to learn Bible Doctrine and deal with his own problems by means of the Bible Doctrine HE, himself has learned. When ignorant people are bullied with Bible Doctrine they are made weaker or caused to react instead of respond to the doctrine. It is Bible Doctrine which makes believers strong and they must learn the doctrine for themselves to deal with their own lives as part of the privacy of the priesthood and the means by which they handle preconceived notions and non-essentials of life. Believers must agree ONLY on the essentials of Bible Doctrine because if they agree on all other things they become sterilized zombies in life. When a believer is hit by doctrine which does not hit others in his periphery they can mutually support each other and thank the Lord for the support and the doctrine.

Inflexibility & the local church

There is no such thing authorized in any Local Church as teaching or administrative elders or multiple pastor teachers. One elder in one congregation and this is the Pastor Teacher who has the authority in the local church BASED ON HIS ACCURATE TEACHING OF BIBLE DOCTRINE. It is the false doctrines taught from the basis of arrogance and convenience which form evil justification for bringing about a revolt in the Local Church. This is inflexibility in the non-essentials, distortion of priorities and flagrant violation of the Royal Family Honor Code.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of the Spiritual Gifts

All spiritual gifts are essential for the proper function of the Royal Family of God. No believer should seek to cultivate a spiritual gift he does not possess. All believers must function within their spiritual gift which is not possible apart from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Each spiritual gift is designed to provide blessing to the Body of Christ, the Church, the Royal Family of God, in this dispensation of the Church Age; thus all spiritual gifts are essential. The believer is not to seek function outside of his spiritual gift(s). “Service” believers should not seek to function as the Pastor Teacher and the Pastor Teacher should

not function in "service", therefore, the Pastor Teacher should say NO to all service functions that are requested of him. The more the believer advances by means of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul the greater the function of his spiritual gift and the greater blessing he is to the Royal Family of God.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential Dogmatic Monologue in Teaching Bible Doctrine

There is no place for dialogue in the teaching of Bible Doctrine and teaching Bible Doctrine must be monologue presented in a dogmatic fashion with regard to the absolute truth. This also means that quarrels and debates between 2 or more people expressing their opinions about doctrines are excluded from Christian fellowship by the Royal Family Honor Code. Because Christianity is not a debating society one cannot learn doctrinal principles from debating or quarreling. The immature believer under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine must take Bible Doctrine from the Pastor Teacher and accept it, using it in correcting his false opinions. A mature believer, though tempted to debate or quarrel about doctrinal points and principles, who tries to correct the false opinions of the immature is intruding into the privacy of that believer and violating the Royal Family Honor Code. Strong believers are required to leave the teaching of Bible Doctrine to the Pastor Teacher for the benefit of all under the privacy of the priesthood. Debating one's opinion against that of another believer creates an atmosphere of subjectivity without authority or discipline and thus no Bible Doctrine is learned but it creates strife between believers instead of spiritual growth. The weak believer may react to argumentation even though the strong believer may have all the facts and principles and be right. Then in reaction, the weak believer may become antagonistic to the strong believer. When he cannot meet the arguments with Bible Doctrine he then criticizes the strong believer by focusing on other aspects of his life and judges him. The immature believer often uses the overt visible liberty of the strong believer as an excuse and rationalization to sin himself and thereby become distracted from Bible Doctrine. Therefore, reaction, strife, bitterness and subjectivity, in this way, destroy the objective approach to the teaching of Bible Doctrine.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ

At the Judgment Seat of Christ, believers will not be able to blame anyone else for their failures or aberrations with regard to the inculcation of Bible Doctrine. (**Rom 14:10-13**) The failure of the believer to consistently take in Bible Doctrine will rest squarely on the individual believer's shoulders only. Weak people always blame others for failures and childish people never grow up and always invariably use someone else as an excuses for their failures. In addition, childish people cannot ever assume the responsibility for their decisions neither good or bad. Many adults are babies with regard to reality and have no concept of reality and no flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials and no inflexibility with regard to real Essentials, often not knowing anything about the true Essentials of

life. These people never take the responsibility for leaving or rejecting Bible Doctrine whether believers considering the doctrines of scripture or the unbelievers considering the gospel of Christ or the Laws of Divine Establishment. Every person has been given by God free will volition and uses this individually and personally and no one else does it for them. NEVER must someone else be blamed for PERSONAL FAILURES which result from decisions made during the exercise of the individuals free will. The arrogant one always accepts responsibility for his successes but never for his failures. Every person MUST assume responsibility for all decisions, good or bad and never ever blame another person for them. This is to be done based on personal integrity or as the result of enforced humility. One of the greatest failures of the United States is that it fails to hold individuals responsible for their bad decisions and provides leniency for criminals and welfare for lazy good for nothing scum in society. Instead of facing failures and saying it is "MY FAULT" people act like cry babies and as a result they and the entire nation get weaker every day. Many if not most believers are never going to face reality until they stand at the Judgment Seat of Christ. They will discover to their shock that they are in a Resurrection Body and then they turn and face The Lord Jesus, The Christ and ***ALL*** their terrible failures will be clearly displayed for them for the first time.

Essential Orientation to Reality

Many people can go through life without ever touching reality, living in some type of dream world never being forced to face reality. The simplest way for this to occur is for the person to be flexible with regard to Essentials and inflexible with regard to the Non-Essentials, the exact antithesis of what every believer should be. Another means of dream world living is to totally fail to learn to distinguish between Essentials and Non-Essentials. For these people when others call them stubborn or bullheaded, they are proud of that fact, so that once they have made up their minds about something they never change it. They are STUPID and TOTALLY DIVORCED FROM REALITY. People who are stubborn about something because it is their personal opinion are totally divorced from reality and totally without flexibility and their ductility toward life is totally gone. Doctrine and ductility go together and anyone with any leadership ability in life must remain ductile and saturated with Bible Doctrine. Many people face reality but only when they hurt badly and then they recognize their hurt and pain and that they have fouled everything up and they get totally emotional and ignore the reality. Whenever one is in some jam or under some adverse pressure this is not the time for emotionalism but time for thinking. The time for being emotional on a limited basis is during great prosperity. When a person is under great pressure, such as when in battle where he sees others dying around him, and becomes emotional and says "this is real" he then often runs and hides and becomes a coward. The reality is that he does not BECOME a coward because he ALWAYS WAS a coward but before the pressure or adversity occurred he was simply weak and able to hide it.

This type of person was weak because he never faced reality because he was stubborn. Those around him called this courage and character but inflexible and stubborn people are only thought to be strong as a result of others approving of their stance. Then, as a result of this approval from others, they become more inflexible, stubborn and weaker every day so that when a crisis arrives stubbornness and inflexibility are of absolutely no value. Under pressure they completely shatter because they have become such brittle personalities. The brittle personality always shatters under pressure and all people, especially believers, must learn to be flexible and to grow up and face reality.

In life there are things worth standing up for and never letting go of, fighting and dying for and these are the Essentials. Essentials are found clearly defined in categories of absolute truth including:

- The Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ
- The Bible Doctrines of Scripture
- The Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions

Most people, believers included, want to kill over the Non-Essentials in life and as a result totally lose touch with reality and just like sleeping beauty are waiting for a kiss to wake them up. Many individuals with a very high IQ are in fact dumb with regard to reality. Many have sorted things out but have never taken responsibility for their own opinions nor appreciated the opinions of others. It is important to consider the historical fact that all the great 'captains' or leaders of history had great strength but incredible flexibility. In any profession the "book" of rules for that profession is written for the average professional mentality and if one is ever going to show greatness he must learn when to stick with the "book" and when to throw it away it. In positions of leadership or simply having great authority, when one gets confused about reality, he will go down in history as an idiot. In the United States of America we have had in our recent past history several presidents who fit this pattern exactly. Believers must be able to change their lifestyle according to their present situation and be able to live on great accourdaments or nothing at all and the only thing necessary to accomplish this is to be associated with and oriented to reality. Every believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ will be held responsible at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ for all their decisions regarding Bible Doctrine made through out their entire life.

Conflict and Strife Over Non-Essential Opinions

There so many things in life which are not Essential and require great flexibility in dealing with but believers must remain totally inflexible about Bible Doctrine and about their intake of Bible Doctrine so that by comparison everything else in life becomes Non-Essential. Bible Doctrine is the true Essential of life and gives every individual freedom to make up their own mind about the Non-Essentials. Bible Doctrine is the ONLY key to approval, reward and lack of shame at the Judgment Seat of Christ. A communicator of Bible Doctrine must always avoid taking sides in any Non-Essential conflict but must emphasize the dogmatic communication of Bible Doctrine. In most cases of conflict in any aspect of life there is wrong and right on both sides. Conflict is only avoided by the communicator of Bible Doctrine in his NOT taking sides. One of the most overlooked characteristics of leadership is the ability to NOT take sides in a conflict between those under his authority. There must always be something greater than the strife and conflict which must be made the issue in order to bring everyone back into line and under control and the leader must find and emphasize this greater issue and refocus the attention of the group onto that as the primary objective. This requires having the ability to NOT be sucked into pettiness and conflict. In the Spiritual Life it is the ability to distinguish between Essentials and Non-Essentials and to function professionally as a member of the Royal Family of God and this requires maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential of Thinking in Prayer

Thinking is Essential to effective prayer therefore, when you stop thinking and begin to function under emotion your prayer is never effective. Maturing believers are inevitably placed under Undeserved Suffering as testing which includes:

- Providential Preventative Suffering
- Momentum Testing (4 Categories on 2 levels)
  - People
  - Thought
  - System
  - Disaster
- Evidence Testing (2 Categories)
  - Toward God
  - Toward Man

This adversity can be very great and pressure can be maximum and the reasons for the pressures or catastrophes are not always apparent and it is not earned nor deserved suffering and not a matter of punitive action in any sense. During these situations even the mature believer may go into shock, panic, hysteria or agitation and stop thinking which makes effective prayer impossible. The best prayer warriors who ever lived cannot ever be 100% effective since all are human. Prayer from emotion, shock, hysteria, anguish or pain even when under Undeserved Suffering very often is not even heard by God. Therefore, God the Holy Spirit gives us a helping hand and this is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in intercession for us when we cannot even utter simple effective prayers.

Essentials for Effective Prayer

Unless you are using it properly with proper motivation and responsibility prayer will not work as a weapon. Prayer must always have a target or object and there are 3 categories of prayer which are received by God, the ultimate target. Only the prayers from the believer priest are heard by God today. Unbelievers pray but they are totally wasting their time. Prayers as in the framework of Islam where they pray 3 – 7 times per day with towering minarets designed to have some idiot stand up there and start a cry for prayer so that everyone gets down and faces mecca and prays are totally ineffective and useless and no prayer of any moslem ever got any higher than the top of their head. Hindu prayers are totally ineffective, when they pray to a cobra or a many armed idol that they might be successful in crime, and are really not prayers at all.

Prayer must be addressed to God the Father ONLY and not to Jesus nor the Holy Ghost, nor Mary, nor any other target. (**Matt 6:9**, **Eph 3:14**, **1Pet 1:17**) All prayers addressed to the Lord Jesus Christ or God the Holy Spirit are immediately defunct and ineffective. However, the proper channel of approach in prayer is through The Lord Jesus, The Christ and all prayer is to be offered in the name of God the Son. (**John 14:13-14**) The power of approach in prayer is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit so that in order to be effective as a member of the Royal Family of God in using prayer the believer MUST be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. If believers are not under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit then their prayers are not answered in any positive way. (**Eph 6:18**) Therefore considering the Essential nature of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for effective prayer one of the most important factors in prayer is the Rebound procedure used to recover the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. People like to relate Prayer to something in the Spiritual Life which is stimulating such as

promises from God. **Matt 21:22** explains that the believer must express prayer as part of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) in that he must BELIEVE that the prayer is going to be answered and fulfilled. (**Matt 18:18-19**, **Mark 11:24**) These promises have been abused but if properly used are very powerful with great potential for enhancing the function of the prayer weapon properly from maximum loading. These 2 promises of prayer fulfillment are for mature believers not for adolescent or immature believers. Bible Doctrine must always be involved in prayer and promises are very effective in prayer IF the believer understands and appreciates the context and purpose of the promise. (**Ps 116:1-2**, **Jer 33:3**)

God always anticipates the needs of believers under Positive Volition in historical disaster and this passage in Isaiah deals with the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline on the nation and demonstrates that God always provides for Positive Volition in believers. This would be a very appropriate promise to claim in the coming crisis in this nation. (**Is 65:24**) **Matt 7:7-8** is related to the fact that the disciples were to ask for God the Holy Spirit to come to them and they never did at the end of the age of Israel and although this is distorted today it does have some application to prayer. These passages emphasize the principle that the greater the spiritual growth the more effective the use of prayer. (**John 14:13-14**, **15:7**, **Eph 6:18**, **Phil 4:6**, **Eph 3:16-19**) Prayer is an extension of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) and is a soul exhale toward God. (**Matt 21:22**) It is using and claiming by faith certain promises or categories or rationales based on Bible Doctrine and is simply dialogue with God. However, prayer demands cognizance of the Will of God and therefore, the believer must know the Will of God within the framework and limitation of what he is praying for so that he does not become disappointed and frustrated by not seeing the fulfillment of the promises of **Matt 18:18-19** or **Mark 11:24**. Praying can result in great frustration accompanying it unless the believer understands and has clear cognizance of the Will of God therefore the sooner he learns a maximum of Bible Doctrine the better. (**1John 5:14-15**) Efficacious prayer exists to the extent that the believer is grace oriented and thus prayer begins to become effective when the believer begins to develop and deploys Grace Orientation, Problem Solving Device #4 and reaches its peak in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The divine decree took cognizance of all effective prayer in time and incorporated God's answers into the decree. (**Jer 33:3**)

Agenda for Private prayer

- Use of the Rebound procedure must come first (**1John 1:9**, **1Cor 11:31**) in order to regain and ensure the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for the believer.
- Then there must be thanksgiving to demonstrate capacity for life, Grace Orientation and appreciation of the source of all Logistical Grace and additional grace Blessing imputed to the Righteousness of God in each believer. (**Eph 5:10**, **1Thes 5:18**)
- Next there should be Intercession in prayer for others and believers should have a private prayer list and even use the church bulletin for intercession for other believers.
- Last is petition prayer for personal needs and for self. (**Heb 4:16**)

Grace Orientation in prayer

Prayer is a privilege of the Royal Family of God in this Church Age as a part of the royal priesthood of believers. Because Grace is the basis of prayer no believer can come to God in prayer and expect to be heard on the basis of his own merit, ability or human efforts. This is one of the greatest problems in failed prayer where believers seek to gain answers to prayers based on their

sweetness, goodness, efforts or attitudes as human merit or ability. Believers MUST approach God in prayer on the basis of the merits of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and coming to God based on personal merit is what eliminates every possibility of any prayer ever being answered. God the Father has been propitiated by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross and is no respecter of people as far as believers are concerned and he does not hear nor answer prayer because we are good, moral, benevolent, altruistic, sincere, concerned and certainly not for being religious nor for any other reason except as a result of the merits of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Every believer who in praying gets through to the Throne of Grace does so for no other reason than because of the Lord. Therefore, all prayer MUST BE addressed to God the Father through God the Son and under the power of God the Holy Spirit.

Principles of Prayer

Prayer expresses the conviction and motivation of the one offering the prayer but cannot change nor coerce the volition of the object of prayer. Therefore prayer for the unbeliever must follow the policy of God since God himself cannot coerce the volition of man in the Angelic Conflict. Such prayer for the unbeliever must include the opportunity for the presentation of the gospel and clarification of the issue of salvation so that the exercising of volition by the unbeliever can be based on ACCURATE facts. It is acceptable to ask in prayer that the unbeliever hears the clear lucid presentation of the gospel and clearly understands the facts and that the issues of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God vs rejection of Christ are explicitly clear to him so that when he says YES or NO he knows exactly what he is doing. It is acceptable that the request be made that someone with the pertinent knowledge and information is given the opportunity to present the gospel to the unbeliever and that the facts are clearly presented, lucid and perspicuous, and having understood these that he make a clear decision understanding totally what he is doing. Therefore, it is obvious that ALL Prayer must thus relate to the policy of God. (**Rom 10:1**)

Prayer the Weapon for Spiritual Combat

Prayer is a weapon which we must learn about and know thoroughly so that we can be effective when using it like any other weapon. Most ineffective prayer function comes from arrogance and false motivation in using it improperly. Believers must know this weapon and have good motivation together in its use else the weapon will be totally ineffective. Arrogance produces false motivation and resultant discouragement with regard to failure in effective prayer function. Prayer is extremely effective but the believer MUST know what he is doing when engaging in the use of prayer. Also, there is arrogance involved when any production by the Christian does not glorify the Lord but only the individual doing the deeds and many times people who pray a lot do it simply to glorify themselves. When God gives a weapon believers must remind themselves that the weapon belongs to God and He has only given believers the USE of it. Very often believers think their prayers are changing things in the world but they must remember that it is the one who owns the weapon who is changing things, God himself, NOT the BELIEVER. Prayer which is not motivated from Bible Doctrine cannot glorify God. Therefore like all Christian production which must occur under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and be motivated from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, these basic principles apply to any weapon which God has given whether it is prayer or a communication gift or some other function which is outstanding in the Christian Way of Life. Therefore proper motivation is the key to Christian production and effective prayer. Without maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of

the Soul the motivation will undoubtedly be poor and motivation which is not purposed to glorify God will exist only to glorify self and what glorifies self cannot glorify God.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility in Witnessing

As demonstrated during the release from slavery of the exodus generation of Jews, a revelation of divine indignation or wrath is often the means of evangelizing people who are under Positive Volition at God Consciousness. This was the major purpose of God in allowing the Negative Volition of Pharaoh Amenhotep II to persist beyond the stage when he should have been removed from this life. Some people are evangelized by Grace but some by the demonstration of divine omnipotence and judgment. Therefore, since not all people are evangelized in the same way, not all respond to the same system of witnessing. Some people are positively effected by sweetness and kindness and some by descriptions of hell and destruction and the point is that as a believer one must be flexible about choosing principles and processes in the evangelism of unbelievers and it must be done on an individual basis. Believers who are following the mandate to witness to unbelievers must be flexible in their evangelism efforts, because one may respond to one system and another to a totally antithetical system of presenting the gospel of Christ.

Essentials of Witnessing Especially to Jews

The solution to witnessing to the Jews or any other unbeliever is NOT by developing principles and concepts regarding the gospel according to their culture. The unbeliever, especially the Jewish unbeliever, must be given the absolute truth of the Gospel of Christ clearly elucidated with concentrated Bible Doctrine. The truth of the resurrection as a historical fact is essential for witnessing to Jews. The Jews who are in the Church Age as believers will be far better off in eternity being a part of the battlefield royalty of The Lord Jesus, The Christ than they would be as racial unbelieving Jews.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Inflexibility toward Bible Doctrine & Giving

Christian giving is a function of the believer under the Royal Family Honor Code and combines Bible Doctrine MOTIVATION with material prosperity to perform a divine service. Bonifide spiritual giving is really the function of the mature believer with Positive Volition who benefits from the teaching of Bible Doctrine for advance in the Plan of God. True Christian givers are those who share spiritual things from Bible Doctrine teaching so that nothing except the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul motivates the believer to give. This principle of true giving eliminates the service organizations who constantly solicit money even from the unbeliever. Giving is NOT the sharing of emotion nor is it based on attraction nor on persuasion by flattery but giving is reciprocity between doctrinal teaching and the resultant material prosperity of the listener. The

mature believer inevitably is spiritually blessed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and materially prospered by divine imputation and this provides motivation to give to the source of his Bible Doctrine orientation. (**1Tim 5:18**; **Deut 24:15**) From the divine imputation of prosperity comes the material blessing by which the motivated believer gives but he must remember God creates the wealth by which he gives and from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he is to have the proper motivation to give.

- Motivation + Money == Proper Christian Giving

The believer must have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in order to first receive blessing from the Justice of God by which he can reciprocate and then give. Doctrine must be the motivator and when the believer has it God provides the money then the fun is in the giving. If the believer has doctrine and is inflexible about doctrine then he will be flexible in the use of his money. (**Rom 15:27**)

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of Living in the Plan of God

The biggest differences in mankind are made by Metabolized Bible Doctrine saturating the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which produces in any man Honor and Integrity when they have have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. These individuals respect volition, privacy, property and understand that true freedom requires these and authority for guidance. These people will also understand Personal Love vs Impersonal Love and Essentials vs Non-Essentials in life. People who have made the effort to build structured Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will thereby develop honor and integrity in life. For these believers it is entirely possible in life to go from total depravity under the influence of the Old Sin Nature to total integrity and honor under the influence of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine.

Essential of the Divine Decree

The decree of God is the sum total of the Plan of God for the Human Race encompassing all of Human History anticipated through the omniscience of God in Eternity Past and simultaneously put into the decree as reality. The purpose of God related to all events in history constitute one single all encompassing, all comprehensive, intention perceiving all events in omniscience, the free as free, the necessary as necessary, together with all their causes, conditions and relations as one indivisible system of things every link which is Essential to the integrity of the whole. The decree of God is his eternal, holy, wise and sovereign purpose comprehending at once all things which ever were, are or will be, in their causes, conditions, successions and relations and determining their certain futurition. The decree of God is his eternal and immutable will regarding the future existence of the events of time and the precise manner and order of their occurrence. The decree of God is that eternal plan by which God has rendered all things certain, the past, present and future events of both human and angelic history. The omniscience of God has placed into the computer of human events every thought, decision and action of every person in the whole Human Race simultaneously but they all

come out chronologically because God invented both the decree and time and space to keep things organized.

Essential Orientation to History & the Plan of God

A "dispensation" is a category of Human History regarding the administration of history from the Divine Viewpoint and is found in Orthodox Bible Doctrine and no where else and is the basis for the divine interpretation of Human History. God has planned for man in a very specific way for each specific period of Human History. Therefore, as believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ a proper orientation to time and history is Essential for understanding the Plan of God and purpose of God at any given time in Human History, especially the time in which we are living. In each dispensation God administers his plan through a specific agency or stewardship.

Divisions of History

In the original languages of the bible there are different words used to describe time in different ways:

- (gr) Chronos == time as a succession of events and is used to portray the chronology of history. This is generally started in any given nation and cut off by failure of the nation and administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline to that nation to be started again and cut off and again and cut off in other nations and peoples as well.
- (gr) Kairos == time as an epoch and used for dispensations (**1Thes 5:1**)
  - The dispensations:
    - Age of Gentiles
    - Age of Israel
    - The Time of the Hypostatic Union
    - The Church Age
    - The Conclusion of the Age of Israel
    - The Millennium
- (gr) Aion == a period of time and category of Human History (**Eph 3:1-3**, **Col 1:25**)
- (gr) Oikonomia == translated dispensation actually means Period of Policy Administration

In human history there are 4 Eras:

- **The Age of the Gentiles (Gen 1-11)**

This is the period from Adam to the destruction of the tower of babel and encompasses about 2000 years of history. This had a period of Positive Volition called Innocence, a period of Negative Volition called Conscience and a period of Government called Divine Establishment. There was only one language and one race. It was the time of the Angelic attacks on Divine Establishment principles which included the attack on:

- Free will (**Gen 3**)
- Marriage (**Gen 6**)
- Nationalism (**Gen 11:1-9**)

This last one reflects what God thinks of the United Nations which is total satanic evil and completely vicious. God destroyed the first UN building and we would be incredibly blessed should He destroy this one.

- **The Age of Israel** (Most of the Old Testament Scripture)

This was the beginning of the first new race in history and eventually the first client or priest nation to God all which started with a missionary named Abram who became Abraham and the father of the Jews.

- The period of the Patriarchs from Abraham to Moses, the origin of the Jewish race

This was a unique beginning and was not totally based on genetics but in fact is most closely related to spirituality and regeneration functions. Abraham, Isaac and Jacob the origin of the Jews were all believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ but even their closest relatives, their brothers, Nahor, Ishmael, and Esau were unbelievers and NOT JEWS.

- The period of the Law

This is the 2nd stage of the Age of Israel from Moses to The Lord Jesus, The Christ. This is the formation period of the Jewish Priest Nation to God. The function of the client or priest nation was then and still is to preserve, protect and disseminate Bible Doctrine and to serve God with the proper protection and use of freedom so people can choose for or against God and freely use their volition regarding evangelism and when this is positive, as believers, choose to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or say NO to Bible Doctrine or to God and go into reversionism.

- The Period of the Hypostatic Union

This is the 3rd Stage from the birth of The Lord Jesus, The Christ to his ascension. At approximately the point of the ascension of Christ there is the interruption of the Age of Israel with the Church Age or Dispensation of the Church, the age of the Royal Family of God as battlefield royalty with Christ.

- The Period of the Conclusion of the Age of Israel, The Tribulation.

This is the 4th and final stage of the Age of Israel and is from the rapture or Exit Resurrection of Church Age believers on to the 2nd advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

The historical characteristics of the age of Israel are totally different than those of the Age of Gentiles because there were many languages and races and the development of Israel from a race to a client or priest nation. The priest nation function of Israel set it up as the custodian of the written canon of scripture where the absolute truth Revealed by God was reduced to writing and preserved. The Age of Israel was interrupted with the Ascension of Christ, who is now seated at the right hand of God the Father.

- **The Church Age**

The Church Age began 10 days after the Ascension of Christ with the calling out of the Royal Family of God. This dispensation is the most intensified and pressurized stage of the Angelic Conflict Appeal. The Church Age was a mystery or unknown in the earlier dispensations and periods of ancient history until it occurred at the time of Christ. (**Rom 16:25**, **Eph 3:1-6**, **Col 1:25-26**) Doctrines pertaining to the Church Age were generally not found in the Old Testament Scripture and when Bible Doctrine for the Church Age was about to be or could have been presented there is an immediate parenthesis in scripture, (**Dan 2:40-41**, **7:23-24**, **8:22-23**, **11:35-36**, **Hos 3:4-5**, **5:15-6:1**, **Ps 22:22-23**) and between each of these verses is where the Church Age was to be in history.

- The Precanon period

This was the time in history prior to the completion of the canon of scripture where many unusual things happened and many temporary spiritual gifts existed.

- The Post canon period

This is the period in history after the canon of scripture was completed where the unusual things and temporary gifts were discontinued. The key to the Dispensation of the Church Age is to understand the **Baptism of God the Holy Spirit** and Retroactive and Current Positional Truth as principles. This is the period in Human History of the greatest intensification of the Angelic Conflict and a clear delineation of what God wants from believers who function in His Plan is found in the **Equation of Hope**.

- **Age of Christ, The Millennium**

This is the dispensation when The Lord Jesus, The Christ returns to the earth to rule. (**Is 11, 35, 62, 65, Ps 72, Rev 20**) It begins with the 2nd advent of Christ and continues for 1000 years. This is the final dispensation of Human History and it ends with a revolution, the Gog revolution, which destroys the earth but a new heaven and earth and new Jerusalem are all created by God after this destruction. During the Millennial reign of Christ there is to be perfect environment, no religion, optimum spirituality with Israel restored as a client nation to God. There is to be no war, universal prosperity, perfect world government, extreme longevity in humans, abundance of plant life, animals will lose ferocity and a human population explosion without confusion. The revolution at the end of this dispensation will serve to prove that without regeneration and Metabolized Bible Doctrine, perfect environment is meaningless because capacity to enjoy and appreciate good environment comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Living in the Plan of God

Living in the Plan of God and advancing toward and into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God means living life as to the Lord. This results in Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul saturating the Norms and Standards and also, being in the Human Spirit, provides for a higher motivation in life than profit in business or honorable service in any profession. This motivation can enter into any facet of life and give the believer incredible success and happiness. There is unquestionable inequality in life created by the existence of human freedom whereas tyranny, in any form, destroys freedom and creates equality which is relegated to the lowest denominator in the population. No matter where you are in life God's purpose for your life is not in conflict with the fact that you may be occupying an insignificant status in society. Believers must know that as a result of their being alive God has a purpose for their life in their current environment and has not forgotten them and as believers their current temporal status quo should be of no concern to them. The common purpose for all believers, especially in this Church Age, is to have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine transferred into and saturating the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where one orients to life and thereby fulfills the objective of the Christian Way of Life. All Positive Volition decisions toward Bible Doctrine form all believers in a nation into a large pivot so that the insignificant believer and the famous believer all contribute to the principle of The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History through them and providing blessing to the nation. This involves Christ giving the privilege of client nation status with freedom for evangelism, advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, a haven for Jews and significant effective missionary functions. All this occurs under individual privacy as part of that freedom. This is the normal function of the privacy of the priesthood, to enable the advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and resultant glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in time OR NOT! This includes understanding and execution of the **Royal Family Honor Code** the means by which believers are to function in this Church Age.

All believers have spiritual freedom, privacy of the priesthood, support from Logistical Grace and everything needed to please the Lord and live life as unto the Lord and to have whatever God has planned for them in relationship to the rest of humanity. This living as unto the lord recognizes privacy and freedom and great variation of opinions which must be tolerated with the applications of Bible Doctrine to those Non-Essentials. Distinctions between application and error in the Essential of absolute truth is the basis for separation of one believer from another. Believers learn to tolerate those in different stages of spiritual growth and recognize that all believers have a common objective to get the same Bible Doctrine and grow in grace and please God and glorify Him. By having toleration regarding Non-Essentials they advance as a body of believers, the Royal Family of God. The principle is that no one has any right to criticize, judge or malign a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and other believers must tolerate all their ideas and opinions as long as they don't oppose Essential doctrine. Also, these believer are in fact in their status quo by the Grace of God and being alive God has a plan for them as well. Therefore, as believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ the primary objective in life is to get into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as much Metabolized Bible Doctrine as possible in one's lifetime. When this is 1st priority and primary motivation in life then when the believer dies everything about dying is determined by how he has lived. Being in the status quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super-Grace or Ultra Super-Grace, dying will be glorious for these believers. Contrary to this if the believer falls into the apostasy of reversionism then he will have a horrible nightmarish death and no imputation of blessing or reward waiting for him in eternity. The principle exists that when one works hard in life then he can thoroughly enjoy the contrast of playing when he can play. So, if one's life is used to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God then both life and then eternity and getting there under dying grace will be absolutely fantastic.

Essentials of Laws of Divine Establishment & Bible Doctrine

The Laws of Divine Establishment encapsulate the Plan of God in order to give everyone an opportunity to obtain Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under the Plan of God by means of absolute inflexibility regarding Essentials and total flexibility regarding Non-Essentials. Believers must be totally flexible regarding Non-Essential applications by others and totally inflexible about the Essentials of Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Life is greater than a lot of petty Non-Essential things and life is made up of many Non-Essentials but there must be Essentials behind the Non-Essentials, and that is the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine.

Flexibility & the Unwavering Plan of God

It is Essential to remember that the Plan of God continues in the times of crisis and disaster as well as in times of blessing and prosperity. The Plan of God for each of us as believers goes on in good or bad times, evil and apostate times or prosperous and wonderful times. Circumstances in life do not change the Plan of God and the Plan of God from Eternity Past has never been shaped by circumstance or situation which concept is a distortion strictly from Human Viewpoint thinking. Thus the flexibility of the Christian Way of Life must be based on the application of Bible Doctrine and the final stage of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) in coming to doctrinal conclusions about any situation or circumstance. Bible Doctrine is inflexible and from this inflexible doctrine comes the flexibility of its applications. This does not infer variable applications but flexibility in the use of Bible Doctrine when applying it to varying circumstances. Bible Doctrine is designed to produce flexibility in the believer

NOT Self Righteousness. A prime example for the believer is that his provision of Logistical Grace works equally well in war as in peace, in disaster or prosperity and therefore the believer must not become so preoccupied with disaster that he is distracted from the Plan of God. **Ps 48:14** tells us "Don't be distracted by disaster or apostasy and don't get eyes on apostate believers nor on positive believers because there is no room in the Christian Way of Life for eyes on others or self, only on The Lord Jesus, The Christ. **Ps 37:25**, **Deut 33:26-27** and **Phil 4:19** apply in all historical situations both prosperity and adversity in life and under national disaster or blessing.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Non-Essential Religion

Christianity is NOT religion. Religion is is man by his human efforts, abilities or works seeking the approbation of God while Christianity is God seeking man through the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross. Christianity is a personal relationship with God through The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Religion is a NON-Essential in life and Religious ABSENCE is Essential since religion is a part of the plan and policy of Satan to rule this world and distract man from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Religion, therefore, amounts to Human Good derived from EVIL and combines these functions for the deception of man. Religion is a substitute designed by Satan to distract human beings from knowledge that there can be a true GRACE relationship with God based on absolutely NOTHING man can do. Religion is the single worst concept ever to come to Human History and has been, is and will continue to be the cause of incredible destruction of human life and distortion of the concepts of the Spiritual Life and Christianity.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials & Flexibility toward Specifics vs Non-Specifics

There are specific things or concepts in life and non-specific things and concepts. In considering non-specifics, these are concepts which fulfill the Mosaic Law where the specifics cannot. Examples include murder, adultery, theft, lying, coveting, etc., these are sins and crimes as well. The Mosaic Law deals in negative specifics and a few positive specifics as well but when these are avoided and the Law fulfilled the believer has not completed his function in the Christian Way of Life. LOVE as Impersonal Love for Mankind is toleration by the believer of other's Non-Essential opinions and respect for the imputed Righteousness of God in all other believers who are most likely totally different than he is. The believer fulfills the law with Impersonal Love for Mankind and respect for the privacy and Righteousness of God in all other believers even when they have different opinions from his. People who only keep the details of the Mosaic Law are legalistic self righteous individuals and become bullies especially with regard to demanding others be keeping the law. Believers must have Impersonal Love for Mankind and thus toleration for all things in life which are NOT IN ANY WAY Essential to our function in the Spiritual Life under doctrinal principles. This principle is extremely important to understand because much of the punishment which came to and is continuing with regard to Israel occurred because they zealously kept the law but did not respect the opinions of others with regard to the Essentials of bible doctrine. The believer must never become inflexible

about Non-Essentials and he must however remain totally inflexible when it comes to Essential doctrine and totally reject false doctrine. People who are flexible are often considered to be weak people, however it is vacillation which is a weakness but flexibility is a great strength. Very often great decisions come from the source of great flexibility. Therefore there is no ductility in vacillation nor oscillation from one concept to another but there is strength in flexibility. People who are inflexible about Non-Essentials are WEAK whereas strength is flexibility regarding Non-Essentials.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility, Inflexibility & Security

People are and always have been focused on doing things for security in life. Different people and different societies associate different things with security such as:

- Wealth
- Social Contacts
- Marriage

When pursuit of security is made the Essential of life this is inflexibility with regard to what is actually a Non-Essential in the Plan of God. Human concepts of security are Non-Essentials because no person is ever secure in this world unless he is in and functioning under the Plan of God. To obtain this ultimate security requires Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, upon which time that person as a believer becomes the TOTAL responsibility of God. People always want to have their cake and be able to eat it also. No matter in what category a person is in life, it makes no difference who or what he may be, because with all the flaws in character people always have there is no way to have security in life based on human preparations or functions. There cannot ever be true security or stability in life because of the existence of human **tragic flaws** which are emanations from the individual's Old Sin Nature. Therefore, whenever the believer makes his Primary Essential the pursuit of security this is inflexibility because human security in the Plan of God is a Non-Essential because in this world ruled by Satan no one is ever secure unless he is in and functioning under the Plan of God. However, HOPE as described in the **Equation of Hope** Plan of God, is absolute security about the future and total confidence about the present. Believers must be aware, being in the Plan of God, that His plan is perfect, so that being part of the Royal Family of God, sustaining and perpetuating life for the believer is the total and complete responsibility of God for EVERY believer. Believers must understand that there is no problem, difficulty or disaster in life which is too great for God. The underlying absolute dogmatic principle of the Christian Way of Life is that God never permits any adversity in the life of the believer for which he has not prepared and made available Bible Doctrine which addresses that situation even if the believer is a reversionist with Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine under extreme Divine Discipline. Unfortunately, the reversionistic believer under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine never perceives the solutions provided by God and therefore must endure by his own devices the Self Induced Misery resulting from his Negative Volition and the Divine Discipline of reversionism as well.

Never has there ever been a time when any believer with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine has lost out or had his momentum deterred by lack of available Bible Doctrine. God has always and will

always provide for Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine no matter where on this earth or under what conditions that believer exists. **Ps 18:46-50** is a psalm written for worship by David in his first great wave of prosperity when he was first promoted to King of Israel and it demonstrates the Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ that David had and the reality of the Lord being greater in David's life than anything else. This is a demonstration of total inflexibility toward the Essentials and that David never waivered with regard to his love of The Lord. David maintained Impersonal Love in mentioning that the Lord seeks vengeance for him and he did not seek it himself, a lesson we must strive to adhere to. Under Impersonal Love David's high Norms and Standards were never lowered to the level of his enemies, clearly demonstrated when he did not kill Saul when he found him indisposed in the cave, and did not try to retaliate against his enemies and constantly put matters of antagonisms in the hands of the Lord. Deliverance from or justice regarding our enemies when it comes from the Lord it is right and fair but when the believer tries to accomplish it, it is always imperfect.

The Lord Jesus, The Christ is just as much God of the gentiles as he is of the Jews. Even in ancient Jewish history he was God to Nebuchadnezzar, Cyrus the Great, and other great gentile rulers and through the consistent overriding Negative Volition of Pharaoh Amenhotep, His power was clearly demonstrated to the entire world. Gentiles have the same ultimate position as Jews without the great advantages of the Age of Israel for the Jews or the unconditional promises to the Jews. There will be gentiles along with Jews who survive the tribulation as believers and they will have become believers during the tribulation and be of great quality since their survival will occur from flexibility derived from and executed through Bible Doctrine. For the believer under Positive Volition, Bible Doctrine Metabolized in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the inflexible mass and base and from which there must be flexibility directed in its application to the Non-Essentials of life. The **Royal Family Honor Code** of the Church Age has an equivalent in the Old Testament Scripture times and in the tribulation by which believers will have security and survive in the worst disasters through flexibility in the Non-Essentials.

Flexibility & Security

Security provided by human efforts is challenged daily and proves the existence of absolute insecurity from that source and those who depend on human security are always insecure and inflexible about Non-Essentials in life. Human security is totally Non-Essential for believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and the most insecure people are those who depend on human concepts or systems of security. When these human security systems are removed by disaster these people who depend on them are completely devastated and unable to function for their own survival. People try to conjure up ways and figure out how to be secure in life always trying to anticipate disaster and what they can do if it occurs. The best preparation for disaster for believers is found in the inner resources of soul produced by maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. When the believer gets distracted from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine during holidays, by social gatherings, he inevitably learns nothing and has no preparation for coming disaster. Even when normal and perfectly legitimate things in life distract from Bible Doctrine or from concentration on Bible Doctrine they undermine the believer's disaster preparation. The concentration which must be used in learning Bible Doctrine is the same concentration which must be used when applying Bible Doctrine. In combat, when another person is shooting at you the same concentration used to learned the principles of shooting is the same means

by which those principles must be applied to vanquishing that enemy. Col. Jeff Cooper: "In a difficult pressure combat situation where someone is shooting at you, you cannot go from condition white to condition red" HE WAS THE EXPERT in this field. In essence it is easy to go from condition white to yellow to orange to red but not ever from white to red and this is why people die in shooting incidents. Therefore, neither can Believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ go from ignorance of Bible Doctrine to the pressure situation of disaster and come out surviving.

The pseudo intellectual, who is smart, with his great perceptive ability, having a high IQ, is absolutely STUPID when there is no Bible Doctrine interest and none resident in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and he lives in condition white and will never survive disaster. The foundations of shooting techniques can be learned but in order to be available for self defense they must be practiced over and over again. This is plugging along developing skills and also what believers must do with Bible Doctrine but the pseudo intellectual will never do this. The more human security conscience a believer is the more he shows how insecure he is because, for the believer, security comes from what is in the soul not what is in the bank or the gun safe or any other possession or preparation for pressure situations. Security is only derived from what is in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this must be the Absolute Truth from Bible Doctrine. If the believer is able to concentrate on the inner resources in his Soul which are derived from Metabolized Bible Doctrine he will avoid FEAR. Fear comes from the inability to concentrate on TRUTH and its principles. People who have imagination and lack concentration can build for themselves incredible levels of FEAR. The reactions of the nervous system in the human body are not fear, and fear which brings on cowardice is the lack of ability to concentrate and think under pressure. In other words, the rapid heart rate, the profuse perspiration, the pupil dilation and blood pressure increase are not necessarily FEAR, they are nervous system reactions to great pressure. Courage is concentration on the inner resources of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul especially under maximum pressure situations. This is a soldier who has learned to use his weapon and under pressure concentrates and shoots slowly, carefully, precisely and professionally and is the believer who relies on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine he has resident in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as his reality no matter the pressure or disaster he faces.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility and Orientation to Reality

God the Holy Spirit + the Human Spirit combine to allow believers to orient to reality and take their life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God,the ultimate goal of the Christian Way of Life. Daily function under the **Grace Apparatus for Perception**, **Operation Z** results in Bible Doctrine being "**Metabolized**" and entered into residence in Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The development of the Edification Complex of the Soul provides the stability for the spiritual growth while maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul provides capacity for blessing and the necessary principles for application to life and thereby orientation to reality. Every taboo or other false principle of life in one way or another is designed to divorce the believer from reality. A prime example is the concept of the "Gentleman". This is a

concept which is designed to orient both males and females to life but if carried too far can result in disorientation to the reality of life. A man should be a gentleman and should possess a respect for womanhood. He can, however, be a gentleman to the point where equal opportunity girls will trample him into the dust because of both his and their divorcement to reality. When a woman declares her demands for equal opportunity she has removed her gender and thereby has become neuter, to continue to treat her with the respect due a woman because she still has the body of a woman can result in total disaster to business and social groups. Observe JANE FONDA and the catering to communism she did in Vietnam, observe Nancy Pelosi and her total disregard for the constitution of the Unites States of America and due process of law and respect for fellow members of congress let alone respect for president Trump of the Unites States of America. When anyone thinks of or treats these females as ladies that person is divorced from reality and an idiot not a gentleman. The greater man is one who can be a gentleman when it is PROPER and a great soldier when needed. This requires the flexibility to reorient to reality when the situation requires it. Reality in this life is very different from time in bible study and believers must have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine available in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to enable them to orient to reality in every condition and situation of life.

Inflexibility & Divorcement from Reality

Considering certain foods to be 'unclean' or to not be eaten is based on a system of taboos started in the ancient world when animals were sacrificed to idols and the meat was then sold for money to support the priests of the idol. Food is not by itself 'unclean' unless something effects it to contaminate it. Clean vs 'unclean' regarding food involves the thinking of the consumer therefore what makes food 'unclean' is an inflexible Mental Attitude regarding Non-Essentials. However, if you know food is contaminated by bacteria or parasites or chemicals, then AVOID it. It is false standards in the conscience based on ignorance or rejection of Bible Doctrine which converts clean nourishing food into what is thought to be 'unclean'. It is lack of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which drives taboo thinking where there are no Divine Viewpoint Norms and Standards. Therefore, obviously, divorcement from reality is due to inflexibility whereas flexibility is related to orientation to reality. Inflexibility puts the believer into a dream world, keeps him out of touch with reality, dries up his thought processes and destroys his common sense. Inflexibility is a vacuum which sucks all sorts of **ARROGANCE** into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Whether in blind or conscious arrogance the believer makes an issue of self and he is so stuck on self and so busy thinking about self that he does not have time to realize others and other situation may be involved. Inflexibility is that which makes him rude, stupid, and thoughtless about the feelings and sensitivity of others. In the United States of America today the entire country is saturated with people who are inflexible about Non-Essentials and therefore absolutely totally divorced from reality. The greatest inflexibility of the people today is with regard to socialism and the welfare state functions which the average person thinks are benefiting everyone. These are the 2 greatest internal enemies of this nation and not only can the country survive without these but it has the potential to go on to far greater things in history. The people are inflexible in thinking that the United States must constantly give money to other nations in order to show friendship and thus MONEY is supposed to buy international friendship. During WWI people were totally inflexible about pacifism and failed to see that flexibility was needed so that there are times when one has to fight vigorously and decisively and with everything possible to destroy the enemy. This situation is now waiting on the horizon for the United States and will most likely be what will be needed in the near

future. Sometimes it is wrong to constantly seek to have peace and whenever inflexibility regarding pacifism is found behind this, one also finds the radical liberal who thinks he is brilliant but in fact is stupid and totally divorced from reality. In the United States of America today the inflexibility with regard to Non-Essentials has lead to:

- OSHA
- HEW
- EPA
- BATFE
- IRS
- Women wanting equal rights and treatment
- The rise of marxism and communism in this country
- The tolerance of islam and the idiocy of shiria law
- AND much much more.

If the believer is going to be oriented to reality he must become flexible in Non-Essentials which can be categorized as having good common sense. As a believer advances in his Spiritual Life he must understand that different believers have different Norms and Standards. The advancing believer must not allow these false standards to distract him from or influence him to reject Bible Doctrine.

Inflexibility & Psychosis

We know that God never tampers with human freedom. Therefore, anytime believers are divorced from reality they become totally mentally unstable. The more Negative Volition is expressed toward the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine the more they become divorced from reality and thus the greater becomes the expression of their arrogance. The greater the expression of arrogance and disassociation from reality the more they move toward becoming psychotic. All psychotic people are totally arrogant and their arrogance is so great that they are totally divorced from reality and can only think of themselves and their problems. They will take up and monopolize all of one's time and call day and night to state and restate their problems over and over because they are totally disassociated from reality. This person, blinded from Scar Tissue of the Soul, has no sense of time whatever, except as it all relates to them and their problems. As a result they have become totally inflexible and totally out of touch with reality.

Inflexibility, Disaster and Friendships

Everyone has had friends and seen them in a good light and then one day sees them in the true light of their stubborn jackass concepts so that when finally seeing this, it caused these 'friends' to be left behind and faded out of the picture of one's life. As a result they no longer continued to be close friends. People who are constantly stubborn, intensive and inflexible often manifest this in their love life so that they love self so much no one else could ever compete with their love of self. When this becomes apparent it becomes obvious that they are not friendship material and often one then graciously backs out of the picture. By God permitting Pharaoh to live longer than he should have and still use Negative Volition the people of the nation and the entire world saw him as an arrogant person, jealous, petty, vindictive and implacable so that many Egyptian believers were most happy to depart from Egypt and join the ranks of Jews in their march across the desert. This clearly demonstrates in history that The Lord Jesus, The Christ is ultimately the one controlling Human History. It is often a great wonder and a truly marvelous blessing to break from friendship with

people who are so arrogant, often under blind arrogance, that they never see their stubbornness, intensity, implacability and lack of humor, all related to their underlying arrogance. Life is too short for anyone with sense to associate with this kind of person. These people are so full of themselves that the only person who would actually WANT to associate with them is someone 2x as dumb as they are. People one knows who are this stubborn, arrogant and self centered having maximum Scar Tissue of the Soul are those people who are totally divorced from reality. The longer a person is divorced from reality the more likely it is that their arrogance, jealousy, bitterness and implacability will lead to psychosis and neurosis. Once people get away from reality under this system of degeneration they drag with them anyone who wants to be their friend, dragging them away from reality and the importance of reality and into a mutual admiration society of arrogant and inadequate relationships. This results in all of them living in the dream world of personal self importance so that once in this dream world they are of no value except to become another corpse in some historical disaster. Understanding these principles it becomes clear that the death of many Christians is not a tragedy in history but is the world, through catastrophe and disaster, being cleansed of garbage.

In the United States many Christians will be lost in the coming disaster in this 21st century because arrogance in Christianity is the order of the day and most Christians are proud of being Christian, of their morality, their efforts and works supposedly for God, and want recognition for these all the while talking only about Christian love. When these arrogant, self centered believers talk about Christian love of the "brethren" they don't really think about loving others but about others loving them. Unfortunately, these people are so unattractive and obnoxious, demanding to be loved, setting up or joining "friendly" churches with the resident lonely hearts clubs in order to get exactly what they want, gobs of attention. This is their substitute for for the ESSENTIALS of Bible Doctrine and come under the category of depending on people rather than Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The principle is that with Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer never has to wake up The Lord Jesus, The Christ and scream "LORD SAVE US". The believer who is advancing toward or in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God does not need to pray for deliverance nor talk to anyone about deliverance but as a result of having grown up as a Christian they handle their own personal problems with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. If people, both believers and unbelievers, continue to be infants as they become physical adults they divorce selves from reality and when enough are divorced from reality they must then be destroyed.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility Giving Strength

There are 3 Areas of weakness with regard to flexibility:

- Flexibility resulting in unhappiness
- Flexibility with uncertainty
- Flexibility with defeat

A lack of Bible Doctrine in the soul puts flexibility into these areas of Unhappiness, Uncertainty or Defeat. This is a trap for those believers lacking Metabolized Bible Doctrine and they can count on

these 3 things occurring in and occupying their lives. Strength through flexibility is prepared for the believer so that he can avoid these weaknesses through the function of the **Royal Family Honor Code** and reaching the status of being a mature believer. It is extremely important for the believer to function under the principles of freedom, the Royal Family Honor Code, flexibility about the Non-Essentials in life and total inflexibility with regard to the Essentials of Bible Doctrine. The question then becomes, "How to avoid the problems of Unhappiness, Uncertainty and Defeat in being flexible"? A person may be unhappy in giving up his wine for some dumb ass who is from a baptist church and has been evangelized 40 thousand times with no result, and giving this up by using the **law of love**, he may have a very uncertain future concerning the great wines waiting for him. If this person does not understand bible doctrine he will be defeated as a Christian. Therefore instead of having strength through flexibility this one has total defeat. The believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but lacks the maintenance necessary from consistent continued Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine can become unhappy, uncertain and defeated, especially when trying to be flexible with regard to other believers.

Flexibility is not necessarily, by itself, a sign of strength but could be one of weakness. Flexibility + Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is strength but, on the other hand, Flexibility – Bible Doctrine in the Soul is always weakness. The Royal Family Honor Code teaches strength through flexibility based on **Metabolized Bible Doctrine** in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and should never be confused with oscillation or vacillation which is total weakness. Example: what Bible Doctrine teaches about the woman is an Essential about which the man must be very inflexible. He can be inflexible with regard to the principles involved but must be flexible with regard to application of these principles to the woman. In the application of Bible Doctrine in producing flexibility the principle to recognize is, that too often the arrogance of the man makes certain inordinate demands on the woman or he is Self Righteous and too hasty to correct the woman or is Self Righteous with the woman over some trivia such as procedures or precedents in social life. Arrogant men are always too inflexible where women are concerned and this is a combination of selfcenteredness, and self righteousness. Example: It is improper for a man to offer a woman his hand in a greeting when first meeting but only an inflexible female would refuse to take it or tell him it is wrong to do so. This would be inflexibility with regard to a Non-Essential and the over all consideration should be with regard to the woman's sensitivity and her comfort. It is possible to be right in the matter of manners or other social interactions and to be wrong in the way they are applied with the result of being wrong and appearing weak.

The overriding consideration with regard to flexibility is always the weaknesses of the person with which one is dealing since they may not have an equal level of accumulated Bible Doctrine. The Essential factor which demands flexibility in all areas of life is thoughtfulness of others and consideration of others and being aware that others have feelings and are easily hurt and if they are vulnerable to Self Righteousness they may react in some way to inflexibility and thereby ruin a party or other social gathering. The believer will never have flexibility with strength, the true manifestation of strength and greatness, as long as he is full of Self Righteousness and small bits of knowledge. Self Righteous Arrogance and a little knowledge make an inflexible pompous jackass out of almost anyone. Just as flexibility in social life and manners demand that one think about other people so does any position of leadership which requires that one knows and understand the people under him and that bending the rules is not a total disaster all the time. The inflexible believer can

be just as arrogant as any legalist and in this way destroy or distract someone else in their relationship with God, therefore Essentials in the Christian Way of Life include:

- Circumstances + Bible Doctrine == Malleability
- Flexibility + Bible Doctrine == Spiritual Strength & Moral Courage

Mental Attitude Arrogance especially pride takes what one thinks is correct in a doctrinal teaching situation and drive him to being inflexible about it whereas the Essential is the entire true doctrine taught. Inevitably all believers who remain consistent in the intake of Bible Doctrine become flexible about Non-Essentials, what they think as preconceived Norms and Standards, and totally inflexible about what the bible teaches. When one's preconceived standards of thinking are more important than what is taught from the bible that believer will never grow. This is the dispensation of the The Royal Family of God being aristocracy therefore they must have a Royal Family Honor Code. The Royal Family Honor Code has its Essentials related ONLY to the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine and its Non-Essentials related to the application of that doctrine producing the principle of strength through flexibility. Therefore, for every believer there must be a stabilized position from understanding the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and Retroactive Positional Truth, Current Positional Truth, The Royal Family of God and the Mystery Doctrines of this Church Age. The Royal Family Honor Code has a supernatural means of function. In order for believers to function under it properly and have security and success in doing things which appear to be wrong but in fact are right and to continue to function effectively despite criticism while continuing to be right they must be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. Therefore to function with flexibility in spiritual strength an Essential element is the Rebound Procedure and its consistent use.

Flexibility vs Inflexibility, Essentials vs Non-Essentials and Strength in Life

God's greatest weapons among believers are those who have flexibility. When the believer develops flexibility in life and strength through it he is moving in life into the realm of reality. He is finally able to cope with and face reality. People who are or begin to become inflexible are those who become psychotic, neurotic and sociopathic. Inflexible people inevitably break down under pressure and God often permits Undeserved Suffering in the life of a believer to clearly demonstrate to others, those believers who are strong under these conditions as a result of their flexibility. The thing which fundamentalists generally lack in the Christian Way of Life is flexibility and instead they have inflexibility concerning Non-Essentials, to which they adhere resulting in terrible standards with constant fighting and hatred between them over Non-Essentials. It is only flexibility which brings strength and the GREATEST men of history are always gentlemen and their great capacity for life comes from their flexibility. Christianity is famous today for its inflexibility and Romanism came to this point of inflexibility about the 3rd century and has never recovered and was never able to get the RELIGION out of The Roman Catholic Church. Religion is inflexibility about Non-Essentials and so also is psychosis and neurosis. Therefore it can be deduced that all the problems of life are the result of inflexibility about Non-Essentials. The believer must never become flexible about the Essential of the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine. When he becomes inflexible about Non-Essentials he will always resort to being flexible with regard to the Essentials. THIS IS WEAKNESS.

There never are very many believers of strength in any generation of history who form a pivot of mature believers to support and sustain their nation and their generation in history. Much more is

expected of the mature believer who is the believer who has finally come to the reality of life and is flexible about Non-Essentials and inflexible about Essentials giving him strength, capacity for life, a true sense of responsibility and provides the true sensitivity of Impersonal Love for fulfilling the commands to love the brethren. The Royal Family Honor Code assigns additional duty to these mature believers. Only the mature believer has total grasp of the myriad of Non-Essentials in life. The mature believer, through Metabolized Bible Doctrine, develops sensitivities regarding the feelings of others and becomes very aware of people and where they are sensitive and how they may be offended and what constitutes thoughtfulness, always having good manners and being considerate of others. As this grows and extends a beautiful picture develops and the mature believer takes responsibility for immature believers in the area, in order to ensure that all believers have equality of opportunity to engage in personal Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This emphasizes his flexibility in Non-Essentials and this is GREAT STRENGTH. Therefore, the strongest people are those who can bend without breaking. The stronger the believer the greater the flexibility in his Modus Operandi. However, the greater is his flexibility the more he will be misunderstood. This emphasizes the importance of Impersonal Love for all believers in fulfillment of the Royal Family Honor Code. The mature believer through flexibility in Non-Essentials has therefore become oriented to reality and thus is free from arrogance and hangups, liberated from inordinate ambition, sensitive to the feelings of others, courteous, poised and capable of exercising moral courage in making critical decisions. Therefore for this believer, Circumstances + Bible Doctrine == Malleability, an Essential in the Christian Way of Life.

As inflexibility develops and increases with regard to Non-Essentials the people involved become totally divorced from reality. It is very easy for people who have a boring life or lack Bible Doctrine in the soul to assign importance of the MOST inconsequential trivia and thus become inflexible about Non-Essentials leading to isolation and eventual divorcement from reality. These people can ultimately become sociopathic or psychotic and this is the antithesis of what Bible Doctrine does to the soul of the believer. The more Bible Doctrine the believer has the more focused on reality he can become. Seen from the standpoint of strength through flexibility this may mean backing down in a conflict, despite having the ability to overcome or destroy the antagonist, based on the concept of Essentials vs Non-Essentials. This is also what it means to be Spiritual Aristocracy and once the believer functions under this system, life becomes lucid, clear and plain and he has total confidence that he can do things in different ways based on the consistency of using a principle as the base. Therefore, there must also be Esprit DE Corps in Christianity from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and as the Essential, it requires inflexibility regarding its principles but flexibility in its application to Non-Essentials.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility, Inflexibility & Alertness

It is essential today, beyond what it was many times in 1978 when these lessons were originally taught, to be alert, especially spiritually alert and to be aware of the many doctrines and how they relate to people and also aware of one's relationship to people and the have the ability to be flexible. Alertness allows the individual to differentiate between important and inconsequential interactions

with other people. When someone is trying to kill you, you must destroy them, when someone is trying to insult you, you must ignore them and when they are maligning you, never retaliate. Knowing when to back off, when to kill or when to apologize is critical in the life and the Spiritual Life of every believer. This takes flexibility and flexibility requires total lack of arrogance. Having no arrogance and having nothing to prove to anyone the believer must know when to apologize and back off from confrontations and to use doctrine as a solution. If people think one is cowardly but he knows he is not of what consequence is their opinion. With regard to moral and physical courage the 2021 movie "NOBODY" clearly demonstrates this principle. Being thoughtful of others and being free from arrogance is the 'manly' approach to personal interactions. **Arrogance**, on the other hand, either backs off as a result of cowardice or attacks in arrogance knowing he can destroy his antagonist. This is also to be applied in the spiritual realm so that believers must become alert spiritually for opportunity in encounters and social relationships or in any personal situation for flexible applications from Bible Doctrine indicating that they never have to do the same thing in every situation. This is the awareness that varying situations require varying applications of Bible Doctrine to those situations. It is flexibility and Alertness which clearly indicates to the believer when he is to witness to others and when to shut up.

Believers must learn to concentrate on the teaching of all aspects of Bible Doctrine whether it seems pertinent to their current life situation or NOT. They must be totally alert, focused and concentrating in bible study because every doctrine, principle and all the details of syntax and grammar are essential. Therefore Flexibility is derived from the Essential of Bible Doctrine which then produces Alertness. Considering Alertness in all situations and encounters one must NOTICE what seems out of place, such as occasions when people come to visit your home. Alertness is one of the most important functions in life:

- Know what is going on while you are concentrating on other things
- Always make note of the unusual

Inflexibility in Non-Essentials Destroys Alertness

Alertness results in:

- Thoughtfulness of others
- Being sensitive to the feelings of others
- Going out of one's way to ensure not hurting or causing others to hurt another believer
- Being kind and considerate of others.
- NOT being inconsiderate of others.

Alertness comes from repetition of that which is taught or learned in EVERY FIELD OR SITUATION. Repetition brings things clearly to one's attention and one learns to be alert in every situation by repeatedly performing tasks over and over again. In military leadership functions when a unit advances in battle men are never put in a line to be easily wiped out. In order to lead one must think and retain Alertness to the situation and must repeat over and over techniques and principles needed for tactics and survival. The proper function of an officer should be to stand and move behind his men in order to control them. This is also true in the spiritual realm especially with regard to doctrine which is taught over and over again.

The concept of Alertness was explained by Col. Jeff Cooper:

> It is difficult for the domesticated man to change in an instant into one who can take quick decisive action to meet a violent emergency. (Col. Cooper had probably been in over 100 gunfights all over the world.) We are mostly unused to violent emergencies especially those which can be solved by use of force and violence on our part and these require a superhuman effort of will to transform oneself from docile chicken to ferocious hawk. Decisiveness like Alertness is to some extent a built in characteristic but also like Alertness it can be accentuated. In personal defense situations it must be SELF GENERATED while it is provided by orders in military situations. In disaster we must evaluate our flexibility factor over against inflexibility and determine what is important and what is not important. When the ball drops and we are faced with violent physical assault our life depends on selecting a correct course of action and carrying this through without hesitation or deviation. There can be no pondering or deciding as this is to perish and the course we decide upon is less important than the vigor with which we execute it. The difficulty is determining the proper course of action when under attack and this requires trained reflexes of the soul.

Normal problems and difficulties exist for all of us and we must have the inflexibility of Bible Doctrine producing flexibility for decisions as we face disaster. In combat and the Christian Way of Life some of the most ecstatic and happiest moments of life are moments under pressure and in disaster. Doctrine is the key to having the principles with which to operate instinctively, correctly and instantly in a disaster situation. Alertness plus Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul selects the right instinctive thing to do while having the right attitude about doing it.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential Moral Courage

Part of Moral Courage is having the ability to maintain standards of Impersonal Love without retaliation, retort or any other action requiring the lowering of self to the standards of one's antagonists and it is the ability to NOT attempt to explain self or justify self in any way. Moral courage is MENTAL and is a very RARE characteristic today. Moral courage primarily is seen in the strong believer. Mexicans who have IMMIGRATED to the United States have clearly demonstrated by their military service to the United States of America in the wars of this nation their incredible fanatical courage. Some people have incredible physical courage and it has nothing to do with physical strength or size and they can even have fanatical courage so that the only way to stop them is to kill them and their courage is concentrated and they will push forward until they die. Some of these types of people require emotion as activation and motivation while others require only violation of strongly held principles for their motivation to courageous acts but when it is activated the courage they display is phenomenal. HOWEVER, physical courage is nothing compared to moral courage which always demands high standards, integrity and intelligence. One of Dwight D. Eisenhower's greatest assets was moral courage that allowed him to make decisions despite the consequences. The men and leaders of the United States armies in World War II were not trained as soldiers as were the German leadership but this did not detract from the fact when under the greatest pressure they had something far greater than physical courage. The understanding and analysis of the 1945 American army in Europe has been one of the greatest neglected aspects of the

expounded history of the United States of America. It takes far greater moral courage to command an army when you are not a genius than when you are a genius. Military stability lies in leadership having MORAL COURAGE and even George Washington was not a genius nor were Generals Pershing nor Grant but all had great moral courage, however, Robert E. Lee was a great military genius with the greatest moral courage. Thomas Jonathan 'Stonewall' Jackson had the most fanatical moral courage of any military officer in history and gave no sign of being genius but of being a person who studied more than any other.

The person who makes it in the Christian Way of Life always has moral courage which is one of the greatest assets of the thinking ability of the soul. Physical courage is most often emotional so that when this person runs out of emotion they then often display cowardice. Physical courage is often admired and respected but many of these individuals who display physical courage do not possess the moral courage Essential for leadership. People who have physical courage often judge things by what they see and can often be the most obnoxious people and are never able to learn the greatness of leadership and what is required to lead with moral courage. Too many people in military functions have been promoted because of physical courage and they are very dangerous leaders and their physical courage is assumed to be HONOR, INTEGRITY and GREATNESS and it is not that at all. Many people who exhibit great physical courage have hangups which can destroy them and their only hope is to add moral courage to their physical courage, and this takes proper thinking from proper information.

This is what believers ought to be considering as they approach Bible Doctrine. Having moral courage does NOT in any way not take away from the great physical courage displayed by many of our men at arms over our 240+ years of history. When functioning under the principles and concepts of moral courage, which is far more demanding than physical courage, the individual has imagination and can see the potential of the alternatives of what could possibly happen as a result of different decisions and he must over come the potential these alternatives raise for disaster in his soul. In physical courage the individual generally has no imagination and no thought of the alternative potential problems but sheer fanatical concentration on the objective to be overcome stimulated most often by emotion. These concepts emphasize what makes a mature believer strong in life based on his focus on Bible Doctrine. Moral courage is not something one is born with but it must be acquired from development of integrity in life for both the believer and unbeliever and more so through Metabolized Bible Doctrine for the believer. Moral courage is one of the greatest assets in life because it is in effect the Relaxed Mental Attitude resulting from the consistent use of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories). This is what the immature believer cannot understand since he has not acquired enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine to have reached this point of function with the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories).

Principles & Essentials of Courage

Battle or Physical Courage in fighting for your country or your loved ones is subservient to Moral Courage. Moral Courage is making decisions which you must stick by despite the condemnation or criticism from others. This is the emphasized in the Royal Family Honor Code and is an issue in the function of the Church Age believer. Physical and Battle courage cannot ever compare to the flexibility and strength required of and found in moral courage. (**John 15:12-13**) Risking one's life

for others in Personal Love or Impersonal Love is a strong example of the principle of moral courage. This is flexibility in the application of the Royal Family Honor Code with strength.

Flexibility is a great thing when there is also discipline and courage which is truly great if it is moral courage because moral courage always functions based on thought rather than emotion and thus is always extremely flexible. Too many believers think they understand everything about life and the Christian Way of Life and they learn a bit of Bible Doctrine and then become inflexible about applying the little doctrine they have learned. There is so much Bible Doctrine to learn and apply that it demands that believers be inflexible about the Essential Bible Doctrine but totally flexible about the application of that doctrine. This results in total flexibility about Non-Essentials which is never a compromising attitude. Very often people mistake courage without flexibility for leadership and greatness but this is emotion controlling the soul and takes physical battle courage into an inflexible system and converts the virtue of courage into a very dangerous situation. No matter what the virtue may be, if it connects to inflexibility regarding Non-Essentials the virtue will be destroyed. There is time or circumstances in which to be serious and time or circumstances in which to relax and believers must know the difference. When pressure comes into the life of the believer if he is so intense that he cannot think he will self destruct. Many people have the potential of becoming cowards when in the physical combat of battle so that it is necessary to have someone around them with battle courage but who can also think. If one takes battle courage as a virtue and adds inflexibility or emotionalism to it, it will be destroyed and this person will lead people to their deaths.

Clearly the major difference between greatness and failure is having flexibility about Non-Essentials. This is not spinelessness, cowardice or compromise but only flexibility regarding the Non-Essentials of life. When the believer has made doctrine his Essential it is very difficult for him to fall into this trap of inflexibility about Non-Essentials. Thomas Johnathan Jackson was the one with the greatest record in our military history because he was a man of Doctrine. Another great man in our history was Nathan Forrest who was not a believer until after the war but was a man of great common sense. By becoming inflexible about Non-Essentials the believer will ultimately destroy himself. Believers must never be inflexible about such Non-Essential things as *money, a new car, health, home*, etc., because if any of these are taken from them, they will self destruct because of their emotions and will be crying over Non-Essentials. The principle is that *Essentials are ONLY Bible Doctrine* and ALL of the Non-Essentials are provided by the Essentials through imputations from God. Losing one's job, boy friend, home, etc., are Non-Essentials and must never cause reaction and the believer must be cognizant that all these things were provided by God and can be replaced by him.

Essential of Moral & Physical Courage

The person who is correct in what he is doing and does not veer right nor left and keeps going ahead to his objective is attacked from both sides but Metabolized Bible Doctrine keeps him going in the right direction. This is the strong mature believer who is misunderstood, maligned and ridiculed often finding self alone and isolated, with few friends and few who understand that his moral courage is strength which is demonstrated by the fact that he never even tries to defend self. By and large believers fail to recognize that no believer ever need defend self to others because all believers are here by the grace of God and not because any person or group approves of them! What others think, say or do with regard to any believer is of absolutely no real consequence and

The Lord Jesus, The Christ can remove him or them at any time OR sustain him in his position indefinitely. Believers must not ever concern themselves with what anyone thinks about them and especially when they are the subject of intense maligning because they will receive greater and greater blessing from God. Therefore, there is never any need to defend self to others for any reason and the believer's greatest effort must be to live life as unto the Lord only. In effect the believe need only justify self to the Lord and this simply requires consistent use of the **rebound procedure**. The total loyalty of the believer must be directed to the Lord and the absolute truth of Bible Doctrine and nothing else. Weakness in the believer causes him to get involved in the Non-Essentials of life but strength and moral courage in the mature believer avoids this.

When faced with a controversy involving Non-Essential things, backing off from confrontation does not indicate disloyalty nor weakness. Believers must never get side tracked from Bible Doctrine by any social or spiritual Non-Essential concept. As long as the believer stays on the yellow brick road of Bible Doctrine he can say NO to the false doctrines of all other organizations with impunity. Saying NO to false concepts is Moral courage where there exists great flexibility whereas physical courage very often has NO flexibility at all. This does not depreciate physical courage and the worst imaginable thing to have in one's life is physical cowardice. However, many times physical courage is nothing more than stupidity, imbecility, dumbness or emotionalism. In the comparisons of Moral courage vs moral cowardice both require thinking while in comparing physical courage to physical cowardice no thinking is involved and in both those involved are just doing something most often based on some emotion. Physical cowardice usually presents itself when the person fears getting hurt or dying. Moral cowardice ponders what could occur in any situation or confrontation and therefore tries find solutions to avoid those ramifications. Physical courage says to hell with thinking about the problems or consequences JUST DO IT! Moral courage understands all the potential dangers and devastating possibilities involved and that decisions must be made which may cost great injuries or many lives but that individual, nevertheless, takes the responsibility for each and every decision. A person with great Moral courage does not lack physical courage when it is needed. In most situations Physical courage is generally associated with violence while Moral courage generally disassociates itself from violence except when professionally required. This is what occurs when in charge of and running an army, the commanding officer must have the courage to make decisions which may cost others their lives and then take responsibility for those decisions. At times we may be tempted to solve things by violence when violence most often will in fact only increase the problem. Moral courage understands and stands by the idea that there is a time when there should be no violence because it will not solve problems and above all else this person must be too smart to get involved in violence which is anti-establishment. In displays of Moral Courage, many people often back off from violence because they are smart and see all the issues and alternative solutions.

Believers always must have the moral courage to NOT take a stand on Non-Essentials in life and still be totally inflexible with regard to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the primary Essential in life. The strong mature believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul lives under the Royal Family Honor Code and will therefore ultimately develop strong moral courage. It takes more moral courage to function in business under free enterprise than it does under government regulations of business. American free enterprise capitalism is one of the greatest systems of moral courage in the world. The genius of American free enterprise supplied ALL the weapons by which the Russians, British, French and

Americans defeated the Nazis in WWII. Unfortunately these men of business leadership are no longer with us and they and those like them have been suppressed by EVIL governmental policies and federal bureaucracies. There is no courage at all in government regulation and government bureaucracy nor in unionism and it is ALL IMMORAL and when unions go on strike to usurp the prerogative of management the strike is ALWAYS immoral, criminal and EVIL. A person has the right to quit a job if they don't like what the company requires of them and let another person take his place. Unionism never started great industries nor started businesses and never takes the risks that are needed to do so. Bureaucracies and Unionism rob a person of their ability to live in life with moral courage. Weak immature believers may have physical courage as a result of emotional highs but simply cannot handle life because they do not have the moral courage and flexibility for application to take a stand by not taking a stand. Every person has a right to do or not do anything he wants in life **as long as he does not make it a public issue** and try to apply his opinions to the lives of anyone else.

Flexibility, Essentials & Moral Courage

It takes greater character and greatness in every way to have moral courage than it does to have physical courage. This characteristic is required in Law Enforcement since the 60's because the local police in every large city must use incredible moral courage to overcome the resentment directed at them. Next to this is the military officer during combat. For the first time in our history MORAL courage absolutely MUST precede physical courage. Douglas MacArthur was more faithful to his oath than any other man in all of United States history. He was faced with more pressures, difficulties and Evil politics than any other person. During the Courts Martial for Billy Mitchel he was the only negative vote for Mitchel despite all the *media* pressure to convict him. Moral courage is required on very high levels of function and many times our military services have almost been wiped out because men of physical courage moved to the top but had no moral courage. As believers we must have moral courage to NOT take a stand on Non-Essentials in life and be totally inflexible with regard to the Essential of consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The strong mature believer with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul lives under the Royal Family Honor Code and must exercise moral courage constantly.

Moral courage requires Inflexibility with regard to Essentials and total flexibility and innovation with regard to Non-Essentials. As did Dwight Eisenhower, believers must develop a background of flexibility with regard to the application of Essentials to Non-Essentials and inflexibility with regard to the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. They must avoid what is demonstrated by all immature believers in their pettiness, insecurity, vindictiveness etc. The most important character strength to be developed by the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the Moral Courage to remain inflexible with regard to the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and flexible with regard to its myriad of varied applications. They must, at all costs, avoid vacillation in all areas of life but always remain flexible with regard to applications in life. The more one advances in the Spiritual Life the more flexibility he will develop with regard to applications of Bible Doctrine to circumstances and situations and the more inflexible he will become with regard to Essential Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment principles. Believers must avoid getting their 'eyes' or focus on people and what they do and never be discouraged by

their own failures but consistently take in Bible Doctrine as Priority #1 in life and continue to advance in the Spiritual Life.

Flexibility & Leadership

George S. Patton was a man of great flexibility, as was Dwight D. Eisenhower and Douglas MacArthur and the underlying leadership and moral courage of Eisenhower has never been understood by most students of history. There is ONLY one country in western Europe who loves and tolerated the craziness of Americans in World War II, that is Luxembourg. There is a fantastically organized military cemetery there with George S. Patton buried at its head in front of all those who had died there liberating Luxembourg. (**Luxembourg WWII Cemetery**, **Luxembourg Military Cemetery**) This is a cemetery where the citizens of Luxembourg designed this cemetery for honoring of the American soldiers of that war.

With regard to leadership qualities, the concept of greatness lies in the ability to take inflexible principles and see flexible applications. This is the unknown source of greatness in leadership in life. In the war between Texas and Mexico in the Alamo battle, and others as well, both Americans and Mexicans had great physical battle courage but the difficulty for the Mexicans was that their leadership in that war was very poor in Santa Anna. At the end of World War II the American commanders had been phenomenal and we know about the pacific leadership of Douglas MacArthur but some of those who served in Europe were incredible as well including George S. Patton and George Pero who successfully led some of the largest armies in history. None of these had anything to say about the overall strategy of the war but their leadership was incredible because of their flexibility when facing the enemy.

Flexibility, Inflexibility & Courage

The greatest character a military man can have is flexibility along with great Moral Courage. The idea is to decide one's own course and carry it out with flexibility under the overall function of strong moral courage. However, virtue without flexibility is legalism and dishonoring to the Lord. Article: **Conservative Digest, Aug 1978, Solzhenitsyn Speech at Harvard University**, "American Status" There has been and is an ongoing loss of courage throughout the whole of western civilization which is greatest among the rulers and intellectual elite. Here is a short excerpt from this speech of 1978:

> A decline in courage may be the most striking feature which an outside observer notices in the West in our days. The Western world has lost its civil courage, both as a whole and separately, in each country, each government, each political party, and, of course, in the United Nations. Such a decline in courage is particularly noticeable among the ruling groups and the intellectual elite, causing an impression of loss of courage by the entire society. Of course, there are many courageous individuals, but they have no determining influence on public life.
>
> Political and intellectual bureaucrats show depression, passivity, and perplexity in their actions and in their statements, and even more so in theoretical reflections to explain how realistic, reasonable, as well as intellectually and even morally worn it is to base state policies on weakness and cowardice. And decline in courage is ironically emphasized by occasional

> explosions of anger and inflexibility on the part of the same bureaucrats when dealing with weak governments and with countries not supported by anyone, or with currents which cannot offer any resistance. But they get tongue-tied and paralyzed when they deal with powerful governments and threatening forces, with aggressors and international terrorists.
>
> Should one point out that from ancient times declining courage has been considered the beginning of the end?
>
> When the modern Western states were created, the principle was proclaimed that governments are meant to serve man and man lives to be free and to pursue happiness. See, for example, the American Declaration of Independence. Now, at last, during past decades, technical and social progress has permitted the realization of such aspirations: the welfare state.

Moral courage is one of the greatest virtues in life and western civilizations have lacked this for over 75 years (before 1943). Western society has given itself the organization best suited for its purposes based on the letter of the law and the limits of human rights and righteousness are determined by these laws. But the people in the west have gained great skill in interpreting these laws and **MANIPULATING** them even though they are too complicated for them to understand. Conflict is solved according to the letter of the law and this is considered the supreme solution and nothing more is required if one is right *from the legal point of view* and no one may ever mention that one could still be not entirely right and should exercise self restraint, (Right + Wrong == Wrong). Especially today no one ever sees voluntary self restraint (what is required of the mature believer) as a viable solution or function but everyone operates at the extreme limits of the legal framework. This is clearly demonstrated when large companies purchase a new invention in order to prevent its development and use because of the competition it would bring or when food companies add poisons to food to keep them from spoiling despite the potential dangers to people. Life when organized legalistically has shown its inability to defend itself against the corrosiveness of EVIL. In the United States of America legal claims are brought frequently enough to encourage the maintaining of freedom but concerning the prosecution of those committing crimes the culprit committing crimes can often achieve undeserved leniency as a result of legal manipulations. When the government goes earnestly against crime or terrorism the public accuses it of violating the criminal's or terrorist's human rights. Although the best social systems are in fact found in the west there is considerable crime, even more so than that found in the former pauper society of the Soviet Union. As clearly demonstrated in the 21st century, journalists are not held to any standard of reporting and have no responsibility to report truth and usually bias their reporting in order to guide or form a desired public opinion to support some agenda or for the purpose of deceiving or manipulating government with such false reporting. No longer does the press ever engage in, in depth analysis of any problem but it focus' on and stops with sensational formula and therefore the press has become the most powerful propaganda system in western countries. With the monopolizing of the media by 6 or 7 major companies in this 21st century we have clearly seen this prophetical interpretation of history come to reality.

Flexibility is what Americans do not have today, they lack MORAL courage which has almost totally disappeared from American thinking and action. In the Old Testament Scripture times there were great periods of moral courage in Jewish history and even among gentiles. For believers in this Church Age Moral courage is a part of the Essential Doctrine of the Royal Family Honor Code. With maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer can stand up to anything and maintain sanity, poise and moral courage under any pressure of life. (**Is 11:10**, **Rom 15:11-12**)

Physical Courage

It is possible to take this good characteristic and make it a source of inflexibility in life. For the believer there must be flexible moral courage rather than lack of imagination and stupid physical courage. Many individuals who have displayed great courage in difficult situations, especially in battle, produced it because they were stupid, self centered or inflexible. Staunch Inflexibility is often regarded as strength and many a person totally divorced from reality has said "Stand Fast" but have done so from stupidity, anger, lack of imagination, stubbornness, etc., appearing virtuous when it in fact they are not but many people will follow this type of courage. Flexible Courage is always based on strong Moral Courage. A historical account of such courage is recorded in the actions of Captain C. H. Upton of the 20th New Zealand Military forces who received the Victoria Cross 2x. He demonstrated such flexible moral courage and strong physical courage in his defense of Malemea Airport and during the attack on Rubisot Ridge. Inflexible Courage emphasizes stupidity and arrogance as demonstrated by Marshal Ne of Napoleon's Command. This General Officer had great battle courage but was extremely emotional and even the greatest battle courage most often DOES NOT produce good leadership function especially when it is fueled by emotion. Flexibility with regard to courageous actions is a great thing when there is discipline associated with them. This courage can be truly great if it is backed by strong moral courage because moral courage always thinks and analyzes and is therefore flexible. This results in total flexibility about Non-Essentials, which is a never compromising attitude and only the stupid think of it in terms of compromise.

The Apostle Paul wanted to go back to correct his guilt for killing so many original believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and this made Paul inflexible in this Non-Essential. MacArthur, Patton nor Eisenhower were never Judas Goat leaders and never did they ever lead men to their inordinate deaths. These 3 men were flexible in all their commands to the end and led the United States to victory in many instances in World War II. General Dwight D. Eisenhower is the most unheralded man of United States Military History and in this respect his only comparable colleague was General Thomas Johnathan Jackson. Even Robert E. Lee was very flexible as long as Jackson was alive. Jackson never once lost flexibility and was only inflexible when dealing with insubordinate men and this was in fact totally correct. Nathan Bedford Forrest was one if the greatest soldiers to go through the Civil War being totally flexible and he is still being studied by all military schools in Europe and he himself had no formal military training. The difference between greatness and failure in any area or endeavor in life is having flexibility about Non-Essentials. Being inflexible about Non-Essentials destroys one's virtue. The only Essentials in life are Bible Doctrine for the believer and even the Unbeliever in the form of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

Inflexibility, Cowardice vs Concentration

Everyone has some area where they would be a coward and this is based on the fact that everyone has an Old Sin Nature. Every individual having the Old Sin Nature has very different areas of sin so that many times one persons sin is another's Self Righteousness. In this manner, everyone has some area where they are afraid and there is nothing wrong with that but what is wrong is BECOMING EMOTIONAL WHEN FEAR OCCURS. Fear must be met by being rational not emotional and the primary way to be rational is to have the ability to CONCENTRATE and apply whatever stabilizing factors one has learned. Another way to deal with fear is to be able to work through a set of protocol procedures like the British military during the Indian Mutiny. Each believer has a chance to practice courage every day by concentration on Bible Doctrine to handle and overcome all pressure situations in life. The individual can only learn by concentration on a subject but the real test of learning and concentration is when a subject has to be learned which is of no interest or apparent value to the student. Having to learn undesirable things is very important in development of effective behavior, thought patterns and functions when faced with disaster. This is why the military finally discovered close order drill. It is the greatest protocol system for instinctive obedience and concentration on what is to be done rather than what the enemy may be doing. To be concentrating on what the enemy is doing when they are shooting at you results in fear, to concentrate on what you are doing when shooting at them is courage. In pressure and disaster courage concentrates on what you are doing, while FEAR concentrates on what is being done to you.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential of Historical Crises

Historical crises are designed as great vacuum cleaners which function to move through the world and Human History to remove the garbage and scum of the Human Race. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls human history and in many cases he creates a crisis which absolutely completely destroys the scum of this earth. Man under his pseudo religion of humanism, with his false concept of the nobility of man, which ignores the fact of the existence of the Old Sin Nature and the total depravity of man, tries to do all he can to help the less fortunate by trying to keep the scum in society alive in order to assuage his guilt for his prosperity. God has known from Eternity Past that in Human History if there is too much cancerous human scum and human garbage on the earth the Human Race will self destruct and as a result the Angelic Conflict will not be able to move to its proper conclusion. When government will not execute its scum in the criminal elements and when the government caters to the lazy good for nothing entitlement scum with welfare state functions it is Essential for a historical crisis to occur from God to do what man will not. Today, in this 21st century, sooner rather than later this country will know something of the true horrors of violence and the evils of marxism and communism and the terrible things to be faced in this coming historical crisis. In the United States of America by diligence, hard work and confiscation of the individual's money as property in taxation, communism in Russia and China has not only been saved, promoted, authorized and tolerated by this government, but this is now extended to the incredible evil of islam when all of these should have been and, as shown by historical fact, COULD HAVE BEEN, totally destroyed. The idea of "third world countries" a concept built up by Mao Tse Tung to be used for communist conquest, talks about the down trodden people of the world. The imbecilic United States federal

government has taken hard earned tax money and thrown it into the sewers of these 'third world countries' and in essence given it directly to communist regimes.

Since the United States has failed to go to war to clarify these issues and failed to fight diligently for freedom in this and these other nations, this country has become a soft, weak, imbecilic nation in both its foreign and domestic policies. As a result we have the greatest overwhelming ingredients for an internal historical detonation. When this crisis explodes in this country, and it is NOW at the ignition point today, it will shake the nation and the whole world to the core. As a result of the complacency, apathy and selfish concentration, both individually and collectively in the United States, on the Non-Essentials of life this critical shake up is definitely warranted. Believers in this period of the Church Age MUST recall their priorities in life and restore the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine as their primary Priority #1 in life. For those mature believers with the proper priorities and maximum spiritual growth it will be a time to see God work historical miracles on their behalf. This will be for their deliverance in the most dangerous possible situations and for them to understand the reality and meaning of the wall of fire which surrounds believers. Some believers who fail and fall into reversionism will be removed by the Sin Unto Death and the process of this occurring may be extremely shocking. Today, believers MUST know that the storm is coming and they must take every opportunity to take in Bible Doctrine as much as possible so that when this crisis hits they will have accumulated adequate resources in their souls to weather it. In the United States when this crisis comes it will be a greater shock than when the British invaded and tried to suppress the development of the United States of America. The war for Southern Independence was not a war of invasion but one to demonstrate the fact that the United States constitution was being ignored by the sitting president, Abraham Lincoln. In this light is is obvious that all our problems at that time and TODAY could easily be solved by proper application of its basic principles. There is a great difference between having a Yankee or Confederate soldier in your yard and having a communist or jihadist moving through there to destroy you. There will be no hesitation by the communists including our present self proclaimed marxists or islamic jihadists with regard to rape, robbery, torture and killing those whom they encounter or conquer. Both will perfectly demonstrate the result of rejection of the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and Bible Doctrine and the resultant total depravity of thinking as the consequence. Their thoughts are that all people are simply animals and are to be used for whatever purpose they see fit. Those who are advancing in the Spiritual Life will be prepared and preserved in or through such a crisis. Those who are not advancing will be able to understand the Sin Unto Death in their personal life because of rejection of Bible Doctrine. The only thing which will count in this coming crisis is the accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the believer's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Essential Bible Doctrine for Crises in History

No matter how great or extensive the pressures or disasters of life no matter what tragedies may strike in life believers have the only answer which is available, accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. There is no one in politics nor any organization which can be supported or joined which can solve the problems which will occur in our future. The objective, as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, has not changed and will not change due to any disaster in Human History since even before Abraham, Moses, Jeremiah, David or others in the history of the Old Testament Scripture. This objective of the believer is to take in Bible Doctrine to a maximum level to achieve Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Believers must become the

recipient of the 5th and 6th imputations of blessing in time, Historical and Heritage Impact, and be prepared to stand in the gap during crises in any way that the Lord commands. Every person, every believer has personal difficulties, problems, tragedies and heartaches in life and because they are personal in nature they should not cry nor make overt displays regarding them but carry the burden of them by means of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) in the way prescribed by the Lord. Believers should not complain nor gripe about personal situations and difficulties and not moan and groan about how tough life is and should never mention such ludicrous concepts as bad luck, misfortune, etc. Believers MUST go on consistently and persistently using the time given them as breathing space to accumulate maximum Bible Doctrine in the soul and face personal problems by the use of that Doctrine. Doctrine must be brought into their lives in a personal way in order that they become inflexible with regard to the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and totally flexible with regard to the applications to Non-Essentials. Believers must recognize that the time we have in relative peace or tranquility, outside of the major crises, must be used to prepare for something bigger so that the coming crisis, no matter how big or devastating, will find us prepared. Bible Doctrine must be given first priority and allowed to demonstrate how it gives the ability to cope with life, its disasters, even death. Metabolized Bible Doctrine gives the ability to face any situation of difficulty and to meet it head on with that Doctrine and overcome it.

Believers under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine have greater capacity for life because of Doctrine and as a result have a great and wonderful life. It is a simple matter with Bible Doctrine to be content with what we have and to be either abased or abound and handle both with the simplicity of Sharing the Happiness of God, Problem Solving Device #9. In this early 21st century the United States is far past its time of tranquility and is in fact, on the cusp of a great national, historical disaster, yet believers can still have a totally Relaxed Mental Attitude based on the principle of happiness, blessing and capacity for life found in Bible Doctrine. The greatest happinesses in life comes to believers through knowledge of the blessings to be received as part of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the realization that these come directly from the Lord and that one has no part in acquiring them. During these moments of stimulation in adversity or disaster, seeing the failing of this nation, believers very often fail to realize that the happiest moments are still in their future and cannot and will not ever be destroyed by any tragedy or disaster when we reach eternity. In this life believers can expect to be happy today and to have tragedies or pressures to deal with tomorrow BUT also to have the doctrine and capacity to enable them to do so.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility vs Inflexibility & The Crisis Personality:

To develop a crisis personality there must be Inflexibility regarding Essentials in life and flexibility regarding non Essentials. The crisis personality consists of having the ability to establish, from Bible Doctrine, priorities and to categorize them into Essentials and Non-Essentials and then be consistent in functioning with Inflexibility regarding the Essentials and flexibility regarding the Non-Essentials. This is the historical basis for the United States of America having been established so that as long as the constitution was followed guiding our national life and our government was INFLEXIBLE

regarding it, the nation had the tremendous measure of freedom which manifested itself in great national prosperity and the phenomenal GI soldier of World War II. Once the nation and its policies became flexible with regard to the constitution it began to be and has since then been completely saturated with one national disaster after another.

Book: John Tolan, "Battle, the Story of the Bulge". American military doctrine is and always has been to ADVANCE, however in 2 of the most recent wars we simply discarded this doctrine and chose under the erroneous guidance of politicians to simply HOLD in place, which we did and which resulted in failure in both Korea and Vietnam. Believers of today, living in the United States of America, have the greatest opportunity to become a forged weapon in the hands of the Lord, a crisis personality, for the future whether it is a collective situation or individual situation of adversity or disaster. One of the overriding objectives of Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God is to develop in many different personalities with their many different attitudes and different scale of values, the crisis personality. Being in the Plan of God as believers in or near Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, in the present or the very near future, there will be many crises such as have occurred and are occurring in Ferguson MI, Baltimore MD, Portland OR, etc., and there will be others along with greater and greater historical pressures and **propagandizing** so that many have already fallen into believing the lies of a totally Evil governmental regime. Many believers even have come to accept the fact that the Evil satanic policy which saturates the United States of America today is part of being Christian. The only clarification which can be derived concerning these things if from consistent, persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The unsung hero's of today are the believers who develop the crisis personality and who, alone or with others, are totally consistent and persistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine so that they are flexible and can learn quickly and adapt quickly to circumstances and either learn the easy way or the hard way but ultimately join into the Plan of God to fight against Evil.

Essentials & The Crisis Personality

The Crisis Personality is the strong or mature believer who is totally oriented to reality as a result of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Common sense is the ability to reason and think in the pressure of the reality of a situation. The mature believer as a crisis personality has Bible Doctrine and common sense and therefore the ability to think under pressure. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul prepares the mature believer for the crisis situations of life. Just as good training prepares one to prevail in a game or in combat, so also extra training prepares for a crisis in any game or combat situation. So, Bible Doctrine prepares the believer for the game of reality with its disasters and pressures of the crises in the circumstances of life. By consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the believer develops Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and as a result, regardless of whatever personality he happens to have, he becomes able to handle the pressures and disasters of life. This is the personality of the individual who can handle the pressures of life and any situation which comes his way whether it is adverse or prosperous. These are handled by the crisis personality without his being divorced from reality where divorcement from reality inevitably results in the development of sociopathic, psychopathic or neurotic dysfunctions. Therefore the crisis personality is the strong, mature believer who is inflexible regarding the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and totally flexible regarding Non-Essentials in the application of that doctrine to the crisis.

It is the flexibility regarding Non-Essentials and the application of Bible Doctrine to Non-Essentials which gives orientation to life. In the life of the strong, mature believer with the crisis personality all high priorities in life are assigned to the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and the use of Bible Doctrine in developing his Norms and Standards. In this way the crisis personality combines inflexibility regarding Essential doctrines with flexibility regarding application to Non-Essentials. The crisis personality does not follow nor fit into any overt set pattern or mold but is always characterized by having accumulated maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is one who can cope with any disaster of life, either personal or historical. The crisis personality is therefore the strong or mature believer with emphasis in his life on prevailing under Undeserved Suffering beginning with Providential Preventative Suffering moving into Momentum Testing (4 Categories) in 2 stages, and culminating his Spiritual Life with Evidence Testing (2 Categories). Any historical or personal crisis gives the strong or mature believer the GREATER OPPORTUNITY to apply Bible Doctrine to the reality of the situation demonstrating the total adequacy of divine provision for the believer living in the Devil's world of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Therefore the imputation of great blessing to the mature believer includes Undeserved Suffering which serves to demonstrate the dynamics of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and labels the strong believer as the crisis personality. The personality of this individual believer may be shy or boisterous but always has 2 factors above all else, Common Sense and the ability to Think Under Pressure from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Essential of Concentration

The principle of concentration is part of the Essential system of **Operation Z** the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** for learning Bible Doctrine. Believers never learn Bible Doctrine by simply sitting in bible class but by sitting in bible class and CONCENTRATING on what is being taught. The one who is concentrating takes in Bible Doctrine and under Positive Volition converts it to (gr) Epignosis knowledge so that in any time of pressure the same concentration applies from his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the pressure situation. The secret to courage in overcoming pressure as in combat is the ability to concentrate under pressure. No one goes into a battle being brave or being a coward but only after the battle begins it is found that those who can concentrate and those who cannot are actually distinguished one from another. The real hero in any crisis is not the one who does the unusual physical feat but the one who does his job very well under pressure because he can think and concentrate and handle it in abnormal times just as he does in normal times. Many true military heroes are not those who did the unusual or extraordinary but those who did their job as usual in the extreme pressure situations of battle.

Hero Personality

There is no such thing as a 'hero' personality and believers must never try to emulate the personality of one proclaimed a hero. Individuals are heroes because of what is in their soul and their ability to take what is there and apply it to the pressure or disaster and use it to cope with and excel in the situation. In these individuals what is most admirable is the content of their soul. In some cases of those proclaimed to be Heroes there is nothing in the soul and in others there is a great storage of Bible Doctrine. This stored up Bible Doctrine, which, when there is no combat or crisis situation, is used and expressed in humor, common sense and understanding completely and thoroughly what reality is and never losing track of reality. Because of flexibility with regard to the

Non-Essentials and the sense of humor which results, this believer is able to handle every difficulty, tragedy or disaster of life whether personal or historical. Since a great many people today are divorced from reality believers must face the fact that the only hope to overcome crises in life is to acquire a maximum of Bible Doctrine and ride into reality with it.

Hero worship has had an incredible influence on the Norms and Standards of our society and people tend to think, say and do what they imagine their hero would do. When believers get to the point of understanding the difference between weak immature and strong mature believers they will leave the ideas found in HERO thinking behind. All believers must learn doctrine and develop their own Norms and Standards from that doctrine and have the **moral courage** to stick with those and use them in every situation in life. Our society has completely lost moral courage, poise and professionalism because everyone has a hero worship syndrome and thinks in terms of loving everyone in their periphery. It is perfectly fine to admire people and their accomplishments in life but they must never be the basis for building personal Norms and Standards. This is why many people fawn over entertainers and don't realize that entertainers, especially those who are very successful, have a great ability to imitate or pretend to be others and are, in many cases, psychopathic personalities. They become famous because they are very good at pretending to be someone they are not and they are good at entertaining others but in reality they are good at nothing else.

Our Crises

The world and the United States of America in particular face in this 21st century a level of crises which demands of every believer every bit of Bible Doctrine which has been accumulated in life and the realization that flexibility in Non-Essentials is in fact extremely important. There is no problem in this life too great for the mature believer who has his priorities right and related to Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. Being inflexible with regard to the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and totally flexible about all other aspects of life, the Non-Essentials, gives this mature believer great stability. It is the flexibility with regard to the Non-Essentials of life which provides excellent orientation to life. Therefore, until the believer becomes flexible about Non-Essentials in life he never can orient to life or reality and it becomes impossible to function under the clear and rational thinking called common sense. In life all high priorities must be assigned to Essentials which for the believer must begin with Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and consistent application of Bible Doctrine from the Norms and Standards of the conscience. Therefore, the strong believer demonstrates the principle, "If God does not promote you, you are not promoted". However, if any attitude of contempt persists in the strong believer it will ultimately destroy the crisis personality in him.

In our time believers should have been in training all of their Christian lives for the crisis which the United States is teetering on in this 21st century. Some will not make it through because of personal subjectivity and **arrogance**. Believers very often make to much of an issue of self than they ever have a right to. However, believers are not expected to be self effacing but must see self in the mirror of Bible Doctrine which is supposed to be saturating their souls rather than the complements and attention they receive from others. Those who are sleeping through life must eventually wake up and shed their arrogant hangups and not continue to overrate their personal qualities and abilities. Now in the beginning of this 21st century the United States faces a crisis which demands

every bit of Bible Doctrine the believers have accumulated in life and they must realize that flexibility in Non-Essentials is of the utmost importance. As the believer matures in the Spiritual Life he must avoid making an issue of Non-Essentials but remain totally inflexible about bible doctrine. Mature believers MUST know that whether the country is invaded by Russian or Chinese communists or our economy collapses or moslems take over everything instilling sharia law, or any other destructive situation to the freedom of this country, The God will provide everything that is needed under the principle and function of Logistical Grace and that their future as Jeshurun depends ONLY on The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History.

Mature Believers as the Crisis Personality

Mature believers have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and moved from the **X** radical of the **Equation of Hope** Plan of God to the **Z** radical and are receiving blessing and prosperity from the Justice of God. They function under the **Royal Family Honor Code** and fulfill it being able to rightly divide Bible Doctrine and thus know when people are functioning as priests or as ambassadors, AND the differences. They are able to use personal vs Impersonal Love and Essentials vs Non-Essentials and are very flexible resulting in great strength being able to be correct much of the time and still back off from confrontation and apologize thus being right again. These mature believers have great success and maximum blessing from the Justice of God and by functioning under the Royal Family Honor Code also protect self from the potential arrogance of prosperity from the blessings they receive in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Strength through flexibility in Non-Essentials results from being a gentleman and courteous, having manners, good eating habits and involves structure in the soul from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which gives concentrated systematic theology saturating the soul and inevitably results in 6 categories of blessing in time. When the believer bases his functions in life on an understanding and adherence to a systematic theology then eternity becomes reality. Along the lines of 'afortiori' logic, this thinking emphasizes that believers all receive that which was a greater difficulty for God to accomplish in the provision of their salvation potential so that the provision of the 6 categories of blessing given the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is logically much less difficult for God to accomplish. This makes eternity very real to the thinking of this mature believer. The systematic theological structure of Bible Doctrine clearly demonstrates to us that blessing in time ***WILL*** become blessing in eternity.

When the infant believer first learns of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) he learns to grab a burst from scripture and use it and relate it to present problems or difficulties in life. When he becomes a mature believer he is flexible and thinks in terms of taking a whole section out of the systematic structure of bible doctrine he knows and use this to destroy the impact of any problem he may be facing so that it is never a distraction to his spiritual advance. This is also the believer who has maximum production from his ambassadorship and does not ever confuse this as a means of or reason for his blessing from God. This is the one who is a Crisis Personality and thus is tactically oriented to reality and can take any area of Bible Doctrine from his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul + his Norms and Standards and face any situation in life and truly KNOW, as a result of being totally conscious and aware of the divine provision which comes from Logistical Grace that he has true security. The crisis personality combines flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials and inflexibility with regard to Bible Doctrine and its principles. This personality always, in situations of adversity or

prosperity, draws on inner resources of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that when he is facing a historical crisis his first question is:

- Does God intend for me to live or not?

He then recognizes that if he is still alive after the 'big blast' or crisis has occurred then the appropriate, in fact the ONLY, conclusion which is possible is that God still has a purpose for his life and having no food, water or shelter is inconsequential because as a result of the use of his ingenuity and wisdom and that which God has provided, being still alive, he can survive. He knows that this **WILL** occur because the fact of just being alive means unequivocally that **GOD HAS A PLAN FOR HIS LIFE and IS REQUIRED TO PROVIDE FOR HIS LOGISTICAL SUPPORT**. In any crisis mature believers must remember that God will carry them through or NOT and if NOT they will then be face to face with him. If HE CARRIES THEM THROUGH IT, they will be prepared for His Plan ONLY IF they have the invaluable resources of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and nothing else is ever necessary. All the intricate preparations which people make for disaster are incidental or accidental and are in fact inconsequential with regard to their survival. For the mature believer who is a crisis personality there is no substitute for Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and they are in fact designed for this by being born again as a result of having made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Essential of Being Alone

If there is one thing which is not needed to be successful in the Christian Way of Life today it is Publicity. People, often inconsequential people, today seek and desire publicity and crave it as they think publicity is power but if one knows anything about the Christian Way of Life he knows that ONLY Bible Doctrine and the ministry of God the Holy Spirit is power. Publicity inevitably leads to many disastrous thoughts and situations and if stimulation does not come to a person from human approbation this person is sad and will never get his life straightened out. Human approbation very quickly makes a transition to involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and therefore results in the self destruction of the individual. God has preserved for believers proper thought called Bible Doctrine, the Thinking of Christ, Absolute Truth, Divine Viewpoint, and with it they advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and avoid the trap of getting eyes on what God has provided for them or on his deliverance in adversities rather than on the provider, sustainer and deliverer, The God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The believer has nothing of any importance if he is not under constant Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and he has done nothing important in his entire life unless he clearly understands that The Lord is the one responsible for any and all of his successes and accomplishments. Having been delivered from disaster and facing the possibility of another he will be preoccupied with the disaster if he does not recognize the deliverer over the deliverance. When preoccupied with the disaster his thoughts are wrong and distorted because the most valuable thing in life is the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which has not been used to address the disaster situation.

Most people in the United States of America are completely unaware of the fact that the coming of disaster on this country is inevitable and has been from the 1970's but now in the 21st century is on the immediate horizon. When disaster becomes obvious the traps related to disaster become devious and the more obvious the disaster the more subtle the traps for the believer. In disaster Believers always tend to get eyes on self proclaiming such things as "I was delivered" or eyes on what God provides in Logistical Grace as any material things in life needed to sustain them in the

complexities of historical disasters. Once the believer gets eyes on things instead of the source or origin of the deliverance then he will become preoccupied with the disaster because he has cut himself off from the source which is The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Preoccupation with the source or origin of deliverance and all things in life means Humility and Grace Orientation which is NOT self effacement, a type of Self Righteousness. The believer must use his time in life being alone to reflect on the doctrine and Divine Viewpoint he has accumulated since this aloneness is Essential for promotion by God. God promotes believers when they are under pressure and in disaster situations and he does marvelous things in times of national catastrophe for the mature believer but anyone who is promoted by God has to spend a certain amount of time ALONE. It is only when the believer is alone that he knows what he is, whether he is bored or disturbed and whether he can go a long time without some form of entertainment or not. There is another system of being alone without isolation from social intercourse and that is church attendance where believers must face the personal issue of all bible doctrines and never how these apply to anyone else. The book of Romans, chapter 11 is the most critical chapter with regard to disaster and the believer's functions in disaster and catastrophe.

The Royal Family Honor Code, Spiritual Advance & Crisis Personality

Believers must never allow self to anticipate disaster or adversity in the Spiritual Life but be consistent in their movement to and beyond the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God so that pressure never causes them to fold up and be crushed by adversities. The **Royal Family Honor Code** is designed to give consistency in spiritual advance whether in adversity or prosperity and as a result of understanding and adhering to it believers will have the same consistent happiness, blessing, motivation, flexibility, strength, freedom from Arrogance and all Mental Attitude Sins and can therefore do all things without any excuses for failures. There must be a strong stride in the Spiritual Life to carry the believer, with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and function under the Royal Family Honor Code, which provides complete flexibility regarding others in their Spiritual Life. In the Spiritual Life mature believers can hit a stride in their life and without any effort can intensify their focus for special occasions and thus with the systematic theological system of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul have a consistent motivation about every day in life whether routine and dull or exciting and difficult and always have a great zest for life at all times, whether in prosperous or adverse situations.

Non-Essential of Personality & Personality Change

The Christian Way of Life does not ever command or require a change of personality in any way. There is no such thing as a stereotyped Christian personality. All personality changes MUST occur as a result of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and application of it under the Royal Family Honor Code. There will be those in Christianity who are attractive to others and those totally unattractive. Therefore, any irritation which exists with regard to others based on some aspect of their personality is not part of the Royal Family Honor Code nor the demands of the Christian Way of Life. Believers are to remain inflexible regarding the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and totally flexible about Non-Essentials and it should be obvious by now that the Non-Essentials always vastly outnumber the Essentials. Believers merge into the Royal Family of God with greatly varied backgrounds but the farther one advances in the Christian Way of Life the less influence his background has on his thinking and Modus Operandi and he will begin to become very

sensitive to the needs of those around him and very thoughtful. This comes as a result of replacing the old environmental standards of the personality in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with the Divine Viewpoint standards of Metabolized Bible Doctrine as it saturates the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is the only change of personality which should occur in the believer.

Immature believers and unbelievers are ignorant of Bible Doctrine thus have Norms and Standards formed from their background, environment training and human influence. Unfortunately many Christians are living in their own dream world based on these "old" norms and standards and the only way for this to change is NOT for some other believer to ridicule or expose them but for these believers to have the unimpeded opportunity to become saturated with Bible Doctrine. People should admire the many things in life which are done by people who have great ability or talent in their field but never try to acquire the Norms and Standards of these people. A person can become very successful in many fields of life without a Divine Viewpoint set of Norms and Standards. However, evaluation of others is not the issue in the Spiritual Life and the real issue for the believer is understanding of and adherence to the Royal Family Honor Code which demands that all other believers are given the privacy of their priesthood and Impersonal Love to enable them to advance in the Spiritual Life according to their own volitional choices. This is giving them equality of opportunity to learn Bible Doctrine in the atmosphere of objectivity. They must come to understand, as the mature believer has, that the most important thing in life must be Bible Doctrine and the authority involved in its teaching. This is inflexibility regarding Essentials.

Flexibility & the Crisis Personality

The crisis personality combines inflexibility with regard to Essentials and total flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials into a system of norms and standards and common sense to be applied to any pressure in life. Many believers fail in normal times but many also take the course in normal times for disaster and are thus prepared for disaster. Too many believers are dropouts from this course and will know nothing of the doctrine of the course for disaster preparation and will therefore fail in disaster. In spite of the fact that many believers are drop outs and never completely matriculate in the course for disaster there are those who advance and are always ready for the crisis. The imputation of blessing to the mature believer always includes Undeserved Suffering in several categories which is in effect a course of preparation for historical disaster. The crisis personality is the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or one under Positive Volition who is on the verge of Spiritual Maturity and who continues with Positive Volition to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The believer who has Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and who has the necessary momentum to move into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is always oriented to reality in normal times and therefore also in abnormal times. His happiness does not depend on the circumstances of his life whether pleasant or unpleasant and he does not sulk nor express miserable attitudes but is oriented to reality. Believers must always remain oriented to reality no matter what the reality is because they will always have the same inner resources and happiness regardless of what reality brings to them. It is the orientation to reality which uses the maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the mature believer to maintain their inner happiness. This crisis personality is the mature or maturing believer who is always flexible with regard to Non-Essentials and totally inflexible with regard to Essential doctrines. This flexibility is often the difference between surviving and not surviving in a disaster situation. All Bible Doctrine which is resident in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of any believer is the

result of concentration where by he has listened, learned and metabolized the doctrine. These believers are then able, using this same system of concentration, to extract, rationalize and apply Bible Doctrine to the situations in disaster. One cannot survive any historical disaster unless he has the ability to think in disaster and these thoughts and applications must encompass the principles of Bible Doctrine for disasters. Therefore, the system by which the believer learns Bible Doctrine is the same system by which he applies what has been learned in time of disaster.

Having flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials the mature believer has the ability to recognize instantly a disaster situation. Just as in normal times high priorities are assigned to the Essentials, which for the believer are focused on Bible Doctrine so in abnormal times of pressure or disaster believers must always put Bible Doctrine first and remember the source of everything in life and thereby remain under Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Therefore, the crisis personality combines concentration with the ability to think based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Mature believers must be ready to move from one spot where there may be supplies and security to another spot where supplies have been stored in crisis because of some immediate danger. It is always the crisis personality who can do the right thing because of flexibility, concentration and his ability to think because the disaster does not freeze his thinking but stimulates it. He concentrates in disaster on what is important, the Essentials, the inner residence of Bible Doctrine.

Flexibility, Inflexibility & Dangers in Life

One can become sloppy, non-professional and mixed up in life but this can be corrected but it is nearly impossible to correct inflexibility. Aside from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the only thing which can correct inflexibility is extremely hard times in life and very often this does not do it because inflexibility is based on arrogance. Inflexibility finds the one bad apple in the barrel and says the rest are already spoiled so throw away the whole barrel. Once a person thinks in this way even personal conversations with God do not change this as is demonstrated by the dialogue between Elijah, as an Ultra Super-Grace believer, and God. Arrogance always dramatizes and exaggerates the dangers of situations while flexibility always recognizes them but minimizes them in the face of something greater such as the promises of God:

- Greater is he in you than he in the world
- If God for us who against us.

Every day in the United States of America there is some Evil fomenting disruptive and destructive activities from government, labor, management or crime that can destroy the believer in an instant. If one is inflexible it will destroy him because he will always give up under the pressure. The believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must be flexible and hang in the fight and be loyal opposition for the true United States of America in our intense times of insurrection and revolution and only Bible Doctrine gives that flexibility. Wanting to kill the opposition is not always a solution but is inflexibility and nothing is ever solved by violence and the advancing or mature believer must be flexible and to be flexible he must be free from arrogance. In our time in this 21st century The Lord Jesus, The Christ could enter the White House and not solve any of the problems we face because they deal with too many Old Sin Natures which have totally rejected the divine viewpoint solutions. If a person is inflexible he will be destroyed by the disasters of our time. No one in Law Enforcement nor Judicial profession nor any other such profession can be inflexible because, as a result of the myriad

of resentments from the public, they would slip into actions of brutality out of sheer desperation. To be correct about a thing and inflexible is to be a martinet and be non-patriotic and a coward and run away from the pressure. The people who actually never give up under pressure are often those who may appear to give up but who are flexible in their response to the pressure. The future of the United States very well may find that it is being invaded, as has occurred in other nations as a result of our insufficient military organizations and grossly insufficient Law Enforcement to protect it. The people, especially believers must be flexible and ready to fill the gap to support and defend the client nation. In these situations underground organizations will be formed and guerrilla warfare becomes the order of the day but many people, especially believers, are not prepared to be involved in this type of function. These people only talk about these situations and functions and talking about it results in inflexibility and arrogance. A person must remain flexible about whatever preparations he has made and keep his mouth shut about his plans and abilities and never announce these things to anyone. This is how one maintains flexibility to be able to deal with disaster situations.

Self Righteous inflexible people never admit that they are wrong about anything and it is incomprehensible that a believer who is Self Righteous and inflexible could follow and use the rebound procedure. To be Self Righteous and inflexible results in being extremely arrogant and without awareness of that arrogance this believer cannot ever make it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Self Righteous Arrogance lacks any means of passing the tests provided by God prior to the believer reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and arrogance has no way to pass the tests of the apostate reversionistic attacks used to distract him from Bible Doctrine. This means ultimate failure to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is what will prevent one from functioning properly in counter insurgency and guerrilla warfare. When a believer breaks into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he realizes, first and foremost, how tolerant he has become of so many idiots who are struggling to grow up spiritually and who don't do, look or think like he does and how suddenly courteous he has become to SCUM. Believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God must remain flexible in all areas of life especially in the Spiritual Life functions. It is the 'pet' areas of "holiness" which present the greatest danger of becoming inflexible and to the extent that the believer does not follow the Royal Family Honor Code in the area of inflexibility with regard to Bible Doctrine and flexibility about all other things in life, to that extent he has failed miserably.

Flexibility, Inflexibility & Noise, Intimidation & FEAR

There is no power in the voice of a bully and a nagging woman may shriek and holler but it is only noise and there is no power in that noise but there is the ability of that noise to produce fear and intimidation which from the woman is "henpecking". Shouting, screaming, explosions, detonations, etc., can occur and frighten people and once they are frightened they are not thinking and they then become inflexible. This why men freeze in combat, on a trigger or hug the ground in total fear or become immobilized in the crisis. Many of the military services do not understand that it is Essential to provide strong discipline for a soldier and that this is a very good thing to be developed but when they do so to the point of removing the man's flexibility it means that when that man needs to think under pressure he will never be able to perform and function properly no matter what the situation may be. Men freeze on the trigger or flinch on the shot because of the noise which causes them to fear. Noise is feared because of Self Righteousness Arrogance which becomes inflexible and is thus

frightened by noise as a result of the inflexibility to bring in and apply thought and Bible Doctrine. Since the beginning of battles in history noise has been used to intimidate the enemy. Noise is a weapon but it only works on a coward and noise never bothers courage because courage can concentrate under the pressure of noise. Even in disaster courage can still concentrate under the pressure of noise and it never bothers the person who is thinking and concentrating and applying Bible Doctrine. This is the crisis personality.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility, Inflexibility, Essentials & Non-Essentials and FREEDOM

Freedom is the policy of God in creation of the Human Race to resolve the older Angelic Conflict and is dogmatic and inflexible regarding the Essentials of life as well as being very flexible and pliable regarding the Non-Essentials of life. Freedom is the common sense orientation to the reality of life including respect for the life, the use of unimpeded and uncoerced volition, privacy and property of others along with authority which protects it all. Freedom must have content of thought and this is found in the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment freedom and authority are mated such that one without or superseding the other should not exist. In the Christian Way of Life Freedom without the authority of Bible Doctrine is antinomianism while authority without the freedom of Bible Doctrine is legalism.

All unbelievers start out in darkness and do not know about the salvation potential provided by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the Cross for all human sins. They have a potential to learn this because of the provision under the Laws of Divine Establishment in a client nation for citizens to have the freedom to or not to do so. This freedom is the result of the forefathers of this client nation and the framers of our constitution setting up a separation of religion from the government of the state. This freedom guarantees the unencumbered use in life of personal volition, and the possession of both privacy and property under the authority of good small government which follows the Laws of Divine Establishment and recognizes the Divine Institutions which thereby protects that freedom. Until the interference of Abraham Lincoln with the southern states, and then to a greater extent when Franklin Roosevelt came to the presidency of the United States, the authority of government never exceeded the freedom of the people. Authority without freedom is tyranny and freedom without authority is anarchy and today in this 21st century we are experiencing a mixture of both with unrestrained anarchy in the acts of the antifa and 'black lives matter' movements and at the same time central government efforts to eliminate key freedom issues as delineated by the constitution. When one overbalances the other, the individual loses privacy and property, and the functions of the client nation are thereby degraded. There is no possible way in which a central federal government can ever take the place of God and governmental authority is defined and delegated in such a way that no federal government will ever be Godlike though that is what the governments of the world including the United States of America have recently done in telling people when and how they can appear in public. Freedom in the client nation and in the world in general is the basis for evangelism and without it there would be no evangelism and no Christianity and therefore NO REASON FOR HUMAN BEINGS TO EXIST. Believers

must begin to recognize that although there are many things valuable to them in life, *Christ must always be first and Freedom must always be second* and everything and everyone else falls in behind these 2. In this world ruled by Satan enmeshed in an extension of a prehistoric Angelic Conflict the client nation not only establishes freedom in its own nation but as a result of the evangelism and spiritual growth of the people of that nation missionaries are sent out to the whole world for the spreading of the gospel of Christ and promotion of Freedom to enable the choice for or against it. Therefore, Freedom in its simplest form is Live and Let Live and must encompass uninhibited volition, privacy and property.

Freedom is the 1st of the Divine Institutions created by God to guide and protect the Human Race. It is VOLITION, FREE WILL which coexists in Human History for man with the Sovereignty of God according to the Plan of God. Freedom is thought of today as meaning equality and it does NOT and in fact freedom always results in unquestionable inequality. Whenever we think about freedom we should think of Authority which along with discipline is Essential for freedom existing within a large concentration of people. Freedom is defined clearly in the Laws of Divine Establishment and includes Privacy and Ownership of Private property and living Life without infringement from any source especially government. Most people think of a lack of freedom as bondage slavery but the worst slavery in life has nothing to do with the shackles of bondage but is allegedly having freedom where it is not a reality and not at all understood. Freedom does not mean equality among people nor equality of opportunity in life. Freedom IS unencumbered use of volition, privacy, property, with establishment functions and protection of life and EVANGELISM with the opportunity to hear the Gospel of Christ and Bible Doctrine without persecution nor prosecution. It requires a system of self discipline along with recognition of duly constituted and properly delegated authority. In fact, that which makes freedom operate properly within large numbers of people is authority and self discipline. This system of self discipline requires the use of personal volition to regulate self to ensure others are given privacy and their personal freedom.

Freedom is the uncaused, cause of human function, the legitimate self determination and exemption from the necessity for self fulfillment, the privilege or franchise of the Human Race and exemption from arbitrary control and thus believers MUST understand it as “live and let live”. In the soul of every rational creature is found the very basis for and function of freedom. Freedom is not an entity by itself and cannot stand alone.

- Freedom is the ability to use **personal volition** to make individual decisions without interference or coercion from anyone.
- Freedom is related to **privacy** which is the environment of human freedom and there cannot ever be freedom without it and if you destroy privacy you destroy freedom. One of the key functions in the assembly together of believers in a congregation of the Local Church is that ALL MUST HAVE PRIVACY. In the local church in bible study the believer can accept or reject what is taught but must be able to be objective with regard to the information presented.
- In addition Freedom has, as an integral part of it, **Property**, which is what is legitimately acquired and possessed by the individual. Certain things in life must be acquired and possessed in order to continue in this life and to have the choice to follow the Plan of God or NOT. Therefore, the right to use, benefit from or dispose of anything which can be subject to ownership is the principle of property, it is therefore the ownership of legitimately acquired tangible property.

- In order to regulate freedom so that all can benefit equally from freedom it MUST be under the umbrella of divinely delegated **legitimate authority**.

If any one of these principles is destroyed then freedom is also destroyed. Therefore, invading one's privacy destroys freedom and also confiscating one's property destroys freedom, as occurs in socialism, communism and the welfare state all which are terrible Evil principles. In addition, if and when authority is rejected and destroyed in any aspect of life then freedom is also destroyed. This is the overt opposition to legitimate police and judicial functions, in this 21st century calling for defunding local police in order to establish a national police to enforce the insinuation of tyranny into the government and national life in the United States. Therefore, Freedom is the historical structure designed by God under the Laws of Divine Establishment to allow all mankind to have the potential for choice with regard to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Everyone in this nation is confused and has been for a very long time. This is especially obvious with regard to the actions and policies of president Carter, when he canceled the B1 bomber and functioned as a traitor when he gave the Panama Canal back to Panama. This confusion with regard to the status and purpose of this nation in the world is exemplified by the tenure of Barak Obama and the newly placed Joseph Biden as presidents. People get confused by being inflexible with regard to Non-Essentials and flexible about Essentials in any and every category of life. This is also demonstrated by the people who have their life focused on the Non-Essential petty things of life, about which they become totally inflexible. Life is greater than a lot of petty Non-Essential things but is made up of many Non-Essentials and there must always be Essentials behind the Non-Essentials for stability to exist. This is Bible Doctrine.

Essential Freedom for Believers

Christianity, a personal relationship with God through the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for all human sin, is adaptable to any human society under all conditions of life. It is not hostile to any specific form of government and thus does not sponsor nor recommend any special form of government. It is opposed to Evil in all forms of government and society since Evil destroys the primary Essential of life for mankind, freedom, privacy, property, authority, evangelism and spiritual growth. As believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ we are NOT here to correct Evil but to grow in the spiritual life in and under the Grace Plan and Policy of God so that the Lord can correct Evil in any situation or generation. Christianity teaches orientation to life through respect for the authority ordained by God in the Laws of Divine Establishment or Modus Operandi of the Local Church. Any society, saturated with turbulence and anarchy, should welcome Christianity as its stabilizer. In addition to the sustaining pivot of mature believers Christianity introduces honor and integrity to the life blood of a nation. It is the source of divine blessing and prosperity for any nation that embraces it and without it there could be no client nation to provide international stability to the world by means of missionaries and evangelists to areas of heathenism where Positive Volition exists. Without the free function of the Local Church in a society life would be a jungle of anarchy and destruction, therefore, the believer is the salt or preservative of the land.

Essential Privacy for the Believer

Privacy demands that all believers avoid gossip, maligning, judging, etc., and the function of implacable criticism. Privacy is Essential for human freedom and especially for the functions of the Christian Way of Life. All believers must live as unto the Lord without interference from anyone. The exception is obviously children under the authority of their parents. Believers must therefore live and let live and remember that Privacy is Essential for the believer in Christ to be able to live the Christian Way of Life in the manner he desires to and use his own volition to determine his orientation to the Plan of God and Bible Doctrine. Believers must be able to make their own decisions with regard to their consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, without coercion from any source and also without prevention from any source, thus the necessity for FREEDOM and PRIVACY in the Christian Way of Life. Therefore, Believers are to become God pleasers not man pleasers. Many believers are too dependent on others for advice and help in their struggle through life and have thereby given up their own privacy. Privacy means, especially for believers, that they are a self determining unit and must make their own decisions and do not need counsel or help from others to address and solve their problems in life. The believer's counsel is to be Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and he must learn to use it and stand alone with it and not try to use another person nor their inculcated doctrine for a crutch. Counseling inevitably weakens people and does not help them to solve problems in life and all believers must learn to stand on their own feet and make their own decisions before the Lord AND take full responsibility for those decisions. Therefore, privacy can only be lost when personal problems are dumped on others by asking for their opinions.

Most people who will listen to another's problems are gossips and will ultimately spread the information about those problems around to all who will listen thus infinitely compounding the problems. Believer's must learn to solve their own problems and to not need counseling because it destroys their privacy. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will give everything that is needed to solve personal problems. If a believer is coming up short, without the pertinent doctrine he needs, and still continues in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, what he needs will eventually come to him at the most opportune time. Generally, God will not test believers ever until He has provided the proper Bible Doctrine needed to pass the test. Therefore, it is the believer's individual responsibility, by continually exercising his volition to persistently take in Bible Doctrine, to avail himself of that which God has provided for stability. This requires FREEDOM to use one's volition to gather in the local church or in any venue and assimilate Bible Doctrine. However, believers often test themselves through personal failures and as a result of a lack of consistency in the intake of Bible Doctrine they do not have the requisite Bible Doctrine and therefore flunk the self induced misery tests. Ironically, the believer must never worry about failing testing from God because <u>HE ALWAYS GIVES A DO OVER</u> under his plan. Very often, even when the believer passes the momentum tests God provides a <u>DO AGAIN</u> at a greater level of intensity so the believer should NEVER be so stupid as to EVER reject or neglect Bible Doctrine intake. The real problem for every Christian is that <u>NO ONE CAN EVER CHEAT UNDER GOD'S SYSTEM AND NO ONE CAN GET THE TEST ANSWERS OFF OF ANOTHER PERSONS TEST PAPER</u>. Every believer must have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in HIS OWN Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. He must also have privacy to address his own pressure and testing in life and he must also give privacy to others by not burdening them with his problems. It is the worst thing imaginable to find it necessary to be telling others all about one's pressures and problems in life, especially

telling a Pastor Teacher, whose only responsibility is to teach Bible Doctrine, not solve one's personal stupidity in life. For the Pastor Teacher to engage in counseling the members of the congregation is a misapplication of his position because the believers will ultimately all become spiritually weak and then when enough people in a local church lean on the Pastor Teacher as a spiritual crutch he will eventually collapse along with the local church.

Therefore, it is Essential for the believer to have consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, daily, to build up spiritual strength for problem solving in life. If he chooses to expose his privacy to others that is something he does to his own detriment and very often the detriment of the others who hear his problems and it must STOP. It is a false principle that people should become involved with each other and that their lives should be totally interrelated and they should help each other and sustain each other. When one comes to the Local Church to take in Bible Doctrine he can and must do so without trying to superimpose his personal standards, not limited to grooming and dress, on others. There is only one standard stated by Bible Doctrine for dress and this is short hair in the male and there are no others. Therefore, for the proper function of the local church to exist and align with the **Royal Family Honor Code** the believer must have a right to go to bible class and take in Bible Doctrine and grow to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God without anyone interfering with him or requiring personal information from him. Privacy is Essential to be able to approach Bible Doctrine with total objectivity and only allow the word of God speak about one's failures in life and no one else. If one maintains his privacy this will result in no one knowing his sins or failures and therefore not being able to judge him for them. Obviously then this avoids a plethora of both Mental Attitude and Verbal Sins on both sides. The believer can only be objective in his approach to Bible Doctrine if he is taking in doctrine privately knowing that no one ever is judging him. When assembled in a congregation in privacy, he, therefore, must never take anything which is presented personally but let Bible Doctrine correct his failures internally. The stupidest thing a believer can ever do is to run around the congregation and tell everyone about all his private failures. This is the supreme stupidity of public confessions in the local church. Every believer has the right to assemble in the Local Church without having his personal life or personal business becoming public. Each believer must be able to approach Bible Doctrine with objectivity confident that when some passage condemns him it is from the bible and not from his contemporaries.

Therefore, no one ever advances in the Plan of God without privacy of the priesthood and objectivity toward Bible Doctrine. Therefore, believers have a right to privacy and to sit and take in Bible Doctrine without anyone criticizing their dress or actions or anything else about them. All believers have a right to take in Bible Doctrine on the basis of privacy and when scripture chastises, it is between the believer and only the Lord and no one else. The primary Essential issue in the Spiritual Life is Bible Doctrine reaching the Human Spirit and Soul and nothing else. Every believer should have equality of opportunity to objectively learn Bible Doctrine. Therefore, no issue can ever be made concerning grooming, attitudes or false concepts UNLESS they involve his gossip, maligning, judging or bullying of other believers in which case this guilty individual must be removed from the congregation. Spiritual Advance must never have anything to do with bullying or the opinions of others but must come from objectively learned Bible Doctrine in an atmosphere of privacy.

Privacy is an Essential part of freedom and no normal individual would ever think of stealing money from a persons pocket and violating their privacy which is also part of their freedom and property. Why therefore would anyone try to superimpose their personal standards on others, whether good or bad, since the only valid superimposition which should occur is avoiding gossip, maligning or judging which is violating privacy and thus freedom. An prime example is the function of financial giving to a local church which is commanded of the believer but is to be private, so that when the Pastor Teacher begs for money this is totally wrong and intimates that giving or not is part of spirituality. Giving is a legitimate doctrine and part of worship but there are many ways to be wrong in application of the principles of giving.

Essential Privacy and the Royal Priesthood

Privacy is part of the basis for the **Royal Family Honor Code** and we see it under the **royal priesthood** of the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ in this Church Age. Every believer is a royal priest and no one has any right to tell any believer where he can or cannot attend a Local Church ever. What he is, how he acts, what he does, what he wears is only his business and when it comes to Bible Doctrine, whether rich or poor, legitimate businessman or crook, he is to have complete privacy in the Local Church. Authority in the Local Church guarantees this privacy for all believers and this same function should also occur for individuals in any organization. Privacy is simply the principle of Live and Let live for all. In the local church there must never be physical or mental bullying, legalism and no distractions whatsoever to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Each and every believer in the Church Age is a royal priest after Christ our high priest and as a result is responsible DIRECTLY to God ONLY for each and every decision and action he accomplishes in this life and to no one else.

Privacy of the priesthood is a basic concept of the Royal Family Honor Code and is Essential for the proper function in the Christian Way of Life as a duty to God not to man. All believers possess the imputed Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and must therefore respect that Absolute Righteousness, which comes directly from God, in all other believers. Love for other believers is a respect for the fact that Absolute Righteousness from God also resides in the believer who is the dumb cluck whom one does not particularly like. God respects this Absolute Righteousness in all believers and therefore, believers must respect it also in all other believers. Christian "sensitivity" is awareness of the fact that God imputed his Absolute Righteousness to every believer at Salvation Adjustment to His Justice, though having NO requirement to do so, and it was also imputed to all other believers at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore mutual respect among believers is based on respect for the Absolute Righteousness of God imputed to each by God. This can be thought of as brotherly love if it is understood as the Impersonal Love for Mankind from a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward all other believers allowing them their privacy and freedom along with their personal thoughts and opinions. Privacy of the priesthood gives each believer, with his own brand of sins, false doctrines and inaccurate opinions, the opportunity to learn Bible Doctrine and to be corrected by Bible Doctrine and not by other believers.

Essential Privacy & Flexibility

Believers operate under the law of freedom as members of the Royal Family of God and have the privacy of the priesthood which means that their failures or sins are between them and the Lord for Divine Discipline and no one else. However, this is not to imply that it circumvents judicial

punishment for criminal acts in society for which the believer must take total responsibility. What this does mean is that when believers assemble in the Local Church with other believers they all have the right to remain private. All of one's business is between himself and the Lord and the Local Church is not designed nor authorized to intrude on his privacy. Every believer has a right to come to the Local Church and hear Bible Doctrine and have the opportunity to concentrate and learn Bible Doctrine along with others in an atmosphere of total objectivity. No one should ever intrude in any way on privacy because the believer is only in the Local Church to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Any maligning, judging, vindictive criticism, gossiping, or trying to superimpose some personal standards on others is a violation of the privacy of these others. Recognizing and honoring privacy guarantees objectivity in the approach to Bible Doctrine in order to allow spiritual growth and thereby glorify The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

There are a myriad of Non-Essential things advanced believers hear expressed, opinions and positions taken, which may seem ridiculous to the him having more Bible Doctrine than others. With regard to these things he must remain flexible and not try to superimpose any standards, even superior ones based on Bible Doctrine, on others. The area of primary privacy is the mind or soul of the believer and this means each must have freedom of thought. If one chooses to express his thoughts to others, when they don't agree, they may attack him and try to convert him to their thinking. The mature believer must be too astute to get involved with this and must tolerate idiotic ideas and thoughts of others and lets them pass without argument. The issue in the Christian Way of Life is and must always remain Bible Doctrine, which eventually will convert all thoughts into Divine Viewpoint. Therefore until the ignorant believer accumulates enough Bible Doctrine the mature believer must let these stupid opinions pass and allows Bible Doctrine to correct the issues and opinions thereby letting Bible Doctrine remain the true issue.

Therefore, Privacy as a principle demands freedom of thought and the right to have and maintain one's own opinions. Just as money and other property is one's to possess and which belongs to him personally, he has thoughts in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which belong to him and no one has a right to even attempt to change them. In possessing one's personal opinions, which may be false, the believer must never let them become a matter of **Arrogance** and refuse to turn loose of them and as a result become subjective in his approach to Bible Doctrine. Freedom of thought is a great principle of freedom and not only do believers have a right to personal opinions about anything and everything, but, if they are objective in their thinking, they also have a right to change those opinions as the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine influence and direct them. It is far easier to be flexible when objective about thinking and thereby change opinions when they are corrected by Bible Doctrine than to be subjective in thinking. False impressions or opinions must not ever be corrected by spiritual bullying which violates the Royal Family Honor Code and produces a permanent casualty in the **Angelic Conflict**.

Flexibility regarding Privacy means that there is no reason ever to intrude on the privacy of another believer who is advancing at his own rate in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. However, there remains the ability and in fact necessity to communicate in terms of Bible Doctrine so that reality will persist in a group of similar thinking individuals. This is not intruding on privacy of others but expressing Bible Doctrine to have a correcting influence. When

inflexibility develops and increases with regard to Non-Essentials the people involved become totally divorced from reality. It is very easy for people who have a boring life or lack Bible Doctrine to make the most out of inconsequential trivia and as a result become inflexible about these Non-Essentials leading to isolation and eventual divorcement from reality. These believers can easily become sociopathic or psychotic and this is the antithesis of what Bible Doctrine does to the soul of the believer and the more Bible Doctrine the believer has accumulated the more focused on reality he can become.

Therefore it should be obvious that Freedom includes 2 Essentials, Privacy and Property both part of the Logistical Grace needed to advance in the Plan of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Privacy for the **royal priest** in this Church Age is an Essential and the only way one can maintain privacy is for all people to avoid judging in any way, any Modus Vivendi or Modus Operandi of others. The Royal Family Honor Code demands live and let live, in other words, live your life any way you want to and let others do the same. When this is not the case the individual does not have the freedom to advance in the Spiritual Life to **Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God**. When any believer is positive to Bible Doctrine then it is the function of Bible Doctrine ALONE to correct him at some time for his erroneous ideas and failures and no one else's responsibility. When believers start being inflexible about Non-Essentials they begin at that time destroying their Spiritual Life. Inflexibility is reserved ONLY for Essentials which include the principles of Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions. The only thing which can change any believer is for him, using his own volition, to assimilate Bible Doctrine into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and to be able to do so without any distraction from others. Therefore, as part of the Royal Family of God we have a right to privacy and to ONLY get our Norms and Standards from the prince ruler of the church, the mind or thinking of The Lord Jesus, The Christ which is found in the Scripture, Bible Doctrine. NO ONE ever has any right to superimpose their personal concepts on another believer in the name of Christianity. Very often believers may have to break with some of the strongest ties they have had in life and at the same time have the flexibility to continue their love and admiration even for confused parents or siblings. For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ standards in the Christian Way of Life must be based solely on Bible Doctrine.

Essential Freedom, Privacy, Authority & Royal Family Honor Code

The believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has a double privacy because the Laws of Divine Establishment provide freedom and the Royal Family Honor Code provides freedom as well for the status of the believer as royal priest. Both freedoms provide for and require privacy. The Royal Family Honor Code demands live and let live as a function for the believer and when this is not the case the individual subjected to judgment does not have the freedom to objectively advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. If any believer under positive volition to Bible Doctrine fails or has some distorted or erroneous opinions then it is the function of BIBLE DOCTRINE to correct him at some future time. It becomes an obvious Essential that Authority must exist in order for freedom to exist and give a proper perspective on reality in life.

The mature believer understands freedom better than anyone else, the uncoerced volition, privacy, property and the authority over him. This means he does not retaliate nor debate to justify his position on anything. There is never a right for such a function in the Spiritual Life as justifying self in relationship to others. It is acceptable for children to be required to explain to parents when

being disciplined when and why they were out of line and wrong. However, the believer does not ever owe an explanation to anyone EVER unless it is on a job or under some other system of authority. The mature believer must avoid making an issue of freedom and should retire behind privacy refusing to counter maligning or gossip and refuse to hold a grudge or criticize the more immature believer but stick solidly with his standards from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is Impersonal Love, and the issue must always be Bible Doctrine and the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of it under the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** because this is the only means of advance in the Spiritual Life. Every believer must be given privacy to approach Bible Doctrine objectively without distraction from other believers with different standards from more or less Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore, no believer ever has any right to tell other believers how to run their lives. The responsibility of the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ under the Royal Family Honor Code is simply to MIND HIS OWN BUSINESS and let other believers live their life as unto the Lord. All people have a right to privacy and this includes their public lifestyle.

Deference to other people's opinions whether they are correct or incorrect is the courtesy and thoughtfulness which results from compliance with the principles of the Royal Family Honor Code. Many believers, as they reach the adolescent stage of spiritual advance, become insubordinate and fail to recognize authority. Recognition of authority in both temporal life and spiritual life is an Essential. As a result many believers peal off from Bible Doctrine because in the adolescent stage they cannot face the authority test in the Christian Way of Life. Adolescent believers, just like adolescent children, assume they know it all and thus are free from the authority of the Pastor Teacher who offends them in some way, by his personality or some aspect of his teaching. There comes a time in the life of every believer when the only thing that counts is perseverance, plodding, plugging with consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine today, tomorrow and every day. This requires finding and staying with your Right Pastor Teacher, one who DOGMATICALLY teaches Bible Doctrine in an expository way and totally disregard any aspect of his personality or methods.

The existence of Freedom means inequality will always exist among people and the lazy good for nothing scum will fall to the bottom of society and fail and the exceptional motivated individuals will rise to the top and succeed. The very existence of Freedom GUARANTEES that there cannot be equality, and if equality exists in any group, organization or society there can be NO FREEDOM. Those who demand equality are lazy good for nothing scum trying to get to the top, or at least have the accouterments of the top, without working for them nor having proper motivation nor the impetus of function under the Laws of Divine Establishment to personally acquire them. Freedom is what the Lord sponsors in the Grace Plan of God and Equality is what Satan sponsors under the **Cosmic Dynaspheres**. As a part of client nation function there is freedom to evangelize and also to take in Bible Doctrine to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or to reject these and there is no national penalty for the decisions for or against. There is also Freedom to go to other nations where there is Positive Volition at God Consciousness and for the gospel and Bible Doctrine as missionaries. There is Freedom to provide a haven for Jews wandering outside their nation. Therefore, Freedom guarantees some will accept the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and some of these will reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and some will decline and fall into reversionism or maintain their unbeliever status.

Essentials Necessary for Freedom

Freedom is Essential for function under the Laws of Divine Establishment, for Evangelism into Christianity and advance or retrogression in the Christian Way of Life therefore to fulfill the purpose of man in the Angelic Conflict. Codex I of the Mosaic Law, the Decalogue, defines freedom in terms of morality and this freedom must exist for evangelism, spiritual advance and missionary function to occur in the client nation therefore it is Essential and delineates the purpose of the Decalogue. Codex III of the Mosaic Law defines in great detail the Laws of Divine Establishment and that there must be freedom on a larger scale when man chooses to live in close proximity to man therefore, the need for Establishment Law, Proper Judicial functions and Law Enforcement to protect against the criminal who uses his volition to set himself outside of the Laws of Divine Establishment thereby violating all categories and parts of freedom. Therefore, all criminals, crime syndicates and crimes in themselves are anti freedom and they must be controlled by stringent Law Enforcement and when necessary executed and removed from society permanently.

At some level, not often recognized, homosexuality, incest, bestiality, and other sexual deviations are the degenerate results of Satan worship and or idolatry. When there exists a maximum amount of sexual degeneration FREEDOM is LOST. No person can have any level of freedom unless there is privacy and property accompanying it and from this comes the concepts of free enterprise which is motivation to exploit opportunity for economic success in life. However, the greatest issue in any nation is protection of freedom and therefore there must be the umbrella of Authority over all freedoms. However, authority without freedom is tyranny but also freedom without authority is anarchy and both situations are very destructive. Both freedom and authority are Essential and must function in support of each other without destroying each other. The terribly great imbalances in modern governments result because there is either authority without freedom or freedom without authority and yet they must coexist and coalesce and form the stabilized principle of freedom for a client nation to function to serve God.

Therefore, in order for the believer to advance in and to fulfill the Plan of God there must be authority over the people along with authority orientation within the people with the responsibility of properly used freedom as 2 sides of the same coin. As long as the believer is authority oriented and grace oriented he can use the freedom provided under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Logistical Grace, which provides everything needed for him to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, despite the type of government. So long as the government provides the necessary freedom for citizens, even slaves, to use their volition to choose for or against spiritual advance the believer has the potential of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. (**Rom 13:1-4**) Therefore, for the believer to advance in the Spiritual Life and understand the Angelic Conflict there must be a clear understanding of FREEDOM, the Laws of Divine Establishment and a maximum amount of accumulated Bible Doctrine in the soul. The necessity for Authority Orientation in the believer allows them to put themselves under the authority of **ONE (1)** Pastor Teacher consistently learning Bible Doctrine to grow up in the Spiritual Life. In the United States of America, today as never before, we have demonstrations, strikes, RIOTS, etc., as attempts to disorder society for the personal selfishness of one group or another and this is demonstration of a total lack of Authority Orientation. Many people today as never before recognize the problems this nation faces allowing socialism, communism and islam to gain ascendancy in the United States but what

people have ignored totally is that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and that He responds to the individual's proper function under FREEDOM, the Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine and without these factors in play He will do nothing except possibly accelerate the degradation of the nation.

In the United States there are several generations of people who want everything given to them on a silver platter and they have learned that this is acceptable under our government and is now their expectation as a result of the government's Evil system of treating the so called minorities under socialism and welfare state functions. Instead of treating these minorities as having equal rights under the existing law as American citizens they are treated as if they were a super race, entitled to everything, and as a result of this treatment, laws have been passed to force others to make these minorities great and to be kind and friendly to them and this has destroyed the American way of life. In this 21st century minority groups and anarchistic Marxist organizations have set themselves above the law and the constitution and yet have NOT been held accountable for the invasions of privacy, property, the curtailing of freedom and destruction of property, by the government. The beauty of the Laws of Divine Establishment as presented in the Mosaic Law is that they apply to all forms of human government; Theocracy; Monarchy of all types, absolute, limited, constitutional; Republic; Autocracy; all categories of government EXCEPT Democracy. Democracy is not a true form of government but a total disaster bordering on anarchy. The only true democracy in history was the Athenian democracy and it existed just long enough to become an empire and then it was destroyed. The Laws of Divine Establishment will not work under anarchy nor democracy. The United States of America was set up as a constitutional republic and not as a democracy. The United States of America has only become a democracy because of adding stupidity to more stupidity in allowing too many irresponsible people to decide how things are run in the country. The leadership in any system of government is designed to protect the citizen's Life, Volitional Freedom, Privacy and Property under a legitimate system of legal authority. There have to be certain rules which all must follow and this is necessary because of the existence of the Old Sin Nature in every individual and the resultant total depravity of man. People must engage in mutual toleration of others and this is part of the flexibility principle related to reality in life. As the population in a nation such as the United States of America or any group of human beings increases there is also an increase in the number of Old Sin Natures. The greater the number of Old Sin Natures in any nation the greater the potential for tyranny, revolution, unfairness, injustice, loss of freedom and destruction of all the things important in life.

Carnal believers are those who sin and reject the principle of the rebound procedure. Never using or having knowledge of rebound this believer never recovers the Filling of God the Holy Spirit which is Essential for spirituality and proper mental attitude. With regard to having proper mental attitude the most important issue is Authority Orientation. The lack of orientation to authority will destroy any organization in an instant. Freedom is the basic stability which turns around Human History and is that which comes from the **honor code** of the Royal Family of God. This code recognizes freedom and that freedom cannot exist without 3 Essential parts as a foundation. There must be Privacy first and property for every individual and Authority to protect freedom's privacy. Marxism in this 21st century in the form of the radical group 'antifa' and the educational distortion of "critical race theory" has attacked all of these Essentials to freedom. It attacks authority starting with the husband over the wife and parents over the children, teachers over classes, management over

labor, officers over enlisted men in the military because all of these contribute to stabilizing and perpetuating freedom. Without authority you cannot have freedom among groups of people and not even in the individual. In the individual his own self discipline under his free will volition is his authority to control his freedom and ensure privacy and the sanctity of property for all those in his periphery. Therefore, Privacy is Essential for any form of freedom to exist and it demands that individuals make personal decisions with regard to their own life which inevitably result in INEQUALITY. These personal decisions MUST come without coercion or restraint from any area in life to be effectively free decisions.

Life is filled with unfairness and inequality and will always be but the Lord has called us to advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and overcome this. When minority groups or individuals are permitted to continue saying they are being pushed around in society they will never have the right Mental Attitude to advance in society nor in the Spiritual Life. This thought pattern derived from the influence of the Old Sin Nature is hostile to God and includes:

- Trying to pass legislation to solve man's problems
- Passing laws that say you must be nice to certain groups of people
- Telling groups that their desires will be delivered on a silver platter
- Not proclaiming to all that this is a free nation and we live by the same standards, therefore each individual must do the best he can.

Handing anything to anyone free without obligation and without their expending the effort needed to obtain it destroys the Mental Attitude of authority orientation. When a people is freed from slavery they have to be taught how to act as responsible citizens and how to depend on and provide for themselves. This is the reason that the bible advocates that when a people are slaves in any nation and freed they must depart from that nation with their freedom and start over as a group and form another nation with their own rules and customs as occurred in the EXODUS of the Jews from Egypt after 400 years of slavery. It is very very difficult for any people freed from slavery to stay where they had been enslaved and not have Mental Attitude bitterness. This always gives them an excuse for stealing, complaining and demanding things from authority which are above their ability to acquire themselves.

Freedom Demands Responsibility

We have lost many and are continually losing more freedoms in the United States of America because the people no longer recognize the principle of authority nor the true meaning of freedom with regard to privacy and property. It is Essential to recognize that all freedom is related to personal privacy and personal property protected under an umbrella of authority set forth by the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions, the Royal Family Honor Code and Bible Doctrine. It is a dogmatic fact that Freedom CANNOT be maintained without RESPONSIBILITY on the part of the free. Freedom cannot exist without authority it cannot be beneficial to all without SELF DISCIPLINE and SELF REGULATION on the part of the beneficiaries of freedom, ie. RESPONSIBILITY. As paradoxical as it may seem these 2 things go together in life, EQUALITY and FREEDOM, but only when Equality makes individuals equal in principle under the law. In all other cases Freedom and Equality are antithetical concepts and when people have freedom it always results in inequality in life

but a properly functioning government under freedom should guarantee equality of treatment under the law of the land for EVERY individual without regard to his station in life. Freedom is therefore inevitably designed and destined to produce inequality in all circumstances and situations. Even when individuals start out equal with equality of opportunities in life and they then use their freedom, it results in life and even in eternity in guaranteeing great inequality. A graphic example is the differences in believers who are dying, some under dying grace with a glorious end to their life vs others under the pain, misery and unsettling anxiety of the Sin Unto Death for total failure in the Christian Way of Life.

The **Equation of Hope**, which illustrates the Plan of God, clearly demonstrates the results of using volition under freedom to attain great inequality in the Spiritual Life. The ultimate key to advance in the Plan of God is consistent use of Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit using the **Grace Apparatus for Perception**. Each individual believer must CHOOSE to use his volition to avail himself of bible teaching from a properly prepared Pastor Teacher consistently in order to advance in the Spiritual Life. Some do and some do not. As the believer moves ahead in the Spiritual Life toward or into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, if he destroys freedom as he advances, by means of that destruction, he destroys the path by which the immature believer can advance behind him. Therefore believers at all levels must never abuse freedom so as to destroy it and eliminate Bible Doctrine as the true issue in life. It is Bible Doctrine acquired in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the immature believer which must show him the way not the application of Bible Doctrine in the abuse of the **law of liberty** by more mature believers. Therefore, what characterizes the strong mature believer is inflexibility with regard to Bible Doctrine and total flexibility with regard to the Non-Essentials including food, drink, job, social status, clothing, etc.

When a person has no property of any great value and thinks all people who have a great deal of property should give to him so that he has some of what they have because they have so much, this is Evil, the thinking of Satan to make people equal and bring on a pseudo millennium, and is a violation and ultimate destruction of freedom. When a person votes for or advocates for such a thing as to divide property and redistribute it to those who don't have much he is voting for the destruction of FREEDOM. Whether one has property or not he must understand in his soul that any attack on property is a destruction of all freedom in HIS life. When a person observes that some people have fantastic wealth and incredible property this should produce a mental attitude of delight that these others have this property along with the understanding that under the same freedom these others have exercised, some day, he may have such property. If he attacks someone else's property, claiming they must give it to him and that he deserves to have it, he has contributed to the destruction of the very freedom which provides the opportunity and potential for him acquiring property for himself. In addition Freedom is the key issue in evangelism and spiritual advance and if property is attacked and freedom destroyed this may keep someone from engaging in any effective spiritual advance. Under socialism and communism the division or redistribution of property is one of the greatest and most heinous satanic attacks on freedom, evangelism and spirituality. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment when a person lacks any quantity of property *he still has the freedom to work hard to acquire property* and if freedom is destroyed then this possibility is also destroyed. This is one of the most destructive attacks of tyranny and is the first attack on freedom

by tyrants and they never start by attacking privacy because people are too aware of violations of their privacy. It is inevitable therefore that tyrants invariably become viciously anti-Christian as clearly demonstrated by the tyrannical governments of both China and Russia.

Remember property, privacy and authority are Essentials of freedom and require total inflexibility. Review in your own thinking the status of our nation the last 50, 100 or even 150 years and the redistribution of wealth, graduated taxation, corporate taxation from J Carter, and myriad attempts to destroy 2nd amendment rights and today even first amendment functions and finally the total disdain with which Christianity is being held by the population with restrictions of prayer and public displays of Christian principles, the government mandated closing of churches and that the process of the destruction of our freedom has been occurring for a very long time without most people even noticing since they have been so saturated with themselves in their pseudo prosperity which in fact comes to a people BECAUSE OF FREEDOM.

Freedom Under the Law Related to Crime

The **Royal Family Honor Code** precludes crime and if one says say he has not been a criminal and has fulfilled the law but has not respected the freedom, privacy and property of others and has tried to superimpose his standards on them then he has NOT completely fulfilled the law nor the Royal Family Honor Code. When one accomplishes these functions of respect for the individual's privacy, property and freedom, this is love of others but it is not a personal but an Impersonal Love for Mankind. This love emphasizes the character of the one doing the loving so that he respects the privacy and freedom of others and follows the principle of live and let live. He does not seek to superimpose his personal opinions nor his taboos and Self Righteousness on others.

Inflexibility & Criminality

The Royal Family Honor Code and its basic principle of live and let live **DOES NOT APPLY** when criminality is the issue. This is where the Laws of Divine Establishment and Royal Family Honor Code overlap and diverge. This principle of live and let live is violated under criminality and thus the Laws of Divine Establishment REQUIRE criminals to be removed from society often permanently as in **Rom 13**. In addition to domestic criminals, other nations may be aggressive such as those controlled by communism or islam, both which are out to conquer, neutralize and destroy free thought and all human freedom and therefore, the purpose of the military establishment is to oppose this and when necessary remove these nations from this world permanently.

Essential FEAR & Criminal Restraint

The Crime of Murder violates freedom completely. Blackmail, rape, enslavement are not only sins but crimes against volition and human privacy and theft is a sin and a violation of property. (gr) Phobos, refers in scripture to FEAR regarding punishment and under the Laws of Divine Establishment capital punishment is very often demanded because it is the only restraint capable of influencing the criminal mind with fear of reprisal as a result of the loss of their own life. In addition, since, in effect, communism is a crime as well and maintains control and functions only through the use of unrestrained violence, this is also the only way to stop communism, through FEAR of reprisal from those who oppose them having a military build up which then causes them to FEAR loss of their power, freedom and life. Neither the criminal or the communist mind can be reasoned with nor can any of those involved in islam. The United States of America has backed off from the

map of history with all of our arms limitations, rules of engagement in war, treaties with communists and with our idiotic tolerance of islam and their sharia law being allowed to function in the United States of America. You cannot rationalize nor reason with these kinds of people but only show them your toughness. Statistics have shown that the crime rates were down in the United States since 2013 because the sales of firearms had been dramatically increased and the criminal is afraid of reprisal. However, this has been reversed in 2020 with the advent of anarchistic riots and destruction of private property and the demands to "Defund the Police" which has occurred in some of the major cities who have the most stringent firearms laws and has resulted in unrestrained criminal functions. All confirmed communists, and criminals along with moslems not willing to return to their home countries should be executed by drawing and quartering in their home neighborhood and all the family and neighbors should be forced to walk between the parts as they rot in the sunshine. This is how people whose purpose is to destroy freedom should be treated. In the world there are many people who are only restrained by force or threat of force and these have criminal minds and the only thing which they respect is the potential of being hurt personally. When one has to be intimidated by fear of violence to do something proper he is totally disoriented to reality. When a person fears being forcefully restrained then he has a criminal mind. Criminal minds are totally disoriented to the Laws of Divine Establishment and have no respect for authority unless it is with regard to FEAR of being the object of judicial violence. When violence becomes an issue in authority orientation then this individual is a criminal and is disoriented to the Laws of Divine Establishment and life itself. The bible and the Laws of Divine Establishment demand that punishment for anti-establishment violence should be death. Death is the only true way to punish criminals unless the criminal accepts The Lord Jesus, The Christ and makes Adjustment to the Justice of God in EVERY category.

Criminals are much smarter than psychologists who delude themselves into thinking criminals can be rehabilitated and criminals can cleverly fool them in order to acquire early prison releases. The only way for the criminal to be rehabilitated is by Adjustment to the Justice of God. Fear of punishment under the law restrains a lot of people but when people get smart about the true function of law then respect for the law is what restrains them. When there is restraint by fear of punishment that is not too smart but when restraint is from respect for authority then people are gaining a modicum of intelligence. As a result of these things restraint of Old Sin Nature functions in society demands law enforcement and Law Enforcement personnel. In every society there are many individual Old Sin Natures, some are restrained by respect and others by fear. Fear is the most basic when it is of God or government or Law Enforcement and what these entities might do to punish one who transgresses against them. Restraint from respect for authority must be learned and not coerced and should be directed toward God or something or someone in government.

Respect for Authority is Essential so that everyone can fulfill the function of live and let live and recognizes freedom, privacy and property as well. Individuals have the right, at all times, to not be known or not be criticized or maligned wherever they go and this only results in a society which has respect for authority and functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment. Therefore, restraint in any society is based on either fear or respect or a combination of both. Only FEAR can overcome the vile tendencies of the Old Sin Nature regarding the functions of crime, conspiracy, revolution and use of violence in anarchy. This is exactly why the *bible advocates capital punishment as the means of controlling the criminals, revolutionists, anarchists and communists.* (**Gen 9:6**, **Rom**

13:4) Capital punishment is the highest power in human government. Only with the judicious use of capital punishment can human government function to guarantee the life, volitional freedom, privacy and property of ALL of its citizens. Legislation and Law Enforcement are completely USELESS without the teeth of capital punishment and the law MUST always contain this provision. Therefore, the Fear of capital punishment is a basic principle in the orderly function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and all capital punishment is to be administered by the judicial authorities of the government, federal, state or local when the case requires it. Regardless of the form of government monarchy, republic or oligarchy it is legitimate government as long as the sword of capital punishment is directed toward Evil function and not toward good.

Essentials & Non-Essentials in Crime, Sin & Human Good vs Freedom

Violation of the Laws of Divine Establishment or the Divine Institutions as a result of Sin or Human Good can be crime and both are produced by the greatest EVIL of creation. Human Good is one of the greatest enemies of the believer throughout all of Human History. This is religion, welfare, socialism and communism resulting in erosion of freedom through bureaucratic functions in government. Evil results in the practice of Sin, Crime and also Human Good. The believer must give privacy to others so that they can freely function under the Laws of Divine Establishment or the Royal Family Honor Code at a level which depends on their Status Quo of believer or unbeliever. When one has Mental Attitude Sins toward others he violates the privacy of others and as soon as privacy is violated in any way there begins the destruction of freedom. The only exception is the criminal because they have no right to privacy nor property nor freedom of any kind having voluntarily given up those rights to function OUTSIDE of the rules of society, the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The **Royal Family Honor Code** demands the privacy of the priesthood as the basis for spiritual freedom to live life as unto the Lord and fulfill the Plan of God as decreed by God. This Plan of God can only be fulfilled by believers giving privacy to all individuals in life. As the believer moves ahead in his Spiritual Life with spiritual growth from the intake of Bible Doctrine he must have privacy in order to always be completely objective in learning and applying Bible Doctrine .

Crime, Sin and Human Good always result from Evil and Evil always attacks human freedom. No one ever has a right to confiscate legitimately acquired personal property, especially any means of self defense nor money, because this will eventually result in confiscation of all other property including children, wife, etc. All bureaucracies in the United States government such as, OSHA, EPA, FEMA, BATFE, TSA, HS and all others are Evil and unconstitutional and should be immediately dissolved. The greatest protection of freedoms in life are from legitimate Law Enforcement and Military personnel and therefore the greatest respect should be directed toward the men who serve in these capacities. We have been and continue to be destroying ourselves in the United States of America since the 50's, even long before that, with our foreign and domestic policies based on and saturated with EVIL and by our constant degrading of our military and police. The bottom line is that this country deserves what will certainly be coming to it.

Freedom & the Laws of Divine Establishment

God has said to man through The Mosaic Law that since every person in every nation has an Old Sin Nature it is inevitable that Old Sin Natures will come into conflict. Every human being has an Old Sin Nature but every Old Sin Nature has its own brand of sin which very often conflicts with other

brands of sin and also has its own brand of Human Good conflicting with other brands of Human Good and has its own brand of Evil which conflicts with other brands of Evil. GOD has said that humans must live together in a national entity and that this is Essential to continue to guarantee the preservation of their freedom. There must be enough people living together to form the necessary organizations to guarantee and preserve freedom in their nation and this must exist in other nations as well with their Old Sin Natures. God has therefore given a series of principles which are designed to allow an Old Sin Nature to live next to other Old Sin Natures and have respect for each other's life, property, privacy and volitional freedom. These principles also conclude that certain Old Sin Natures will choose to put themselves completely out of line and in violation of these principles by stealing property and intruding on privacy and freedom with various activities. These Old Sin Natures may even become extremely angry and attempt to destroy life and all of these activities are to be considered crimes and therefore there is also a need need for judicial functions with courts, judges and police for the enforcement of the restraining laws of these people. By this means we have been given certain rules and these have been legislated into law to deal with violations of every aspect of freedom. In addition there must be a wall of defense around a nation to prevent other nations coming and trying to remove the freedom of and to destroy or enslave the citizens and this is the Essential need for a military or force of arms. Along with all this there must be rules for proper sanitation, social acceptability in dress and hygiene, etc. All of this is based on and related to law on how to live with many other people so that each one still has volitional freedom, privacy, property and individual rights.

Therefore Freedom is the heritage of birth which comes along with the imputation of Soul Life to the format soul resulting in Human Life. This is when freedom begins since God created a format soul and imputed Soul Life and the function of the soul includes free will volition and various characteristics which make up the function and principle of freedom. Freedom is therefore a direct extension of the functions of the soul and is given to each individual at physical birth by GOD. Freedom functions in the soul include:

- Volition
- Mentality
- Emotion
- Conscience
- Self Consciousness

Therefore, FREEDOM exists in 2 distinct areas of life as an extension of imputations from GOD of:

- Human Life at physical birth.
- Eternal Life and the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The Laws of Divine Establishment deal with the first area of human freedom related to human life while the principles of Bible Doctrine and the **Royal Family Honor Code** deal with the second area of freedom in the Spiritual Life. Because man was created explicitly to resolve the Angelic Conflict freedom is an ESSENTIAL extension of that conflict into Human History. The Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions are designed to protect human freedom so that Christian evangelism and spiritual advance can occur in all generations of Human History for any individuals who desire it. The Laws of Divine Establishment are designed to protect the life, privacy, property and freedom of the individuals volition for all of mankind. The Decalogue, the 10 Commandments of the Mosaic Law are part of the Laws of Divine Establishment designed to elucidate and protect

human freedom and human rights. There are many biblical statements to the believer about freedom and some include **Gal 5:1, John 8:32, Rom 8:21, 2Cor 3:17, Ps 119:45.**

Therefore Freedom in the Spiritual Life for the Christian must be distinguished from freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment which is the heritage of ALL people in all nations in all generations of history. A prime example is the Preamble of the Constitution of the United States. The existence and perpetuation of freedom in any nation or region or group demands respect for the Laws of Divine Establishment authorized authority. In order for freedom to be appreciated and understood, those who live in a nation must understand the language of the nation under which freedom is explained. This is the very reason only one language should ever be used in school systems. The constitution of the United States of America is written in English (which is no longer understood at all) as are our laws and in no other language. NO ONE has a right to live in this nation without learning the language and customs of this nation and discarding the customs of the nation they have come from. When any person travels to and lives in other countries he should learn their language but when a person comes to this nation and demands to be taught in the public schools of the United States with their original language they are totally divorced from reality and should be removed and prohibited from attending school until or unless they are willing to learn ENGLISH. It is an extreme of ludicrous thinking that one should have rights in a nation when he cannot understand the language in which the rights are elucidated. These concepts and principles represent the proper orientation to the Laws of Divine Establishment and also to Christianity.

The existence and perpetuation of freedom demands self discipline and self sacrifice when that freedom is threatened as well as when that freedom is not understood because of a language barrier. A great deal of discipline and self sacrifice is necessary when one must learn a new language and new customs and these should not be compounded by an unwieldy process of gaining citizenship when it is legitimately sought. In times when there are difficulties in the nation and when the freedom is challenged there is always some self sacrifice involved in understanding freedom and living within the proper framework of that freedom. Military victory is the only means of gaining and maintaining national freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment and no other means exists. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment FREEDOM DEMANDS RESPONSIBILITY from both believer and unbeliever alike. However, in **Rom 13:1-7** the discussion of the responsibility for freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment principles of authority is limited in that context to the believer only. In other words for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ as part of the Royal Family of God under the Royal Family Honor Code the responsibility in the Church Age is to render to Caesar, Human Government, the things that are Caesar's and to God that which is God's. The Royal Family Honor Code demands that all believers recognize the nation in which they live and live by its laws and defend it when needed. Therefore, No Christian can ever be a conscientious objector without being totally disoriented to reality and apostate. To cheat on taxes or avoid military service or ignore responsibilities to your nation is non Christian and Evil. Religious and Christian people who often claim to be conscientious objectors to war have no conscience and no basis for objecting and are yellow cowards and not Americans but traitors to the United States.

The emblem of the United States Army and Air Force with the coat of arms is as close as we come in the United States of America to recognizing the

Laws of Divine Establishment principle of the first commandment. The crest in this example of heraldry refers to the personality and has a constellation of 13 stars, a cloud around the cloud as a glory above the eagle. The crest expresses the spiritual aspirations of the United States of America as a client nation to God. The stars represent the 13 original colonies or states and the cloud is a recognition that we cannot survive as a nation without the protection of God and his blessing. This also demonstrates that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and when we fail to recognize God and his grace we are soon to be destroyed. Glory breaking through the clouds symbolizes the United States as a client nation with responsibility to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Freedom with its permission of evangelism, bible teaching, missionary activity and an established haven for the Jews. This is the principle of the first commandment in the Decalogue.

The second factor in this coat of arms is the arms which have 5 elements including the Eagle, the Escutcheon on the Breast of the Eagle, the Scroll bearing E Pluribus Unum, the Olive Branch in one claw and the Bunch of 13 Arrows in the other claw. The Eagle refers to freedom as the underlying principle in this nation. The Escutcheon is the Constitution and laws which provide freedom, justice, ensure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, ensure general welfare, secure blessing and liberty for both ourselves and OUR POSTERITY. The Eagle is in the form of a triangle and touches at 3 points which refers to the 3 divisions of power in our Constitutional Republic, Judicial, Legislative and Executive branches. The upper ⅓ is composed of horizontal bars and these are called the chief in heraldry referring to the Authority needed to sustain freedom because there cannot be freedom without authority and the Blue color is for righteousness and justice which form the integrity of authority. The 13 Vertical bars alternating red and white represent the 13 original states and each is equal and has equal representation and is guaranteed the same rights by the Constitution of the United States. The color Red refers to life and white to freedom and all states and all citizens have these rights since God gave life in imputation to the soul to all human beings which defines that freedom. The scroll in the heraldry above the head of the eagle with E Pluribus Unum represents the sacred scriptures of the bible as the guideline in history. The motto is "From Many One" meaning, "Many types of people but all citizens of the same nation". *This phrase in and of itself means that there is no such thing as an Afro-American, Mexican-American, German-American, Italian-American and there are simply Americans and to consider otherwise means in effect that you do not belong in the United States of America*. There is no such thing as discrimination because of color, background or anything else and all citizens have the same rights AND RESPONSIBILITIES under our Constitution and Laws. The bundle of 13 arrows are in the 'sinister' or left hand so that in time of war the eagle is supposed to face the arrows while in time of peace the eagle is supposed to face the olive branch of peace. Unfortunately in this country, at this time, because of distortions of radical liberalism, the eagle always faces the olive branch in both war and peace. The arrows represent the common defense of the nation by the military establishment and the principle that all freedom comes through military victory. The 13 arrows show that all states contribute to the common defense of the nation. The olive branch refers not only to peace but to what peace provides as freedom, privacy and opportunity, live and let live. This simple example of what this country has been built on clearly demonstrates that in order for this or any other nation to survive as a client nation to God the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions MUST be respected and obeyed by all in the nation else we perish from history.

Freedom, Authority & Spiritual code

Freedom and Authority are of no value in a society without voluntary individual self discipline. The concepts of those radical liberals like Ralph Nader who want to save all of us from any possibility of death or living under a degraded environment or having danger in our medicine cabinets are all selfrighteous and an incredible danger to freedom because they contain no concept of what freedom actually is nor of authority. These kinds of radical liberal crusading people are totally arrogant and self centered and believe that freedom is only to enable THEM to choose what is right and wrong for everyone else. In the Decalogue of the Mosaic Law the Jews have freedom defined in terms of prohibitions some of which are sins. In effect the Decalogue does not define sin but only mentions it as a means of defining freedom in terms of NEGATIVES

- Stealing == a violation of the principle of personal property
- Adultery == a violation of property of the male husband, the woman marries, ie. stealing property
- Murder == a violation of one's privacy and complete removal of the use personal volition.
- Loving God == Encouragement of authority.

The Decalogue therefore defines freedom in terms of Morality, privacy, property, and authority. Love the Lord thy God with all your thinking and soul is one of the commands because only as one loves God with all of the Right Lobe of his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can he enter into proper function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and function in life with proper motivation. Therefore, the Decalogue defines FREEDOM NOT sin.

Freedom is the basis for having the option of evangelism in the client nation and for the spiritual advance of the believer under Positive Volition. In the Mosaic Law the Laws of Divine Establishment code is known as the Judgments. By this means and by the setting up of the Divine Institutions God through the Mosaic Law establishes both policy and blessing patterns for the client nation to God. This code includes taxes, hygiene, health, personal relationships and everything needed to keep a nation functioning in an orderly manner including law, military organization, business practices, etc.

Privacy, Property & Freedom

The whole purpose of the Palestinian covenant to Israel is the provision of national real estate property. This promise delineates a property which will belong to the Jews in the millennial dispensation. Today, and throughout their history, only what the Jew can conquer and hold in the middle east belongs to him. In the millennium The Lord Jesus, The Christ will give the whole of the Palestinian covenant to the Jews as a sovereign decision. In the past and at this time the Jews, and all people of the world, have to use their military to HOLD their property and preserve their volition and privacy. The purpose of the military is to provide and protect FREEDOM and this also means protecting the individually owned property in the national entity. Unless a person owns property or has some personal possessions he will have no sense of responsibility as a member of the Human Race. This demonstrates the incomprehensible level of irresponsibility we see in welfare functions and in the recipients in the United States of America today who OWN NOTHING which is not given to them by government and have no responsibility for trying to accomplish anything in life. Property is a great issue in life, much more than most people realize, and in the Palestinian covenant property is the overriding issue for freedom and responsibility of the people. When a person is irresponsibly free he is either an idiot or psychopathic moron who has some idiotic concept of what freedom is.

Property, wealth in money, personal possessions, etc., all these things are a part of freedom. This is one reason why the Swiss have the greatest government in history with total states rights so that the Swiss cantons are practically self governing and they have universal military training which goes from ages 16 to 47 unless a person volunteers for longer terms. These men train with their weapons and take them HOME with them even after being discharged and when on active duty each man has a pass book which records that they have trained weekly and qualified monthly and every male is part of that military. They have great fortifications and an extremely stable economic system so that no one wants to interfere with their system and their free enterprise functions. When the United States of America goes out as a client nation to God the only nation which at this time would qualify for client nation status would be Switzerland where there has been an incredible evangelical movement. When the United States goes down there will always be The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History to provide another client nation as the stabilizing factor in the world.

Inflexibility & Freedom

As has been discussed an Essential in life is FREEDOM and to maintain freedom very often it must be FOUGHT FOR. General Kosciusko had this priority and was totally inflexible about freedom and totally flexible about applications of freedom. He was a master in the functions of the American War for Independence and he was a genius AND a plodder which produced in him strength through flexibility and his history is truly amazing. He had honor and never compromised with anyone on a principle of freedom and was totally consistent in his belief about freedom but always flexible with regard to its application. His life became the momentum for the fight for polish freedom which succeeded several times until Franklin Roosevelt, the most COMPLETELY EVIL president in our history, gave Poland to the Russians. Strength through flexibility is a fantastic thing to be seen in military situations and also in many spiritual situations. The Bible Doctrine communications of the Apostle Paul motivated believers to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God (and continues to do so) and at the same time to become aware of and function under the Royal Family Honor Code above any system of morality. Attainment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by believers is the result of the motivation and proper function under the Royal Family Honor Code and it functions perfectly with these mature believers because it requires so very much flexibility. The Royal Family Honor Code requires understanding freedom including the umbrella of authority and principles of privacy and property. It requires Inflexibility regarding the Essentials of Bible Doctrine vs total flexibility regarding Non-Essentials of the applications of doctrine. There must also be the proper function of Impersonal Love toward all humanity and the development of a set of divine Norms and Standards from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Freedom & Authority-2 Great Issues in Life

In the United States for quite some time there has been an Authority Problem. It is clearly demonstrated by labor unions which are completely immoral and Evil because as a member of a labor force one has freedom to leave any job at any time but never to say that no one can take his job away. Management has the right to remove anyone from any job at their discretion without reason. Labor never has a right to make any demand on management or to cause management to be forced to do things the way labor desires. This is IMMORAL, contrary to FREEDOM, and total rejection of AUTHORITY, it is anti-God, anti-Christian, and against anything decent in life. Labor unions should have been disbanded long ago and they are criminal and Evil and only Senator Robert

Howard Taft ever really recognized this. When the legislative branch of the government passes laws which attack the management of free enterprise businesses these are also immoral and criminal. Proper authority orientation in a society must be developed for the individual under:

- Strict parents
- Strict Athletic Coaches
- Difficult Teachers
- Tough Military Service Training
- Strict local churches teaching expository Bible Doctrine

All Believers are always under the authority of:

- The Lord Jesus, The Christ
- Bible Doctrine
- A Right Pastor Teacher

Believers being under the authority of a Pastor Teacher should recognize that he also is in fact under a system of authority with doubles:

- Double Divine Discipline
- Double Blessing
- Double Responsibility

Pastor Teachers are servants of Christian believers and must provide accurate dogmatic Bible Doctrine under a system of strict discipline each day for every believer who desires it. This is the only way to orient to life, business, the military, a profession, social life, sexual life, etc. There is no portion of life nor any capacity for life which is divorced from discipline and authority. Arrogance is the major problem with people who think of self as 'free spirits' and free from discipline and as one who can run loose doing as they please in life. (**Rom 12, 13, 14, 15, 16**)

Spiritual Freedom & Spiritual Authority

Every believer possesses under the Royal Family Honor Code 4 factors which contribute to spiritual freedom from which he cannot ever be divorced:

- Freedom with the unimpeded ability to choose, FREEDOM of Volition
- The Right to Privacy
  - Privacy must be sacred and inviolate
- The Right to Property
  - Freedom cannot exist without property which must be sacred and inviolate
- Authority as an Essential controlling factor on the individuals freedom.
  - Authority prevents the freedom of one from interfering with the freedom of another.

Therefore, every believer possesses under the Royal Family Honor Code the freedom, privacy and physical means provided by Logistical Grace to advance to the objective of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under the Plan of God.

The Laws of Divine Establishment never divorce freedom from privacy and property and authority and neither does the Royal Family Honor Code. The basic concept of the Royal Family Honor Code says that now that one is a believer, a royal priest, one's privacy must be respected so that one can choose the option for or against Bible Doctrine and God will handle this either way. In addition one's property must be respected and if a person leaves something on the ground it must be safe there until they return for it. Children should always be trained thoroughly to not touch anything which does not belong to them EVER for any reason and they MUST be trained so that they would never

steal anything from anyone in any situation. Things left lying in public should be as safe as in a bank vault. The privacy of the priesthood guarantees that all believers have the right to live out life as unto the Lord without any interference or distraction from others and this principle is to LIVE and LET LIVE and is part of the Laws of Divine Establishment. Under the privacy of his priesthood the individual has a right to assemble in the Local Church to listen to the teaching of Bible Doctrine or NOT. This does not give anyone in attendance in the Local Church the right to move and talk and distract others who IF they want to listen should be able to concentrate without interference or distraction from others.

Reality is that the only thing which can actually change anyone is Bible Doctrine and there is no sense in allowing other people to try to change others to their way of thinking. When the Pastor Teacher in the Local Church enforces this principle, every believer can thus approach Bible Doctrine objectively, confident that when a passage condemns him, no one is also judging him. Objectivity is Essential in the perception of Bible Doctrine and it is impossible to concentrate and inculcate doctrine when one is concerned about who knows his personal business. In any bible teaching situation the believer must take everything as from the ministry of God the Holy Spirit and when anyone violates any of these concepts he must know and use the rebound procedure with alacrity. In addition the principle of privacy demands that all believers avoid gossip, maligning and judging others because this is a most serious violation of the priesthood. The Royal Family Honor Code demands toleration for the Non-Essentials demonstrated by others and only requires inflexibility with regard to Bible Doctrine as absolute truth.

The privacy of the royal priesthood is the believer's guarantee that he has a right to live life as unto the Lord totally without coercion as an extension of the principle of live and let live in the Laws of Divine Establishment. Therefore the Royal Family Honor Code with its commands for Impersonal Love, respect for the privacy of other believers and distinguishing between Essentials and Non-Essentials is the basis for proper freedom extended to each believer in his advance in the Spiritual Life. There can be no spiritual advance for any believer unless, in the Local Church family, they are tolerated and their privacy is respected and they are loved on an Impersonal Love basis so that Bible Doctrine is the primary issue in their life.

The Royal Family Honor Code emphasizes the privacy of the royal priesthood which means believers have privacy when alone and also when in public. Socialist scum do not believe in property but believe in the redistribution of wealth and prohibition of the possession of any means of self defense and all other things in life which are designed to facilitate destruction of freedom. Freedom must be protected by the umbrella of authority and spiritual authority is delegated from God to Bible Doctrine then to the properly prepared Pastor Teacher and the Evangelist, then in the local church to deacons and other administrators, all which are Essential for spiritual advance. Therefore it should be clear that the Christian Way of Life is a way of freedom and this is why Christianity is PRO-Property, PRO-Privacy and PRO-Authority and for Free Enterprise. The Royal Family Honor Code lies above morality and secular integrity and is in fact a super spiritual integrity. It is related to the freedom concepts of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the interrelationship of Volition, Privacy, Property and Authority and encompasses Personal Love and Impersonal Love along with a differentiation between Essentials and Non-Essentials in life. In fact the Christian Way of Life is

found in the Royal Family Honor Code. The primary thrust of which demands authority orientation for continued momentum and advancement in that Christian Way of Life.

Essential Freedom & Property

The person who has no property of any value as a result of doing nothing of any consequence for his entire life or being a miserable failure in life and says he thinks all the people who have much more than he should give to him so that he can have something too because they have acquired so much, is absolutely totally divorced from and disoriented to reality. This is the distorted EVIL function of the government of the United States of America today. Freedom as the key issue and underlying purpose for HUMAN LIFE is composed of individual volition, property and privacy under the umbrella of authority. If one votes for such a thing as to divide up property and redistribute it he is voting for the destruction of freedom. Whether one has property or not, he must understand in his soul that any attack on property is a destruction of freedom. It should make every individual delighted that others have excesses of property because he should understand that he has the potential, under a system of freedom, to some day also have luxurious property. However, if he attacks someone else's property he contributes to the destruction of the very freedom with which HE could acquire such property. Freedom is the issue in evangelism and also in spiritual advance and if one attacks property and destroys freedom he may be keeping another from effective spiritual advance, maybe even salvation. Division of property or redistribution of property is one of the greatest attacks on freedom in history and it is the most heinous satanic attack on evangelism and spirituality. The real principle is that if one does not have property he still has the freedom to work hard to acquire property but if he destroys freedom he destroys any possibility for himself and everyone else of acquiring property. This is one of the greatest attacks of tyranny and this is the first attack on freedom by tyrants and they never start by attacking privacy because people are too aware of their privacy.

Remember free will volition, property, privacy and authority are Essentials of freedom and require total inflexibility. To clearly see this destruction in practice the reader should review the status of our nation the last 50, 100 or even 150 years and the redistribution of wealth, graduated taxation system which is a confiscation of property (Money), corporate taxation (from J Carter), the ongoing attempts to destroy 2nd amendment rights and in the recent past with 'politically correct speech' even the destruction of the first amendment functions and finally the total disdain with which Christianity is being held by the population along with the restrictions on public prayer and public displays of Christian principles, and that all of this information was taken from bible studies taught around 1978 but this is 2021. This process of the destruction of freedom has been occurring for a very long time in this nation without most people even noticing because they have been so saturated with themselves in their pseudo prosperity. The overwhelming increase of the EVIL out of control big government in the United States of America has destroyed the majority of the freedom which is clearly enucleated in our constitution.

If property is attacked even when a person has no property this is an attack on freedom as is also any attack on privacy. An attack against legitimate authority such as we see on the call to 'defund' the police because of supposed racial bias or on the military is an attack directly on freedom. Any time one is anti-police he is against freedom and is a FASCIST. If one wants confiscation or redistribution of property or a guaranteed income he is a FASCIST and the enemy of the cross.

Every person in a society, especially every believer, must each take responsibility for maintaining freedom. Authority, as a part of this great issue, is the whole system of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions which must be understood and adhered to by both believer and unbeliever in a society.

Socialism vs Freedom & Property

There is no freedom in socialism and welfare state functions nor under islam or communism such as the Nazis, Russians and Chinese have installed in their nations. Redistribution of wealth is an Evil satanic concept and is what the "3rd world" has clamored for, for many decades. The underlying principle of socialistic redistribution of wealth is a theft or property in the form of MONEY. To offset the concept of 3rd world nations desiring redistribution of wealth, the client nation should be sending properly trained and motivated missionaries as part of the responsibility of the client nation and not using tax payers monies to try to BUY friends in the world. When money began to be substituted for missionary functions under the 'Marshal Plan' type operation, where American's tax money is given to nations for their friendly consideration, it became obvious the client nation United States of America entered, and has constantly been in, a degenerate state of decline. When a client nation to God sends money instead of missionaries to any other nation there is degeneracy from the Interlocking System of Arrogance in both nations. (**2Kings 18:14-16**) The people of any nation must be mature to be able to properly enjoy and function under their freedom and the more childish the population becomes the more freedom disappears from their souls until it eventually completely disappears from the nation when God destroys the nation with the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline. Client nations to God provide an umbrella of freedom for the people of the world. This umbrella of freedom enables Evangelism both at home and in other parts of the world and all evangelism when properly done must line up with freedom not involving coercion. Evangelism requires a concise, lucid, accurage presentation of gospel information so that the individual's volition can be be allowed to function freely in choosing for or against Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

There is a trend in this nation, as it moves more and more into socialism with the concept of redistribution of wealth, to confiscate the property of those who have worked for and come by property honestly and to take it away from them and give it to scum who have not worked for it nor have any right to it nor have any motivation to have anything unless they can gain it by violence, revolution or tyranny. The people without property who never worked for property nor strive for it, nor have come by it honorably are the scum of the earth and perfect converts into communism. This has happened in Iran, Central America, Cuba, El-Salvador, Yugoslavia, Hungary, Romania, Latvia and Estonia the earliest victims of communist scum, along with all of Russia, China and Asia in general. When people lose respect for property or have inordinate lust for property which is not theirs then the civilization collapses and the client nation has no Modus Operandi. Therefore, the sanctity of property is Essential for freedom and freedom is Essential for evangelism and spiritual growth and spiritual growth is Essential for proper missionary functions.

There is no possibility of having personal property nor government property nor geography for the client nation unless the military establishment can first provide it and then maintain it. The establishment system of the United States of America as a client nation has 2 parts which gain freedom for the people and then guarantees the protection of that freedom and the property which must accompany it:

- The Military Establishment
- The Jurisprudence System and Law Enforcement

These were one and the same in the ancient world and there is no property ownership which could possibly exist without a strong military which could use force to gain it and then protect it. There is an ongoing satanic conspiracy to destroy military establishments in nations such as ours which function under freedom principles in order to bring in the satanic pseudo millennium through communism. Therefore, no nation can ever exceed the level of property ownership which its military ability can protect because one way or another it will lose property to a stronger nation. Therefore, the military is the very basis for freedom and security of property under freedom and there can be no freedom without ownership of property. Without ownership of property there is no real freedom and no basis for responsibility. It is interesting to consider that one of the best ways to learn responsibility is to work for and acquire personal property and this is the easiest way to grow up and in the past children were raised in this way, but no longer.

Privacy, Property & Freedom

Privacy is the environment of function for freedom and there cannot be freedom without privacy coexisting with it. Property which is legitimately acquired or possessed by the individual is as much a part of freedom as is privacy. There cannot be freedom without private ownership of property where by the individual can do with it what he wants, when he wants and where he wants. Freedom ensures the right to use, enjoy, benefit from or dispose of anything which can be subject to ownership of the individual as tangible property. NONE OF THIS CAN EXIST WITHOUT THE UMBRELLA OF AUTHORITY which protects the freedom of one person from encroachment by another. Codex III of the Mosaic Law defines authority in terms of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions given to mankind by God to protect and preserve the Human Race. There must be proper authority but it must never destroy the balance with or infringe on or remove freedom.

A client nation cannot exist without property and personal property cannot exist for the individual without the sanctity of property under freedom as per the Laws of Divine Establishment. Therefore, one of the most important issues of freedom is the sanctity of personal property and this is not only LAND which is the basic concept of property but any tangible materialistic thing. Christianity is not anti-materialism and is not pro-asceticism but it is PRO-property and the believer has a right to accumulate property, as much as he wants, or NONE at all. There was even a series of property clauses in the contracts of the ancient Jews in which even though one sold his property it was to be returned to him every 50th year the year of jubilee. This alone tells us God has an attitude toward property and it is that people have a right to that property and it is Essential for their effective spiritual function. In a nation where people have no right to own property and the state owns all the property, this is a people without freedom and in total slavery. In communism the government owns the property not the people and thus the people are always victims of governmental tyranny because there is no such thing as personal property. There has been in the United States of America for many decades a constant attack on personal property and confiscation by the government of personal property and there exist several organizations in the government which have assumed the right to do this. Under Freedom, the individual and other organizations have the right to purchase and own property and it makes no difference how little or how much they

own. PROPERTY MUST BE SACRED TO THE INDIVIDUAL AND COLLECTIVELY AND GEOGRAPHICALLY TO THE NATION as a CLIENT NATION.

Essentials of Privacy

Divine Institutions #1, Volition is the basis for self determination with positive and negative aspects to it. The real person is in the soul which immediately has complete privacy since it is in fact totally invisible. The individual starts in his soul with perfect privacy to think and decide what he may want to say or do or what he may desire. The normal soul through self consciousness and even through emotion relates this privacy to life. Therefore it is obvious that every individual's soul is totally encased in privacy as a result of being invisible thus giving the concept of freedom its Essential meaning. Therefore freedom always includes privacy and the right to possess property but must be under the umbrella of some system of authority. This authority umbrella may be as simple as self discipline preventing uncontrolled and irrational use of freedom or it may be a system of rules set up to enable many souls to coexist in close proximity without overtly violating each other's freedoms.

There cannot ever be equality and freedom coexisting since each inevitably destroys the other. Freedom gives opportunity under the direction of volition with or without effective motivation and enables one to advance or retrogress in any endeavor in life. Therefore, as a result of possessing varying levels of freedom, motivation and ability there will always be a wide span of variation in the Status Quo of individuals. Therefore, clearly, when there is freedom there can be no equality ever and when there is equality there can be no freedom and the desire for or promise of equality is the total basis for the establishment and function of tyranny. Freedom is an integral part of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Equality is part of the satanic system of the Cosmic Dynaspheres to control this world under Satan. Equality reaches its best representation in Marxist or Fabian Socialism, Welfare state functions, communism, and other tyrannical systems. In the United States of America and the world in general freedom has been equated with equality since before the 1970s but these remain totally antithetical so that freedom motivates one man to advance in life and others to sit on park benches and become drug addicts and useless. For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ the attitude toward Bible Doctrine in this life results in some believers entering the eternal state in heaven with great rewards and some just being there. Arrogant individuals always buy into this system of equality because no matter how high one's IQ may be, if he is arrogant, he is stupid and always accepts the concepts of equality, which are in fact the Modus Operandi of tyranny. The minds of those who demand equality are in fact seeking superiority to those they claim to want equality with. Freedom, on the other hand, is invented by God and ordained by him in order to give each individual use of this self determination to fulfill the purpose for which God created man, to resolve the Angelic Conflict.

Freedom means and in fact equates with privacy and every attack of big government on privacy means an attack on freedom. Individuals have a divinely ordained right to privacy and when government or any other organization attacks privacy they are attacking freedom and functioning under systems which are anti God. If a criminal enters one's home this attacks privacy and the home owner should be free to shoot the criminal where he stands and this is what controls crime. Property is an Essential part of freedom and the greatest incentive in a free enterprise system under the Laws of Divine Establishment functions is to see people driving fancy cars and owning large ranches and living ostentatiously and having things associated with great prosperity and

success so that especially believers should think !!HOORAAAHHH!! for freedom. These overt manifestations of prosperity are incentives to others to build up a business and gain prosperity themselves and it shows that free enterprise, ordained of God, is the greatest economic system ever existing in this world and as a result of this the average American in our past lived better than kings of old times.

Maintaining Freedom through Flexibility

Communists view warfare as total commitment where all social, political, economic and psychological aspects receive as much meticulous attention as the military aspects. Under communism children, women and men, military or civilian are all totally committed to war together. In the United States of America the people are stupid about warfare and inflexible in the military doctrine. When one fights communism or islam it means killing men, women and even children to attain victory and unconditional surrender. We did not learn this in the Korean nor in the Vietnam War and in fact prosecuted many of our own military men who figured this out and tried to gain victory by the use of these principles. This is a great vulnerability in the Judeo-Christian heritage of the United States of America and the enemy seized on it as a primary psychological warfare scheme and pushed it here in the United States. The vulnerability is found in the false and distorted biblical concept of "Thou Shalt Not Kill" which is a miss translated and totally misinterpreted segment of the bible. It is false in every way and the prohibition on KILLING deals only with MURDER and NOT EVER on killing the enemy in battle in defense of your country or in law enforcement or in defense of yourself. Our communist enemies exploited this concept and the idea that the United States of America was interfering in the internal affairs of peaceful Asian nations to the great detriment and defeat in both the Korean and Vietnam Wars. They promoted the theme that the United States military machine was butchering innocent women and children with bombs and terror reigning from the skies. This is occurring again in the more recent wars in the middle east and is used as a justification by islamic radicals for a jihad war of terrorism against the United States of America. Several movements in the United States were influenced by these concepts and they used thousands of Americans against American military policy. Their most successful psychological efforts were in getting Americans to oppose the Vietnam war and this caused many American soldiers to die because of pressure these movements put on government to NOT allow the military to aggressively seek victory in that war. American protesters were in fact responsible for the deaths of Americans in uniform and this was the Hippie Freak person who was and still is an arrogant cowardly weak sister with vain thinking of self as intelligent but was then and remains a fool and is so very easily manipulated by the communists. Unfortunately for the United States of America today it is THESE VERY PEOPLE who are running the government in this 21st century. The communists in the United States also promoted black resistance saying there was a racial bias and that the war was unfair to blacks since too many were dying for flower children and peace nicks. This is exactly similar today to the racial bias being promoted by the "black lives matter" movement in the 21st century and their push for defunding the police in major cities claiming that Law Enforcement is generally racially biased against blacks. They proposed that the United States of America's military industrial complex was using the war to make greater profits and the war was monstrously against our JudeoChristian heritage and the prohibition by the bible regarding KILLING. The communists theorize and put into function the principles that there are 2 ways to make war:

- Type I: Fighting with big machines and using them to advantage in warfare. The big advantage to this function is that when it occurs nothing can stand against these military machines and

the war can be won in short order. In addition it is the machines which bear the brunt of the battle and human casualties are minimized when machines succeed in doing their job. This is however extremely expensive and will bankrupt the nation which tries to keep it up for too long a time. A strong disadvantage is that terrain, vegetation and weather can hamper these machines and for effective use the machines must be brought to bear quickly and then win or the nation will be economically bled dry in a protracted war. Generally, because the society in the United States of America places a high premium on all human life it is compelled to fight type I war with machines and also because the citizenry will not support Type II warfare. In addition the media, citizenry and congress would demand immediate courts martial of any military commander who continued to accept wholesale casualties as the 7th and 9th divisions took in 1972 in Vietnam.

- Type II: Guerrilla warfare is using large numbers of men lightly armed with tactical rifles, machine guns, mortars, rocket launchers, etc., to strike and run quickly in unanticipated areas. This is a protracted type of war which weakens the enemy over a long period of time eventually destroying him when he is too weak. Unfortunately the United States of America is too clean and neat and too stupid to realize the advantages of this type of warfare and how to use both Type I and Type II together. In addition the United States is also clearly unable to combat this type of warfare.

When one believes certain types of false doctrine and becomes inflexible he loses his ability to defend his freedom successfully. Loss of flexibility in this area of warfare is very destructive and will eventuate in the United States of America coming under the tyranny of communism or islam as is clearly occurring in this 21st century. Communism is not delusional about using any and all types of warfare to gain victory. They can and have to a maximum extent since World War II exploited the media of this country and the 'religions' of this nation and have no toleration for true biblical fundamental Christianity in any way. The National counsel of churches and Methodists are part of this communist push both being pro-communist and for the destruction of the principle of personal property with socialistic functions. The media today in this 21st century is the strongest influence in the nation and along with extreme radical liberalism is the strongest influence against ever fighting an unconventional war. We are constantly propagandized regarding communism taking over other nations and islam being a "religion" of Peace, which it is NOT, so that we are ripe for destruction today more than at any other time in our short national history. The people in general have no capability to think correctly and have no ability to understand the Essentials of even the Laws of Divine Establishment or the Divine Institutions but they need to become inflexible about them and become totally flexible about fighting both communism and islam. The stand that the United States took in South East Asia was a good move but it was destroyed by the strong influence of the communists neutralizing our efforts at home. The United States should have been defending Rhodesia and South Africa and should have been slaughtering Cuban troops and also should have gone in and protected the Hungarians against Russian communism but those in control of the government in this nation are unquestionably STUPID about such things. Starting in the 1970s and even more so today in this 21st century this country has been unable to even enforce our own laws and maintain order in our cities. The only hope and confidence that remains for believers is that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History because for this nation to survive and continue in history THESE THINGS MUST ALL STOP. The United States of America is in grave trouble and the only answer is found in Bible Doctrine which must reside in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul

of believers. These trends will never stop when there is inflexibility and stupidity saturating the people with regard to the Non-Essentials of life, which in fact, is the overall status quo of this nation today more than any other time.

Un-coerced volition, privacy and property all stand and fall together under the guidance of properly delegated authority. Therefore the person who is destitute and wants redistribution of wealth in order to have a guaranteed income is the worst person alive on the earth because he is destroying the thing which is most important in life and the actual reason man was created in the first place. Therefore, the primary issue in life is in fact FREEDOM and without it one has nothing and may have a guaranteed income through some idiotic socialistic function but has given up his most precious possession, freedom, for a mess of pottage, a bit of money and the Evil vile federal government in existence today is confiscating even that money as property in unfair taxation.

Government, which is supposed to protect freedom is in fact totally anti freedom today in the United States of America. If the government were to uphold freedom then there would be great production and the radical liberal socialists and crusaders would never be able to function in this country. There would be great freedom in enterprise and the laws of supply and demand would function properly and the nation would have already gone through the 2nd even 3rd great depression to clean out society and the revitalized currency would be the greatest in the world. The people in the United States of America have no concept or understanding of freedom any longer and the majority of the people have personal selfish reasons for doing everything, all which destroy freedom. Freedom is life and this is given by God with it designed to take advantage of the option to choose for or against The Lord Jesus, The Christ and the Plan of God.

When people get involved in the violation of freedom in rioting and looting the police should simply shoot and kill the leaders and they should be backed by the chief of police and the mayor of the city and every Law Enforcement and government official in existence. The people who talk against freedom by talking and acting against the 2nd amendment to the constitution and espouse the concept of criminal rights are totally destroying freedom. By using his freedom, the criminal has decided to give up his rights, therefore Criminals HAVE NO RIGHTS AND THERE SHOULD BE NO SUCH THING AS READING RIGHTS TO A CRIMINAL SINCE THEY HAVE SET THEMSELVES OUTSIDE THE BOUNDS OF SOCIETY AND THUS ARE NOT UNDER THE PRINCIPLES OF LAW AND THE RIGHTS UNDER THE LAW. There should be no such thing as a criminal in jail being able to sue for violation of constitutional rights because they have voluntarily, by the use of their free will decisions to become criminal, given up these rights in exchange for a life of crime. Occasionally there may be an innocent person being jailed or executed and this is unfortunate but simply proves that human error exists and this unfortunate circumstance should not be the basis for a soft national stand regarding crime. The principle is that because of an occasional mistake made with regard to single persons freedom must not ever be taken away from millions. I would rather survive by my own initiative or starve to death in Freedom than have other's property taken or destroyed to feed me.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential of Authority Orientation

Every individual has the right to do things the way he wants to do them as long as he is not committing crimes or on drugs or as long as parents approve of what children do and most importantly as long as he is not interfering with anyone else's desire to do things the way they want. No one ever orients to life properly until he orients to authority because authority orientation is Essential to make anything of one's life. One of the great tragedies in life is to be absolutely correct about something and oppose the authority over that situation which makes one absolutely wrong. Therefore, in all cases, Right + Wrong makes things WRONG. When you try to push against authority even though being right in a situation, you are absolutely wrong; whether in business, education, home life, military, or any other situation of legitimate authority. This is how people become neurotic and psychotic. When believers know they are correct about things in controversy, they must keep it to themselves and simply be right before God. It is taking that which is right and pushing it on others which is totally wrong. This is life in the arena of Non-Essentials. However, regarding the Essentials of Bible Doctrine we must be totally inflexible and dogmatic. The problem with the weak negative believer is that when they know no doctrine they think the Non-Essentials are the Essentials and this is where those in authority must straighten them out either spiritually or in civil life.

Under the Laws of Divine Establishment and principles of the Modus Operandi of Christianity, authority is defined as a legal power of God delegated by God, where by some members of the Human Race have jurisdiction and responsibility for others. There is a level of authority in each of the Divine Institutions and it is also delegated in the Spiritual Life. There is the authority of God himself and he does not communicate with people in this dispensation but He has delegated His authority to Bible Doctrine, then the Pastor Teacher who is consistent in the study of Bible Doctrine, and then to the administration of the local church and down to the teachers of children in the local church. Whenever a person has the responsibility for teaching a class of children but really teaching at any level in life, he has authority over those who are his students. In the realm of spiritual authority there must be the the authority of Bible Doctrine and of the believer's Positive Volition toward it and his function under it as a result of his continuous intake of it so that spiritual growth can exist. Any authority in the spiritual realm which divorces itself from the Bible Doctrines of scripture immediately becomes useless and susceptible to all levels of Divine Discipline. Therefore, God has provided authority for every function in life and has set up a way of life under the Royal Family Honor Code for the believer who is under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and advancing in the Spiritual Life. It is the faithful, accurate, consistent doctrinal teaching on the part of Pastor Teachers which results in great Authority Orientation for believers in their congregations. Authority Orientation is always a source of inspiration and blessing to others and self and is Essential for proper Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and is the only means of gaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the phenomenal blessing in time from the Spiritual Life. Therefore it is Authority Orientation which is Essential for formation of the pivot of believers which sustain and advance the client nation as well.

Flexibility, Inflexibility & Authority Orientation & Function

Any truly great thing in life which is to be accomplished properly takes a group not an individual. In such a group, when it functions properly, there must be one at the top with an established policy and system of organization and all others carrying out that policy. It takes a team of all kinds of people

to do things properly and to motivate those at the bottom to perform their functions to the highest standards. There must be a great interrelationship among believers and those with great authority MUST be totally sensitive to those under them and there must always be the overriding concept of thoughtfulness. Leadership is always a subject for consideration wherever a group is functioning and the most important primary function of one in a position of leadership is to know those under him and their responsibilities and to enter into their feelings, sensitivities, problems and difficulties about things so that these will not hinder the function of the team from bottom to the top. Today the one great shortcoming of leadership in many areas of function in this nation is that LOYALTY is Essential but it must come from the TOP of the organization DOWN to the BOTTOM of the organization FIRST before it can be expected to come from the bottom back to the top. This is what is supposed to occur in competition at its best when the team is so well organized that it can go against any others with success. People in a group MUST function as a team not as individuals and they must be flexible. Once a group has inculcated authority orientation the leaders must recognize that those under their authority and leadership are human beings and that to get the highest level of performance from them the leaders must be flexible. Every great thing ever accomplished is accomplished by a group and the greatest trouble occurs from those who become carried away with their authority and function in arrogance never recognizing the existence of the group. Adding arrogance to authority destroys the virtue of authority and thus adds inflexibility to it. It is Arrogance producing or added to inflexibility which destroys the virtue in authority and those with the authority then become inflexible. This is the antithesis of the function of the Royal Family Honor Code and no group ever succeeds under arrogance and inflexibility. Leaders must always enforce group discipline but must also know and understand when to turn their back on a situation and relax and produce a sudden startling change from the authority wielder. There is no book written on when or how to actually accomplish that. The trouble with leaders trying to always go by the 'book' is that they become carried away with the authority and the 'book' never takes cognizance of the PEOPLE under a command as being HUMAN. There must always be loyalty toward those under one's authority and thoughtfulness and the concept of flexibility which gives drive and motivation to those being led and makes a difference between them having Esprit DE Corps and lacking it.

Essential Authority Orientation

Authority is a creation of God and it recognizes that there are millions of individuals who can take full responsibility for decisions in their own personal life but could never handle the responsibility of providing for others. Authority requires a person being willing to take responsibility for his decisions and also for the lives of many others. Most people, like those in government today, think of having authority in terms of arrogance and being able to tell others what to do and have them bow to their high position in life but this is not authority only deep seated arrogance. Authority is Essential because people in general are not equal nor do they have equal or even similar capabilities nor the rare quality of thought regarding proper policies in social life, national life and business life. Authority in business is well established and it involves the subscribing of capital and then finding someone who can set up a system of policies and procedures to use that capital and get production results and make a profit. It involves the concepts of going from manufacturing to marketing and someone must take responsibility for the whole operation and therefore this person must have great moral courage. Therefore, authority demands **moral courage** as well as integrity and fairness to all those under the authority. These principles have been well established in free enterprise for

thousands of years but the arrogance of petty people in government interfere with this and have all but completely destroyed free enterprise in the United States.

Authority orientation is Essential for function under military operations but also in any group function in life especially in times of pressure, adversity and disaster. Authority orientation is the #1 basic commodity for moral courage in the professional. From authority orientation comes moral courage and from this comes the ability to meet all varieties of situations by improvising when under pressure. The structure of adult life is not a playpen for waving a rattle or being funny or horsey and is not a glorifying revolt against authority. Adult life TOTALLY involves authority orientation. There will come a time, which will occur, when there is no system of authority to be oriented to and each individual is then on his own based on his own self discipline authority. When one functions oriented to authority he then can have moral courage and then can easily demonstrate physical courage. When one has moral courage when there is no authority and is left to his own devices, he can snap to any situation and function with physical courage. Believers especially should not be waiting to become heroes but building proper orientation in order to be able to have great moral courage when it is needed. However, authority orientation does not exclude humor, relaxation or good tradition but it does exclude any activity which is dishonorable. Therefore when the believer properly functions under the Royal Family Honor Code he should be at home anywhere and everywhere, in every situation, in the Military, Law Enforcement, business, economic life, and above all the spiritual life.

Essential of Authority Orientation vs Influence of Evil

Evil destroys the integrity of the soul of the believer therefore Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul insulates against the infiltration of Evil into the soul. To be wise or sagacious with reference to the "good" means to advance through motivation and momentum in the Plan of God as per the **Equation of Hope** resulting in the attainment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and therefore the dynamic function of the Royal Family Honor Code. The implication for the believer is that Authority Orientation without Bible Doctrine can result in loss of integrity and the influx of the influence of Evil into the soul. Therefore, even having Authority Orientation in one's life there is still danger of succumbing to the influence of Evil. Authority Orientation is Essential for the proper use of freedom in the believer's advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but it must combine with the identification of one's right Pastor Teacher who teaches Bible Doctrine in an expository way in order for the believer to be able to engage in Spiritual Growth.

Authority Orientation & the Royal Family of God

The thrust of the Royal Family Honor Code demands spiritual authority just as there must be clearly defined authority in business. Those in positions of authority in any organization must set up policy and define procedures and NO WORKING MAN EVER HAS A RIGHT TO SET ANY POLICY FOR A BUSINESS, EVER. The best a laborer can do with regard to policy is to provide input from his observation in his sphere of work. Establishment of Policy is ONLY for those few people who are running the organization and this is moral and correct under the Laws of Divine Establishment and is biblical and truth whether a person is a believer or not. Therefore, labor unions are derived from and reflect a great Evil and are anti Christian, anti God and attempt to divide authority which destroys the authority of those who actually made this nation great. If the nation depended on labor

unions for prosperity everyone would be starving to death because labor unions have no moral courage and cannot understand proper business functions. Weak people resent authority, arrogant people are weak people and therefore resent authority. Rejection of authority in any realm of life demonstrates arrogance and arrogance is weakness. Weakness begins with children who reject the authority of their parents and this goes on throughout their life. In Christianity today people have rejected authority and contend that everyone has equal authority. This is a totally false premise since there must be proper thought to execute the Christian Way of Life and that thought must be from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and the individual believer MUST BE TAUGHT THAT DOCTRINE. In reality, Bible Doctrine in the Christian Way of Life is the 2nd level of authority for the believer, God himself being the first. Pastor Teacher is the next level of authority because no believer can learn Bible Doctrine by reading the bible or any other written text.

Therefore, in the Spiritual Life everyone has a 'Right' Pastor Teacher and he may be one with whom there is a natural antagonism but the believer must place himself under his authority and concentrate on and listen to and inculcate his teaching of Bible Doctrine. The principle is that authority is not a status of being able or required to reveal one's personality but for one to follow a policy for the benefit of all concerned. In the Spiritual Life this means that the Pastor Teacher of any given Local Church is the primary authority of the Local Church. His personality and other factors concerning his person are of no consequence to the believer in the congregation but this is true ONLY if he is your Pastor Teacher and teaching Bible Doctrine properly. Therefore as the primary authority in the local church the Pastor Teacher sets policy and procedure *based on bible doctrine* and his primary responsibility is to teach properly, consistently and accurately Bible Doctrine to the congregation. The believer under Positive Volition who advances to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under the function of his royal priesthood and produces from his royal ambassadorship cannot continue his momentum without the authority of his 'right' Pastor Teacher.

There is no momentum in the Christian Way of Life apart from authority and there can therefore be no spiritual advance without it and resentment of authority in any venue is simply ARROGANCE. Authority figures in any good system can be BAD or corrupt but this does not change the system. Like every structured organization or system which is wonderful, freedom has a system under which it must function. Some people love freedom and are willing to fight and die for it because it is wonderful but it requires authority to protect it. Life is structured by authority and this is what actually makes it wonderful and the things we enjoy the most in life all have systems of authority under which they must function. God's divine authority has been delegated by him to various levels of human authority in various realms of life and these areas are clearly delineated in scripture. In the spiritual realm authority is delegated and relegated to the Pastor Teacher who has the communication spiritual gift and is functioning in the Local Church as Pastor Teacher. This gift came from God the Holy Spirit given to the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God but it must be exploited by academic and other training to be properly used to teach Bible Doctrine and acquire the authority delegated to the Pastor Teacher. The main purpose of this authority in the Pastor Teacher is the communication provision of Bible Doctrine to his congregation whether it is large or small. In order for this to occur objectively there must be authority developed *from the teaching of Bible Doctrine* along with the establishing of policy to protect privacy in the congregation and the maintaining of strict discipline during the teaching. This establishes a base

understanding among the believers in the congregation so that who and what one is or what one does in life is to never be any consequence in the Local Church which is specifically for the purpose of taking in Bible Doctrine. The Pastor Teacher, as part of his job, is to protect the privacy of the congregation until and unless one chooses to make a friend. When any person enters into a personal relationship with another person in romance or friendship it means he surrenders his privacy to that other person willingly.

The authority of the Pastor Teacher is related to his spiritual gift, bible teaching and established policy and while the Pastor Teacher has authority in all these realms he is to delegate authority where administration is needed in the local church. Such delegations are to specifically be to ones with spiritual gifts of administration in the congregation. Having the administrative gifts these individuals must follow the policy of the Local Church set up by the Pastor Teacher and the Pastor Teacher should never participate in these administrative functions but should oversee their proper execution. The principle is that any person in charge of an organization is not necessarily an expert in all that happens in that organization but is an expert in delegating authority and responsibility. Unfortunately carrying great authority in any realm means one also gets:

- Maligned
- Despised
- Judged
- Ridiculed

by those weak people in the periphery.

No believer can advance in the Spiritual Life or move forward to any great extent in life unless he is under the authority of someone else. God's provision of this umbrella of authority challenges every believer to function under the principle of self discipline. Self Discipline is an Essential in the learning of anything especially Bible Doctrine and it keeps each believer from talking to others or breaking concentration or trying to associate what is being learned to his current personal problems. Believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must keep obeying the Pastor Teacher who teaches Bible Doctrine and must submit to his authority in teaching since he must watch over their souls and render an account of his teaching to Christ at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.

Essential Privacy & Authority Orientation

The strong mature believer understands that his freedom exists as a result of Grace and he uses it to learn Bible Doctrine and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with Bible Doctrine as the primary issue in his life. People eat, sleep and drink to sustain the physical body in order to enable them to have the opportunity fill their souls with Bible Doctrine and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and glorify God by this advance. The mature believer sets aside time every day to make sure that SPIRITUAL food is taken in regularly and what he eats, what he does for a living, what he wears or drives or other aspects of his life are Non-Essentials in his Life. Everyone has Norms and Standards and this is a good thing and used to define the functions of one's life, a big problem arises when one tries to superimpose his Norms and Standards on others. In the Spiritual Life Privacy is a great issue and each believer has the right to do things the way he wants to do them without interference or coercion.

An area of the Non-Essential is taking what is "right" and pushing it on others which makes it wrong. If the policies of the Justice of God and Bible Doctrine which sustain the mature believer and the mandates for not judging, maligning or bullying are not strongly enforced by the authority of the Pastor Teacher the result is always disaster in the congregation of the local church. The pastor, who has the authority of judging, evaluating and excommunicating believers, has to enforce these mandates so that when these things are done by any other believer they must either be forced to change their Modus Vivendi or be removed from the congregation. The primary issue in the local church is the privacy of the priesthood and all believers must be able to come to bible teaching in total privacy whatever sins or weaknesses they may have. Believers must understand that they are to come to bible study for only one reason, to learn Bible Doctrine and not to socialize and interact with other believers. Whatever a person does in life is never to be the business of the other believers in the Local Church.

Inflexibility & Rejection of Authority

Those individuals who become involved in conspiracy are those who reject authority and thus reject truth in the Laws of Divine Establishment. Every such rejection increases the Black Out of the Soul and builds Scar Tissue of the Soul and as the Scar Tissue of the Soul builds the pressure in the soul increases which results in Emotional Revolt of the Soul and results in the involvement in the **Interlocking System of Arrogance**. As arrogance increases reality disappears and people become inflexible with regard to Non-Essentials. The more they say no to any system or part of the Laws of Divine Establishment or the Divine Institutions the more they reject authority and thereby cause a greater the build up of arrogance in the soul. As authority is rejected and Emotional Revolt of the Soul gains control of the soul, arrogance involvement and interlocking constantly increases and there is the greater development of hangups in the soul which very often lead to neuroses and psychoses. As a result of these developments there is a constantly increasing desire to set aside anything which opposes their hangups. When man becomes confused and divorced from reality he wants equality with anything which challenges his arrogance especially any system of authority. This supposed desire for being considered EQUAL in reality means there is a desire to be considered GREATER THAN and this is a clear demonstration of Arrogance saturating the soul.

The demonstrations and marches permitted to occur in the 1960s have lead to the anarchy of the 21st century and the police, representing authority principles, should be respected and never should anyone be permitted to spit in their face or publicly abuse any Law Enforcement officer by using insulting vocatives. To be able to talk this way to authority figures makes the arrogant feel better in compensation for his hangups and represents his obvious Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul. This does not imply in any way that every Law Enforcement officer is a noble part of the police but he does represent a principle of authority which protects and preserves freedom for every individual in the nation and this makes it possible for everyone to have privacy, property and protection of their life along with all things meaningful in life. Today Law Enforcement personnel are hamstrung by arrogant, authority rejecting people who malign and abuse them and higher authority which today prevents them from doing their jobs properly. The longer this is allowed to continue in the nation the greater becomes the potential for a first class disaster and it will occur in the United States in our time because a person who ridicules the authority of police and runs down the military is a total fool and our society is overflowing with absolute FOOLS. Every bit of Freedom we have had and still have has come from the military and never ever from politicians and freedom comes

from victory on battlefields and never from the halls of government. We have prosperity because of free enterprise and men of courage who have met payrolls and were willing to expand and compete and never because of our evil government, which has systematically been destroying both business and prosperity. Real authority lies with the police, the military, with business executives and with investors and stock holders but we have been **Brainwashed and Propagandized** to think of government as authority which is a totally false premise. Our forefathers and founding fathers set up small government and big people and it has become totally opposite today with very small people who are basically slaves and very big government as their tyrannical masters. This must change!

Essential Separation & Authority Orientation

Separation using self determination is Essential when appropriate for the believer. However, it is not possible to separate from privacy nor from property and still have freedom. There must be privacy and property in order for freedom to truly exist. Possession of property and the government's respect for that property is Essential for freedom in any nation. BIG government today is the source of tyranny and there is no tyranny in this country today which does not originate with government interference with freedom or self determination, privacy or property. There exists totally misguided authority in the government of the United States and in the political realm it is very difficult to engage in separation from this authority. However, in the spiritual realm whenever any Pastor Teacher, religious denomination, local church, any organization or individual teaches or presents that which is in opposition to the Absolute Doctrinal Truth of the Word of God there can still be Authority Orientation because the believer has a way out of this dilemma. Although there must be respect for the Pastor Teacher and his authority, even though he may be wrong, what is necessary is for the believer to separate from him and his authority without attacking the authority in that local church. An example is when a believer decides to leave the roman church he does not criticize the priest or bishop or pope, he leaves quietly and privately and in that way does not violate the principle of Authority Orientation. This applies to all churches, denominations and all other secular organizations as well. This allows the person to transfer to a new situation under Authority Orientation related to Bible Doctrine without all the nonsense of criticism and judging. No one has any right to criticize a Pastor Teacher no matter how badly he is doing his job. The Pastor Teacher is responsible for his job directly to the Lord and it is extremely ill-advised to get between one's wrong Pastor Teacher and the Divine Discipline of the Lord for him. Every believer has the right, in the use of his privacy, to have personal opinions about what the Pastor Teacher is teaching and also the right to LEAVE that congregation at any time for any reason. However, the believer has NO RIGHT to attack, criticize, malign or judge the Pastor Teacher because if he does then he is destroying freedom by attempting to destroy authority. The naivete of the revolutionists in the United States of America today in the 21st century in the 'black lives matter' and 'antifa' organizations is that they do not comprehend that when one destroys authority in any system he is destroying his own freedom as well.

If a person desires to live in freedom then he must understand that he does not have to agree with authority but this must be a matter of privacy and when he tries to attack the ones in authority then he destroys all freedom. The principle is that in attacking one kind of authority all authority is thus attacked and therefore freedom is subsequently destroyed. Criminality is a violator of human freedom and all criminals are traitors to the Constitution of the United States of America under

which they have a free choice to become a criminal. By engaging in murder, theft, robbery, rape etc., they destroy the freedom of another by invasion of their privacy and / or confiscation of their property. Criminals should be executed under the law not only because they are criminals but because as criminals they are traitors to the common law and the Constitution of the United States of America. It is inevitable that there will occasionally be an innocent who is executed but this process is the right thing to do because the execution of criminals maintains the highest quality of freedom in the society. The few executions which are performed today are done in too peaceful a manner to provide restraint impressions to those who lean toward criminality. Criminals should be publicly hangedm ideally from a local lamp post, or drawn and quartered and the body left to remain there for all to see to remind others that you cannot divorce Authority Orientation from freedom.

The major problem is that most people do not understand what freedom actually is and that GOD invented freedom to resolve the Angelic Conflict and all throughout history the attacks on freedom have been incredible, extremely varied and totally from Evil, the plan and policy of Satan to WIN the Angelic Conflict. The universal, massive criticizing and maligning of the police occurring today has resulted in the police resigning their positions or ceasing to do their job properly so that one cannot get help when crime occurs and there is no recourse for self defense during crime because the government desires to take all of the means of personal protection from the individual. As a result there is NO freedom to protect personal life, privacy and property and slavery to both government and criminals is all that remains. People who are against the police and for gun confiscation are begging for extraordinary levels of crime in their locations. Many large cities have asked for this situation such as New York City where there has been the Sullivan law which could be but has not been voted out and removed and as a result they have a PHENOMENAL number of muggings, rapes and murders because freedom has been renounced. When a person owns a gun, it is their property and they have a right to that property and as long as they use it properly and no one should ever gainsay their having that or ANY other gun, or knife, or cannon or tank, etc. If in a fit of passion a person murders another or uses his gun in a violent crime then, as a result of these facts being demonstrated in court through proper laws of evidence, he, having completely removed another's freedom, MUST be executed. This murderer must die in public execution in front of a lot of people to provide them with the understanding that he is not just a criminal but a traitor to the Constitution of the United States of America and the way of life of this nation. People in general must be aware that he has taken away another persons freedom and ONLY GOD HAS THIS RIGHT AND OPTION.

Therefore, separation is that consistent function of self discipline and freedom which under the Royal Family Honor Code causes the believer to maintain contact with Bible Doctrine and momentum in the Plan of God despite attempts to distract him from them. This is a decision an individual makes to get away from something which is detrimental to his freedom and spiritual growth and toward something consistent with and supportive of his spiritual growth. In the Christian Way of Life all valid separation is based on the principles derived from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit so that the believer has information with which to make these decisions. Simply being free to make decisions does not mean believers will always make right decisions and in all decision cases they must have accurate facts. Acquiring facts about a situation requires thought rather than emotion so that all freedom decisions must be based on thought. In the positive advancing or mature believer thought is based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. When one makes a decision

to separate and finds self under personal pressure whereby he may make a wrong decision it is only Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in his own Right Lobe of the soul which rescues him so that he can function under the doctrinal principles of the Royal Family Honor Code. With Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul believers should know what is right and what is wrong and therefore all their decisions made to retain authority as the umbrella of freedom results in freedom remaining intact.

The proper function of separation is based on the application of Bible Doctrine under Filling of God the Holy Spirit to do the right thing. For the believer with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine separation from reversionism is mandated. The Apostasy of Reversionism has 2 sides, one is reversionism and the other is the influence of Evil. Whether the reversionist is a believer or unbeliever separation is Essential to maintain the believer's integrity. (**2Tim 3:5**) Believers therefore have a right to engage in separation and the freedom to do so without destroying authority. This separation will often involve another believer or local church or organization and is Essential to prevent distraction from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. (**1Cor 5:10-11**) There MUST be separation from reversionistic believers (**2Thes 3:6**) and from believers leading undisciplined lives who reject authority especially that of the Pastor Teacher and Bible Doctrine. (**2Thes 3:14**) There MUST also be separation from religious reversionism without destroying the authority within any religious group. The Constitution of the United States guarantees the freedom of all people to worship according to principles of freedom and when one separates he must never separate so as to destroy the authority of these false religions. Individuals have a right to believe falsely and to have authority within their system of beliefs over them and believers have no right to destroy any of that but they have a right and in fact a command to separate from it. Separation from emotional reversionism is also Essential and all believers have the necessity to separate from such emotional ecstatic systems of holly rollers and tongues movement organizations. Positive believers should avoid pseudo spiritual social gatherings like the "Saturday morning Christian breakfast" and all the gimmicks that accompany these gatherings. These include the emotional legalists, do good liberals and victorious life people who MUST be separated from. Separation also involves many unbelievers as well. Believers are in the world but not of it and are here as ambassadors for Christ to the world. All people, whether believer or unbeliever, who are anti-establishment and anti-authority must be separated from. These may include drug abusers, alcoholics, anarchists who are all anti-establishment, ant-freedom and anti-authority despite using freedom to get themselves into that mess. These types have lost control of their mentality and are out from under Authority Orientation and therefore separation is the order of the day for the believer. (**1John 2:15-17**)

Essential Separation from Mobs

For spiritual growth and glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ it is Essential for believers to separate from the mob so that they can concentrate on the teaching or application of Bible Doctrine without distraction. It is impossible to teach Bible Doctrine to a mob, because it has no Frame of Reference with regard to spiritual things. (**Matt 8:18**) The mob is always anti-authority and unstable while the assembly in the Local Church is relatively stable and amenable to the authority of the communicator therefore objective. Mobs, however, are subjective, irrational, easily set off in the wrong direction, unruly, and often turn into rabble at the utterance of a single word. Alexander

Solzhenitsyn got a group at Harvard University to HISS at him when he was speaking against bleeding heart peaceniks; this is the mob in action.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of Authority, Divine Institutions & Divine Establishment

As has been discussed, the Laws of Divine Establishment define freedom in terms of privacy, property and authority. As members of the Royal Family of God and as part of the Royal Priesthood of the Church Age, believers are free to attend bible study and therefore approach Bible Doctrine teaching privately and objectively, not as being personally directed to them but as from the Lord, OR NOT! Every individual is permitted to possess personal property and this is part of the Royal Family Honor Code and Laws of Divine Establishment and NO ONE has any right to ever touch your personal property. It is AUTHORITY in various places which guarantee these principles for ALL PEOPLE. There is no such thing as enjoyment of life, happiness, prosperity or true freedom without authority. All legitimate laws from traffic laws to criminal laws and the officers who enforce these must be respected since without this authority no one could continue to enjoy freedom. For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ there can be no effective Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine without recognition of authority. No matter the system of freedom whether spiritual, civil, or freedom of any other category all MUST function under the umbrella of authority for the protection of these freedoms for ALL individuals involved. Therefore it must be concluded that Authority is the basis for human Freedom.

Both the privacy of the individual and the legitimate function of authority are essential for the proper enjoyment of individual freedom. Therefore, Freedom is meaningless without Authority, Privacy and the right to exclusively possess legitimately acquired Property. Therefore the 4 Divine Institutions with delegated internal authority are the basis for stability of the Human Race in Human History and include:

- **Personal Volition** which is our internal authority and our internal freedom as self discipline.
- **Marriage** between 1 male and 1 female
  - This is the first organizational institution and first area of authority outside of self.
  - In marriage the woman as wife must vow to submit to the authority of the man as her husband
    - This can be wonderful or tantamount to a prison sentence.
- **Family** where the parents have authority over the children
  - This is the 2nd organizational institution and 2nd area of authority outside of self.
  - The level of childhood freedom is decided ONLY by the parents.
    - In the family setting Children are human beings without portfolio.
    - The more permissive the parents the greater the monster they create in their child and eventually release on the society.
- **Nationalism** which is a complex system of organizational authority.
  - The level of freedom in the society is based on the government in power and the ability of the people to live and function together in harmony.

Essential Divine Institutions

In order to properly orient to and function under the responsibilities of having Freedom the Laws of Divine Establishment must be understood and related to the Divine Institutions.

Divine Institution #1 Volition

All human beings have a soul which was divinely prepared and biological life of the human body as a result of genetic combinations from the male and female parents which is the house for the soul and for soul life so that the combining of the soul with the human body at physical birth results in Human Life. This Soul life is imputed to the format soul by God and this is combined with the Biological Life of the human body at physical birth. This soul life having been created and imputed by GOD, will continue to exist FOREVER and there is no way to remove soul life from the format soul. When the body dies the soul will depart and enter into the presence of the Lord OR into Hades and eventually the Lake of Fire but Soul life will exist FOREVER. Since Soul life will always exist in the soul this then is a primary part of total or eternal security for the believer. Therefore, when the soul leaves the body at physical death the individual will still have perception and life will remain in the soul forever.

If an individual is to live with God he must also possess his kind of life, called Eternal Life. This is imputed to the Human Spirit which is prepared or regenerated by God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone where this individual is said to be "BORN AGAIN" into spiritual life. The believer cannot ever lose this Eternal Life no matter what sin or failure he engages in because once God imputes Eternal Life to the Human Spirit there is no one, not even God, who can take it nor soul life away from that individual. Therefore, as believers we will have both Soul life and Eternal Life FOREVER, this is the reality of ETERNAL SECURITY.

All believers have 2 sets of laws under which they are held responsible. The Laws of Divine Establishment as human laws and the **Royal Family Honor Code** as spiritual laws and believers are responsible to function properly under both. Unbelievers must simply comply with and are held responsible to the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions in life in order to have blessing and enjoy great happiness in life. Sometimes after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the former unbeliever gets the responsibilities mixed up and thinks IF he is moral by his proper function under the Laws of Divine Establishment that God will bless him. These new believers must learn the new set of laws in the spiritual code but they cannot forget the other Divine Establishment laws which are for both believers and unbelievers to function securely in the Human Race. When these are properly put together the individual develops a system of function which will allow him to be a first class person in the Human Race and possess the necessary Bible Doctrine as a believer so he can also achieve Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and thus receive the incredible blessing reserved for Spiritual Maturity from the Justice of God.

Under Divine Institution #1, volition, each person is to be aware of his own existence and personality. When people don't have clear self awareness they are often schizophrenic or paranoid. Each person also has mentality in his soul which makes the self consciousness work within the Right Lobe in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therein then develops a Frame of Reference, Memory Center, Categorical Storage, a Vocabulary along with Norms and Standards and an area of Emotion which is to respond to the MENTALITY of the soul. It is the volition which is the authority in the soul and runs the whole system of the human being. Human volition must have freedom and privacy for its proper

function. The human body is the house for the human soul and in effect hides it and thus gives the individual soul privacy. However, very often observation of the eyes and expressions of a person can give insight into the individual's soul who is being observed. Every individual person must have privacy to use his volition without interference. People build houses in order to have privacy and when they live in apartments or condominiums and other high rise buildings there is a very limited privacy because of those others also living in close proximity to them there.

Therefore the Laws of Divine Establishment under Divine Institution #1 volition provides freedom and privacy as long as the individual does not violate common or criminal law. Individuals therefore cannot rob or kill others indiscriminately else they become responsible under criminal law to proper and effective civil discipline. While people are not born equal, nor can or do they live in equality, they must have in free societies, freedom of choice and the right to a life pursuing a course of action which is compatible with their own aspirations and abilities or lack of these. Every person in a free society has a right to advance or succeed as far as their abilities, aspirations, desires and motivation will take them in life so long as they are not violating the freedom of any other individual. NO GOVERNMENT has any right to destroy a person's pure motivation by telling him that he is greater than another and that he should be doing this instead of that. Government has no right to tell any business that so many of a certain type or classification of people must be doing work for that business else government contracts will not be fulfilled or in fact denied OR the business will be fined or forced to close. Variation in human ability both inherent and acquired does not preclude freedom and free decisions in ADULT PERSONS.

All members of the Human Race who are normal have the option of exercising Positive Volition or Negative Volition at God Consciousness and the freedom to accept or reject The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior at Gospel Hearing and to do so without anyone else interfering in their business. There is never to be "follow up" from anyone after gospel presentation and the individual can accept or reject the Gospel or Bible Doctrine or go to church or not and "follow up" by legalistic believers is EVIL and simply an excuse to violate the privacy of a new believer or an unbeliever and there is no biblical authorization for "follow up". This is also true for believers with Positive Volition or ones with Negative Volition toward the Bible Doctrine which the Lord provides. For those who express Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine at gospel hearing he provides a Right Pastor Teacher to teach Bible Doctrine. For those with Negative Volition at gospel hearing, rejection of Christ, he provides the freedom to live their life as unbelievers under either Positive Volition or Negative Volition toward the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions but also to complete their life and pass into the Lake of Fire. For the believer with Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine the Lord provides Divine Discipline to reorient that believer to proper function in the Plan of God. When legalistic believers engage in "following up" this results in Divine Discipline for those who "follow up" and stick their nose into another's business and try to assume the prerogative of God for guiding that person. When the "follow up" is directed toward those who are under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and these people are pressured to attend church, or bible class, then both receive Divine Discipline. Freedom is the KEY issue in the Angelic Conflict and Freedom is the basis for true evangelism and not singing or trying to coerce people to jump through psychological hoops for salvation or spirituality because these are all violations of privacy and constitute emotionalism.

Freedom of speech and worship are essential for spiritual advance under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Therefore, the importance of the Laws of Divine Establishment in the Human Race. Freedom as Divine Institution #1, VOLITION cannot be destroyed since it is an internal soul function but it can be coerced and deceived. When slavery exists, it never has been an issue in the Spiritual Life and slaves are to remain slaves and as believers they are "God's free men". In Rome the slaves were free to move freely and attend Local Churches and therefore were God's free men. For each believer who is a free man he is told that "he is a slave to God". Therefore, it is possible to live in a national entity under slavery and be evangelized and advance to Spiritual Maturity as God's free man. This process is in fact what takes a nation which functions under slavery or some other tyranny and converts it into a nation functioning under, freedom, the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, and the plan and policy of God even to the point of becoming a client nation to God.

Divine Institution #2 Marriage

Most people in marriage ceremonies have no idea into what they are getting themselves. Marriage is for the entire Human Race not just the Christian and is not a CHRISTIAN institution but a Divine Institution. Monogamy as a permanent relationship between one MAN and one WOMAN is ordained by God to remind humans that he has from the beginning a designed Right Man or Right Woman specifically designed for him. He may not find his right one but this is the divine order as stated in **Gen 1:26-27**, **5:1-2**, **2:18-25**, **1Cor 7:2-4**. Therefore, this is part of the Laws of Divine Establishment as Divine Institution #2, Marriage. At a time after The Lord Jesus, The Christ had created Adam he said to the other members of the trinity, "Not good that man should be alone". He knew it would be an awful world with only men in it and had mercy on all men and provided the female, without which there is little motivation and few honorable things left in life. The Lord Jesus, The Christ thus constructed a Right Woman for the man called Ishah, since she was a part of Ish, which was man whom we know as Adam. This was a relationship established in the Garden of Eden when Adam was still perfect and not a sinner and still ruled the world and this relationship continues to this day and on to the end of Human History. This is the most basic fundamental ORGANIZATION in the Human Race with ONE MAN AND ONE WOMAN. It is absolutely by no means ONE MAN WITH ANOTHER MAN AND NOT ONE WOMAN WITH ANOTHER WOMAN IN HOMOSEXUALITY. Under the principles of, and proper function in Marriage even the unbeliever whose life is a total failure with regard to the Plan of God can have temporary happiness by marrying his Right Woman. (**Eccl 9:9**) Under the authority of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions the Right Man and Right Woman relationship of marriage becomes the NORMAL and LEGITIMATE expression of Category II Love including sexual intercourse. (**1Cor7:9**, **1Tim 5:14**, **Eph 5:22-33**, **Heb 13:4**)

Marriage is the beginning of authority in life for adults and the husband has the authority over the wife and there never has been nor ever will be any exceptions. Violations of any principle when they occur, and they do occur, DO NOT CHANGE the principles. The fact that the Local Church often fails in its responsibility does not change the fact that the Local Church is the means of dissemination of Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth for the believer and no Christian organization is to take its place. Along the same line, because marriages fail does not mean that the principle is wrong just that we are human and make mistakes. All people have failures in life and have done things wrong and make wrong decisions and no one should care to ever judge those failures. Marriage is one of the greatest areas of mistakes in life because it involves authority and sex and because sex is most often put

first emotion becomes involved and destroys proper perspective with regard to marriage. We must be rational when dealing with any divine laws since they require rational response and function not emotional response and function and this is the same as when a man enlists in the military. He should enlist as part of his spiritual worship and never because he is emotional but only rational. Marriage is the true basis for stability in society and the formation of civilization and there can be no civilization without marriage. Marriage rejects the theories of anarchy, revolution, promiscuity, communal living, and is protection of the home where parents exercise authority over the children.

Divine Institution #3 Family

Physical birth with the imputation of both Soul Life and Adam's Original Sin finds the infant in the Human Race both helpless and hopeless. This status results at physical birth in the infant possessing Human Life and Spiritual Death, ie. total condemnation from the Justice of God. When these imputations occur they are accomplished by the wisdom of God through the Justice of God to allow for all personal sins to be collected and imputed to The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross NOT to each of the individuals who commit them. Therefore the principles by which we are evangelized into a relationship with God through Christ, all become reality and are set up in the Laws of Divine Establishment. The function of Family provides parents to protect, provide for, care for, nourish, train and discipline children and prepare them for life. Parental authority is the basis for preparing children to have a normal life. Permissiveness on the part of parents destroys this process because there must be inculcated in children a recognition of authority and orientation to the principles of life, all which must be taught in the home. The highest expression of parental love is demonstrated in the inculcation of discipline in their children. They must be trained to respect other's privacy, property, and rights within the field of freedom and authority. Proper adjustment to life and orientation to circumstances demands authority training which is therefore an essential for the growing child. Parents must provide food, shelter, clothing, medicine, hygiene and a great deal of other training and must also train the child in the Laws of Divine Establishment.

As instructors the parents must inculcate the principles of authority, respect for privacy, property, respect for Law Enforcement and law and order, poise, objectivity, appreciation of one's nation under patriotism and the ability and willingness to serve and protect freedom from enemies outside or within the nation. In addition to this, Christian parents must evangelize and provide pre-doctrinal training for children. (**Deut 6:6-9**, **7:9**) It is the responsibility of the Christian parents to instill respect for the Word of God and the teaching of Bible Doctrine with recognition of the authority of the Pastor Teacher. (**Heb 13:7**+**17**). No matter how poor one may think any pastor is, he must keep this opinion to himself and never pass it on to his children because they may miss the doctrinal messages as part of their spiritual growth and may distort this into a lack of understanding of the principles of authority in life as well.

Divine Institution #4 Nationalism

If the entire Human Race were under one ruling authority prior to the millennium it would self destruct. This means that internationalism has been, is and will always be outlawed as a function of EVIL by the Plan of God and any form whether civic, political or religious is outlawed until the return of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. To perpetuate the Human Race in Human History and to bring history to its proper logical conclusion God has designed a Divine Institution to protect the freedom and rights of a maximum number of people on this planet. This is the Sovereign Nation under

Nationalism. Because of the trends of the Old Sin Nature in all humans we must remain divided into many individual nations in order that the conflicts which will surely arise between these Old Sin Natures do not result in total destruction of man. Under nationalism, some nations are divided by geographical boundaries and some by racial origins as had originally occurred. In any properly functioning nation there should be ONE (1) official language for communication and that should be the only one officially recognized in that nation. As a result of the divine judgment of the original 'united nations' at the tower of Babel the Human Race was divided into original nations based on geographic, racial, and linguistic parameters. These still basically remain today but are often historically shattered by human conquest. As the Human Race has continued in Human History pure racial distinctions have been obliterated as a result of the rise of civilization so that racial purity is a myth except in some very pristine aboriginal world areas. The concept of Purity of Race is often used for political expediency to gain and maintain power as Adolph Hitler had done but in fact in the modern world it is completely a myth.

Nationalism is authorized by God in **Gen10:5**, **Deut 32:8**, **Acts 17:26-28** and all nations which follow the norms and standards of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions all have similar underlying characteristics. Many are client or priest nations because of adherence to these principles of Divine Law, but there is no such thing as a Christian nation because the concept of having a Christian nation would result in Christianity being mandated by the law of the nation violating the entire principle of freedom for the resolution of the Angelic Conflict. Therefore even a very large majority of Christians in a nation does not make it a Christian nation. These nations under divine law have internal protection of freedom from proper Law Enforcement and HONORABLE jurisprudence. In order for this to exist there must be honorable police officers and judges on the bench to allow the citizen to enjoy proper freedom, privacy, and right to pursue happiness in any way which does not interfere with another's such right. When the system fails, as it inevitably will it is as a result of being administered by humans and because of having dishonorable police officers or judges but this does not invalidate the system nor give cause to dissolve it. Law Enforcement and Jurisprudence are honorable professions and are essential for the survival of the Human Race. In the United States have had a great system of law, until the United States Supreme Court started destroying it. This system had good basic systematic requirements of evidence, witnessing and with persons not being able to be convicted on hearsay. All valid systems of law must be systems where the accused is considered innocent until proven guilty by the law system. Today, in the United States of America of all places, this is regularly violated by the Internal Revenue Service and its functions and by the functions of many bureaucracies where an accused violator of "rules" of the accusing organization is considered GUILTY until they prove that they are innocent.

In addition any nation following the norms of standards of the Laws of Divine Establishment must have exterior protection which is the historical function of the military service and according to divine laws it must be universal military training for **ALL** MALES in any given generation. Politicians have always provided for the destruction of freedom where in contrast the military has provided for its acquisition and maintenance. In addition for proper function in a properly oriented nation to enable the people to live and function under divine laws there must be a GOVERNMENT in an authority position to guarantee orientation to divine law. Whether it is Monarchy, Oligarchy or some form of Representative government, all must protect the rights and freedoms of the citizens without interfering with them by illegal use of power. The system of economy for a nation

authorized by the Laws of Divine Establishment is based on free enterprise and capitalism ONLY. In this system, as it functions properly under authority in business, the investor and business management personnel have sole rights to formulate business policy and labor has no rights whatsoever. INTELLIGENT management takes care of its labor and always has and will. Therefore, under the Laws of Divine Establishment, no central government nor labor or criminal organizations have any right to attempt to superimpose their plan or policy on any business. The system of government administration must function under its power structure without abuse of its power to destroy freedom, the Laws of Divine Establishment or the Divine Institutions. Government should encourage freedom without restraining it. Government is to be an administrative body which should engage in the functions of LEGITIMATE taxation, PROPER Law Enforcement, HONORABLE jurisprudence, EFFECTIVE maintenance of military organizations on a realistic basis, and unbiased enforcement of law and order without destroying freedom.

There must be a system of common law in the properly functioning government prohibiting crime and protecting the life, volitional freedom, rights, privacy, and property of the lawful citizens in the nation. The administrators of the system of law must never overstep the proper function of law by using it to try to solve social problems. Law is in place ONLY to restrain criminal action but NEVER to solve social problems. The standard of law must also give the freedom to dislike and resent anyone or any group UNLESS AND UNTIL THIS RESULTS IN VIOLENCE. The underlying principle must be FREEDOM under PRIVACY so that the concept of Live and Let Live allows the individual to dislike or resent any others. Law must always be objective and never subjective because the subjective distortion of law uses legislation to invade personal rights, steal personal property and erode human freedom in the name of the common good which is EVIL socialistic propaganda and anti Christian. There must also be a common culture which reflects the spiritual life, morality, esprit DE corps, nobility, patriotism and integrity of a nation. When people from other nations choose to immigrate into this country they should only come here if they want to be American and should never be focused on and involved in the customs which they left, they should in all cases want to look, think and speak like Americans.

Authority under Divine Institution #4 Nationalism

Those who have responsibility and power and authority in government to enforce the principles of freedom, privacy and property in the nation are the 'RULERS'. State officials and legitimate government officers have authority to enforce the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions. In the proper function of the United States government, officers and officials and their authorities are elected but the subsequently created bureaucracies are completely illegitimate in this system. Because of the weaknesses of those running our government and their attempts at moving the United States to become a socialist state we have given absolute power to bureaucracies and by so doing have in fact established incredible tyranny. Neither communism nor socialism can ever produce high technology or scientific ability, therefore it is essential for them to gain control of those nations who can. This is what has been occurring in the world in Germany, Britain, United States of America, etc. In national weakness in these United States there exists a situation were many are trying to gain control of the nation through bureaucracies including labor unions, communism, islam and many other systems through a distortion and abuse of the authority of those agencies.

Essential Laws of Divine Establishment & Evangelism

The principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment are designed to enable and facilitate the evangelizing of unbelievers where Positive Volition exists at God Consciousness and protect the freedom of every individual to have negative volition where it exists. This is a system of mutual authority which protects individual self determination and requires that there must be separation of religion and state functions. State authorized religion always destroys freedom and this is why the bible does not authorize forming a nation as a "Christian Nation". As long as the system of government permits and protects religious freedom and self determination such a government fulfills its requirements under the Laws of Divine Establishment. Therefore, the separation of religion and state is a basic standard for human freedom. The Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment are designed by God to protect human freedoms for the purpose of true Christian evangelism. The individual must be free to accept or reject The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior without any interference with his decision. If his decision is to reject Christ the government has no right to pressure him into acceptance. If his decision is to accept Christ the government has no right to deter him from it. No one, nor any group, has any right to ask for or require any public demonstration of faith in Christ. It must be a matter of complete privacy and free use of volition. Therefore, the state must neither coerce nor punish acceptance OR rejection of Christ. The individual church must not do anything to persecute or abuse those who reject Christ and reward or glorify those who accept him especially in some overt manner. Therefore, no state must ever adopt an official religion supported by government taxation and all religion must be free from taxation and this is a key part of separation. Examples of how this abuse by government results in national destruction is demonstrated in both Central and South America where romanism was forced into the population and resulted in communism being gratefully accepted there because it is anti-God, Anti-religion and especially Anti-Christian. Within the properly functioning nation a persons relationship with God or lack there of should be a matter of complete privacy and personal choice. (**John 3:36**)

Essential Laws of Divine Establishment and Spiritual Life

In the Spiritual Life given us by God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God it is impossible to advance without the proper function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions. There must be encapsulation of these and the FREEDOM required by them, because they are essential for spiritual growth and can exist under any form of government, Republic, Monarchy, Oligarchy but NOT in democracy which is borderline to anarchy.

Essential Laws of Divine Establishment and Authority

People cannot survive until they understand authority, its origins and purpose. While it exists in both temporal and spiritual realms only temporal authority is related to the Laws of Divine Establishment while Spiritual authority is related to the Royal Family Honor Code. Therefore, authority is an essential for the proper function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions.

There will inevitably be individuals who have authority over one and whom one does not like so that he must differentiate between the person and his personality and the delegated authority from God. If one gets the 2 mixed up it can result in the difference between a miserable life of Divine Discipline vs a great life of blessing from the Lord. The Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions authority is for both believer and unbeliever in the Human Race. It is important to

recognize this since believers are not out from under the authority vested in the Laws of Divine Establishment nor the Divine Institution and remain under the civil authority of establishment and are never exceptions to the rules because they are Christians. This authority is therefore for both believer and unbeliever and includes situations such as:

- **Husband over wife**
  - If either make a mistake in entering this relationship it will most likely be an incredibly painful experience for the wife but also possibly for the husband.
  - By CONSENTING to the marriage the woman puts herself under the authority of the man she is marrying VOLUNTARILY. (**Eph 5:22**, **Col 3:18**)
  - If the husband is unreasonable she must get over it because all males are always in some way at some time unreasonable.
- **Parents over children**
- **Teachers over students**
- **Coaches over athletes**
- **Management over labor**
  - Authority in the business world stabilizes the economy and is found ONLY in management and investors under capitalism and there is no authority in labor. (**Eph 6:5**, **Col 3:22**)
- **Senior rank over junior rank**
- **Officer over enlisted man**
- **Police over the public.**
- **ETC.**

In addition to this governance of human beings there are also divine Laws over nature so that nature also obeys the orders of God. (**Matt 8:27**, **Mk 4:41**, **Luke 8:25**) Also, in the spiritual realm the Pastor Teacher is the authority over the congregation. (**1Cor 16:15-16**, **2Cor 10:8**, **1Thes 5:12**, **Heb 13:7**+**17**)

Essential Laws of Divine Establishment and the Military

All Freedom only comes as a result of military victory and is based on superior ranked authority in the military establishment. (**Neh 4:13-15**) All failure of the military on the battlefield indicates lack of:

- Training
- Self Discipline
- Proper equipment
- Respect for Authority
- Spiritual Motivation
- Patriotic incentive to fight for the Nation

In World War II the Battle of the Bulge showed the incredible ability of the American who had been cut off from higher authority but were still able to function effectively. Read the story of Lt. Jesse Morrow. Politicians provide people in their nation with slavery never freedom. (**Josh 11:23**, **Ps 46:7-9**) Politicians are generally divorced from reality always saying peace, peace when there is no peace. (**Jer 6:13-14**, **8:11**) Therefore, it is failure of the military on the battlefield or overstepping of their authority by politicians which always results in loss of freedom and freedom is always related to authority. Therefore, when one thinks of the military he should think of authority. Successful armies maintain freedom while defeated armies lose freedom for their nation. Therefore

the level or condition of Freedom in any nation is determined by the success of failure of their military on the battlefield. This is why universal military training is an AXIOM in the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Word of God DEMANDS universal military training for EVERY generation of males in any nation. (**Num 1:2-3**, **Deut 24:5**, **Num 31:3-5**, **Judg 3:1-2**, **2Sam 22:35-36**, **Ps 18:34**, **144:1**) The condition of the Military establishment in any nation is also always an indicator of national character. Military training is useless when the men of a nation are reversionistic, apostate and degenerate. Antagonism toward authority destroys the function of the military establishment as an instrument of freedom. Draft dodgers, slackers, deserters are sinful in the eyes of God and the quote "Be sure, your sins will find you out" refers specifically to this individual. (**Num 32:6-7**, **32:14**, **32:20-23**) and overstepping politicians.

Essentials of Authority Orientation and Submission

In the Roman Empire, many Jews were incredibly bad citizens and distorted **Deut 17:15** claiming that it was sinful to be subordinate to Caesar. These were reversionistic Jewish Christians who distorted this passage saying they did not have to obey the laws of the land from Rome. Gentile Christians in Rome also took the position that if the ruler or authority figure was immoral you did not have to obey them. This is Satan's own lie and it is not personal morality or immorality which is the issue but the PRINCIPLE of authority which must be recognized. Some of the greatest leaders in human history were also the MOST immoral men in history and have given us more freedom than any others. Prime examples are Gaius Julius Caesar who gave freedom to Rome and as a result the world and Napoleon Bonaparte who gave incredible freedom to France and also to Louisiana. Both the Jewish and gentile believers were wrong, the Jews for distorting the scripture and the gentiles for making immorality instead of authority the issue. Of course morality can be made an issue with self but not with authority. The Apostle Paul clarifies the principle by making it crystal clear that recognition of and subordination to authority is essential for freedom and function in the Human Race and in fact for the perpetuation of the Human Race. Since all humans beings have an Old Sin Nature and are sinful, the personal sins of any ruler or authority are never the issue unless they constitute CRIME or a distortion of the INTEGRITY OF HIS AUTHORITY. At the time of the apostle Paul, Nero was Caesar in Rome and Christians felt revolution was needed and some were even involved in it. However, revolution is never justified because it replaces one system of authority with an inferior system of authority called tyranny. When duly constituted authority is destroyed in revolution accomplished by violence, this violence creates tyranny. To this day in 2021 with the exception of what has been occurring in 2020-21 in the United States of America there has never been a revolution but we have had the 1st & 2nd wars for freedom or independence. When it occurs, Revolution is most often one tyranny replacing another tyranny and the replacing tyranny is willing to use violence and evil to gain control, power and authority and always becomes the worst of 2 evils. This is clearly demonstrated in the French, Russian, Chinese and other communist revolutions in history past.

Essential Source of Authority & Responsibility for Wielding It

All existent authority is Delegated Authority from God. Governmental authority does not derive its power nor its authority from the people but the power and authority of government is derived from God and that and all authority is a device of God not of man. Therefore all those who have positions in government should be cognizant of their RESPONSIBILITY TO GOD in exercising their authority

properly. Fascism, socialism, and communism form an ideological smoke screen to deceive people into thinking their authority is from man and in the past to make people think there was a huge difference between Nazism and Communism. The Nazi holocaust is the red herring and the red communists use this to distract from communism and today the Nazis are gone but communism along with islam again are the greatest threats in the world today. Fortunately, Nazism is no longer a major issue in the world but Communism is and they are basically the same in their underlying functions and ultimate results. Always remember whether there are hereditary kings or usurping tyrants or elected or appointed rulers in a representative government, their authority has only one source and that is the Justice of God. This should, but obviously often does not, instill some degree of trepidation into the minds of those serving in government. All rulers at all levels of government are responsible to God for any abuse of their authority. This is why God permitted the French, Russian and Chinese revolutions and all others throughout history. What God has ordained, the believer has no right to contradict and all positions of authority in any nation are ordained by God not by the people thus as Christians we have a myriad of civic responsibilities. Do not become confused about revolution because God does not sponsor revolution but He often permits it as the natural historical result where authority is abused without checks and apostasy and degeneracy are the order of the day in a nation. In a client nation to God the only reason revolution does not occur is as the result of the existence of a pivot of mature believers large enough to offset such historical disaster.

The American and British war of 1776 was the first war for independence, NOT a revolution and our forefathers did not overthrow the British government and replace it they simply fought to have equal representation and when it was not provided they fought in war for separation from England already having an established colonial government here. The "civil" war or War between the States was not a revolution either but a 2nd war for independence, with the southern states fighting for states rights under the constitution against a tyrannical federal government which had violated the constitution under Abraham Lincoln in several ways. The southern states were therefore fighting for their independence from that tyranny and were not trying to replace the federal government but simply to separate from it. When Lincoln called for 50,000 volunteers to use violence to coerce the southern states to follow the federal ideals regarding slavery he was totally, completely wrong and violated the constitution by trying to solve a social problem with government interference and violence. Slavery was already receding in the south and each state was going about it in its own way and time and each state was deciding how to deal with slavery for itself as per their right under the United States constitution. Ironically the claim to stop slavery under Lincoln and the federal government resulted in the absolute worst slavery developing in this nation imaginable with all citizens now being enslaved by the federal government.

Small federal government means a great nation while big federal government means excesses of government overreach in all areas and slavery to the government which is a complete abuse of authority. This distortion of the concept of government results from an academic inculcation of radical liberal and socialist principles and has resulted in the United States government becoming completely EVIL in its orientation and functions. The rise of Adolph Hitler combined the abuse of authority in Germany with his false usurpation of authority. In addition there was the false use of authority on the part of the league of nations and the abuse of authority by the radical liberal history professor from Princeton university, Woodrow Wilson, who was one of the worst presidents

in the history of the United States of America being only topped by Franklin Roosevelt, Barack Obama and the absolute worst Joe Biden. His participation in the league of nations cost him the reelection to presidency and this gave us one of our best presidents Calvin Coolidge and his concept of the presidency was to do nothing and his policies were some of the best things to happen to support and extend the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions in the United States which caused a great thrust of prosperity in America.

When civil power contradicts the word of God it subverts and denies the source of its own authority. One of the most difficult things in life is to possess rulership authority in a national entity, especially a client nation to God, on any level because that individual is directly responsible to the source of that authority, God himself. And whether the individual knows God and that He exists or not he will be called to task for this responsibility to God and receive Divine Discipline commensurate with his abuses. It is impossible to determine what is more difficult in life, being a Pastor Teacher or being a ruler of a client nation to God.

Human arrogance and rejection of authority leads to anarchy and human power in anarchy leads to despotism and tyranny. Christian obedience to the defacto authority inevitably leads to true civil and spiritual freedom. This civil freedom and respect for authority makes the individual truly free to function in life under the protection of that authority. While military victory provides human freedom, establishment authority in obedience to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions maintains it so that evangelization and spiritual growth are possible in the nation. The elevation of establishment and morality in compliance with the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions will accomplish far more than revolution ever could no matter how justifiable the revolution appears to be. One can always find an excuse for revolution because revolution can be justified on the basis of corruption in authority which exists because people who control nations and organizations all have Old Sin Natures. Believers who assimilate more and more Bible Doctrine control their Old Sin Nature a little better but even with Bible Doctrine saturating their souls, they can be corrupted by great power and engage in anti-doctrinal activities. Power always easily corrupts arrogant people and when given power they almost instantly become tyrants. Corruption of power in essence is communism or fascism and both are systems of socialism which use violence from Evil and both are systems of collective **ARROGANCE**.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility for Thoughtfulness

The source of all comfort for believers in time of adversity or pressure is the God of all comfort whose thinking is Bible Doctrine and believers are to share this thinking by accumulating Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul. For the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God a part of Blessing by Association includes the ability to sympathize and comfort others rather than intensify their misery or self pity. Receiving from God, Undeserved Suffering as a mature believer helps them to have compassion for others as well as to maintain focus on their own eternal future. Undeserved suffering occurs for the believer beginning at the point of reaching out for movement into spiritual adulthood. This undeserved suffering is

designed to facilitate the maturing believer to learn how to use the adult Problem Solving Devices of a Personal Sense of Destiny, Personal Love for God the Father, Impersonal Love for Mankind, Sharing the Happiness of God and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The undeserved suffering is a means of accelerating spiritual growth for this maturing believer. Undeserved suffering occurs as, Providential Preventative Suffering, Momentum Testing (4 Categories) at 2 levels and Evidence Testing for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, when Undeserved Suffering is imputed to the believer in approaching or who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God it often overflows in compassion for others and their plight in life. Thoughtfulness of others results from being able to fit one's mood to that of the others and compatibility with others results from the flexibility of rapport which shares with others the enthusiasm of prosperity and compassion in times of adversity. Rapport and compatibility with others is the result of spiritual advance because the tendency of people in general is to be superficial and have the opposite effect producing greater self pity in others rather than comfort.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials of Thinking & Capacity for Life

Love and capacity for love requires a large thinking vocabulary just as a technical vocabulary is Essential for having capacity for any technical field in life. Thinking is what life is all about and the reality of life is that doing is not ever what life is about. Doing must always and inevitably does occur after thinking, therefore, doing truly good or great things must come after properly oriented thought. Bible Doctrine is specifically suited to this because it sets the believer to thinking before he begins to do things. With regard to Love, it is a Mental Attitude function not an action. Therefore, true love requires an incredible amount of thinking then some minor doing and it is a system of thought so that lack of love is lack of properly oriented thought. Love is not sex, nor a mutual admiration society, it is a Mental Attitude. Therefore, love is always thinking whereas lack of love is either negative thinking or total lack of thought and as a result whatever occurs as doing is a reflection of the level and focus of thinking, with or without hypocrisy.

Inflexibility on Non-Essentials & Communication

The problem of communication lies in the fact that since the 1960's we have had more educational facilities and far less education occurring. As a result the people in this nation can't understand the greatest language of freedom in history. The underlying problem is inflexibility concerning the Non-Essentials and flexibility or total ignorance of the Essentials. Every child in the United States of America should be required to learn the grammar of the English language starting in the 1st grade. The saturation of society with advanced technology has further degenerated the English language and man will surely end up with animal speech instead of coherent speech as a result. With all the work of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit one cannot learn Bible Doctrine unless he can understand the language in which it is being taught. In addition, the Filling of God the Holy Spirit cannot overcome the handicap of engaging in the abuse of illicit drugs or inability to understand the English language. Beauty, wisdom and maturity, including any characteristic of leadership and even love demands the ability to communicate the things to which one aspires therefore the Essential nature of language, vocabulary and categorical accumulation of knowledge.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Inflexibility, Pseudo Intellectualism & Stupidity

Even very intelligent people who become stubborn also then become stupid having become inflexible about inconsequentials and Non-Essentials. The dumber the person is the more stubborn they can be and the more they say NO to Absolute Truth. Generally mature believers don't have enough patience to deal with them for any length of time. Pharaoh Amenhotep II was a very smart man who became more and more stupid and by constantly saying NO to Moses and God he entrenched his stupidity in his soul and built an immensely great power in himself, Scar Tissue of the Soul. The more he filled his soul with Scar Tissue the more he became filled with **arrogance** and arrogance always replaces REASON. When there has been Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine in any form, and as a result of that, the build up of Scar Tissue of the Soul, arrogance always constantly increases. One can be a genius but with Arrogance he will destroy himself because being a genius with arrogance he becomes irrational and stupid totally wasting his incredible intelligence. General Douglas MacArthur was a genius in Battle and no one could ever think the way MacArthur thought and be arrogant because he was able to think brilliantly during a crisis and when a person is brilliant in a crisis there can be no arrogance in him. When there is arrogance in a person they generally will freeze up in a crisis and even if they are brilliant they inevitably become stupid in any crisis. The more arrogance there is in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the dumber a person becomes no matter how intelligent they may be nor how proficient they are in any field. As a result of rejecting Bible Doctrine in any area, the gospel of Christ, the Laws of Divine Establishment & Divine Institutions, or all other doctrines of the scripture, there is greater and greater build up of Scar Tissue of the Soul. The more Scar Tissue of the Soul builds up the greater is the arrogance which goes with it. When arrogant people look at a truly great man of any period in history it immediately starts jealousy and releases any and all of the hangups they may have in their soul. This begins an intensified search to find something wrong with that person, to ridicule or criticize something about him because the arrogant individual cannot live if they think someone is better or greater than they are. The people who always criticize someone who is truly great are generally petty people and they cannot be true friends to anyone and they will always be competing with those in their periphery or behind their back. This is how a person becomes his own worst enemy in life.

IQ, Arrogance & Pseudo Intellectuals

Smart people who are arrogant and inflexible are always PSEUDO intellectual. No one can ever properly exploit a good IQ and perceptive ability if they are arrogant and inflexible. All arrogant people are inflexible because Arrogance is the ORIGIN of inflexibility.

- Humility + Brilliance + Flexibility + Moral Courage == True Greatness in a Man.
- Arrogance + Stupidity + Inflexibility + Cowardice == Total Failure in a Man.

Therefore, a brilliant mind cannot ever be properly exploited if that person has even a touch of arrogance. An excellent example is demonstrated clearly in every level of the education profession where there are many apparently intelligent people but they are pseudo intellectual and though they may be intelligent they are extremely arrogant and completely inflexible. Intelligent people with arrogance are always pseudo intellectual and have incredible soul hang ups and are always trying to

prove their superiority and advance beyond their peers. The more one pushes ahead in life with arrogance the more inflexible they become especially in Christianity, where personal IQ is never an issue but your Grace IQ and spiritual perspicacity is. The Pseudo Intellectual encompasses a whole category of individuals who cannot ever live through a crisis nor handle any historical disaster. This pseudo intellectual is a person whose arrogance of soul is greater than his knowledge in any field he may be involved in. His downfall is that his arrogance forms a wall around any possibility of ever getting to an understanding of real truth. He may know about a subject and even be considered an expert in one of more fields but cannot ever get to an understanding of absolute truth despite having the intelligence to be an expert in some other field. He inevitably is superficial and constantly tries to reconcile his or some other field, such as philosophy or evolution, with the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine. He may be very intelligent with a high IQ, however, with no foundation in Bible Doctrine all his knowledge, no matter how great, has no roots in the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine. No matter the area in which he as great knowledge nor his level of intelligence, having no roots in Bible Doctrine he represents the pseudo intellectual who can constantly be observed in our time and this category includes most educators at all levels especially college professors. These professorial individuals are arrogant and inflexible and having knowledge and expertise in one subject allows their arrogance to assume they are expert about anything in life. They have an "arrogant hangup" which distorts any Bible Doctrine they hear into rationalism or empiricism. This type of man is one with a very high IQ and all the possible academic credentials and is only attracted to Christ because of His intellect and ability to debate with others.

Pseudo intellectuals are invariably radical liberals because beneath the thin veneer of intellectualism is emotional distraction. This is the reason the radical liberal is always trying to do good somewhere and why they are bleeding hearts for every downtrodden human being in existence. It is by this means that they create a vacuum in their soul into which Socialism and Marxism is sucked and why Marshal Field and Henry Wallace became such insane socialists. This is why we see in government, business and education so many socialists and welfare state supporters and do good bleeding heart liberal individuals. These pseudo intellectual people are the phonies and their major problem is a combination of emotional distraction and arrogance. When frustrated in any way, such as when having lost a major national election, the liberal becomes emotional and irrational as clearly demonstrated by Hillary Clinton in 2016. When their arrogance is challenged the individual becomes totally irrational and tries to destroy their opponent as is clearly demonstrated by Nancy Pelosi and often even instigates action from any available mob. This is the person who cannot ever overcome any crisis. This type of person, in arrogance, assumes that his high IQ and quickness with words makes him superior to all others in the Human Race. When arrogance makes this assumption, as resident arrogance inevitably does, and then arrogance increases, the individual divorces self from reality and is susceptible to neuroses and psychoses and all other mental distortions and instabilities. Therefore, as is too often the case with intelligent people, their assumption of superiority over others divorces them from the reality of life and the resultant arrogance gives them inflexibility with regard to Non-Essentials. Once the Pseudo Intellectual becomes inflexible with regard to Non-Essentials he becomes totally flexible with regard to Essentials.

This category of person as a believer cannot in any way face historical or national crisis or disaster and therefore, the pseudo intellectual being totally divorced from reality, cannot even face the most superficial type of testing in uncertainty. If a believer cannot face simple uncertainty in life, he

certainly cannot face any level of disaster. Therefore, again, reality is based on flexibility with regard to all Non-Essentials in life and inflexibility with regard to the Essential of Bible Doctrine. Therefore the believer through his personal thinking processes must set up a scale of values and priorities from the Essentials of Bible Doctrine so that all other things in life become Non-Essential. If this is reversed that believer will never have any level of success in life, especially the Spiritual Life.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Non-Essential Education

The education system of the United States of America has trained the children who are now adults to think in terms of Marxist socialism and to NOT think independently but to rely on someone else to tell them what and how to think and what to do. High level education has become an Essential of the national concept of life but the reality is that not every one should have a college degree and it is not necessary for the individual to make a good living at any type of manual or menial employment which is NOT something degrading to engage in. This includes basic military functions. Higher education for everyone is a divorcement from reality. However, when higher education is desired, thinking that a student should have to work to put themselves through a higher education program in order to appreciate it is also divorcement from reality, especially today considering the inordinate cost of higher education studies. However, for parents to think that they MUST put their child through college is also divorcement from reality and often places an incredible financial burden on them for what amounts to a liberal arts education for the child who can't make up their mind what they want to do in life. Sometimes when a person is forced to work for everything they have or achieve they never learn to think and will therefore not be able to think when it is Essential to do so. However, sometimes when everything is given to a person on a silver platter he never learns to take responsibility for his own provisions and for his own decisions. Reality is related to thinking not the ability to run or lift or other such physical things especially in professional situations and when certainly it comes to Bible Doctrine. A false application of reality in life is a father who worked through college saying that all children should work to get through college. It never spoils a person to give them things such as a college education since this gives them the opportunity to use their minds. However, this presumes that the student who receives that which is needed for him to engage in his higher education process APPLIES HIMSELF TO HIS STUDIES and does not spend his time in entertainment and parties. It is very often very difficult to get what is needed out of schooling when you have to constantly work to get what you need to complete the education. People who work to get through college often develop a great arrogance and like shock, arrogance stops the ability to think.

Civil Authority & Education

Our system of education in the United States of America has degenerated into Marxist socialist **propaganda**, which was clearly demonstrated early in the 60s where the Marxist system of busing students for the creation of school equality began. Our education system is taking away the right of children to have the friends they want not the ones they are being forced to associate with. 'Vocs Populi Vocs Dei" is a farce and the Voice of the People is not the Voice of God and no matter how

many people rise up in protest of poor education systems in the inner cities it is not the responsibility of civil authority to correct this situation. The voice of people is the sum total of the function of their Old Sin Natures in the areas of arrogance, selfcenteredness and selfishness and vicious Self Righteousness. It is far more appropriate to consider the people under the concept of "Vocs Et pratera nehile" which is saying that it is a "voice and nothing more".

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Non-Essential Equality

There is no such thing as equality in life. No 2 people are born equally, live equally or die equally. People talk about equality because they confuse it with freedom and authority. The underlying problem is that human reason minus God always thinks of humans as noble creatures, which can be observed on a daily basis as a total unreality. Bible Doctrine explains that when Life is imputed to the soul at the point of physical birth so also is Adam's Original Sin imputed to the genetically formed Old Sin Nature resulting in every human being born physically alive and spiritually dead with a propensity toward Sin and Human Good from Evil. Bible doctrine explains and demonstrates that man is not a noble creature but an Old Sin Nature out of control. When under the rulership of his Old Sin Nature man, being spiritually dead, functions in the production of Sin and Human Good from Evil and these guarantee in all of the human race total INEQUALITY. The bible again confirms that first and foremost, under the Laws of Divine Establishment established for the protection of both believers and unbelievers, then under Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and regeneration for the believer, there MUST be FREEDOM. Under this FREEDOM each individual has the same opportunity as the next person to INTENSIFY INEQUALITY by passing up or using the opportunities in his life to become better than others in some area of life or by failing totally and becoming more inferior to them. Therefore freedom guarantees INEQUALITY and provides the potential to advance OR retrogress to GREATER INEQUALITY. The bible clearly teaches that the greater the inequality in a society or nation the greater the prosperity and security of that society and national entity. Therefore, the greater the number of extremely wealthy people the greater the prosperity of the nation overall. Consequently, EQUALITY among individual human beings is a **MYTH** and the attempts of governments to legislate it under socialistic agendas is from EVIL and totally destructive to the nation.

Freedom cannot guarantee equality or manufacture it but its proper function actually guarantees inequality. It is obvious from objectively observing life that some individuals work harder than others and succeed while some become bums and drag down society, both operating under their own personal self determination. Some use freedom with arrogance to demand things which are not owed to them under the functions of socialism and welfare state operations. Some use freedom to exploit their intellect and any opportunities set before them to advance and ask nothing of government except to protect that freedom and their privacy. Freedom is the Essential reality of life while equality is a Non-Essential myth. Therefore, under no circumstances can freedom and equality coexist and the concept that all people are equal is totally divorced from reality. When the conquest of a people of any nation is desired the conquerors simply address the downtrodden in that society, the ones who chose to use their freedom to accomplish nothing in life, and tell them they

will have guaranteed equality. This is what has been occurring in the United States of America for decades.

These principles are extended into the Christian Way of Life where it is clearly demonstrated when the believer under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine advances to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and reaches the status of being the recipient of Super Grace. At that point he then receives Super Grace blessings for his life in time and also after his death when in eternity, while the believer under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine retrogresses into reversionism and ultimately dies in the misery of the **Sin Unto Death**. However, both believers make it to heaven after death but the mature believer has blessing and rewards while the reversionistic believer has only his Resurrection Body. In the Plan of God for the Human Race and in the accepting of the Appeal of Satan in the Angelic Conflict Trial in Eternity Past, God provided freedom for mankind to demonstrate Satan's failure and therefore the means of resolving the Angelic Conflict. Equality is the device used by Satan to distract individuals from the necessity of using their freedom properly in orientation to the Plan of God. Equality is the device of the arrogant, disoriented sociopath while freedom is the motivation of the Grace Orientated believer. Forced equality is the policy of tyrants and therefore the basis for producing Satan's pseudo millennium with socialism and welfare state operations leading to communism.

Inflexibility & Non-Essential of Unionism

Unionism is an attempt at producing EQUALITY in business by making labor equal with management, investors and the owners of businesses. Union membership means that labor must have a split loyalty between the company which pays them and the union which theoretically helps them keep their job. For any company to run properly under free enterprise labor must have loyalty only to management as a result of management being loyal to its labor force. Therefore, labor cannot have exclusive loyalty only to management and be a union member. Unions are immoral and labor strikes are immoral as well and should be illegal but the whole country thinks that this is a good and proper way for big business to function. This is a clearly collective divorcement from reality and a function under the myth of equality. There should be a law passed that all unions must be immediately dissolved, and that companies should set up retirement objectives to secure their labor force OR NOT! When a person SEEKS employment he can negotiate his conditions of employment or accept those offered him by the company and if he becomes dissatisfied with the arrangement after being employed he can simply leave the company. NO ONE has any right to tell a manager or CEO or investment group HOW TO RUN THEIR COMPANY AND HOW TO HANDLE THEIR EMPLOYEES.

Essential of INEQUALITY vs Arrogance of Equality

The people who talk about wanting equality are the arrogant of a society and they don't really mean that they want equality but they do want something for nothing so that they can prove superiority which is their greatest hangup above all others. A person cannot ever get ahead in life by thinking like that. Equality MUST only be tied to opportunity and consideration under the law of the land, the United States Constitution, and in this sense it was related to the fundamental concept of the reason for the American War for Independence from England, ie. FREEDOM. In essence this means that equality is the OPPORTUNITY for a person to advance as far as he chooses to go in life OR CHOOSES NOT TO! By using freedom some will advance to a very great extent in life and some WILL NOT advance at all and as a result of this absolute truth we can unquestionably see that FREEDOM

creates greater inequalities than previously existed. Great inequality is Essential in the Human Race because only a very few individuals have the ability to take care of the rest. When there is freedom It means that those with ability advance to where they can take care of the Human Race and they are, or should be, the ones with honor and integrity and who have the concept of taking care of the weak and infirm and punishing the slothful and criminal. People in the United States, especially believers, have lost their identification. Americans should be identified in the world as the ones who are constantly advancing. For believers, this is advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Instead the majority of believers are involved with social gospel, social action and every conceivable activity related to socialism rather than Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Equality is not the objective of freedom and Freedom in the Spiritual Life leads to great inequalities in the Royal Family of God and as a royal priest it will lead to the greatest inequalities in the eternal state. However, inequality existing in the eternity of heaven does not infer imperfection.

Equality in Taxation

Under freedom all people in a nation are to be treated the same under the law. An example of this principle in action means that all people in the nation should pay the same taxes. Taxes and taxation are not a political subject but a spiritual subject and all individuals should pay the same percentage of tax based on their income since there is no such thing as EQUAL INCOME in any society. If individuals are to be treated the same before the law then they should all pay 10% of all income available for their use across the board as a tax to support the government. This is the biblical principle called tithing and is true equality before the law. The hypocrisy of the American tax policy says people are all to be considered equal but some will have to pay 60% and some nothing but this is not equality and in fact is confiscation under tyranny. The government in the United States talks about equality but is in no way any longer a constitutional republic as government but a tyrannical socialistic democracy. Even under the American system of tyrannical taxation the bible says basically that as long as the believer is free to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God just pay the taxes, God will handle the inequality of treatment. The principle should be obvious that the money is God's and the people abusing it are responsible to him so just pay the taxes. For all believers if they are free to be evangelized and to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God then God will provide the resources to pay the taxes and hold those in charge of collecting them responsible for their abuses.

The Myth of Equality

The myth of equality fails to recognize that in any conceivable area of life people are never equal. No one is born equal and are only considered equal at birth because all are born under Spiritual Death with an Old Sin Nature and condemned by God at birth. Only at the moment of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, with the imputation of the Righteousness of God, and when God the Holy Spirit, under the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit, enters each believer into union with The Lord Jesus, The Christ are believers in any way equal in the Christian Way of Life. All believers have a double portion of total freedom with this momentary equality. They can choose to pursue spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by use of Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine. Otherwise, they can choose to enter the 8 stages of reversionism and be taken out of this life under the final Divine Discipline of the **Sin Unto Death** as a result of consistent Negative

Volition toward Bible Doctrine. God starts all believers in this Church Age on an equal basis with EQUAL OPPORTUNITY at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by providing 39 irrevocable assets for the Spiritual Life and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, the one asset which is revocable but also recoverable. Therefore, the only true equality in life exists at the exact moment of physical birth and also at the exact moment of being born again in spiritual regeneration at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. From the very moment of physical birth and also of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God inequalities begin to exist as the result of the use of freedom. In the Spiritual Life of the new believer they are related to accepting or rejecting Bible Doctrine. Therefore, clearly, an obvious product of properly using freedom, results in what started as true equality, inevitably resulting in complete inequality.

The founding fathers of the United States understood that as soon as equality is declared among citizens BEFORE THE LAW, immediately there is added to that equality FREEDOM, which always results in inequalities. Therefore our constitution of the United States of America demands little government which means big people because with big government freedoms are inevitably inhibited by government control and regulation and this results in little people enslaved by government. Contrary to the opinion of those who are for bigger and bigger government <u>this does not eliminate inequality</u> but only causes the switch from freedom to tyranny. This same thing is true in the Spiritual Life so that from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God inequalities exist as the result of the use by the believer of freedom. Some believers advance some retrogress. In every case of inequality it is demonstrated that freedom abused does not deserve what freedom used deserves. Our socialistic welfare system of government totally fails to recognize this absolute truth. God is not unfair and it is impossible for him to be unfair and the fact that God is a just God means that there will always be inequality in man. People in the United States are soft in their thinking and reality is lost on them and they do not think in terms of reality which says <u>NO TWO PEOPLE ARE EQUAL AND NEVER WILL BE AND *SHOULD NOT WANT TO BE EQUAL*</u>. Equality is the base from which life starts, both physical and spiritual life but it never is and never should be where one finishes life.

When big government tries to legislate equality among the citizens they have joined Satan who has as his objective of ruling this world to attempt to put equality into the Angelic Conflict and thus beat The Lord Jesus, The Christ to establishing the perfect environment of the millennium. This would allow him to win the Angelic Conflict but this is totally impossible even for his genius because every individual is born with an Old Sin Nature and constantly uses it in an UNEQUAL fashion. In any organization, trying to set up a system of rules which allow all people to have the same level of success or function, which is what often occurs in a team sport giving all athletes an equal chance to play in the event, is divorcement from reality and destroys motivation in life. This is the exact thing which occurs in children's athletic activities where every child gets a 'participation' trophy. Every person who ever lived or will live must at some point learn the reality of life, which is the ones who work hardest, play more and those who don't work never play in life in any way. Our government is divorced from the reality of this principle. Children and people in general must learn that being upset for losing and criticizing the judges in an event or crying when things don't go right for one in life, is not REALITY and that it will not be tolerated. Therefore, it is obvious that equality is the device of the arrogant and freedom is the motivation of the Grace Oriented. Attempts at forced equality is part of the policy of Satan and Grace freedom is part of the policy of God and these 2

are and have always been in conflict for all of Human History and even long before that from Eternity Past. The concept of equality is the epitome of EVIL when it is demanded by people while the desire for freedom is the vehicle of Grace when it is pursued and accepted. Therefore, Freedom is Dogmatic and Inflexible with regard to the Essentials of the absolute truth of Bible Doctrine and also totally flexible and pliable with regard to application to Non-Essentials of life. Therefore, Freedom which is common sense and orientation to reality must have content of thought and this is Bible Doctrine the Thinking of Christ in 3 categories, some for unbelievers and all for believers.

A major satanic thrust, as the ruler of this world, (**Rom 16:20**), includes a policy of anti-freedom and pro-equality. Therefore it is clear that Equality and Freedom are antithetical and that Freedom cannot guarantee nor manufacture equality in the Human Race. One of the greatest decisions a person will have to make in life is to choose between freedom and equality. There is not only inequality in time and Human History but also in eternity in heaven based on self determination under the Plan of God. In addition there is inequality of residence in eternity with believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ being face to face with the Lord while unbelievers are relegated to the Lake of Fire as a result of rejection of the Gospel of Christ. Equality is the device of the arrogant, the disorientation of man, making him a sociopath. On the other hand, Freedom is motivation in Christianity of the Grace Orientated Believer and fulfills the principle of live and let live in the preservation of privacy.

Satan is currently tactically victorious with regard to the United States government in this generation, but NOT as it was originally founded, which involved correct application of freedom's principles. Equality and the attempt to develop and expand it is a satanic principle which is antithetical and opposed to the principle of freedom and in fact destroys it. Our constitution said we have equality BEFORE THE LAW not as it is being presented today. Today required equality is being legislated for every aspect of life and is attempting to put everyone under the same status quo by LAW, putting every one into the same social status. This, in every aspect, is the application of EVIL to the society. Whether one is a believer or unbeliever the decisions regarding these issues provide momentum to wreck or improve one's Life on earth based on the key decision toward the Gospel of Christ and then Bible Doctrine. It is Satan's plan to try to make all people equal and if he could accomplish this, producing equality in all God's creation, he could set aside the 2nd advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and fulfillment of the divine promises of God to Israel and the church. Satan is trying to constantly demonstrate to God that he can handle creation but unfortunately for him and often times for mankind, HE CANNOT. Because of self determination and individuals being free to choose against him he is destined to fail.

Forced equality is not only the policy of tyrants but is a key to Satan's eschatological Cosmic Dynasphere and the pseudo millennium Satan wants to establish through socialism and welfare state functions. Freedom is therefore common sense and respect for the life, decisions, privacy and property of others and for the authority which regulates that freedom as in **Rom 16:19** and includes the Divine Institutions as revealed as part of the Laws of Divine Establishment. Freedom must have content of thought which is revealed in the bible as spiritual and related to the Laws of Divine Establishment. Freedom relates directly to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the decision to accept or reject The Lord Jesus, The Christ after the hearing of gospel doctrine.

Once a person exercises self determination for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God it is then God's objective is to take that believer and keep him alive in Satan's kingdom totally apart from any satanic principle, in order to allow him the opportunity to advance in the Spiritual Life and receive blessings for both time and eternity. This is GRACE as the policy and plan of God. At Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God believers absolutely receive incredible divine blessing in time which is part of the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict. The reality of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Eternal Life and the reality of blessing in time at and after Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God provides the believer with the confidence of the truth of the waiting blessing and reward for eternity to be received at the Judgment Seat of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. THIS IS INEQUALITY under GRACE.

Flexibility, Inflexibility & Freedom

Freedom begins with self determination and a person can use his Positive Volition to advance to a high state or his Negative Volition to retrogress in any and all areas of life and therefore, there is no equality in this life on this earth nor will there be with God in his heaven. Some believers use their freedom to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond thereby glorifying and pleasing God while others use it to retrogress under self determination to the end of total self destruction. Therefore, Freedom is REALITY, equality is MYTH. Equality is the device of the **pseudo intellectual**, arrogant, sociopath, the ones disoriented to life, while freedom is the motivation of the Grace oriented. All pseudo intellectuals are socialists when it suits them and they always put themselves up to be equal to those who have absolute truth as their base of thinking.

Mandated, legislated or forced equality is tyranny. Socialism, welfare state functions, gun legislation, anti-police, subjectivity in jurisprudence and anti-military are all part of this. Freedom is the policy of God for the Human Race put in place to resolve the Angelic Conflict. Freedom respects the opinions of others even though they may be wrong and does not persecute those other persons for having a wrong opinion. The fact is that most people will not agree with the believer who has learned a maximum level of Bible Doctrine and reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. However, that does not give this believer the right to persecute them, even verbally, whether they are stupid or smart arrogant pseudo intellectuals being ignorant of the principles of Bible Doctrine. All People have a right to their own personal opinions and mature believers may not like some of these opinions but the people still have a right to them. When people choose to live in close proximity to each other there always comes a time when freedom must be limited by properly delegated and instituted authority. In consideration of the supreme law of the land in this United States NO person has any right to be communist or socialist because this is totally incompatible with the United States Constitution and the freedom it guarantees. Socialism, communism, welfare state functions, Fabian Marxism are all anti freedom and destructive to FREEDOM and to this nation. Therefore, FREEDOM, is both a concentration of common sense and an orientation to reality which includes respect for:

- Life
- Free Will Volitional Choices
- Privacy (Especially believers in a local church)
- Property (which must be inviolate)
- Authority

Therefore, above all else Freedom must have content of thought from the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility & Inflexibility in Strong vs Weak Believers

Believers can be relegated to 2 categories:

> **Weak** == The new or infant believer ignorant of Bible Doctrine with Positive Volition OR the believer who is under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and reversionistic
>
> **Strong** == The advancing or mature believer with consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine who is approaching or has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Both must have the same opportunity under freedom to take in Bible Doctrine without distraction or coercion. The strong is often considered, when judged by others, to be weak because of his flexibility, the weak believer is often considered strong because of his inflexibility. The key to dealings between strong and weak believers is TOLERATION in all areas of life and total intolerance for anything which violates the Essentials of Bible Doctrine.

It is necessary in the Christian Way of Life to assign the proper level of consideration to Essentials vs Non-Essentials. The Essential of the Christian Way of Life is Bible Doctrine, PERIOD. The Non-Essentials include everything else in life. Strong believers are consistently under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine. Weak believers are either under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and reversionistic or simply immature having not logged enough time in the Spiritual Life to have assimilated any quantity of Bible Doctrine into their soul but are under Positive Volition toward doctrine. There must be total privacy of the priesthood for each in their personally determining and functioning in life under the Essentials vs the Non-Essentials.

Believers, therefore, must learn to distinguish between Essentials and Non-Essentials in life and this is a part of everyone's life spiritual or otherwise. There are too many people who have all sorts of hangups and are constantly trying to prove something at everyone else's expense including that of self. In addition too many people have no sense of humor at all and are hypersensitive and as confused as they can ever be and even science and its achievements have not dispelled this in the souls of people. People are more so now than ever before hypersensitive, mixed up, uptight, confused and arrogant and almost always on an ego trip. In life and especially the Spiritual Life, Essentials ONLY deal with and are focused on the principles of Bible Doctrine. Both believers and unbelievers must be totally inflexible about these Essentials, while Non-Essentials deal with applications of these principles to life where people must be flexible regarding relationships, conditions, situations, etc.

Every believer must understand Essential vs Non-Essential also personal vs impersonal love and this is necessary for the effective function of a doctrinal conscience. Concerning Essential Bible Doctrine the believer must be completely inflexible but in the application of it there are always many

variables which demand flexibility. The number and variety of these variables in the life of any given believer can be numerous when considering their personal growth status since no 2 believers have attained the same stage of growth but all believers are always in a constant state of change. The more the believer advances in the Spiritual Life the more flexible he becomes in his application with regard to Non-Essentials and the more tolerant he becomes of the weak immature believer. This is especially true since immature believers are generally confused with regard to what to be flexible about and what to be inflexible about. They are very often flexible about Essentials because of their ignorance of Bible Doctrine and also inflexible about Non-Essentials because of false norms and standards, arrogance and subjectivity and because they feel that they must show others how strong they are and thereby very often take a stand on stupid things. (**Rom 15:1-4**)

Flexibility & Inflexibility in Strong Believers

The member of the Royal Family of God who has attained Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through the accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the strong believer. The strong believer is the mature believer who has maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and has constructed his personal Edification Complex of the Soul and has developed most of his norms and standards from that Bible Doctrine. The strong believer does not function on a false Modus Operandi because he abides by the **Royal Family Honor Code**. He does not operate on any specific system of Morality, Self Righteousness nor Legalism but under the Royal Family Honor Code which, as a result of his Spiritual Maturity, he understands totally. The Royal Family Honor Code includes, exceeds and sometimes supersedes morality. The Royal Family Honor Code always makes an issue of Essentials never of Non-Essentials. The Royal Family Honor Code recognizes and provides for the privacy of every priest in the Royal Family of God. The Royal Family Honor Code respects the Righteousness of God imputed to and resident in all believers. The Royal Family Honor Code understands the differences between Personal Love for a select few and Impersonal Love for all mankind. The Royal Family Honor Code is inflexible about Bible Doctrine principles but very flexible about its application to situations in life.

The strong mature believer is under a divine Super Grace status and receives blessing in 5 categories while alive. He receives Spiritual, Temporal, Association, Heritage and Historical Impact blessing along with the logistical support to persevere under Undeserved Suffering and when he dies it will be by means of Dying Grace which is the last and most phenomenal blessing for the believer in time. The strong mature believer operates under the Royal Family Honor Code and from his ambassadorship produces maximum Divine Good production and can distinguish his function as an ambassador for Christ with the production as a result of his Super Grace blessing from the status and function as a Royal Priest. Much more is expected in the Christian Way of Life from the mature believer and though he may at times appear weak by keeping his mouth shut about controversial things, his keeping his mouth shut is stronger than the weak believer who takes a stand on inconsequential issues.

The Royal Family Honor Code takes cognizance of the fact that weak believers are ignorant of Bible Doctrine and full of prejudices and have nothing in the soul to comprehend the divine approbation derived from the personal freedom of believers when it is used to learn Bible Doctrine and grow in grace in the Spiritual Life and Plan of God. The legitimate function of freedom using Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has no Frame of Reference in the weak

believer. Very often when advanced principles of Bible Doctrine are presented to the weak believer, despite these being right, he is distracted from his own perception and learning of Bible Doctrine and this is a disaster for his Spiritual Life. Therefore, as a temporary function, not as permanent abstinence, the mature believer often supersedes the law of freedom with the law of love to avoid distracting the weak believer from the Bible Doctrine he needs to grow spiritually. When the immature weak believer is distracted by the mature believer functioning under the law of liberty he is being deprived of the Bible Doctrine he needs. Because the mature believer has Bible Doctrine with reference to self he must encapsulate that application of the Bible Doctrine with reference to self so as not to distract the weak believer. Therefore he must have flexibility from strength in the application of Bible Doctrine in all situations. People generally are too stupid to be able to understand flexibility in leadership and this most especially must exist in the area of Non-Essentials. Then upon entering the picture of life and understanding this necessity for flexibility mature believers will see with humor those who criticize them in life, however, Impersonal Love for Mankind must be exercised in all situations or relationships by them. When a Non-Essential distracts any immature believer this is the area or situation where mature believers must function with flexibility. This causes no hardship on the strong mature believer but provides breathing room for the immature believer to express his Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and continue his function under the **Grace Apparatus for Perception**. Thus this is a public application of tolerance and Impersonal Love.

Many freedoms of the mature believer under the law of liberty cannot be publicly flaunted without distracting the immature weak believer who does not have the same level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. While the life of any believer should not be an issue to another believer who has the sense to be under Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, lifestyle can be a great distraction to the immature believer. He is one who has neither the Bible Doctrine to have reached Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ nor the understanding of the privacy of the priesthood to enable him to cope with the liberty of more mature believers. Mature believers, by nature of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God always give Priority #1 to Bible Doctrine in life and this demands flexibility in application to Non-Essentials. This flexibility in applications means that certain legitimate functions in life which distract the immature believer who is under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine must be temporarily set aside as part of the function under the Royal Family Honor Code. Therefore, not only is the mature believer responsible for toleration of Non-Essential opinions but also for flexibility in application of Bible Doctrine to the Non-Essentials. This is why the mature believer can replace the law of liberty with:

- Law of love where the weak immature believer is concerned.
- Law of expedience where the unbeliever is concerned.
- Law of supreme sacrifice in his relationship with the Lord.

The mature believer's strength from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul is the immature believers weakness. According to the Law of Liberty, the greater the doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the greater the freedom in lifestyle, BUT, the strong mature believer has a responsibility in making sure his freedom does not become a stumbling block to the weaker immature believer, who neither understands nor has flexibility from the same level of Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Consequently Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul must be possessed in the relationship of self before God and then applied in flexibility to the immature believer so that his perception of Bible Doctrine remains the true issue in the Christian Way of Life.

When the strong believer is intolerant of the weak immature believer and does not use the principle of Impersonal Love as per the Royal Family Honor Code he may be right in his thinking but his Modus Operandi is wrong. It is possible for believers in every stage of spiritual growth to be right about some things and simultaneously be very wrong about others so that what they are right about is buried in the WRONG procedures or Modus Operandi related to them. All believers as they advance in the Spiritual Life inevitably discover that they have not nearly enough flexibility in their interactions with others in the Royal Family of God while some others are too flexible when it comes to adherence to Bible Doctrine principles. There is a time for inflexibility and a time for being flexible and these must be kept properly oriented. Differences of opinion are not serious except when there is a lack of Bible Doctrine and application of the Royal Family Honor Code. Without the motivation and backing from Metabolized Bible Doctrine differences of opinion can result in strife and schism among believers.

The weak believers under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine are Arrogant persons divorced from reality with frustration from their own Mental Attitude Sins which saturate their thinking. They are carried away in arrogance with the importance of their opinions and thus are very inflexible about their opinions. Since they are divorced from reality their opinions are generally 99% in error, inaccurate and totally incompatible with Bible Doctrine and the Christian Way of Life. Therefore, weak negative believers are very often arrogant in their sponsoring of opinions without regard for pertinent Bible Doctrine or the privacy of others who differ with them. This believer is motivated to bear grudges and function under revenge motivation and Modus Operandi and thus is a sociopath with little if any Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. His function in **reversionism** has shut off any possibility of implementing principles from Bible Doctrine and has most likely erased any doctrine he has accumulated from his soul. Therefore, he is ignorant of the Royal Family Honor Code and thus unaware of the imputation structure of the Plan of God. This believer does not understand nor use the principles of Logistical Grace which is designed and provided to support him in his spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, therefore, he is ALWAYS flexible with regard to Essential Bible Doctrine. As he moves through the stages of reversionism he is constantly in error with his applications with no common sense and no understanding of reality and therefore he MUST be AVOIDED at all times. Here is the application of the Royal Family Honor Code in the mature believer which combines Impersonal Love and flexibility in the Non-Essentials which results in adherence to the command for separation from **apostate** reversionistic believers. Therefore, it must be understood that the superseding laws do not apply for weak negative believers in reversionism but these laws of love, expediency or supreme sacrifice only apply with reference to the weak positive immature believer who is still advancing in the Spiritual Life. (**Rom 16:17**) So great was the controversy in Rome that Paul had to apply the Royal Family Honor Code as the solution and in so doing he solved many problems among Christians even those in our time.

There comes a time when believers have to cut someone off totally in life and completely avoid them and it has nothing to do with lack of Impersonal Love. Impersonal Love is still involved in this

process because this mature believer is allowing the other person to live their life as they wish without interference but not participating with them in it. However, there is no such thing as impersonal hate. Believers are commanded to separate from other believers who have rejected Bible Doctrine and are mixed up with regard to Bible Doctrine and involved in some type of emotionalism, legalism, or antinomianism in place of the Christian Way of Life. Weak believers who are constantly under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine do not obey nor serve The Lord Jesus, The Christ. (**John 7:37-38**, **Phil 3:18-19**)

Flexibility and Inflexibility of Weak Believers

Weak negative believers are ignorant of Bible Doctrine as a result of rejection or indifference to Bible Doctrine and have emotion as their criterion for life. They may come and listen to Bible Doctrine but reject some doctrine or the authority of the one teaching. They are arrogant and reject all authority except their own and have abused grace and distorted the Plan of God in legalism and antinomianism. As an arrogant person this weak negative believer is guilty of mental sins and his verbal sins malign, judge and vindictively criticize others who disagree with his position on everything. He is a reversionist, living life in some stage of reversionism, is implacable and vindictive and always carries a grudge and seeks revenge. He is ignorant of the **Royal Family Honor Code**, the structure of the Plan of God, the imputation and objectives of Logistical Grace in keeping him alive in this life. He is ignorant of accurate Bible Doctrine but is positive toward anything which confuses doctrinal issues. When the reversionistic believer is saturated by apostasy he becomes totally inflexible about Non-Essentials and totally flexible with the Essential of life being totally opposite to the strong mature believer. When a believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he will be so very flexible on the Non-Essentials that others will think him weak and vacillating while he is truly strong with unimpeachable standards from Bible Doctrine. The people criticizing the standards of this strong mature believer, as weak negative believers, think doing the simple and socially acceptable thing is the correct track to be following when in fact it is most often the wrong thing to be doing. Many believers fail in the Spiritual Life by coming to Bible class and listening only when they want to and only when interested in the subject being presented and they do not understand the importance of concentration and understanding every lesson and all doctrine. These people only assimilate that which they accept and agree with and are thus NOT authority oriented and very weak in their stubbornness and have no self discipline. They have no interest in identifying their own arrogant subjectivity and recognizing that though believers have free will there are times when it must be checked at the door. ALL Bible Doctrine is for the Spiritual Life of every believer and believers must concentrate on what is taught without regard as to whether it interests them or NOT.

Inflexibility toward Non-Essentials in Weak Believers

There are variations of perspective about everything in life and these views are influenced by what is resident in the soul of the individual. All the information accumulated into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul feeds the Norms and Standards of the individual and these all then relate to volition with both Positive Volition and Negative Volition functions in the soul and also emotion added to this so that it all relates to the individuals self consciousness. This often results in people becoming totally inflexible about their environmental background and too flexible about Bible Doctrine after they have made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore as a result the weak negative and strong mature believers are totally antithetical in their position and function

in the Christian Way of Life. The strong mature believer emphasizes the Essentials of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul while the weak negative believer emphasizes the Non-Essentials from standards formed before salvation with regard to Legalism and Antinomianism. This results in complete antithesis between the strong believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul who is inflexible about the Essentials and totally flexible about the Non-Essentials and the weak negative believer who is totally opposite. The weak negative believer is an ignorant reversionist having rejected Bible Doctrine and accepted some background substitute. His Norms and Standards are not based on the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine but on his background, environment, academic training and systems of admiration developed throughout his life.

In Rome there were 2 background substitutes for absolute truths of Bible Doctrine. Some believers became involved with Judaism and were therefore very legalistic in keeping the law while others, the majority, had come from heathenism in the roman empire and reacted to legalism without being stabilized by Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Gentile believers as weak immature believers tended to set up taboos for anything related to heathenism and their application was far ahead of their accumulated Bible Doctrine so that they were inflexible with regard to the taboos but very flexible about Bible Doctrine and often in fact indifferent to it. Therefore, many forms of controversy existed with regard to food, wine and the observation of holy days. Every generation in history has had its own taboos and controversies. In Rome some emphasized taboos about eating and drinking foods while others had no reservations regarding these things and as a result great controversy existed in Rome about these Non-Essentials within Christian circles. Some emphasized strict observance of holy days while others with more Bible Doctrine made the application regarding every day being alike. Strong mature believers, as often occurs today, had a tendency to be intolerant of the weak immature believer while the weak believer judged and criticized the strong believer but both were wrong no matter how right their cause was.

Jewish Christians with a background in the Mosaic Law wanted to keep the holy days even though they had become Christians. Christian Gentiles with their reaction to heathenism wanted to practice asceticism with regard to food offered to Idols. Having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and understanding the Royal Family Honor Code would have avoided reaction by either side. The weak immature believer is often very dogmatic about taboos and generally legalistic and practices some sort of asceticism and has either misapplication of Bible Doctrine or none at all. They are influenced by personal opinion and ethics and also by arrogance and Self Righteousness rather than Bible Doctrine and very often become a source of strife because of it. When there is misapplication of Bible Doctrine or No application at all with accompanying arrogance, when dogmatism is encountered, a strong mature believer may be tempted to criticize and even ridicule this person even when, to some extent, he agrees with them.

Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine always leads to overreaction in the area of asceticism where it promotes scruples and ethics and gives precedence to these over Bible Doctrine. These ascetic or legalistic people are therefore more interested in what others are doing and always trying to line these others up with their systems of Norms and Standards, behavior and Self Righteousness rather than allowing them to inculcate Bible Doctrine. When Bible Doctrine becomes secondary to morals and the background conventions of ethics the result is arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of

the Soul and legalistic asceticism as the Modus Vivendi. The resulting controversy and strife makes Bible Doctrine teaching in the Local Church impossible and this strife creates an environment of total rejection of Bible Doctrine. If these people listen at all to any Bible Doctrine being taught their only reason is to get a point for their side of the controversy or to solve one of their own personal problems. Through Bible Doctrine teaching the Pastor Teacher must establish discipline so that objectivity is the order of the day when listening to the teaching of the word of God, and where the Royal Family Honor Code provides a recognition of the privacy of the priesthood and results in the exercise of Impersonal Love as the attitude toward the weak immature positive believer.

Weak Negative Believers vs Weak Immature Believers

The negative believer must not be confused with a new or immature believer. Weak negative believers are under consistent negative volition toward Bible Doctrine and therefore ignorant of Bible Doctrine although saved, possibly even for many years. Their emphasis is on production or on some system of morals, ethics or Self Righteousness and they have no emphasis on Bible Doctrine and no toleration for those who are interested in Bible Doctrine. The weak negative believer is a reversionist whose criteria for life is emotion and who lives by prejudice, ethics and morals and is strong on scruples and feeble in Bible Doctrine. The weak negative believer is a consistent violator of the Royal Family Honor Code and his violations include:

- Rejection of the privacy of the royal priesthood
  - He sticks his nose into everyone's business
- Seeking to gain or receive blessing from God by means of production
  - Both legitimate and legalistic
- Ignoring the difference between Personal Love vs Impersonal Love
  - He is ignorant of the true principle of loving the brethren or thy neighbor as self
  - He inserts false concepts related to emotion into the understanding of love

This weak negative believer is both legalistic and critical of all who don't share his legalism and is emotional and often mentally unstable making it very easy for him to become opinionated and dogmatic about Non-Essentials in life. This believer uses the liberty of the strong mature believer as an excuse and rationalization to sin himself and become distracted from Bible Doctrine thus his reaction, strife, bitterness and subjectivity destroy the objective approach to perception of the teaching of Bible Doctrine. The weak believer can therefore be the one who is either ignorant of Bible Doctrine as a new believer or one who has neglected or rejected Bible Doctrine as a result of negative volition. Both can be inflexible in their application in certain circumstances. Weak negative believers are inflexible about Non-Essentials and flexible about the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization and application of Bible Doctrine. The weak negative believer is always ego sensitive and demands attention and is easily moved to self pity and when frustrated by lack of attention moves into inordinate competition and inordinate ambition. He is not interested in the teaching of Bible Doctrine but is arrogantly forceful about personal opinions, experiences and prejudices and through legalistic bullying seeks to impose his false standards on others. He becomes prying, meddlesome and a trouble maker having no respect for the authority in the Local Church, Bible Doctrine nor the freedom of the believer associated with privacy and property. Strong mature believers must remember privacy and property cannot ever be divorced from freedom and vice versa. Mature believers must receive the weak believer while not making an issue about Non-Essentials, however, when the issue is one of error with regard to the essential of Bible Doctrine the

Mature believer must separate from this negative believer. Mature believers must never get involved in judging or intruding on his privacy and this immature believer must never intrude on the privacy of the mature believer nor form a conspiracy of legalism or some tyranny of asceticism toward them.

The weak immature or new Believer, in contrast, simply lacks Bible Doctrine because he has not spent enough time in grade as a believer and needs tolerance of his erroneous opinions in order for him to have an opportunity to continue his growth under his own Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and change his own opinions from that inculcated doctrine. The immature believer when under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and not involved in reversionism exemplifies the reason for toleration. With regard to weak negative believers in reversionism mature believers do not tolerate their views but identify them as false doctrine or anti-doctrine and then separate from these believers. Immature believers do not have in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul sufficient details regarding the doctrines of God and more mature believers must therefore tolerate their views allowing them under freedom and privacy the opportunity to advance from their immature status in their own time. Immature believers very often do not even understand the concept of taboos and some even believe it is wrong to eat meat and will thank God for his food and then ONLY eat vegetables. The point of reality for him here is that if the God the Holy Spirit is strong enough to sanctify vegetables can he not sanctify meat or any other foods as well. All weak immature believers tend to limit God in their thinking, in fact they cannot do anything else since Bible Doctrine is the thinking of Christ and no one can think the thoughts of Christ until he has accumulated these thoughts which are found only in the Bible Doctrine of Scripture. Believers become strong as they learn more and more Bible Doctrine and they are not strong because they witness or pray or follow structured Christian programs. On the other hand weak believers never know they are weak but think they are strong and that they are great believers because of what they avoid or prohibit themselves from doing. They think the strong or mature believers are weak because they won't defend themselves in controversies but these weak believers don't understand that strong mature believers do not owe any explanations to anyone and this is part of their great strength. The sooner the believer realizes he is weak the sooner he will become strong by engaging in persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. He will then realize that those who he thought weak are in fact strong and he will then orient to life and gain great capacity for life.

Weak Believers & Emotional Revolt of the Soul

The Weak immature believer under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God begins to take in Bible Doctrine consistently and as he moves toward maturity his confusion about the Plan of God and Christian Way of Life dissipates and he puts the Bible Doctrine together as a systematic theology. Every Positive believer starts ignorant and his weakness is replaced by strength as he advances in the Spiritual Life accumulating maximum knowledge of Bible Doctrine. However, the weak ignorant believer who is under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine enters into and goes through the 8 stages of **reversionism** and eventually ends up leaving this life under the Sin Unto Death which is the ultimate dying Divine Discipline. Both weak believers are ignorant of Bible Doctrine and thus is in the state of being spiritually weak. This believer may be physically or mentally strong or physically or mentally weak but is spiritually weak because of lacking the thinking of The Lord Jesus, The Christ which is Bible Doctrine. Therefore it becomes obvious

that Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the strength of the believer. Therefore, the weak believer inevitably is always flexible regarding Essentials and inflexible regarding Non-Essentials.

EXAMPLE: In reversionism and Emotional Revolt of the Soul the weak negative believer does not FEEL saved after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God nor does he FEEL spiritual even when he is in fellowship under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. When he has some experience which arouses higher levels of emotion he becomes inflexible about this experience. He then claims that such things as speaking in tongues is a real valid spiritual function despite it being a false Non-Essential experience. As a result he becomes totally flexible about the doctrine of tongues or some other system of emotional reversionism. This believer will by his own free will volitional act move into the stages of reversionism and therefore be used by God to test and try to distract other Positive Volition believers from Bible Doctrine. For this reason very often the weak negative believer is totally divorced from reality and is a spiritual or real psychotic or neurotic and may in fact be sociopathic because he does not have true Norms and Standards from Bible Doctrine but immerses his Norms and Standards in emotional activity. This weak believer is either distorting grace into antinomianism or zealously working for blessing from God in legalistic reversionism. Though these approaches are antithetical both are weak. Because he is ignorant of Bible Doctrine he is arrogant and rejects all authority and authority orientation is an Essential part of adjustment to reality and therefore the weak negative believer IS totally divorced from reality. As an arrogant person divorced from reality this weak negative believer is frustrated by a saturation of Mental Attitude Sins which motivate verbal sins such as judging and maligning and very often bears grudges and is motivated to revenge tactics. This weak negative believer as a sociopath, without any Norms and Standards from Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, becomes a law unto himself or a victim of his emphasis on emotion. Emotion lacks thought and doctrine and without Bible Doctrine to respond to it is totally irrational. The emotion is part of the soul which is designed to respond to the thinking from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Thought in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul develops Norms and Standards in the soul and they cause the individual to respond to his thoughts with properly oriented emotion. The weak believers lack this function of soul.

Inflexibility & Emotional Revolt of the Soul

Emotional Revolt of the Soul is a stage of reversionism which always inevitably begins with some type of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. This can be neglecting bible study for something more interesting to outright rejection of Bible Doctrine which is taught in a bible class. This inevitably results from and often in reaction to life and / or reaction to some bible doctrine and distraction from consistent bible study. In reacting to doctrine and to one's situation in life there begins a Frantic Search for Happiness in the "material things" of life. Inevitably this all boomerangs into causing greater Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and greater reaction to life and doctrine and a greater more intense Frantic Search for Happiness and sublimation by involvement with things of stimulation in life such as partying, drugs, alcohol, sex, etc. As Negative Volition is increased the individual becomes LOCKED into Negative Volition and cannot accept any absolute truth of Bible Doctrine. The locked in Negative Volition causes a Black Out of the Soul which occurs as a result of malfunction in the **Grace Apparatus for Perception**, **Operation Z**, and over time the Metabolized Bible Doctrine which had been resident in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is

systematically erased and the resulting soul vacuum draws in the satanic LIE of the Doctrines of EVIL to replace it. Therefore, he is unable to apply Bible Doctrine to the situations and circumstances of life because it is now gone from his soul. The consistent Negative Volition and Black Out of the Soul which has removed any residual Bible Doctrine from his soul and destroyed his divine norms and standards and Divine Viewpoint of life begins and continues to build a maximum Scar Tissue of the Soul so that the believer is therefore UNABLE to learn Bible Doctrine and certainly unable to apply it. This puts the Old Sin Nature totally in control of the soul and under its stimulation the emotion of the soul revolts and takes over rulership of the soul in Emotional Revolt of the Soul. This believer, in this status quo, then becomes locked into **Reverse Process Reversionism** where he is completely indistinguishable from the status he had as an unbeliever and is equal in his function to any unbeliever, being completely valueless as a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict, therefore, he is taken home by God under the most severe Divine Discipline imaginable in the Sin Unto Death to be face to face with the lord.

As a result, instead of responding to Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the emotions revolt and take control of the soul. In all cases, persistent Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine eventuates in the emotion, the empty hollow responder, taking over rulership of the soul. Emotion does not contain Bible Doctrine nor the ability to rationalize nor any common sense but is simply a responder. Therefore, when emotion runs the soul this is a complete breakdown of soul function and as a result all capacity for life is lost. This all builds up from Negative Volition causing the Frantic Search for Happiness in the first place but ends up completely overwhelming the soul. Therefore Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine plus recession of thought is replaced by the Frantic Search for Happiness and total dependence on what one is FEELING rather than common sense. When the absolute truths of doctrine are rejected there is and must be a search for something to stimulate the emotion, a chemical, mental or physical substitution to take the place of Metabolized Bible Doctrine. This is the search for stimulation and sublimation and is how people get into chemical destruction of the soul from alcoholism or drug addiction. Ultimately, having lost the ability to respond to the thinking of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the emotion becomes inflexible regarding Non-Essentials. (**Rev 2:20-23**)

The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul must control the emotion for there to be any spiritual advance. Emotion as a responder contributes to capacity for life but is never supposed to be a leader. When it becomes a leader in the soul, it destroys all capacity for life. Emotion as a follower increases and intensifies capacity for life, love and happiness. (**Gen 43:30**, **I Kings 3:24-26**, **Phil 1:8**, **1John 3:17**, **Prov 23:15-17**) However, emotion as a reactor in revolt in the soul contributes to loss of capacity for life as well as loss of motivation and momentum in the Spiritual Life. (**Jer 4:19**, **Lam 1:20-2-11**, **Jer 11:19-20**)

The Weak Immature Believer

The mature believer's attitude toward this immature believer is to be toleration since this believer will grow up and find out for himself the good, the bad and the ugly of the Christian Way of Life. Bible Doctrine must be the primary issue in their Spiritual Life and mature believers must never try to straighten out the errors held by these immature believers. While this Immature believer has enough doctrine to be grateful and have thanksgiving to the Lord he does not always understand that foods, dress, grooming etc., are not ever an issue in the Spiritual Life. He may have many

hangups and often thinks of God as a super ascetic individual therefore he becomes ascetic in order to fulfill his desire to please or glorify God. He will be corrected by persistence in the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and its application from his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore, strong or mature believers must never try to push this immature believer into any behavior or application system.

Divisions which develop in Christianity are mostly the inability of believers individually or collectively to recognize the Non-Essential fields of Christianity and not judge other's involvement in them but tolerate believers who are working on their spiritual advance. Unfortunately today, there is great inflexibility in Christian circles in the many areas of Non-Essentials. The only thing which can correct this is Bible Doctrine taught properly from the pulpits of the local churches. All believers in the Christian Way of Life must accumulate Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from personal consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and not from any pressure or bullying by others. The weak immature believer may often be in error in a Non-Essential application or understanding of a concept of Bible Doctrine, but still is to be accepted into the congregation of the Local Church. As a believer he must learn to keep his personal views, whatever they are, to himself and not try to superimpose them on others because this will subject him to excommunication from the local church. In all cases for all believers, Bible Doctrine must be what changes their perspective in all things. Believers are, and must be, free and entitled to personal opinions and Modus Operandi whether correct or incorrect and if incorrect, then Bible Doctrine must be permitted in time to change these and not some nosy meddlesome busy body. Immature believers must beware that properly developed doctrinal Norms and Standards may not allow for some opinions or activities in life and when they try to involve themselves in these areas with others they admire and try to copy their attitudes this will destroy them. All believers must base what they think, say, and do on the understanding of Bible Doctrine and the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and never copy others they admire. This copying of 'heroes' will inevitably destroy the believer who has weak norms and standards as a result of doing the things which the 'heroes'. This emulation of admired others will cause immature believers to become weaker and will destroy them by distracting them from the Spiritual Life and inculcation of Bible Doctrine. Others, who are not saturated with Bible Doctrine may not have the Norms and Standards of spiritual maturity and thus what mature believers do may also cause them to self destruct because their Norms and Standards reject certain of these behaviors or concepts. Whenever people in periphery of a mature believer can possibly become involved in things not up to their Norms and Standards he has a responsibility to NOT lead them astray.

Strong Believers Compared to Weak Believers

There is a command to the mature believer that he should be sensitive, thoughtful and conscious of the fact that others have feelings and even though they may be arrogant or subjective these others still have feelings. The strong believer is to be considerate of the circumstances of the weak immature believer whose ignorance of Bible Doctrine results in numerous Non-Essential opinions and judgments. As the believer grows up in the Spiritual Life he must become aware of other people and their feelings and make the feelings of others a greater priority than his own. It is always a great temptation to destroy arrogance in others especially when one has greater physical or mental strength than they. However, the greatest strength of character is required not do destroy them but to tolerate them. Therefore, weak immature believers must recognize the privacy of the

mature believer while the mature believer must demonstrate flexibility and tolerance toward the immature believers. In this way both conform to the **Royal Family Honor Code** and this is what brings equality of opportunity for each to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, function under or application of the Royal Family Honor Code for the weak immature believer is respect for the privacy of the strong believer. Function under and application of the Royal Family Honor Code for the strong mature believer is a Modus Vivendi of impersonal love directed toward the immature. Therefore The Royal Family Honor Code demands a varying Modus Operandi and Modus Vivendi for all categories of believers in all stages of spiritual growth.

This is in fact the mature believers application of the Royal Family Honor Code to Non-Essentials and here we see the strength of the mature believer in his approach to Non-Essentials. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the mature believer, having been perceived in the past, is now an application of flexibility toward Non-Essentials. This confirms that the guidelines of the Mosaic Law, some which have become Christian taboos, have been superseded and those of asceticism are not valid with regard to food, beverage, dress or holy days. This is flexibility in the mature believers regarding the Non-Essentials. This does not give the believer free reign to get drunk regularly and carouse around town partying constantly. The point in reality is that believers should never listen to people who constantly tell them what they must or must not think, say or do. However, on the other hand, they often must realize that they must back off on some personal standards so that it will not offend another believer who is weak, immature and stupid and who has incredible hangups. Therefore, advanced believers, at times, avoid doing things they know have no wrong in their doing in order to be flexible and strong with Bible Doctrine and not distract or offend growing believers. Flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials is the strength of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, however, the immature believer has no flexibility in this area but has great vacillation in his weakness.

Weak believers are not to be accepted so that others can be thoughtless or vindictively critical of them but to be flexible around them and make Bible Doctrine the issue. The Church Age is not the Old Testament Scripture times when there were groups who made vows to give up certain standards in life to honor the Lord. Strong believers in or approaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God are flexible in their life functions and can imbibe alcohol without going crazy or eat all foods without concern about where they came from or how they were prepared or smoke tobacco or dance or swim with the opposite sex, etc. The weak believer may have hangups regarding these things but the real issue is found in the Royal Family Honor Code and the Doctrine of simple Grace principles and functioning under the principle of privacy which is live and let live. Inflexibility in the wrong place, under the wrong situation or in the wrong time is weakness while inflexibility in the right place is in fact great strength. The objective for the strong mature believer is to give all people a chance to take in Bible Doctrine so that every person can, from his own privacy, engage in spiritual growth and make his own applications.

Believers must understand the Essentials of the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrines about which they must be totally inflexible and the Non-Essentials of life to which they can have totally flexible application of Bible Doctrine. The strong believer is flexible and does not make issue of the Non-Essentials in his application of doctrine whereas the weak believer may be inflexible in these similar applications. The inflexibility of the believer with regard to Essential Bible Doctrine can be

comparable to moral courage which takes a position of inflexibility in a specific set of circumstances based on specific principles. The inflexibility of saying no to certain things in life is acceptable in private life but not when it comes to interfering with others and their decisions of life. At times the weak believer, refusing to eat meat, becomes a vegetarian on the basis of religious legalism not dietary scruples and although this is acceptable for him, he must never try to make anyone else follow his example and when they don't comply attempt to persecute them. To be vegetarian for dietary reasons is totally permissible and there is nothing wrong, immoral or evil about it, but to be vegetarian for the purpose of gaining divine approbation is stupid and demonstrates lack of understanding of the Christian Way of Life. If one is inflexible in saying that God is only pleased with vegetarians and tries to superimpose this on the volition of others he is wrong and MORALLY WEAK. This is the subjective Self Righteous Arrogant conscience of the weak believer which possesses legalistic and reversionistic standards which are not the issue in a relationship with the Lord nor in fellowship with other believers. Weak immature believers have deficiencies of Bible Doctrine and they often try to make up for this with arrogance which takes their own personal standards or taboos, to which under privacy they have a personal right, but under arrogance they try to superimpose these on others. In a blatant violation of privacy, Arrogance tries to superimpose on all individuals in its periphery false ideas and standards instead of allowing for free will choices. While Christian fellowship demands privacy of the priesthood and allows for differences of opinions, the legalistic believer often becomes a bully and tyrant seeking to superimpose his opinions on others. Ascetic observation of a myriad of taboos or observance of certain holy days are not necessary for Christian fellowship and there can be differences of opinion about many things but when it comes to Bible Doctrine there can be no flexibility. Thus the Royal Family Honor Code becomes Essential in the associations developed with other believers as well as in living life as unto the Lord. Because strife can be engendered by both strong and weak believers in their clash of opinions it is necessary to point out the Mental Attitude failure of the strong mature believer and verbal failure of the weak immature believer in wrongly criticizing the other and the total violation of their privacy in doing so. Disagreement in Non-Essentials should never destroy Christian fellowship. Non-Essentials encompass legalism and antinomianism and mature believers have no right to react to either since they are to move down the middle of the road in these areas. (**1Cor 8:4-8**)

The weak immature are flexible regarding Bible Doctrine, its intake and principles but inflexible regarding applications while the Strong and mature are flexible regarding the applications of the inflexible Bible Doctrine. The greatest arrogance comes from the inflexibility of application of principle or doctrine with regard to Non-Essential opinions or ideas. Inflexibility in Non-Essentials is characterized by arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and total absence of any sense of humor. Arrogance of the soul is a terrible weakness and fails to recognize that individually no one will ever be perfect in life nor will they ever be free of sin or failure. The idea that people can and do actually think they are close to perfection is a result of having entered into a Non-Essential function and related it to spirituality and is total arrogance. In the Spiritual Life believers must learn this and know that no 2 believers are at the same stage of spiritual growth. Those who have advanced must tolerate those who have not. Those who have not advanced must not judge those who have. Ladies and Gentlemen know when to be flexible and when to be inflexible and there is no excuse for flexibility where an Essential is concerned. A primary example is that people in the United States of America should not be tolerant of the shredding of our constitution and especially not regarding the violation of principles of Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment.

Weak believers, Guilt & Non-Essentials

When the weak believer violates his own taboos and seeks to emulate the strong believer he condemns himself for the violations he engages in. Weak believers must be permitted to stand by their own Norms and Standards even if they are false until Bible Doctrine changes those Norms and Standards. The weak immature believer who abandons his taboos, which are based on former standards of conscience, and copies the habits of another who has more Bible Doctrine and whose Modus Operandi is based on that level of Bible Doctrine is wrong. Because the weak believer does not possess that Bible Doctrine or the derived Norms and Standards, he is functioning based on the freedom of another believer who is in effect leading him astray. The more mature believer, who is right in what is being done is wrong in taking the weak believer along because he does not have the necessary Norms and Standards for the occasion. Weak believers must be allowed to accumulate Bible Doctrine to change their Norms and Standards from the level of resident doctrine in their own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. One of the ramifications of a lack of Bible Doctrine in the Norms and Standards is a weakened conscience with the resultant development of a guilt complex. When the Norms and Standards of a soul begin to doubt, then out comes the greatest sin imaginable, the guilt complex. The doubt results from an insufficient concentration of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul combined with the remnant of Human Viewpoint Norms and Standards of the conscience which cannot handle this and this is the destruction in the Spiritual Life resulting from the guilt complex. Guilt makes an ego maniac out of a person and when he cannot get rid of his problems they become an obsession so that the guilt complex is in effect carrying around a personal arrogance and obsession all the time. This believer has taken some Non-Essential thing and has become inflexible about it because lacking Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he cannot be flexible about the Non-Essential. When some situation or activity violates the Norms and Standards of a weak believer he should never engage in it but must simply decline to participate and say NO. If this weak believer condones or participates in a situation or activity which is a violation of his personal Norms and Standards it very often results in a guilt reaction and destruction of his Spiritual Life.

Essentials, Eating, Exercise & Life

Agreement on lifestyle or diet or observation of "holy" days is not necessary for Christian fellowship thus the Royal Family Honor Code becomes Essential in one's association with other believers as well as living life as unto the Lord. The weak immature believer converts environmental influence and Non-Essential opinions into rigid orthodoxy. He substitutes Non-Essentials and taboos for Bible Doctrine and labels others apostate for not following his taboo rules. He has no right to such inflexible attitudes which are part of age old taboos having more to do with oriental cults than Christian functions. Weak believers cannot distinguish between Non-Essential opinions and Essential doctrines and therefore their standards and taboos are a part of their Self Righteous paraphernalia. With a little Self Righteousness combined with Arrogance anyone can take the most petty things in the world and convert them into orthodoxy.

Essentials are principles of doctrine and must never be compromised under any circumstances. God has a plan for the life of every believer and has allowed each of us a period of time on this earth and no matter what we eat or how we live we will live for that period until it is his time for each of us to die. The only factors which can be considered with regard to diet and exercise are with

reference to the healthful quality of life but length of life is determined ONLY by God. Eating, exercise, other habits such as smoking, drinking, etc. are Non-Essentials. This requires great flexibility in any mixed group or congregation and believers especially must be allowed their freedom and privacy to function as they wish. There are certainly some beneficial health rules for eating and exercise but these are not an issue in the Spiritual Life and being a Non-Essential of life are not a basis for breaking fellowship in a Local Church or with other believers. Personal views and opinions are not to be corrected by anyone in one's periphery but if they are to be corrected it is ONLY by Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

2 Major Differences Between Strong & Weak Believers

Under the Royal Family Honor Code to back down when you are right is strength and flexibility. By not accommodating self only, the emphasis is placed on the Norms and Standards of the subject, which as a mature believer are derived from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The weak immature believer has minimum Bible Doctrine and maximum arrogance from which he formulates and manufactures inconsequential opinions and superficialities about which he is inflexible. It is a fool who is inflexible about superficialities. The fool is arrogant and thus is inflexible about inconsequential and superficial things and will inevitably repeat his mistakes and failures in life again and again. The strong mature believer must carry a heavy burden by toleration of silly, arrogant, inconsequential people who have inconsequential opinions in order for him to make Bible Doctrine the issue. It is only **Metabolized Bible Doctrine** in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the weak believer which will bring him to maturity and this will inevitably provide for him a great sense of humor to enable him to laugh at himself and his prior opinions. Immature believers always take self too seriously and are totally inflexible about Non-Essentials and this can only change with an increase in the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The emphasis in the Christian Way of Life is THOUGHT and the honor and integrity of the strong believer is the Christian Way of Life, not doing good deeds but thinking with integrity. The toleration of the immature believer's superficial opinions is derived from function under Impersonal Love which always emphasizes the Norms and Standards based on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine of the subject and assigns no merit to the object of that love.

Strong mature believers are by definition under consistent Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and through daily function under the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** are accumulating greater levels of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. With regard to this function the mature believer takes a firm stand on Bible Doctrine as an Essential and is very inflexible regarding it. In his application of this accumulated Bible Doctrine he, however, is very flexible and does not take stands regarding Non-Essential, stupid, inconsequential things, false norms or false standards, etc. This flexibility regarding Non-Essentials of life and inflexibility regarding Essentials can demonstrate itself as **moral courage** in the strong mature believer. Weak immature believers invariably are inflexible about Non-Essentials in life and totally flexible about the true Essential of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine. Strong believers must be inflexible about such things as:

- Pseudo Speaking in Tongues
- Homosexuality
- Salvation by FAITH alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ ALONE.

Strong believers must be flexible about such things as:

- Celebration of "Holy Days"
- Food
- Dress
- Grooming
- Hygiene
- etc.

Strong mature believers tolerate others especially weak believers and engage them with Impersonal Love following the command of loving the brethren and having a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward them. This gives the weak immature believer privacy and this toleration leaves them in a state of objectivity where Bible Doctrine is concerned.

The occupational hazard and besetting sin of the weak believer is judging and trying to bully the mature believer into conformity with false standards. The weak negative legalistic believer is the worst bully in the world being Self Righteous, petty, arrogant, implacable and inflexible. The weak negative believer judges, maligns and vindictively criticizes the mature believer who must not ever lower himself to the legalistic standards of the weak believer by engaging in retaliation. Arrogance and jealousy are the source of the implacability of the weak negative believer toward the strong mature believer. The problem with both can be arrogance with contempt on the part of the strong and judging on the part of the weak. Arrogance motivates the weak negative believer to judge and bully the strong believer while arrogance can motivate the strong believer to regard with contempt and snobbishness this antagonist. Judging the strong mature believer is both sinful and involvement with or influence from Evil on the part of the weak negative believer. Judging can be a mental or verbal sin and it results from the Evil motivation of assuming the prerogative of the Justice of God. All believers and especially the weak believers are commanded to abstain from judging, maligning and implacable criticism of others. This is an Essential in the Spiritual Life and demands strict inflexibility. Gossip, maligning, judging and all verbal sins are motivated by Evil and in application believers must be inflexible and intolerant where this occurs. This is one of the important functions of the Pastor Teacher in the Local Church where under his doctrinally derived authority he must remove those believers who find it necessary to engage in judging others. Flexibility in Non-Essentials for all believers is honorable, virtuous, thoughtful of others and is the strong mature believer carrying the burden for the weak immature believer, protecting them from reversionism and the accompanying warning, intensive and dying Divine Discipline.

Therefore, strong believers often set aside their total inflexibility regarding Bible Doctrine principles of function and become totally flexible where application is concerned when they see the stupid immature believer doing something completely wrong. The occupational hazard of the mature believer is arrogance related to his superior knowledge of Bible Doctrine however, even after making hundreds of correct flexible applications of Bible Doctrine he very often succumbs to spiritual snobbishness and arrogance and looks with disdain on the stupid weak believer. The weak believer in judging according to false standards is always implacable and inflexible and indefatigable in his judgment of people and his Self Righteous Arrogance. Because of his inflexibility he develops great energy created by false thinking in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. Every case of his judging uses a false standard of legalism and being a weak negative believer without Metabolized Bible Doctrine and without Grace Orientation he constantly tries to superimpose these false standard on others. The lack of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is what

has resulted in these false standards which are then used with arrogance to make a life time habit of sinfully judging other believers in a blatant violation of the privacy of the Royal Family Honor Code.

Flexibility in Holiday Observation

It is often the weak negative believer who overemphasizes the observance of holidays or "Holy Days". The new or ignorant positive believer having just a small bit of Bible Doctrine often emphasizes the origins of some of the holidays as from pagan rituals and refuses to observe these for that reason. People have a right to believe and function in any way they desire so long as it does not interfere with others. If they want, they can avoid celebration of holidays or "holy days" or they can strictly observe them when they occur. The only difficulty arises when a person or pastor wants to superimpose their desires on others and claim that this holiday observance is the Spiritual Life and glorifying to the Lord; this is a WEAK believer. Whether a person observes Christmas or Easter or any other holiday or "holy day" is his business alone because this is a Non-Essential. Requiring strict observance of holidays is inflexibility in application to life and the only inflexibility one has should be with regard to the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine. Just because pagans worshiped false gods on Christmas or engaged in phallic rites on Easter does not mean that a person cannot or should not provide gifts on Christmas or hunt eggs on Easter. These holidays are very pleasant times for families and should be considered just another day that the Lord has given us to enjoy. Special holidays like Christmas and Easter give unbelievers something to look forward to during the year. Though believers should regard every day alike does not mean they should celebrate every day the same way. All believers must remain flexible in order to avoid difficulties in their observance with regard to holidays. Believers must be flexible in all applications of Bible Doctrine even though they may reject some of the origins and implications of some special days and how they are observed. Hanukkah is one of the greatest holidays in history because it is a celebration of freedom through military victory. Every person and every culture recognizes certain days as special in the sense that something happened which is consider special on those days. Even though believers are to regard all days as alike and as being from the Lord, they can be and should be very flexible in observance of each of the 'special' days. Many holidays are very nice times and believers can enjoy the atmosphere of certain holidays and can apply what they know any way they want but must remain flexible about the Non-Essentials and inflexible ONLY about Bible Doctrine. When the Lord gives us days, whether others consider that something special has occurred on that day or not, these days are still from him and we must not ever lose track of this. While Sunday the first day of the week has been set aside as a special assembly day in the Church Age it is no holier than any other day which the Lord has given the believer. The controversy over the observation of days has and will exist to the end of time and the ultimate consideration with regard to this controversy is not who is right or wrong but who is weak and who is strong in the Spiritual Life.

Essential Privacy for Weak and Strong Believer

Live and let live gives each believer the opportunity to live life as unto the Lord who alone has the power to make him hold his ground and stand fast or change direction and move ahead. The weak immature believer does not have this power and thus violates the Royal Family Honor Code and usurps the prerogative of the Lord in seeking to superimpose his weaknesses on the strong mature believer. No weak believer has any right to judge or criticize any believer who does not conform to any presupposed pattern whether legalistic or antinomian. Therefore, the weak immature believer violates the Royal Family Honor Code by interfering with and intruding on the privacy of the strong

believer. They fail to observe the privacy of the priesthood and through the bullying of judging, maligning or other adverse criticism, seek to coerce the strong mature believer into a system of legalism. No one has any right to judge or intrude on the privacy of others or get involved in trying to straighten out other believers but must allow only Bible Doctrine to do this, this is having patience in the Word of God. Mature believers are generally anxious for people to have their standards and be at their stage of spiritual growth but must remember that these were acquired by consistent prolonged Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine over a period of time and not by the bullying of others. (**Rom 14:4**) There are always people who try to be the doctrinal source or the conscience for others. Nagging wives, bullying husbands, mothers trying to correct adult children, etc. None of this has anything to do with Christianity. In effect effort must be constantly made to personally retain privacy regarding any position related to Essentials or Non-Essentials in life.

Occupational Hazards of the Strong vs Weak Believer

The Strong mature believer is oriented to reality while the weak negative believer is not. The weak negative believer is always trying to convert the Non-Essentials of life into a rigid form of orthodoxy instead of recognizing them as a ductile system of opinions. This inflexibility with regard to Non-Essentials keeps him from orienting to reality and being divorced from reality he tends to judge, malign, and destructively criticize others. Being divorced from reality he has a form or arrogance in which he thinks that the most inconsequential of opinions are the most important things in life. This superimposition of Non-Essentials causes him to be forced into the position of judging, bullying, intruding on the privacy of other believers and rejecting the concept of live and let live. No believer can live life as unto the lord with such interference from weak negative believers which becomes like a static noise in life assuming the characteristics of a great distraction. This is the arrogant superimposition of the weak negative believer's false standards over those of God and onto other members of the Royal Family of God.

Strong believers know the difference between Essentials and Non-Essentials. They recognize the need for inflexibility regarding Essential Doctrines and complete ductility with regard to the Non-Essentials of life. Both weak and strong believers each have a hazard regarding the PRIDE they develop from adherence to their principles. The Pride of the strong mature believer revolves around the fact that he knows so much Bible Doctrine that he has learned to distinguish Essentials from Non-Essentials and treats each appropriately. The hazard for him is that unless this pride is countered by Impersonal Love he will have a very intolerant attitude toward weak believers. On the other hand weak believers don't despise their own weaknesses from a lack of Bible Doctrine but assume, because of ignorance of Bible Doctrine, that this weakness with its inflexibility toward Non-Essentials is strength. Strong believers assume that their strength and its lack is in effect the weakness of the weak believers but then losing their objectivity and orientation to reality they fail to realize that God has accepted the weak as well as the strong believers. Their pride results in them looking on the weak believer with contempt for his lack of Bible Doctrine.

Weak immature believers generally do not know they are weak and that strong mature believers are strong. Strong believers however know that weak immature believers are WEAK as a result of a lack of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and that they are strong because of accumulated Bible Doctrine in the soul. If and when the weak immature believer knows the strong mature believer is strong he will

try to make him weak by causing him to abandon his doctrinal standards. With false or erroneous Norms and Standards it is impossible for the weak believer to be accurate or correct in his evaluation of anything in life. Evaluation of others is NEVER the issue in the Spiritual Life whether one is weak or strong but the real issue is understanding and adhering to the **Royal Family Honor Code** which demands that all other believers be given the privacy of their priesthood and Impersonal Love to function and grow in the Spiritual Life at their own rate. This provides for all believers the same chance to take a shot at Bible Doctrine and learn a maximum amount just as all strong mature believers have. This is the equality of opportunity in the Plan of God for all believers, to are provided the option of learning Bible Doctrine in the atmosphere of objectivity. Believers must recognize that the most important thing and primary priority in life must be Bible Doctrine and the authority involved in its teaching. This is inflexibility regarding Essential principles of Doctrine.

The strong mature believer under the Royal Family Honor Code must, with regard to weaker more immature believers, use his greater flexibility from his inflexible standards to not offend or put a stumbling block in the path of growing weaker believers. The ability to supersede the law of love over the law of liberty in the strong believer's function is his flexibility. Weak believers have obstacles to spiritual growth as a result of a lack of bible doctrine, They have very little flexibility because many areas of application are blacked out for them. Therefore, almost anything a stronger believer does or says becomes an obstacle for the weak immature believer who has little or no ability to cope with these more advanced attitudes or actions. Weak believers are actors without Norms and Standards and thus often, just like actors, pretend to be something they are not and try to play out parts of what they think a Christian should be. They are easily offended and have very limited flexibility and do not see their primary target in life as Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The strong believer must ensure he does not do or say anything which puts an obstacle in the path of this weaker believer and thereby prevents him from seeing the value of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, because the weak immature believer frequently has his eyes on people it is very easy for the strong mature believer functioning based on Grace to distract the weak one from Bible Doctrine and thus spiritual growth. (**Rom 14:13**)

The Royal Family Honor Code demands a variable Modus Operandi and policy for all categories of believers in all stages of spiritual growth. This results in not having distractions to Bible Doctrine intake in all stages of growth and being given freedom and opportunity to use Bible Doctrine at one's own level of spiritual advance. The Royal Family Honor Code recognizes the importance of Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ which can only effectively occur at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and therefore Priority #1 is assigned to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. In addition, toleration by the strong mature believer is not justification or approval of antinomianism nor of legalism and must not be used to justify either but it is the strong believer's application of the Royal Family Honor Code to Non-Essentials. This is flexibility in the strong believer regarding the Non-Essentials.

Every believer must eventually come to understand Essentials vs Non-Essentials and differentiate personal from impersonal love because this is necessary for the function of a doctrinal conscience. Weak or immature believers are wrong about many things and this gives strong or mature believers the same chance to be wrong. Immature believers may be wrong about a variety of taboos but mature believers will be wrong if they try to refute these attitudes about the taboos. This results in

the mature believer being correct about the taboos but because of his refuting the position of a weak believer regarding these Non-Essentials they also become totally wrong. Weak immature believers are very often wrong because:

- They are arrogant
- They are hypersensitive about things the mature believer is doing in violation of their taboos.
- They have their focus on people instead of the Lord.
- They allow the activities of others to distract them from learning Bible Doctrine.
- They become critical of and judge mature believers who don't follow their taboos.
- They judge with vindictive criticism and bully other believers into legalism or antinomianism.

Just because the weak immature believer is wrong there really is no excuse for the strong mature believer to become wrong also. The immature believer must quickly realize that he only intensifies his weakness by being dogmatic in the area of any Non-Essential. Once someone starts to judge another it is very easy for the other to enter into the same activity of judging and become wrong about his actions but not about his principles. This is no excuse for the mature believer to depart from the Royal Family Honor Code and his doctrinal standards and retaliate or retort for offenses directed toward him. This is moral courage and part of the Royal Family Honor Code. Retaliation by the strong believer with regard to Non-Essentials is a departure from his Norms and Standards and also from the Royal Family Honor Code and the principle that 2 wrongs don't ever make a RIGHT. The moment the strong believer retaliates he begins to operate on the standards of the weak believer and has therefore failed miserably. By this means the weak believer robs the strong believer of his strength from Bible Doctrine and the manifestation of this strength which is flexibility in Non-Essentials.

Flexibility does everything under the principles of love except succumb or yield to tyranny and bullying. Taboos are wrong but when the strong believer reacts to these false Norms and Standards of taboos they are also wrong in flaunting liberty and freedom before the immature believer. This is what pulls the weak believers eyes off of bible doctrine and focus' them on the strong believer and his liberties. By this means the strong believer makes a turn to weakness and lowers himself to the standards of intolerance and rejection of the principles of Impersonal Love in the Royal Family Honor Code. The mature believer with strong principles and great flexibility regarding Non-Essentials totally avoids and ignores pettiness and concentrates on the correct Essential doctrines for the situation. All Believers must maintain self discipline at all costs and focus totally on Essentials and allow self to be totally flexible with regard to Non-Essentials. Therefore, when, as often happens, a person says a wrong thing because he lacks the understanding from biblical doctrine and the mature believer is right in knowing the doctrine and the principle, he can become wrong when he argues about it as a Non-Essential concept. Being right is often most right when one simply keeps his mouth shut. This should occur because the mature believer should know the weak believer is wrong, confused and without Bible Doctrine in his Norms and Standards and therefore not in spiritual maturity and he therefore can in flexibility and under moral courage ignore the areas where immaturity is wrong so that Bible Doctrine can continue to be the only issue.

The proper function for the mature believer with regard to taboos of any kind is that he is to abstain from them only when they can become a distraction to the immature believer. Such things as gossip, maligning, judging and all other verbal sins are manifestations of evil and the mature believer

must be inflexible where this is concerned. Flexibility concerning Non-Essentials is honorable, virtuous, thoughtful and is the strong mature believer carrying the burden for the weak immature believer. Therefore both the weak immature believer and the strong mature believer must learn to distinguish between Essentials and Non-Essentials because each has a different area in his Spiritual Life in which to learn this but for both it means inflexibility about Essentials and flexibility about Non-Essentials. (**Rom 14:20**)

There are always times when the mature believer gets confused or is unaware and allows his liberty to distract the immature believer from Bible Doctrine. As a client nation to God, the United States needs a pivot of mature believers and the only way to achieve this is to have other immature believers become consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This cannot occur when the mature believer is not engaging his flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials and inflexibility with regard to Bible Doctrine. Therefore care must be taken by the strong believer to not fall prey to inflexibly when using his liberty when it could distract the immature believer from Bible Doctrine. Not only is the strong mature believer responsible for toleration of Non-Essentials but also for flexibility in application of Bible Doctrine to the Non-Essentials. The strong mature believer has a responsibility in making sure his freedom does not become a stumbling block to the immature believer who neither understands it nor has flexibility toward it from Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Consequently Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the mature believer must be possessed in relationship to self before God and applied in flexibility to the immature believer so that his perception of Bible Doctrine remains the true issue in the Christian Way of Life.

Responsibility of the Strong Believer

Under the Royal Family Honor Code the guide to proper function in the Christian Way of Life is always from Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. All Believers must emphasize advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under the Plan of God as a Royal Priest and recognize that Christian production only occurs in the Plan of God under the functions of a Royal Ambassador AFTER reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. To follow this principle and command the believer must have bible doctrine saturating his soul to enable him to support immature Positive Volition believers until they also can reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God themselves. The believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God KNOWS he is strong. He recognizes the great volume of Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and his relaxation with regard to other weaker believers whom he would never have been tolerant of in his past. These mature believers under the Royal Family Honor Code take responsibility for weak believers in their periphery by having strength in flexibility. However, be aware that the more flexible a believer becomes the more people will judge him and underestimate him and will think of him in terms of being flexible, nice and thoughtful so that when he switches to the Law of Love, Expediency or Supreme Sacrifice they will think he is unstable, vacillating and WEAK. This flexibility may appear to be a weakness to others but it is the strength of the mature believer who with this honor and integrity contributes to the spiritual growth of the weak believer who remains under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials for the Strong or Mature Believer

The member of the Royal Family of God who has attained Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the Strong Believer. Strong believers have moved from the X radical of the **Equation of Hope** Plan of God to the Z radical and are receiving blessing and prosperity under the status quo of Super Grace from the Justice of God. The strong believer functions under the **Royal Family Honor Code** and fulfills it being able to rightly divide Bible Doctrine and thus know the people who are priests and ambassadors for Christ. He is able to appropriately use Personal vs Impersonal Love and understands and differentiates Essentials from Non-Essentials. He is extremely flexible resulting in great strength of character being able to be correct about an issue and still back off and apologize thus being right again. He has great success and maximum blessing from the Justice of God and in functioning under the Royal Family Honor Code protects self from the arrogance of prosperity. Strength through flexibility and the **Forward Line of Troops** structure in the soul from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine gives this believer a foundation of systematic theology and as a result he receives **6 categories of blessing** in time.

The strong believer as a result of maximum **Metabolized Bible Doctrine** in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has constructed his Edification Complex of the Soul and most of his norms and standards from that Bible Doctrine. The strong believer does not function on a false system or Modus Operandi because he is under the Royal Family Honor Code. He does not operate on any specific system of morality, Self Righteousness nor legalism but under the Royal Family Honor Code which he understands and thus totally avoids the distortion of these things.

- The Royal Family Honor Code includes, exceeds and sometimes supersedes morality.
- The Royal Family Honor Code makes an issue of Essentials never Non-Essentials.
- The Royal Family Honor Code provides for the privacy of every Royal Priest.
- The Royal Family Honor Code respects the Righteousness of God in all believers.
- The Royal Family Honor Code understands differences in Personal Love and Impersonal Love.
- The Royal Family Honor Code is inflexible about Essential Bible Doctrine principles.
- The Royal Family Honor Code is extremely flexible about doctrinal applications.

The strong believer operates under the Royal Family Honor Code and from his **ambassadorship** produces maximum Divine Good production and can distinguish his function of ambassador's production from his blessing resulting from his **priesthood**. Much more is expected from the strong believer and he may often appear weak as a result of keeping his mouth shut during controversy but by keeping his mouth shut he is stronger than the weak believer who takes stands on inconsequential issues. The weak appear to be strong as a result of being stubborn and stupid while the strong appear weak by backing down when things are non-essential. When the believer arrives at the point of soul development which is Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God there is still a danger of being intolerant of those who don't have the same development of soul from Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Correcting others for their lack of Bible Doctrine is intolerance and violation of the Impersonal Love paragraph of the Royal Family Honor Code.

The strong mature believer is commanded to accept the weak believer who has opinions without Bible Doctrine and emphasizes the non-essential instead of the essential and is dogmatic about the non-essentials and totally flexible about the essential of Bible Doctrine. By not making an issue of the false opinions of these others the strong believer is able to function effectively under the law of liberty, the law of expediency and the law of love. In the strong believer patience, which is not letting someone run all over him nor tolerating false doctrine, is keeping one's mouth shut when the Non-Essentials are made an issue so that the Essentials can always be the issue. Strong believers may be tempted to intrude on the privacy of the weak believer and argue about his silly false views but the strong believer is to leave the teaching of Bible Doctrine to the Pastor Teacher for the benefit of all, under the privacy of the priesthood. Debating an opinion against that of another creates an atmosphere of subjectivity without authority or discipline and thus no Bible Doctrine is learned and it creates strife instead of spiritual growth. In these situations the weak believer reacts to argumentation and becomes antagonistic to the strong believer when he cannot meet the arguments effectively, even though the strong believer may be correct, and often he becomes antagonistic to Bible Doctrine and ridicules the strong believer by focusing on other aspects of the superiority of his life while he criticizes and judges him. (**Rom 14:1**)

Having the Essentials of Bible Doctrine about which there must be total inflexibility and knowing the Non-Essentials toward which there can be flexible applications of Bible Doctrine, is the strength of the mature believer, not the one who has application from ignorance or stupidity. The strong believer is flexible and in his flexibility appears to be vacillating or weakening or giving way but in reality he is strong and the public ridicules him for being wrong according to societies standards but in reality his applications from Bible Doctrine are invariably correct. Therefore, a mature believer will be subject to a lot constant maligning and gossip and must avoid becoming inflexible in his applications. This mature or strong believer must remain thoughtful of weak believers and use the Law of Love over the Law of liberty and also use the Law of Expediency toward the unbeliever and the Law of Supreme Sacrifice toward God. Normally the strong believer with a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul functions under the Law of Liberty which is part of his privacy, freedom and normal Modus Vivendi as a mature believer. Under freedom and privacy the mature believer is liberated from all the legalistic taboos often adhered to by the weak believers. As a result his lifestyle reflects this freedom and does not insert into it false issues over petty things. For this reason the mature believer is often misunderstood, slandered, maligned and the object of vindictive criticism by weak believers. Therefore, in some cases, the strong believer must set aside his freedom to make an issue of Bible Doctrine rather than his personal Modus Operandi. However, if the issue which arises is his being bullied by the weak believer then the mature believer must stand fast in his liberty. (**Gal 5:1**) Strong Mature Believers must know when to do which and at other times he must separate from the weak believer and avoid them no matter how close they have been in the past as friends. In contrast there are times when by giving in to the law of love the strong believer can make an issue of Bible Doctrine so that the weak believer can recover from his reversionism and resume his intake of Bible Doctrine for advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The flexibility regarding Non-Essentials and inflexibility regarding Essentials can demonstrate itself as strong moral courage in the mature believer. However, being right is not always the issue or objective in the Spiritual Life and the more the believer grows spiritually the less that being right is

important. It is possible to be right in principle regarding something, however, when immature believers with Positive Volition are distracted by another believer being right then this other is totally wrong. Therefore flexibility from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God must come into play and as Paul has said, we must be All Things to all men, strong to strong and weak to weak. This is strength through flexibility because being right is not always right when it distracts the immature believer from Bible Doctrine by violating his taboos of false principles. A right thing done in a wrong way is not only wrong but has Evil in its motivation when it distracts a believer with Positive Volition from Bible Doctrine. The lifestyle of the strong mature believer should never be an issue for the weak believer and the burden of ensuring this lies with the mature strong believer who has a strong sense of responsibility and sensitivity toward other believers. *Therefore, the strong believer must be able to be flexible in the application of a correct principle either by using it or refraining from using it as circumstances dictate*. (**Rom 14:20**)

It is the mature or mature believer who is responsible under the Royal Family Honor Code to avoid any distraction or offense which would eliminate Bible Doctrine as the real issue in the weak believers life. This means the Law of Love in the Royal Family Honor Code must prevail in all doubtful circumstances. This is not a great sacrifice for the mature believer but must become an instinct in life where he can function under his own high Norms and Standards in Impersonal Love where the object of that love is totally unworthy of it. As a result of Norms and Standards from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul mature believers become thoughtful of the hypersensitivities of others and find no difficulty at all in restraining self and refraining from legitimate things in order to avoid losing Bible Doctrine as the issue for the weaker person. No believer can grow in the Spiritual Life apart from Metabolization of Bible Doctrine thus all that have grown and attained Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God did so because at some time in their past the Law of Liberty in a mature believer was superseded by the Law of Love as a toleration of them as a growing believer.

The strong believer operates on Impersonal Love and continues to operate on his own Norms and Standards and does not defend self or seek to justify self or explain self to the weak negative believer and spends no time in personal apologies and ignores the weak negative believer and moves on in Impersonal Love. If the strong believer retaliates and begins to justify self and attacks the weak negative believer he has abandoned his strong doctrinal Norms and Standards and accepted the weak standards of the weak believer and this is the only way the weak negative believer can gain strength.

Essentials in the Royal Priesthood vs the Royal Ambassadorship

The Royal Priesthood of the Church Age believer relates to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and advance in the Plan of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The Royal Priesthood also relates to the principles of the Royal Family Honor Code and requires privacy for spiritual advance. The Royal Ambassadorship relates to production in the Spiritual Life and the application of certain principles of the Royal Family Honor Code. The Royal Priesthood relates to pleasing God while the Royal Ambassadorship relates to representing God to mankind. Each of these has a different objective in its functions:

- The Royal Priesthood relates to the inflexibility of Essential Bible Doctrine
- The Royal Ambassadorship relates to flexibility in its application to Non-Essentials.

The function of the Royal Priesthood consistently under the Grace Apparatus for Perception means the imputation of divine blessing as Super Grace Categories at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The function of the Royal Ambassadorship in application of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine residing in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul results in Divine Good production in the Christian Way of Life. Together these result in flexibility leading to orientation to reality and common sense. Under the Royal Priesthood functions the believer represents self to God and under the Royal Ambassadorship functions he represents GOD to man. All of the objectives of the Spiritual Life found in the Royal Priesthood and Royal Ambassadorship are fulfilled in the believer's function under the Royal Family Honor Code.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials & Non-Essentials & Weak Believers

There are 3 types of weak believers and each has his own erroneous Norms and Standards:

- Unstable Weak Believer == is positive to spiritual things but jumps from one person to another listening to teaching from a large variety of people.
  - His weakness can be solved by this believer identifying his right Pastor Teacher and settling down under that ministry and growing in the Spiritual Life.
- Positive Volition Weak Believer == is under his right Pastor Teacher but is just getting started in learning Bible Doctrine without even all the basic principles yet assimilated but who is consistent in his Modus Operandi of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - The simple solution for this weakness is for this believer to remain consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- The Negative Volition Weak Believer == has made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God but rejects Bible Doctrine out of hand and in fact will never advance in the Spiritual Life and is in some stage of reversionism.
  - These are apostate believers and must be avoided and rejected under a totally different part of the Modus Operandi of the Royal Family Honor Code. (**Rom 16**)

The occupational hazard of the weak believer is being unable to distinguish between Non-Essentials and Essentials in the Spiritual Life. The weak believer who is involved in arrogance sets self up as an expert on everything. Therefore he seeks to superimpose his own Non-Essential standards on others through judging, maligning and gossip which is tantamount to spiritual bullying. He tries in his bullying push to get the herd to turn against his antagonists by shame or to force them, even using debaters techniques, to adhere to his way and thereby put them under the influence of his brand of Evil. This violates the Royal Family Honor Code which commands the privacy of the priesthood and function under the law of freedom to live and let live. No believer can live life as unto the Lord with such interference distracting him with legalistic or antinomian nonsense. The 'brethren' are fellow members of the Royal Family of God who are supposed to be living life as unto the Lord themselves through Bible Doctrine not engaging in bullying nor intrusion into another's privacy. Judging, maligning and gossiping about other believers is arrogant superimposition of one's own opinions or

standards over God's and over his delegated thought which is Bible Doctrine. It is the epitome of arrogance to presume divine authority and judge other believers in the Royal Family of God especially since NO believers are ever responsible to another but only to the Justice of God. This weak believer who is under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine seeks to gain strength by judging and discrediting strong believers when he should be gaining strength by taking in the Bible Doctrine which he has rejected. Therefore, the weak negative believer can be considered a spiritual cannibal who when seeing the courage, nobility and honor of the strong believer concludes that the only way for him to be as strong as the strong believer is to malign and judge the strong believer. It is his objective through this bullying to cause the strong believer to abandoning his doctrinal Norms and Standards and thereby bring him down to a level where the weak believer can devour him every time. There is only one way to gain spiritual strength and that is to eat spiritual food, Bible Doctrine. All believers advance through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine not through vindictive criticism of other believers. These weak negative believers who are legalistic are the worst bullies and first class persecutors of the Grace Orientated Christian. Though being subject to constant judging, maligning, vindictive criticism and often persecution the strong mature believer cannot succumb to the Non-Essential standards of the weak. It is arrogance, jealousy, implacability, etc., which are the attitudes and motivation behind this occupational hazard of the negative believer.

These Negative Volition weak believers in effect substitute Non-Essentials and legalistic taboos for Bible Doctrine and label others who will not comply as apostate. It is very often forgotten by believers that God accepted us with a variety of erroneous, inaccurate opinions, misguided zeal and stupid sincerity. God is not looking for perfect persons but those who are under Doctrinal orientation and Grace orientation and advancing in his perfect Plan. Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception will replace erroneous standards with correct biblical standards but Bible Doctrine must do this not some misguided, zealous, legalistic, Self Righteous jackass believer who in judging other believers is one of the most heinous violators of the Royal Family Honor Code. (**Rom 14:9**)

Weak Believers & Failure

The weak believer is ignorant of the Royal Family Honor Code as a result of lacking Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and thus is totally unaware of the imputation structure of the Plan of God for his life. The weak believer does not understand nor use the system of Logistical Grace which is designed to provide for his advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and thus the meaning purpose and definition of the Christian Way of Life are nebulous and abstruse to him and have alluded him. Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine in the weak believer is nurtured by the strong believer through flexibility with regard to Non-Essentials. All believers start out as weak and only through inculcating Bible Doctrine and gaining momentum in the advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God do they gain in strength. While toleration is the order of the day for the weak believer who is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine separation is the divine standing order for mature believers regarding the weak believer who is under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, reversionistic and apostate. When the weak believer is under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and involved in reversionism he is constantly under Divine Discipline and association with him invites Divine Discipline and disaster BY ASSOCIATION.

The weak believer under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine has false Norms and Standards as a result of lacking Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and a conscience distorted by rationalism, empiricism or emotionalism. This weak believer has erroneous concepts of Christian virtue and emphasizes superficialities such as sincerity, Human Good, Self Righteousness, socialism, welfare state functions, pseudo morality, asceticism, taboos, legalism and other facades of Cosmic Dynasphere hypocrisy. Because this weak believer is ignorant of Bible Doctrine and obviously flexible with regard to Essentials and totally inflexible about these Non-Essentials he possesses very strong opinions which are completely and totally erroneous. In the weak believer a lack of Bible Doctrine means erroneous applications and thus lack of common sense, capacity for life, orientation to life and to authority and lack of Grace Orientation. The weak believer from his false norms and standards derived from Evil parlays these into Human Good, Sin, or Crime and rationalizes his Modus Operandi as the true Christian Way of Life. This is the social action and social gospel group in Christianity. Having a false system of Norms and Standards and being inflexible about Non-Essentials he sees the strong believer with accurate Norms and Standards based on Bible Doctrine and does not like that Modus Vivendi and resents it and uses his false standards and the arrogance, jealousy and vindictiveness produced from these false standards and attacks and maligns the strong believer seeking to ostracize him in the community. This arrogance is simply demonstrated inflexibility about Non-Essentials which also brings additional false Norms and Standards into the conscience. The weak believer must get some reaction from the strong or he loses and then must come up with greater and greater lies and preposterous allegations in gossip and maligning to gain a response. However, such action only further weakens this weak believer as it subjects him to greater Divine Discipline for his presumptive assumption of divine authority to judge others.

Flexibility & Essentials in Success

Success does not come to the believer in the human nor in the spiritual realm because he has a great personality. Success will not come to the believer in any situation without a lot of self discipline and authority orientation among other things. There must be for the believer to achieve success in any area Inflexibility with regard to Bible Doctrine and total Flexibility about Non-Essentials and the application of doctrine to them. He must have the mindset of giving Priority #1 to consistent persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This in effect will bring him to the understanding that in the Christian Way of Life "IF God does not promote you, you are not promoted" and "If God does not demote you, no one else ever can".

Weak Believers & Success

Through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the weak positive believer will become strong and the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will not only change his Norms and Standards but also provide enough poise, common sense and sense of humor to laugh at his own former norms. It is Bible Doctrine ONLY which must change the conscience and norms and standards so that the weak believer will then be clearly able to see the humor of inflexibility with regard to Non-Essentials. This is accomplished when the strong believer avoids argumentation, refutation and or retaliation and bears the weakness of the weak believer, so that he can, in his own time, advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This honor and integrity of the strong believer thereby contributes to the spiritual growth of the weak believer who is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility and Emotion

In one of his greatest failures, the emotional pull to Jerusalem caused Paul to become inflexible about the Non-Essential of distribution of the gifted money for Jerusalem, which did not require Paul to accomplish. His responsibility was to get Christian Administrators to ensure it was transported and distributed properly. Paul should have been inflexible about the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and the Will of God and inflexible about his crossing the Adriatic which divided the eastern from western roman empire. His traveling to Spain as ordered by God was an Essential while going to Jerusalem was totally Non-Essential and simply a mechanism to assuage his conscience and guilt about killing early Christians. All virtue is inevitably canceled by inflexibility toward the Non-Essentials of life. Legalism revolves around virtuous concepts but legalism is the inflexibility regarding these Non-Essential concepts which cancels the effectiveness of the virtue. There is nothing wrong with trying to keep the Decalogue or establishing personal taboos but when these are put forward as what constitutes the Christian Way of Life or spirituality that is inflexibility. Paul should have been inflexible about going to Rome, France, and Spain and should have been totally flexible about the emotional attraction of going to Jerusalem and put this responsibility into the hands of other capable Christian administrators. The temptation to personally deliver the offering to Jerusalem was too much for Paul and thus he violated the Royal Family Honor Code principle and temporarily neutralized the incredible virtue of the greatest believer of the Church Age. This travesty occurred even in the Apostle Paul an Ultra Super Grace believer because of his inflexibility in the realm of the Non-Essentials. This is one of the worst things in life, to do a right thing in a wrong time because it demonstrates inflexibility in the Non-Essentials. Therefore, the warning from Paul's failure to all believers is to avoid Arrogance and beware of inflexibility when it comes to Non-Essentials in life and focus on total inflexibility with regard to Bible Doctrine.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Inflexibility & Self Pity

The **Royal Family Honor Code** demands avoidance of self pity and any function which arouses pity in others. Self pity is a weakness which seeks to gain maximum attention from others and is being inflexible in Non-Essentials. (**Rom 15:5-7**) Using self pity to make self presentable to others as an object of pity or attention is a great weakness in believers. (**Rom 12:9-10**) Impersonal Love is the correct response demanded for the self pity displayed by others. Impersonal Love depends on Metabolized Bible Doctrine standards in the CONSCIENCE therefore it automatically excludes self pity on the part of the subject and eliminates any system whereby one seeks to gain someone else's attention by arousing compassion or pity in them. (**Rom 14:8**) Self pity is a sin and also becomes a terrible system of thinking Evil and is a false norm for love. The Royal Family Honor Code DEMANDS that all believers in times of tragedy and heart ache NOT attempt to become an object of pity but to

use Metabolized Bible Doctrine to find blessing, encouragement and strength from the resources of Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Self Pity is a terrible weapon and is very often used to gain attention and to establish a pseudo relationship with others. This seeking to gain attention from others through pity is a weakness and a vicious motivation for attention thus a double weakness. There is great strength in flexibility toward Non-Essentials in life but there is incredible weakness in seeking to make others feel sorry for you. (**Rom 12:9-10**, **13:8**) The demand of the Royal Family Honor Code is Impersonal Love and the avoidance of feeling sorry for self or others because Self Pity attacks the concept of Impersonal Love. When a believer feels sorry for another person because they have used their weaknesses to attract him then he becomes weak as a result of being attracted to weakness. There cannot ever be true Personal Love in any self pity situation. (**Rom 12:8**) Therefore, the Royal Family Honor Code excludes self pity and forbids machinations or conspiracy where a person tries to gain attention, compassion or love from another through self pity because this is weakness in the area of inflexibility in Non-Essentials. The Royal Family Honor Code demands personal avoidance of self pity and any function to arouse pity from others. It is a terrible Evil to feel sorry for oneself but great strength in the Spiritual Life is flexibility in Non-Essentials. The demand on the believer is to function under the Impersonal Love of the Royal Family Honor Code not feeling sorry for self or others.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility, Strength, Missionaries & Esprit De Corps

Being a Missionary demands great flexibility and missionaries must never be considered beggars nor are they to be thought of as the pinnacle of Christianity. Anyone who communicates Bible Doctrine in any way along with anyone who listens to Bible Doctrine needs Esprit DE Corps. In the ministry of communication of Bible Doctrine, in any aspect of communication, all belong to the same outfit of the Royal Family of God and all must have strong Esprit DE Corps. Esprit DE Corps is based on those things which are Essential Bible Doctrines learned and stored in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. These are the doctrinal Norms and Standards of the Soul which result in function under the **Royal Family Honor Code** and provide an understanding of the difference between Essentials and Non-Essentials while remaining inflexible about Essentials and totally flexible about Non-Essentials. This status quo is only based on advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and function under the Royal Family Honor Code especially with reference to communicators of Bible Doctrine in whatever communication status they may have. This must be considered from the standpoint of strength through flexibility based on the concept of Essentials vs Non-Essentials. It is helpful to consider that only Essentials are within the realm of black and white but in the entire area of Non-Essentials things are always GRAY. This is the function of spiritual aristocracy and once the believer functions under this system life becomes lucid, clear and plain and he has total confidence that he can do many things in very different ways based on the consistency of relying on and using doctrinal principles. Flexibility is the key to this but there must also be Esprit DE Corps developed from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is because the Essential Bible Doctrine and the inflexibility regarding its principles and flexibility regarding the application of that Bible Doctrine toward Non-Essentials is of supreme importance in the Christian Way of Life. Therefore, as a result, in situations when things are Non-Essential **arrogance** is never

allowed to enter the picture. This was the way the Frenchman Talleyrand functioned and he was totally free from arrogance. He was insulted by many contemporaries including Napoleon but he was the one who many times saved France. Dwight Eisenhower always took responsibility for things under his command which he never actually was responsible for especially during World War II and he never ever apologized for any of the things he did.

There are 2 things which will completely destroy any possibility of being flexible in one's thinking. Pettiness as in the person who having been insulted at a party or social gathering then seeks revenge on the one who has insulted him. A Christian in an aristocrat who by the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is placed into union with The Lord Jesus, The Christ so that the Christian Way of Life is in effect operation aristocracy which a peasant cannot ever understand. Peasant thinking seeks to get back at people who have offend them in any way possible. The only thing to remove this thinking from the soul is Metabolized Bible Doctrine saturating the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Peasant thinking always destroys the Christian Way of Life. The Christian Way of Life is not doing the same things the same way every day but doing different things several different ways and being criticized, maligned and despised for it. A believer in the Royal Family of God functioning under the Royal Family Honor Code never tries to get even nor defend himself in a verbal confrontation nor tries to prove himself right and absolutely never explains what and why he is doing something a certain way. He never tries to get other people to see things his way because these are all Non-Essentials. It is extremely tempting to be inflexible about Non-Essential things and very tempting to be the bull in the China shop destroying all the false ideas and impressions others have. Learning Essentials and differentiating them clearly from Non-Essentials and then applying from the area of Essential Bible Doctrines will bring to this mature believer complete misunderstanding by others. However once the believer gets into this function in his Spiritual Life he will have an unshakable Esprit DE Corps. When the believer's Esprit DE Corps is based on total confidence in Bible Doctrine then there is aristocracy in his thought, attitude and function. Involvement in any of the 70+ Gates of the **Interlocking System of Arrogance** is the second thing which will destroy any possibility of being flexible in one's thinking. (**Rom 15:16-17**)

In the mission field flexibility is Essential and missionaries are there as a guest of the country with a temporary visa and being a stranger and foreigner their flexibility must be intensified. Therefore, flexibility with humility is Essential in the missionary. Humility is Essential because no missionary is out from under authority but is under the direct authority of the Lord. Missionaries must be ultra professional in their function and this also applies to every believer as Royal Ambassador for Christ when witnessing to unbelievers. Unfortunately many missionaries are totally out of line in the way they function in the field. The stupidity and ignorance of those in the China Inland Missions was a key factor in allowing communism to take over China. They were duped by their own legalism and cooperated in many areas of China when communists closed down the brothels, gambling houses, opium dens, which they had been unable to themselves do. In any given generation the set up of missions in any nation will never last if the area of the missionary is shut down as a result of Negative Volition at God Consciousness and Gospel hearing. One of the worst things a missionary can do is to build great systems, infrastructure and organizations in any area because when they do this they lose flexibility and enter into a spiritual crusade. Missionaries are not on the mission field to teach the natives to farm, put in plumbing, clothe themselves and stop polygamy. Missionaries must CLEARLY evangelize the natives and then educate the natives in doctrine so that the natives

can form their own churches with their own native pastors and these must be self propagating and self sustaining by pastors speaking in their own language. The historical problem with many missionaries has been that they never wanted to leave their own mission compounds where they had built permanent residences and set up things which they could not or would not leave and as a result many died when the Lord wanted them many miles from where their compounds were located. Missionaries become inflexible in Non-Essentials and then get very upset when natives finally overrun their compounds and kill every one there. Paul was a missionary who lived out of his pockets and then when it was time to leave he just got up and moved on. This concept of flexibility is lost today to missionaries and is one of their greatest shortcomings and they must be able to see history from this perspective. In addition another great problem with missionaries today is lack of common sense and Royal Family Honor Code functions. With their total lack of flexibility in Non-Essential legalism or antinomianism and as the unfortunate result of most missionaries having attended bible schools or colleges, they depend on idiotic legalistic people and become the most inflexible of people. Reality is that before any missionary is prepared to serve in the mission field he must have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that he is inflexible about the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and totally flexible about the Non-Essentials of the customs and functions of the people where he goes. Native converts must be given Bible Doctrine and not information about changing their local customs. Unfortunately, most missionaries place emphasis on the wrong thing and become entangled in temporal power instead of spiritual power. (**Rom 15:19**)

All missionary functions must be totally compatible with the Royal Family Honor Code because the total function of the Christian Way of Life is in the **Royal Family Honor Code** and this is higher and greater than any system of morality even the Laws of Divine Establishment which is only a part of this code. The Royal Family Honor Code includes the principles of Freedom of volition, Privacy, Property and Authority found in the Laws of Divine Establishment along with the **10 Problem Solving Devices** especially Impersonal Love and Flexibility in Non-Essentials with total inflexibility in the Essentials. Therefore the Royal Family Honor Code is designed for all believers and also for missionaries who are unique in Christianity. The missionary is unique as is the evangelist and this is the result of the Spiritual gift they have been endowed with. Missionaries function alone and must go it alone to bring the gospel to natives of other nations and regions. It is easy for all believers to apply the Royal Family Honor Code to their own home land but in another land it is much more difficult as a result of a myriad of unusual or even unknown foreign customs and taboos. This requires greater flexibility on the part of the missionary than that required of the believer at home. The Royal Family Honor Code policy is also a safeguard against emotional aberration and policy deviations for all believers. Therefore the principle is, when in doubt consult the Royal Family Honor Code. Inflexibility regarding the Essentials of Bible Doctrine but total flexibility about Non-Essentials is the underlying key. Therefore, as a missionary or potential missionary if one is inflexible about Non-Essentials at home the same will occur on the mission field and this will result in inevitable disaster.

Essentials, Flexibility & Missionaries

In the Christian missionary ministry, as in all of Christian functions, flexibility is Essential. Where Bible Doctrine properly is taught there is motivation for a thrust into the mission field and where it is neglected the church will fail in the area of missionary activity. While the Word of God emphasizes the doctrinal teaching aspect of the missionary including presenting the gospel and then teaching the

indigenous population to teach their own people, this occupation includes essential missionary administration functions while in the field. In any aspect of life especially missionary work being professional means having good administration and this is another of the weak areas of missionaries today. Therefore it must be understood that missionary functions include the presentation of Bible Doctrine and also administration of the essentials needed for this function. Administration must not ever be divorced from communication and missionary administration cannot be neglected in the mission field just as the army cannot neglect logistics.

Gentile response encompasses the whole realm of missionary functions regarding the Plan of God from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and from the imputation of the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to the imputation of maximum blessing at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, missionary function includes every phase of the Plan of God outlined in the **equation of hope**, NOT JUST GOSPEL PRESENTATION. Paul as a missionary is the channel through which The Lord Jesus, The Christ reached gentiles in his day and still even today through the gospels he wrote. "Occupation" implies that the missionary must be a professional administrator under the indigenous Modus Operandi. The natives or citizens converted from among the gentiles of that nation must be trained in systematic theology to reach their own people as evangelists and Pastor Teachers but also in the areas of administration to make their own Local Churches self sustaining. It becomes obvious then that the communication of the Gospel and teaching of Bible Doctrine demands good administration. (**Rom 15:18**)

Key Concepts of Missionary Function with Flexibility

The concept of flexibility is completely lost on missionaries today and is one of the great problems of our time and we must look at history from this perspective. Therefore, inevitably one of the greatest problems in missions today is lack of common sense and function under the Royal Family Honor Code. There is and has been a lack of flexibility regarding Non-Essentials where legalism or antinomianism have made these men inflexible in the area of Non-Essentials. Missionaries must function, just as all other believers, in the area of his spiritual gift to evangelize under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. God does not perform miracles for the poorly prepared missionary, in fact, the objective of God is ultimately to get this unprepared person out of missionary activity after significant Divine Discipline. The principle which missionaries must understand is that if a believer cannot witness, evangelize or teach and communicate the gospel at home he will never be able to do so in the mission field. Therefore, believers should never be allowed to go to the mission field without being able to witness to people at home.

Missionary responsibilities do include evangelization but this must never be divorced from or exercised to the exclusion of the teaching of Bible Doctrine to the converts. When categorical Bible Doctrine is taught to the converts effectively it then results in spiritual gifts rising out of the converts and separation of those with the gifts for leadership in the Local Church so that they can build up the Local Church and give the other native believers a place to learn Bible Doctrine consistently. With fulfillment of the totality of missionary activity the Royal Family Honor Code will then function in that geographical location so that the Plan of God can be fulfilled in the believer with Positive Volition with his advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. It is Essential that missionary activity have a follow through in the advance of native believers moving into Maturity

Adjustment to the Justice of God. Since Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the only way to glorify God in time then it becomes obvious that providing native believers the needed assets to reach this status is ultimately the primary objective of missionary function. The believer's attainment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict complementing the strategic victory of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross and thus it is Essential that missionaries understand these objectives and so conduct themselves in the function of spiritual power as to fulfill these objectives. This proper missionary function resulted in history of the development of the modern nations of Spain, France, Germany, England, Ireland, Scotland, Greece, the Balkans, etc. These geographic areas became nations because of the spiritual function of the missionaries who went into them.

Essentials for 21st century missionaries

The missionary must understand that his function is based on spiritual power from God the Holy Spirit and must distinguish between the Indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit in order to properly function under this power. In addition the missionary must distinguish the GOSPEL of Christ as the GOOD NEWS of the potential for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God from the Essentials of the all encompassing bible doctrines of scripture. Missionaries must realize that without a clear understanding of and ability to present categorically Bible Doctrine he is totally helpless and completely useless. The Missionary MUST first advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in order be a man of Bible Doctrine and then move on to the mission field. Therefore, before any missionary is prepared to serve as one he must have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that he is inflexible about the Essentials of Bible Doctrine and totally flexible about the Non-Essentials of the customs and functions of the people where he goes. Consequently the overriding principle of missionary functions is that native converts must be given BIBLE DOCTRINE and not information about changing their local customs or improving their social or economic status.

Uniqueness of the Missionary

The ongoing greatest violation in missionary and evangelist function is that they try to teach in someone else's area of ministry such as in a Local Church. Both the missionary and the evangelist must function outside of the Local Church. Both the missionary and evangelist are unique as Christians as a result of the uniqueness of their Spiritual gifts. Only the best Christians, those who know their Bible Doctrine and understand the Royal Family Honor Code with flexibility in Non-Essentials and inflexibility in the realm of the Essential of Bible Doctrine should ever become involved in missionary functions. Therefore, it becomes obvious that Bible Doctrine is the only true issue for missionaries in foreign lands. The Royal Family Honor Code, which requires the believer to attain maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, has a greater application when one is a guest in another country. The emphasis, therefore, is on the fact that there exists a missionary ethic which is summarized as the intensified Royal Family Honor Code. Therefore, to be a missionary means to understand and live by the Royal Family Honor Code which brings the idea of missionary function back to the concept that he MUST have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God BEFORE getting into missionary activity. Without the Royal Family Honor Code to base his function on, the missionary inevitably becomes dishonest, dishonorable and in a competition which is incompatible with the Christian Way of Life. Therefore, when a missionary leaves his home

land he must not leave behind any unmended fences or indebtedness as he leaves for his missionary journey because going to a foreign land as a missionary does not change the person who left home. The missionary will be the same abroad as he is at home and it is lack of Bible Doctrine which destroys the missionary or any believer for that matter.

Flexibility & The Aristocracy of Missionaries

What has hurt the missionaries more than anything else is the bible colleges where they learn legalism and the idea of 'Christian brotherhood' and become very proper and inflexibly Self Righteous. The missionaries who become inflexibly Self Righteous and then go into an undeveloped region inevitably first try to put clothing on the people and then have the king get rid of some of his wives. The true missionary must first bring in the Gospel of Christ and NOT try to change or violate the customs and standards of the people unless and until THEY want to. What is needed today, as always, are indigenous men to go back into their own countries or racial origins and teach their own people. People will respond better to their own race or countrymen when they are giving the Gospel and Doctrinal information. If the United States of America is to continue to operate as a client nation many people from local churches where expository teaching of Bible Doctrine occurs must go out as missionaries to other parts of the world. There are many believers who are very capable regarding languages and it is a wonder that they are not already on the mission field. If God spares this nation the one thing which must occur is one of the greatest missionary thrusts of all time but not under the legalistic Self Righteous jackasses from bible colleges but by honorable believers with maximum Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul who are flexible and function under the Royal Family Honor Code.

What is needed in the mission field are the noble believers who have advanced to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and have the wisdom of statesmen and flexibility of a mature believer along with the ability to communicate to people in their own language without insulting them by trying to change their culture and customs. There must be a great upsurge of missionaries in the United States of America but this will not occur until this nation has gone through the coming historical disaster of hell on earth first. When a missionary goes to a foreign country he is different in every possible way from the people in that country who usually have a vastly different language which means a totally different thought pattern and totally different customs. Therefore, the missionary must be extremely flexible and use the Royal Family Honor Code to the maximum and have the wisdom to understand how to deal with people who have all their barriers up. Being inflexible about Non-Essentials as occurs under legalism in the United States of America will be a disaster in a foreign country. Missionaries cannot leave their country of origin, especially today from the the United States of America, with the feeling of superiority and expect any level of success. Missionaries must have true humility because they have years of suffering ahead of them. This humility comes from years of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and the incredible **Undeserved Suffering** which comes with spiritual advance. No individual can believe in Christ until he hears the gospel and he must hear it in his own language with its proper idiom in order to make a lucid decision to accept or reject the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross.

One of the most important things in missionary function is being at the right place at the right time. There is a case for timing in life in finding a Right Woman for a wife, succeeding in business, gaining

victory in battle, etc. Being in the right place at the right time as part of the spiritual solution to the problems believers face demands that the missionary be more sensitive to the leading of the Lord than anyone else and he must clearly know the Will of God for his life. Otherwise, a person can function as a missionary and be totally right about being called to the mission field but could spend 50 years working with 10 natives. This person might finally understand and teach rebound and a few doctrinal principles but he is most likely in the right job but the wrong place. It is Essential for the missionary to be flexible and it is possible for him to go to the wrong place but he must be flexible enough to move on, even if people call him a coward and quitter. On the other hand there are many discouraging things which happen in the mission field and it may take a year to even begin to learn the language of the area and have no converts at all and still be in the right place. Therefore, recognize that missionaries face the most horrendous dilemmas and constantly question "should I stay or move on" and God may very well provide testing so that it appears to be the wrong place. By exercising persistence missionaries will have phenomenal opportunity and production and it is not unusual for a missionary to lead 2-300,000 people to the Lord when he is in the right place at the right time.

The people who go on missionary journeys must be mature or as close as a believer can be to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and also be properly prepared and function under the Royal Family Honor Code and not legalism. Thus, the person as a missionary and believer is aristocracy and the bearer of the good news of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ for all human sin and the potential therefrom for eternal salvation. These persons must proclaim the gospel and announce it with authority from the King as aristocrats and ambassadors. This emphasizes that missionaries MUST be the best people, the strongest believers and be able to function as statesmen with wisdom, flexibility and greatness and are those who are properly prepared academically, mentally, spiritually and have great courage.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Non-Essentials of Personal Opinion

All believers enter into the Christian Way of Life with preconceived opinions not compatible with the standards of Bible Doctrine. Every immature believer has many inaccurate erroneous opinions which are contrary to Divine Viewpoint and incompatible with Bible Doctrine. The strong mature believer is the one in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God who is commanded to accept these weak immature believers who have such erroneous opinions as a result of a lack of Bible Doctrine and who emphasize the Non-Essentials instead of the Essential while being dogmatic about the Non-Essential and totally flexible about the Essential. Therefore, believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must not ever make an issue of the false opinions of others. It is the function of the mature believer under the law of liberty, expediency and love, to allow others their opinions and functions without judging in order that they might exercise their volition to take in the doctrine needed to correct these opinions.

Both the opinions of the mature and immature believers have occupational hazards. The mature believer operates under the privacy of the priesthood and is not hindered by the taboos of the

legalist nor drawn out by the trends of antinomianism. This mature believer can generally distinguish between Essential and Non-Essential concepts and principles. He knows Bible Doctrine is Essential and application of it demands flexibility. He is inflexible about the principles of Bible Doctrine and totally flexible about their applications to the Non-Essentials of life. When he discerns that his intolerance of the weak negative believer is a Non-Essential he therefore ceases and desists from judgment of this weak negative believer and simply separates from him. When he realizes that the error of opinion of the immature believer is Non-Essential he ceases judgment of that believer and encourages him in his pursuit of advancement in the Spiritual Life through personal Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine in order to correct those opinions. The immature believer usually violates the principle of the privacy of the priesthood while the mature believer tends to violate the principle of Impersonal Love. The negative believer is inflexible where Non-Essentials are concerned and in judgment of him, the mature believers sees this and departs from his own Norms and Standards which are based on Bible Doctrine, and lowers himself to be intolerant of the negative believer who has false Norms and Standards from his personal background. Believers, no person for that matter, can never depart from their personal norms and standards without assuming the norms and standards of the one who influences them or the one who has become suddenly antagonistic. Whenever one resorts to retort, retaliation or counter attack against one's antagonist he accepts those Norms and Standards; thus lowering self to the standards of the one whom is despised.

All people have differences of opinions about many things in life and the Non-Essential things in life are not the basis for collectively going to war or individually getting into strife or controversy. The mature believer has proper discernment regarding these things and will roll with the punch of Non-Essentials in life because he can keep Bible Doctrine constantly before him and be straightened out by Doctrine rather than controversy. Controversy never solves problems but only creates greater and greater problems.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility vs Inflexibility With Regard to Alcohol & Drugs

The bible permits drinking of alcohol and The Lord Jesus, The Christ himself did drink on occasion and in fact converted water into alcoholic wine. However, the consumption of Alcohol has several intrinsic problems. It results in the person who has no self discipline, self control and no authority orientation in life becoming an uncontrollable drunk. Believers who think that alcoholic beverage in every form is evil and have made this become a part of their Norms and Standards should stick with it until Doctrine is learned and self discipline and control are developed. People who switch over to another persons Norms and Standards always get into trouble especially when this involves alcohol or drugs. All believers should retain their own personal Norms and Standards and remember to NOT be intolerant about any other person's Norms and Standards for any reason. When believers are involved doctrine must be allowed make changes in one's own or any other persons lifestyle. However, with regard to the illicit use of drugs, believers must be totally inflexible about Marijuana, Narcotic and other drug abuses as stimulations. The principle is that there are things in life which require inflexibility and those which require flexibility and things like marijuana destroy the brain and

its ability to think and drugs and narcotics destroy the volition both which are essential for the believer to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and fulfill the Plan of God for his life, therefore MUST be avoided.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials vs Non-Essentials & Love

There must be a clear distinction made between Personal Love and Impersonal Love. Personal Love emphasizes the attractiveness of the object of love to the one projecting love. Impersonal Love emphasizes the integrity and character of the subject of love without regard for these aspects of the object of that love. For the believer there are 3 categories where we can give Personal Love and these are very limited in their breadth:

- The Lord Jesus, The Christ in Category I love or Occupation with the Person of Christ.
- Right Man / Right Woman one each for each in Category II Love, Romance.
- Friends or "Loved ones" in our periphery in Category III Love.

Here we must learn to emphasize total inflexibility with regard to the Essentials and never emphasize the Non-Essentials being totally flexible with regard to them. Essentials in Personal Love should NOT include the physical attributes of the opposite number since these will change and often severely degrade over time. In Category II Love there are a lot of Non-Essentials and a few things which are absolutely Essential. In Category II Personal Love one cannot be inflexible with regard to physical attributes but must be very inflexible with regard to the Essentials of soul compatibility in Personal Love. Quarrels between Personal Love members are most often over Non-Essentials in their relationship.

The Laws of Divine Establishment encapsulate and protect the Plan of God and give every person an opportunity to enter it and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under that Plan by means of absolute inflexibility regarding Essentials and total flexibility regarding Non-Essentials. In Category II Love, Personal Love, there are many Non-Essentials and some absolutely Essential aspects. Impersonal Love is designed for all the 'other' people who enter into one's periphery in life and the believer is to never argue or quarrel with these other people over stupid inconsequential Non-Essentials things. The fact that they live their life as a radical liberal, stupid person is generally ignored or preferably unknown. As gentlemen and ladies in social situations we do not make scenes but try to be thoughtful of others and not spoil enjoyment of the situation. In other words believers MUST learn that weirdos and imbeciles must be tolerated first in the Spiritual Life and then this is expanded into temporal secular life. Believers, sooner or later, must realize that other people have hangups, arrogance, stupidity and immaturity, just as they do or have had and they should never get excited about the erroneous attitudes or actions of others. When this is accomplished it results in becoming a relaxed person without hangups not trying to compete or demonstrated to others a superior intelligence.

The primary objective in the Spiritual Life is to accumulate Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and come to the point of Category I Love, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and develop high standards from the resident Bible Doctrine resulting in

sensitivity toward others. These Norms and Standards then go out to other people so that there is a sensitivity to the thoughts and feelings of others and by means of Impersonal Love reaction to Non-Essentials does not result in hurting these people. However, when it comes to erroneous or false ideas or functions with regard to Essential Bible Doctrine believers are authorized to completely destroy the errors of these people and rid themselves of them with total separation from them. The believer must understand that violence is not ever authorized for these things and nothing in life is ever solved by violence which by application is the quintessence of stupidity. However, in certain situations dealing with contradictory ideas concerning principles of Bible Doctrine violence is authorized. The Violence of Killing in Battle or of executing criminals or defending one's own life or that of loved ones or one's personal property against criminals is not simple violence but authorized professional violence as self defense under the Laws of Divine Establishment. Violence as a problem solution is stupidity and has never solved anything either as a collective function in revolution or as assassination of an individual. The only true way to resolve problems between people is through the principle of Impersonal Love which emphasizes the high doctrinal standards of the believer under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine. The believer is to not depart from these standards just because someone else is a jackass.

Essentials vs Non-Essentials of Impersonal Love

This is the concept of loving your neighbor as yourself. However, loving the ones near you as you love yourself does not imply that love for self is your standard but that Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the capacity and standard for this Impersonal Love. This further means believers are not to lower their standards to the level of those who are antagonistic toward them by emulating them in controversy, strife or personality conflict. When a victim of gossip, maligning, judging, grudges, retaliation or revenge the believer is not to reciprocate in kind but to operate on the higher Bible Doctrine standards which he has assimilated. When the believer retorts in kind to antagonism from others he operates on the low standards of his antagonists and therefore he cannot lower his standards and still be a lover of others. Every time the believer holds a grudge or retaliates or seeks revenge or expresses hatred, vindictiveness or any other Mental Attitude Sin in retort as a form of reciprocal Evil he has abandoned his doctrinal standards of Impersonal Love for the much lower Evil standards of his antagonists. Retribution therefore violates the **Royal Family Honor Code**. However, Impersonal Love observes the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment in recognition of the freedom, privacy and property of both the believer and unbeliever and observes the Royal Family Honor Code in recognition of the imputed Righteousness of God and privacy of the priesthood and inconsequential nature of Non-Essentials opinions of other believers.

Impersonal Love is designed to be directed toward everyone in the believer's periphery and is based on the Norms and Standards of the subject, the advanced or mature believer, which come from Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This mature believer through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul develops sensitivity toward the feelings of others, becoming very aware of people and where they are sensitive and how they can be offended and what constitutes thoughtfulness, good manners and being considerate of others. As this grows it extends a beautiful picture as it develops and the mature believer takes responsibility for immature positive believers in his area as a result of this exercise of Impersonal Love.

Impersonal Love emphasizes the integrity of the subject and Personal Love emphasizes the attractiveness of the object of love. Impersonal Love is in total contrast to the 3 categories of Personal Love. Impersonal Love emphasizes the Norms and Standards of the subject therefore is loving others based on one's personal Integrity and Norms and Standards. Impersonal love comes into play when others are rude, malign or judge by providing courteousness and by ignoring the antagonism. Under Impersonal Love the believer does not retaliate or retort against them with revenge motivation to get even for their antagonism. By despising or regarding with contempt the weak negative believer or the unbeliever the strong, mature believer has thereby lowered himself to their standards. Under Impersonal Love others are treated on the basis of one's own integrity and Norms and Standards not on the basis of their false norms and weaknesses. The Royal Family Honor Code demands loving all believers which means respect for their privacy and toleration of their Non-Essentials opinions. This is the Relaxed Mental Attitude of Impersonal Love demanded of all believers which is fulfilled, not by Filling of God the Holy Spirit alone, but also, through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It is the required respect for the imputed Righteousness of God in all believers and along with having a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward them, the observing of the privacy of the priesthood, the toleration of Non-Essential opinions, and treating people on the basis of one's own doctrinal standards and not theirs, which is the basis for executing Impersonal Love toward others and for fulfilling "love your neighbor as self".

The more the believer advances in the Christian Way of Life the more inflexible he is to be about Bible Doctrine and the more flexible he must be with regard to its application. For the mature believer, strength comes with flexibility from Metabolized Bible Doctrine. The myriad of applications for Bible Doctrine in the lives of believers demands they become flexible. If the believer does not become flexible through maximum accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul then he WILL inevitably become very ductile from the hammering of Divine Discipline. Wisdom from Bible Doctrine and common sense from the Laws of Divine Establishment provide inflexible norms and standards of conscience but at the same time pliable and tractable functions in application. Reality is that life on this earth is composed of a multitude of variable circumstances and fickle unstable people therefore the challenge to every believer is diversity in application. Therefore, there must be inflexibility with regard to the principles of Bible Doctrine but flexibility in the application of that doctrine which is, in fact, the greater sum of the function of the Royal Family Honor Code in the life of the believer. Therefore, good manners and thoughtfulness of others overflow from the Laws of Divine Establishment in life as Virtue in the Royal Family Honor Code. In this way it is clearly demonstrated that there is a new issue in the believer's life regarding **Arrogance** and Selfcenteredness vs true sensitivity toward others and true function under Impersonal Love.

Reciprocity under the Royal Family Honor Code for the Royal Family of God demands the function of Impersonal Love. Reciprocal Love for God is an Essential in the life of the believer which requires Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is a recognition that God loved all mankind with Impersonal Love DESPITE knowing from Eternity Past the level of failure each person would engage in during their life and throughout history. Impersonal Love is the operation under the high standards of Bible Doctrine which have been learned as the believer moves ahead to Maturity

Adjustment to the Justice of God. Impersonal Love IS **NOT** being nice to obnoxious, distasteful people or engaging in any other hypocritical attitude. In Impersonal Love the believer is to maintain the high standards developed from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that he can regard such a person as a Non-Essentials and not hate him nor fight him nor try to get even with him. In addition the mature believer need not consider his 'reputation' all that important knowing it is only what God thinks of him that truly matters and thereby he remains flexible in this area as well. Therefore, the believer need not defend or protect self from gossip, maligning or judging by others nor get into debates or try to clarify malicious statements because all of these are Non-Essentials. This is exercising Impersonal Love for Mankind. For the strong mature believer it is ONLY relationship with God which is the Essential and this comes from and is strengthened ONLY by persistence in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

Under the Royal Family Honor Code the strong or mature believers are assigned greater obligations which are described as bearing the weaknesses of the weak negative believer or unbeliever in maximum use of Impersonal Love and total toleration and flexibility in areas of Non-Essentials. It is the maximum function of Impersonal Love which fulfills the mature believer's honor code duty to the weak believer because he is operating on his own Norms and Standards developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine. At times God is actually pleased by the believer's Modus Operandi when he does not try to please himself. This is having an awareness of the problems, difficulties, heartaches and areas of sensitivity of others around him in order to not offend them and only make an issue of Bible Doctrine. Believers must not make an issue of self or others but only of Bible Doctrine. One of the most beautiful functions in the Christian Way of Life is the mature believer who is so thoughtful of others that he becomes totally flexible with strength from Bible Doctrine and is never self conscious about this flexibility. These good manners are simply taking responsibility for others and for helping them. Having good manners is always a sign of strength, poise and true greatness in life not ever of weakness.

With maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Divine Viewpoint thinking believers develop the best standards but even with these great standards they do not always live up to them since all believers are human and have Old Sin Natures. The danger is that the mature or advancing believer may become intolerant of those who don't have these same standards and become critical and malign, judge or retaliate, and try to discredit them in some way. Bearing the weaknesses of the weak negative believer or unbeliever is the maximum use of Impersonal Love and involves both toleration and flexibility in areas of Non-Essentials. It is the maximum function of Impersonal Love which fulfills the strong mature believer's Royal Family Honor Code duty to the weak believer, whether he is a negative believer or simply immature. However, understand that toleration of the weak immature believer does not include accommodation to anyone who is reversionistic and totally under Negative Volition toward the Gospel and Bible Doctrine. Believers must distinguish between Essentials and Non-Essentials in the function of Impersonal Love. Small children have little capacity for love unless they are trained with good manners and respect for the privacy, property and life of others and that others have rights to these things. When a person accumulates too many friends he confuses the line between Personal Love and Impersonal Love. When others are rude, malign or judge, the one functioning under Impersonal Love is courteous and ignores their antagonism.

When entering the picture of life and having an understanding of the necessity for flexibility believers will come to see with humor those who criticize them in life. Impersonal Love must be exercised in all situations and relationships. Things like differences in opinions about proper food or drink are Non-Essentials just like clean shaven vs beards, long hair vs crew cuts, smoking vs not, ETC. When a Non-Essential can potentially distract an immature believer this is where mature believers must function with flexibility. This flexibility of application demands superseding the law of liberty with the law of love not permanently but temporarily under flexibility in application to Non-Essentials. Thus this is a public application of tolerance and Impersonal Love.

Relationship with God is the Essential in the Christian Way of Life and comes through Metabolized Bible Doctrine. For all believers it is or can be a wonderful life when they reach the point of Sharing the Happiness of God and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ receiving the imputation of the Super Grace blessings from the Justice of God in time and are able to be totally aware of others and to read them. It is Essential to be able to avoid things which would offend and disturb immature believers and distract them from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Believers, having not attained Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, can be distracted by their own jealousy, arrogance and hypersensitivity. It is a truly wonderful thing to make an issue of Bible Doctrine rather than ridiculing others and making something else an issue rather than Doctrine. Believers can succeed in pleasing others in their periphery by trying to accommodate their erroneous Non-Essential opinions but this is only flattery or false building up of a persons ego. The proper thing is to NOT make an issue of Non-Essentials and make flexible decisions to accommodate them. However, this is NOT allowing others to trample all over one and make one the subject of their jokes or maligning. This is using doctrinally developed Norms and Standards of strength and exercising Impersonal Love toward all.

Essentials in the Christian Way of Life include Impersonal Love while Personal Love is a Non-Essential in all cases EXCEPT in relationship to the Lord where Personal Love is Essential. The believer cannot ever lose when Impersonal Love is developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. The many disappointments which come to believers who are consistent under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine are immediately covered with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the resultant maximum capacity for life so that they cannot be truly disappointed. In these believers there will be no preoccupation with the feet of clay of those close to them and thus no loss of capacity for life or love and they will not glorify the Non-Essentials over the Essentials. This causes these believer to NOT become flexible about Essentials of Bible Doctrine and inflexible about romances or friends or family. Reciprocity in human interactions must be based on thinking Bible Doctrine and therefore a sensitivity to the needs of others is Essential.

This means if the believer is going to think Bible Doctrine he must be inflexible with regard to its Essentials and flexible with regard to all Non-Essentials. Thinking Bible Doctrine, which is the mind or thinking of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, means applying Bible Doctrine, and the function of Bible Doctrine in the Royal Family Honor Code, in all human relationships and to all situations in life. Thinking Bible Doctrine is the motivation for having momentum in and fulfilling the Plan of God. **Psalm 18** was written for worship by David in his first great wave of prosperity when he was first

promoted to King. **Ps 18:46** demonstrates the Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ that David had and that this reality was greater in David's life than anything else. This is a clear demonstration of total inflexibility regarding the Essentials because David never waivers with regard to his love of The Lord Jesus Christ. David maintained Impersonal Love when mentioning that the Lord seeks vengeance for him and he did not seek it himself. Under Impersonal Love David's high Norms and Standards were never lowered to the level of his enemies and he did not try to retaliate but constantly put the matter in the hands of the Lord.

Essentials vs Non-Essentials of Personal Love

Personal Love toward God, Right Woman or friends is not an obligation but a function of freedom. Therefore, all love, both personal and impersonal, is based on one's personal standards and capacity. The Essential difference between Personal Love and Impersonal Love is how those standards are used. All love both Personal Love and Impersonal Love is founded on the believer's capacities and standards based on Bible Doctrine. When considering Personal Love, personal norms and standards are applied to a very few specific people based on some aspect of their attractiveness. In Personal Love the standards are used on a specific object of love in one of the 3 categories. In the elucidation of these 3 categories there is no reference to ALL believers or ALL neighbors. Personal Love emphasizes the object of that love and the attractive attributes of that object while Impersonal Love emphasizes the Norms and Standards of the subject, the one doing the loving. Personal Love must concentrate on an object of love and the subject cannot concentrate on self but on someone else. Therefore, all Mental Attitude Sins destroy all potential for Personal Love.

Essentials of Loving the Brethren & Impersonal Love

Loving other believers always begins with the Attributes of God thus divine standards must be used to execute this command. Loving other believers starts with the common ground of the imputation of the Righteousness of God to every believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore loving the brethren means having respect for the Righteousness of God wherever it is found. You cannot hold a grudge against another believer for this is holding a grudge against the Righteousness of God and blaspheme. Respect is always IMPERSONAL. One respects others because he has norms and standards in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and when he meets others, from those norms and standards, he directs respect to them. If these new acquaintances become friends then they enter into Personal Love as well. In addition, the concept of loving the brethren is directing a Relaxed Mental Attitude and freedom from Mental Attitude Sins toward them which avoids revenge and retaliation, harbors no personal grudges and has no personality conflict and no motivation for such from arrogance. Loving the brethren is also a function which requires the Filling of God the Holy Spirit rather than overt friendliness and effusive hypocrisy. Impersonal Love is based on the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the application of standards from Bible Doctrine on which the Royal Family Honor Code functions. In love for the brethren the believer must function under personal standards rather than any reciprocal response to attention, flattery, affection or attraction. Therefore, it is the Royal Family Honor Code functions under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which produces respect for the privacy, freedom and property of other believers and toleration of differences of opinion in the field of Non-Essentials. Obviously then the love for the brethren excludes all gossip, maligning, judging, retaliation or grudge bearing toward those in the Royal Family of God.

Loving each other as believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ means we are to love all believers in Christ with a Relaxed Mental Attitude and Impersonal Love respecting the Righteousness of God imputed in them. We OWE all believers in Christ something and we have an obligation to them related to God. The Royal Family of God has a reciprocal Modus Operandi and this is one of the basic parts of the Royal Family Honor Code and as believers we are to love every other believer using Impersonal Love for Mankind for a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward each of them. This is not being nice to some jerk nor is it speaking to someone you don't like or being nice to someone who looks pathetic in church. Loving believers is respect for the Righteousness of God imputed to each believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and also a respect for the Non-Essentials opinions of all other believers. The mature believer owes all other believers toleration under the Royal Family Honor Code so that the hundreds of opinions they may have which differ from his are tolerated when they are not in violation of Essential doctrines. The Essential doctrines of the Christian Way of Life are to have the most inflexible status in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and violations of these are NOT EVER to be tolerated. These Essentials of Bible Doctrine are the things on which all believers must agree or separate. Under the concept of the Non-Essentials of human life believers must have love ie. respect for the privacy of the other believers and their differing opinions and for the Righteousness of God in each of them. When there occurs violations of the Essential Bible Doctrines there must be a breaking off or total separation, cutting that person off from one's life and never speaking with them again.

Love is the only perpetual debt in the Christian Way of Life because believers always have the means of paying through Metabolized Bible Doctrine and spiritual advance under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. The debt of love denotes the duty of love and it is a duty and responsibility on part of the Royal Family of God. Love for the "brethren", meaning other believers, includes, along with a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward others, no arrogance directed toward them and no Mental Attitude or any kind of sin directed toward them which gives privacy to all believers as part of one's function under the Royal Family Honor Code. This respect for the Righteousness of God imputed to all believers by God at salvation and requisite privacy of the royal priesthood is Essential in order that all believers can live as unto the Lord without distraction from others. This Love is therefore freedom from all Mental Attitude, Verbal and Overt Sins toward other believers and no implacability or intolerance toward the Non-Essentials of their opinions and erroneous applications of doctrine. So while a believer is expected to pay his financial debts he is also expected to perpetuate his obligation of love as respect, for the Righteousness of God imputed to each believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This legitimate indebtedness of the believer recognizes EVERY believer as a creditor and also a debtor. Loving the believer is a debt obligation and duty of and to all members of the Royal Family of God as part of the **Royal Family Honor Code** related to privacy. It is interesting to consider that loving other believers is a perpetual debt where a believer is always paying installments but never retires the debt until he retires from this life.

Many people relish their privacy and believers can demonstrate Impersonal Love by never speaking to them. If a person says "don't bother me or speak to me" and the believer leaves them alone and never speaks to them this is LOVE under the Royal Family Honor Code. The true impersonal love function of the believer is not emotional and does not require one to be nice to those whom he cannot get along with but simply to tolerate their different opinions when they are Non-Essential

with regard to doctrine. Impersonal Love is a Royal Family Honor Code principle and has to do with the mature believer's attitude not the attitude of any other person. Therefore, Impersonal Love depends totally on the subject expressing love, his honor, integrity and character, and there is no reciprocal concept as there is in personal love, but only toleration and understanding of the Royal Family Honor Code and his function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit with a refusal to gossip, malign, judge or become a spiritual bully trying to disqualify taboos exercised by others.

The principle of privacy demands that all believers avoid gossip, maligning, judging, implacable criticism and the Mental Attitude Sins which motivate these things. The Royal Family Honor Code demands that we love all believers with an impersonal love and Relaxed Mental Attitude but this cannot be obeyed until the difference between Essential and Non-Essentials opinions and Personal Love and Impersonal Love is understood. Impersonal Love emphasizes the subject and the concentration in this case is on the Norms and Standards of the subject, YOURSELF. The advancing or mature believer under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine has high Norms and Standards from Bible Doctrine therefore he never lowers his standards to counter gossip, maligning, judging by engaging in retaliation or revenge. In essence this is the 11th commandment to love other believers as self and is in fact loving from one's high standards with a Relaxed Mental Attitude giving privacy and tolerance for others and their Non-Essentials opinions.

In Impersonal Love the Norms and Standards of the subject are applied to the subject himself and that love is on the basis of personal standards to NOT judge, malign, gossip, retaliate, hold grudges, etc. The object of Impersonal Love includes all those with whom we have social or business intercourse of any kind. In Impersonal Love others are treated on the basis of one's personal integrity and Norms and Standards not theirs. Therefore, Impersonal Love cannot ever be reduced to the level of dog eat dog or seeking revenge or retaliation for injustice or wrongdoing against oneself. Therefore, as part of the Royal Family of God, when judged the believer does not retaliate and when wronged he does not seek revenge nor hold a grudge. If he resorts to these levels of function he in fact lowers himself to the standards of the weak. The weak seek to gain strength by making others as weak as they are with Mental Attitude, Verbal and even Overt sins. If they can get others to retaliate then these others drop their standards and adopt the standards of the week and thereby lower themselves to the level of the weak. In essence, it is in this way that believers literally destroy themselves when they destroy the standards built up in their soul from Metabolized Bible Doctrine. When believers attack others who have attacked them, they leave their standards developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and lower themselves to the standards of the ones who have attacked them and thus destroy themselves. Therefore, Impersonal Love means believers are to tolerate Non-Essentials opinions and standards of others so that both can develop their own higher standards from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. (gr) Agape == Impersonal Love and a Relaxed Mental Attitude based on the doctrinal standards found in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul devoid of the functioning of any Mental Attitude Sins. The mature believer who is advancing to or has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the one who can function best under the concept of Impersonal Love. (**Rom 13:10**)

"Love your neighbor as self and work no ill toward each other" cannot be fulfilled if one does not understand the difference between Essential and Non-Essential concepts of doctrine and the differences between Personal Love and Impersonal Love. Love your neighbor means that with

Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul under Filling of God the Holy Spirit believers use their standards to tolerate others. However, exercising Impersonal Love requires norms and standards be applied to self and reflected onto all other people in one's periphery. Non-Essentials are considered ideas, opinions and functions based on the background, training, education and environment of one's life which don't contradict nor support doctrinal principles. Impersonal Love is the toleration of all Non-Essentials in life while separation is the only option where there is rejection of Essential Bible Doctrine. Therefore, under Impersonal Love we treat others on the basis of our standards not their actions or attractiveness.

When we fulfill the commandments of God with a Relaxed Mental Attitude here called love toward others as Impersonal Love then we truly become a human being with some level of valid standards. The command to love your neighbor cannot be fulfilled by the unbeliever since it requires the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The believer is required to have morality but also something higher than morality in his function under the Royal Family Honor Code. Believers are above morality and thus the Impersonal Love toward others is fulfillment of the non-specific functions of the Mosaic Law.

Essential privacy and Loving the Brethren

Under the legalistic tyranny of the weak negative believer everyone becomes weak, whereas, under the rulership of the Justice of God everyone can be strong. The difference between strong and weak is not only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and adherence to the Royal Family Honor Code by means of the consistent Filling of God the Holy Spirit but also recognition that we can only be strong as a result of each believer living his own life as unto the lord and not as unto any other. Strength comes from Bible Doctrine but believers can only be strong by applying the Bible Doctrine which they personally know. One cannot ever be strong by applying or hearing the Bible Doctrine that someone else knows because when he tries to apply the Bible Doctrine that someone else knows he becomes a weak believer. Believers must never let another person apply Bible Doctrine to their personal situation and they must only apply Bible Doctrine they know to their own situation lest they become weak.

Always remember that Believers have not been 'left behind' after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God *to please men* but ONLY to please the Lord. All Freedom is based on living properly under the appropriate authority and for the believer in the Christian Way of Life that is first and foremost the authority of the Justice of God. The Justice of God is the believer's Point of Reference or point of contact with God in this life and God has delegated some authority in life and also in the Spiritual Life. Essentially the love of the brethren is recognition of the privacy of the royal priesthood of every believer in the Church Age, where each is free to live life as unto the Lord according to the Lord's standards. This freedom does not give anyone the right to stick their nose into any aspect of another persons business. The only solution for any and all personal problems for the believer is for him to take in Bible Doctrine consistently to understand the standards of God and what God has in his plan for that believer's life. When a person does not like another persons way of running their business the only options available are to shut one's mouth and remain in his periphery or shut one's mouth and quietly leave the individual or group. Believers must not ever try to run another persons business or mind the affairs of any other person. Weirdos are always weak and want to try to run another persons business or mind someone else's affairs thinking they have

all the answers in life. Love of the brethren is having total freedom from Mental Attitude Sins which motivate one to judge others and seek to place them under the tyranny of legalism, false standards, and Non-Essentials morals. It is arrogance to presume divine authority and judge another believer in the Royal Family of God who is, in fact, a house slave responsible to the Justice of God and not the whims of legalism.

Therefore loving the brethren is not only freedom from Mental Attitude Sins toward others but the resistance of temptation to judge, malign, criticize or gossip about other believers. Loving the brethren is the positive side of the Royal Family Honor Code which in grace allows for the privacy of the priesthood and adheres to the principle of live and let live and respects the Righteousness of God in every believer. Motivation in the Christian Way of Life must come from Metabolized Bible Doctrine but if it comes from another believer exerting influence on one then it is false motivation and when this other believer is gone this one will flounder and will fail in their Spiritual Life.

The standards for Personal Love are applied to God, Right Man or Right Woman and Friends, 3 very limited restricted groups. Standards for Impersonal Love include all the Norms and Standards in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine applied to every person one comes into contact with. When these norms and standards exist from inculcated Bible Doctrine they give a tolerance of others, especially other believers with less spiritual growth. As a result of Impersonal Love for Mankind and functioning under the Royal Family Honor Code the mutual objective of the Christian Way of Life is attained through accurate and effective expository Bible Doctrine teaching.

Impersonal Love & the Laws of Divine Establishment

Christians must never reject the Laws of Divine Establishment nor the Divine Institutions and never get into revolution or the use of violence to solve problems in life and must not go against the authority of the nation. The only system of government that the believer cannot live under is democracy which is the veneer of anarchy. Democracy is irresponsible people running the government while a republic is supposed to be responsible people running the government as representatives of the people and being elected to do so. The Laws of Divine Establishment are given to believer and unbeliever alike but the unbeliever is only restrained in these areas by Law Enforcement under the Laws of Divine Establishment. The believer is however restrained by the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Royal Family Honor Code and this is love fulfilling non-specifics of the establishment law. (**Rom 8:1**, **Gal 5:4**) Observation of the Laws of Divine Establishment is part of the function of believers and believers are not excepted from this. For the believer, what the establishment law demands in morality the Filling of God the Holy Spirit executes in Impersonal Love. Under Filling of God the Holy Spirit the believer gives overt and mental privacy to other believers. The Royal Family Honor Code also demands the laws of the land be obeyed and fulfilled through the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. The Laws of Divine Establishment sponsor freedom through human action but the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and resultant impersonal love sponsor freedom from the standpoint of divine blessing.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility & Happiness

Happiness a thought in the soul and it most definitely NOT an emotion. People always mistake happiness for emotion and emotion for happiness. Understanding the true nature of Happiness can only occur with a maximum content of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul hooking the believer up with God so that he is aware of ALL of the Essence of God and has developed new priorities which demand thinking happiness which results from advance in the Plan of God. Happiness is therefore clearly related to Bible Doctrine content in the soul since this is the believer's awareness and understanding of, relationship with, and appreciation of God. The only thing which will stimulate happiness in the believer is Bible Doctrine while there are many things which will stimulate emotion. Happiness is the PERSPECTIVE given by Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul looking toward God and at circumstances and life and having a fantastic, perfect attitude. This is the all elusive concept of Sharing the Happiness of God ie. the happiness which belongs to God. This Perspective of Divine Happiness is that when the believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and has a completed Edification Complex of the Soul he is provided with blessing that involves the Happiness of God which is imputed to the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and means he has the happiness of God. This is a fantastic part of the imputation of direct blessing from God for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This believer receives the imputation of the happiness of God connected with the imputed Righteousness of God from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he has inculcated the Justice of God which is found in the 'thinking of Christ' which is Bible Doctrine. This combination of the Happiness of God and the Integrity of God, which is a combination of the imputed Righteousness of God and inculcated Justice of God, produces the believer who will never be uncertain, unhappy or defeated having total flexibility with regard to the non-essentials. This one is not a complainer or griper nor becomes upset by having to make consideration changes for others who are not as spiritually advanced as he. To be flexible without Bible Doctrine in the soul is to be unhappy, uncertain and defeated. The perspective of Divine Happiness is such that Sharing the Happiness of God and having Absolute Righteousness results in total flexibility with regard to non-essentials. Never does this believer feel he is making sacrifices for others and when thoughtful and courteous he requires no recognition and can be thoughtful and kind and never seek a reward.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility, Inflexibility, Family & Societal Protocols

Many believers never realize that they don't have to conform to what society expects from people but that they must only conform to the law but not to what other people think. Many believer males wear long hair and earrings because others do this instead of persisting in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and establishing their own norms and standards for dress and grooming. Conformity to the regulations of society is more important to most believers than persistence in the intake of Bible Doctrine. This type of believer is inflexible where the protocols of society are concerned but the protocols of society demand flexibility not inflexibility because Society in general is a Non-Essential and the protocol established in it is not important but

flexibility there is important. For these types of believers the traditional observance of a funeral or other societal protocols is of greater importance than the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of the pertinent Bible Doctrines. Today the majority of believers follow patterns of morality and legalism and cannot and will not ever survive in historical disaster. For these believers conformity to the customs of society are far more important than obedience to the commands of God.

These persons always put family before The Lord Jesus, The Christ though He made it very clear that Bible Doctrine must be first. Families are wonderful and it is great to have a good and close relationship with family. However, because the primary Essential for the believer is Bible Doctrine and this is the only basis for spiritual growth, then family becomes a Non-Essential along with the myriad of other things in life very often regarded as important. About the Essential of Bible Doctrine believers must be totally inflexible while they must be totally flexible about family as a Non-Essential. It should be obvious to anyone that when one gathers together with family one needs great flexibility, and the more Bible Doctrine the believer has learned while the other members of the family know nothing of doctrine, the more this advancing or mature believer needs to understand that loving family requires great Impersonal Love as well as Personal Love and this means toleration of their silly ideas. It is impolite for the advanced believer to make some dogmatic statement regarding principles of doctrine when they are having turkey dinner so that the relatives choke on it. It does not involve just personal love toward family but Impersonal Love because no matter what strange, weird or idiotic concepts they may come up with every year even in prayer the advancing believer must be flexible about them. The advancing believer who is anxious for family members to know what he knows often becomes obnoxious and inflexible about their ignorance and attitudes. Bible Doctrine must always come first. If anything in life comes before Bible Doctrine then the believer is not prepared for historical crisis and disaster. Therefore, if family comes first then this believer is not prepared.

Recognizing Jesus Christ as Lord means putting Bible Doctrine first in the scale of values. Very often believers call Christ, Lord because of protocol and recognize that this is proper and is the correct thing to say but do not call him Lord in recognition of his authority. These believers are influenced more by what people think than by what Bible Doctrine dictates. To these believers public opinion is more important than their personal opinion which indeed MUST be based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and as a result this person cannot ever survive disaster. The finest, most honorable protocol of life cannot replace the value of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. (**Matt 10:34-39**)

Separation from Family

The separation from family is Essential when the higher priority of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is being interfered with by family distractions. Advancing believers are to allow society to continue normal functions such as funerals without criticism or maligning. Funerals, being moral, good and honorable are not in conflict today with spiritual growth of the advancing believer and will not distract from their advance but family or friends who come to visit for funerals may very well distract from focus on the doctrinal principles involved in death. Therefore, even the good things in life, when they conflict with Bible Doctrine, must be set aside. As advancing believers looking back the importance of Bible Doctrine for the children and the

importance of training them at their level becomes obvious. There is no substitute for academic discipline in the classroom for learning Bible Doctrine especially for children at their level. This is the ONLY answer and only hope for them, to prepare them for crises and historical disasters. Unfortunately there is always something most people must do FIRST before their priority of Bible Doctrine can take effect. For them good manners are a must and a sign of thoughtfulness but very often people who have good manners are not necessarily thoughtful but have learned the necessary protocols of society and adhere to them to avoid ostracism. It is great to have good manners and protocol in society is necessary for civilized functions in society and thoughtfulness of others is extremely important so that one can be sensitive to the needs of others and avoid hurting them. However, distractions to the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and to its proper application to situations in life must be separated from lest spiritual growth be curtailed.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials vs Non-Essentials of Government

The United States still fulfills the concept of client nation to God despite its freedoms being eroded to almost nothing and the people not thinking like Americans should think. Americans still have the level of freedom which is Essential to solve the problem of the Angelic Conflict and now that of the nation's imminent destruction. The believer is an integral part of that freedom as long as he persists in the intake of Bible Doctrine consistently. When it becomes impossible to take in Bible Doctrine any longer then the situation will be changed and our client nation status dissolved. To maintain client nation status the nation must have freedom and an environment where freedom to assemble exists and allows evangelization and spiritual growth from individual volitional Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. No matter the type of government in a nation the freedom to take in Bible Doctrine is the Essential freedom for any nation to enable believers to advance to Spiritual Maturity and complete the Plan of God and thereby preserve and prosper the nation.

It is impossible for the Plan of God to operate or function effectively apart from divine intervention and the understanding of and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution principles in any nation. No matter what happens in the future of the United States of America, whether the Lord removes it as a client nation or not, it is the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions which must continue. *Where they exist in this world and are understood and adhered to, that will be the next client nation to God.* The overriding factor, in times such as these of national disintegration and disaster, is that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and he knows what is occurring in all levels of society and of government. Every servant of the nation in civil government and in military organizations are in their positions of authority and responsibility BECAUSE of the Grace Plan of God for this nation and they are therefore directly responsible to the Lord. Most of these people do not know this and do not care about it and do not realize what is in store for them as a result of their violating and abusing their positions.

There is never any biblical authorization for violence in the removal of government whether it is good or bad in its operation. The solution to all these and all other problems in life is with The Lord Jesus, The Christ who controls Human History. Believers, who are consistent in their function under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine must never be anxious especially when the communists or islam tries to destroy the nation, even if they succeed, because it is The Lord who permits it under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline. Advancing and mature believer MUST remember always that as long as they remain alive God still has a purpose for their life and this purpose does not change because of the current social, national or historical situation at any given time and He will provide the means for spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and his glorification in the process. Believers may not have the same level of prosperity they may have had in the past before disaster occurs but the purpose of their individual lives will not change and living in a state of anxiety or panic regarding the disintegration of the nation is ridiculous. With a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul believers MUST remember that The Lord controls Human History and things are never out of control as far as He is concerned. Believers who are revolutionary and advocate violence in overthrow of the government or those who want the welfare state functions or the freaks who want anarchy only bring greater Divine Discipline to themselves and ultimately to the nation when they are a majority. The system of government is never the issue, except in the case of democracy, and only the authority established under the Laws of Divine Establishment and the people's response to it is the true issue. No matter what happens in the national situation of the United States and no matter how disastrous things appear to be in Human History or in fact really are, God still has a purpose for the life of every positive believer and historical catastrophe must never hinder their spiritual advance. The believer must rest assured that GOD will provide Bible Doctrine and the means of spiritual advance and even the imputation of prosperity in times of catastrophe along with the best death at the right time no matter how unjust or unfair it appears. For every advancing and mature believer the time and manner of his death when it comes will be appropriate for his situation and perfect in the Plan of God. Paul though being unjustly tried and executed never advocated trying to usurp the government nor trying to solve social problems and only wrote that believers should submit to governing authorities. Paul clearly knew that with their failure under the Laws of Divine Establishment principles and rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ who controls Human History, this particular group of government leaders would be removed. After his death there was a short period of anarchy and then a new group of leaders, the Flavian Caesars, came in and evangelism and spiritual advance was retained.

Essential of Christianity in the Client Nation

Christianity is adaptable to any human society or government, under all conditions of life, and is not hostile to any specific form of government and thus does not sponsor nor recommend any special form of government. Christianity is opposed to EVIL in all forms of government and all societies since the results of EVIL destroy freedom, privacy, authority, property, evangelism and spiritual growth. However, believers are not here to correct EVIL but to grow in grace and only the Lord can correct EVIL in any situation or generation. Christianity teaches orientation to life through respect for authority ordained by God in the Laws of Divine Establishment or in the Modus Operandi of the Local Church. A society saturated with turbulence and anarchy (the United States of America in the 21st century) should welcome Christianity as its stabilizer. In addition through the pivot of mature believers which serves to stabilize and perpetuate the client nation, Christianity introduces honor and integrity to the life blood of the nation. It is the source of ALL divine blessing and prosperity

for any nation and without it there could be no client nations to stabilize the world and provide missionaries and evangelists for areas of heathenism where Positive Volition exists. Without the free function of the Local Church in a society, life would be a jungle of anarchy and destruction therefore, the believer is the salt or preservative of the land. The protocol and procedure for the believer is found in the **Royal Family Honor Code** which is inflexible with regard to Essential bible doctrine but totally flexible in the adaptation and application of that doctrine to life. If believers become inflexible about the application of Bible Doctrine to varying situations then they violate the Royal Family Honor Code. The Royal Family Honor Code recognizes all stages of spiritual growth and provides Modus Operandi for each stage taking cognizance of various occupational hazards existing at each stage. (**Rom 13:14**)

Essentials of the Pivot

In the Church Age the pivot is Essential for whatever gentile nation functions as a client nation to God in any generation. While disaster is imminent in the United States of America today, such historical disaster has been postponed by the existence of the pivot of mature believers living in this nation. The United States has had hovering disaster for a very long time but is still preserved because of the existence of a pivot although today it is very small and considered only a remnant of **Jeshurun**. Once the pivot is called home to be with the Lord or shrinks to a size too small to warrant preservation of the degenerate nation, then judgment inevitably falls on that nation. Any period of great stability in Human History must be related to the pivot or a remnant of mature believers according to a selection by means of Grace. Therefore, the greatest thing a believer can do for his nation is to persist in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and rise up in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to form the pivot or remnant which preserves that nation and forms the basis for national prosperity. (**Rom 11:5**) If the United States of America is going to survive (and the situation in this nation today is far worse than it was thought in the 1979 period when these lessons were originally taught) it will depend only on the pivot of believers who reach and remain in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The pivot influences adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions in the client nation without regard to its form of government. There must be in the client nation proper common law and legislative functions, proper jurisprudence and Law Enforcement, proper military establishment functions, and proper functions under free enterprise. This has been being destroyed in the United States of America by labor unions and the interference of the government with free enterprise, the military, liberal judges and liberal legislators. The destruction of free enterprise in this nation must fall back on the functions of big business originally in this nation when they failed to effectively execute their responsibilities toward the people. Labor Unions were the down fall of Chrysler Corporation and when they wiped out Chrysler the ability to maintain and develop armor forces for the United States military was destroyed. There is also a sociological factor to consider which when society embraces degeneracy, which is not immorality, by involvement in and saturation with function in the **Interlocking System of Arrogance**, this causes national self destruction. Therefore, the influence of the pivot first goes toward adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution functions in the nation. Obviously though, the pivot influences spiritual functions which are the result of The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History BECAUSE of the pivot. There is therefore an emergence of spiritual leadership and spiritual advance in the believers in the nation and as a result of all these things, the perpetuation of proper client

nation function. Therefore, from the pivot of mature believers in The Lord Jesus Christ, and ONLY from the pivot, is there any solution when a nation has gone too far into degeneracy and apostasy for any elected representative or change in congress or any conservative movement of any kind to save the country.

At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God believers become elected which is an output of the Divine Decree and as a result all believers are elected to privilege. As an unknown individual, without fame, not being studied in Human History nor being interviewed as a VIP, unknown in this world, at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, God gives to the believer a personal assignment to SAVE HIS COUNTRY. The only means of accomplishing this is through consistent, daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Any time the believer becomes distracted from Bible Doctrine by joining some organization or becoming involved with some group which is going to save the nation he is failing in the assignment from God. Based only on Election at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God every believer is personally involved in saving the client nation United States of America today, and most do not even know it.

In Eternity Past the Lord searched the existence of every believer and knew all their thoughts and decisions and actions. (**Heb 4:13**) God knew in Eternity Past how much longer the United States of America has as client nation to God would exist in history and believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must give an account to Him because He knew whether they would function under Positive Volition or Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine, being distracted from or persistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Despite His knowing that some believers would fail and some succeed, that some would fall by the wayside and not be consistent in their intake of Bible Doctrine thus NOT become part of the pivot, He still elected them to privilege. Knowing from Eternity Past those who would fail to be part of the pivot, God still, at their Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, guaranteed that even though they might fail and end up in reversionism and in the spin-off of apostate degenerate believers, He gave them the same election and privilege as the believer who would succeed in the Spiritual Life. All believers who decide for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in this Church Age are Royal Family of God and as such are elected to privilege but whether any believer uses that privilege properly depends on his attitude toward Bible Doctrine. (**Acts 15:8**, **Acts 15:18**, **Matt 6:8**) God knows how much longer the United States will last and when the cycles of Divine Discipline will take their ultimate toll and how great the pivot will be and whether it will be enough to preserve this nation. He knows the end from the beginning.

As individual believers sit and study doctrine, they must realize that this country is now going hysterically insane and there is a sense of destiny here and liberals are trying harder than ever in history and conservatives are countering and establishment politicians are performing idiotically and middle of ground people have arisen and every weird and brilliant idea will be heard and the media is totally biased, lacking integrity and this nation is now in a totally unstable hysterical situation with riots, unconstitutional "demonstrations", property destruction, murder, etc., from those who want something for nothing or simply to destroy the nation as a whole. These things are NOW coming to a head in a very unusual way and believers will be tested as never before and some will fail permanently or temporarily in hysteria but some will make it through. As Royal Family of God,

believers have the answer to these problem times but the solutions and the preservation of this nation depend on whether there are enough people under true expository doctrinal teaching to ADVANCE TO Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The advance of every believer to Spiritual Maturity is based on their consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, daily **without interruption or exception**. A person does not grow up by eating food 8 hours a day and like eating there are little moments in a day when you study and learn Bible Doctrine but never constantly or all at once. Believers must not get into the habit of listening to Bible Doctrine constantly every hour of every day, because this is not concentrating and not inculcating that doctrine. Only people who are insane and delusional can listen to Bible Doctrine hour after hour. The intake of Bible Doctrine on a daily basis is proper but it must be balanced by having other things in the day to apply that doctrine to. This is the path to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and to using the Election and Privilege of the believer under the Plan of God to provide national prosperity and security.

The client nation prospers because the elect believers have used their privilege and advanced to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. There may also be historical impact for the nation because the elect of the Royal Family of God have used the privilege for advance to Spiritual Maturity. Election is a Doctrine related to the client nation and client nations are, in fact, born by the development of the pivot of believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Pivot development from believers reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the historical basis for the origin of the client nation and client nations fall and are destroyed when the pivot shrinks and disappears. Therefore Election is not only an individual but also a collective concept and is related to the formation of the pivot of mature believers. Therefore, it is a privilege for the believer to learn Bible Doctrine and advance into the pivot which is the provider of security and deliverance for the nation. (**2Thes 2:13**) God has elected believers from Eternity Past for the purpose of advance in his plan. (**1Pet 1:2**, **Eph 1:4-5**) Therefore, Election also means believers have been set aside as Royal Family of God to be the INDEX of blessing or failure in the client nation in which they reside. This is the Plan of God for the believer, designed in Eternity Past, related to client nation status, and is Election to Privilege. Every believer has a holy honorable station in this life having the privilege of supporting and delivering his nation in history. (**Eph 1:3-6**, **Eph 1:11**, **Rom 8:28-34**, **Titus 1:1**)

Paul had the responsibility to ensure that Royal Family of God in any nation, in any period of history, understand that their advance into the pivot is the basis for saving that nation and providing prosperity and it is not only Essential in crisis or disaster but in prosperity as well. Everything which comes to a nation comes by relationship to the Royal Family of God resident in that nation. In most of the African countries because there were no client nations and very little of the Laws of Divine Establishment as protection the Africans were vulnerable to any form of slavery or tyrannical conquest throughout history. Arabs, the great villains in Africa, went though Africa and enslaved the people who could not organize to defend themselves and who had no concept of the Laws of Divine Establishment nor authority. These Arabs, who the Africans now associate in a friendly manner with on the world stage, took them to the shores of Africa and put them in Yankee ships to take them to the Americas and slavery here. Once they came to the United States of America they came to a client nation where great opportunities existed and long before they were forcibly removed from slavery by the government many hundreds of thousands of black slaves became

believers and were evangelized and are in heaven today as a result. This historical fact points out that GOD moved these black Africans into the United States of America in order to provide for their Positive Volition at God Consciousness. Therefore, the United States of America as a client nation to God had a reverse missionary function as a result of the Evil perpetrated by the Arabs. Many of these blacks who were to be enslaved but who did not reach the United States of America were the ones who were under Negative Volition at God Consciousness and thus were removed from those who would become believers and even advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and become part of the pivot of this client nation AS SLAVES. The choice people of Africa came to the United States of America where they had a better opportunity because of the great size of the pivot in this client nation from prior evangelism followed by doctrinal teaching. The only thing which can stop that same judgment we have seen in Africa from coming directly to the United States is the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The military cannot stop this because our military has been and is being destroyed before our very eyes. Law Enforcement cannot stop it being ruined by bleeding heart do good liberalism and rampant marxism which is calling for "defunding of police". (Currently in 2021 this idiocy is constantly proving to be a total disaster in the big cities.) Therefore, in this 21st century of history, the pivot of mature believers in the United States of America is the only means of stopping the destruction of this nation and is desperately needed. It is impossible for the United States to be destroyed or exploited like Africa has been as long as the pivot grows and this is what is desperately needed by the nation as a whole, the military, Law Enforcement and every honorable profession under the Laws of Divine Establishment. It is interesting to observe the degeneration of the military in terms of the removal of spiritual support from chaplains and the prohibition of bibles in possession of the soldiers especially in the middle east where they are needed the most. What this nation needs is the cooperation from believers in reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. However, there can be no pivot of mature believers without there first being election which is the motivation and momentum for advancing in the Plan of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. While disaster is imminent for the United States of America such historical catastrophe has been postponed to a future time based on the remnant of mature believer to GIVE THE NATION TIME TO PREPARE, IT IS MY EARNEST HOPE THAT BELIEVERS HAVE DONE SO SUFFICIENTLY.

Flexibility & the Pivot

Elijah claimed in his whining to the Lord that he was the only one left as a believer and he was wrong because there were 7001 in the pivot and because he became Self Righteous and inflexible he lost track of the principle of The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling history through the pivot. The 7000 in the pivot were still thinking, flexible, Grace Oriented and being sustained by the same Logistical Grace which was sustaining Elijah but they were still faithful whereas Elijah had failed. When divine judgment falls on the client nation **the pivot of mature believers is always secure** and if large enough the nation is preserved as in **1Kings 19:17-18.** Therefore, historical disaster separates the pivot from the spin off of reversionist believers who have failed and is often the means of cleansing the nation. No nation can survive the continued spread of the cancer of reversionism, apostasy and arrogant degeneracy and historical disaster stops this spread. The prevalence of apostasy and degeneracy in a nation does not warrant God ignoring the remnant of believers or the pivot when it is large enough and the only hope of any nation is always the divine solution derived from believers advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. In this time in the history of the United States which is facing historical disaster which threatens every category of life, the believer must

never be distracted by his occupation with the apostasy or degeneracy in the nation. This distraction can be in the form of being upset by Christian 'Fundamentalism' being no longer the fundamentals of Bible Doctrine but cheap tricks used by Pastor Teachers in their congregations called programs instead of teaching Bible Doctrine. Believers must never get so upset and disturbed by failing conditions, spiritual or political, that they don't continue to learn Bible Doctrine because the only true objective for the believer in the Christian Way of Life is to inculcate Bible Doctrine. Therefore, obsession with the problems of the nation must never become a distraction from Bible Doctrine and thereby cause loss of capacity for life. The Believer must never allow bad news of any category to stop him from having a good time in life and doing his purpose of consistently learning Bible Doctrine. No tragedy must ever distract from doctrine and the believer must never allow tragedy to destroy his capacity for life. Flexibility is what is Essential for the believer because it keeps him from becoming obsessed with problems. The Believer cannot ever be demon possessed but he certainly can be demon obsessed and this is believing the lie of satanic doctrines as a result of the development of Scar Tissue of the Soul caused by persistent residence in reversionism. Saying no to Bible Doctrine, having Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and building up Scar Tissue of the Soul causes the believer to also build up Arrogance in the soul and finally when the Lie comes in he believes the Lie because of his rejection of the Absolute Truth of Doctrine and this results in the "strong delusion" of **2Thes 2**.

The threat of historical disaster for any generation can hover for a full generation or even more without occurring and in the United States of America it has been hovering every day for many decades but still has not occurred yet. Believers must be very careful as disaster hovers over the United States of America and over the whole world and yet has not struck again. It is restrained by the pivot of mature believers and the status of the United States of America being a client nation to God and that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History both directly and through the pivot of mature believers. Since 1932, when Franklin Roosevelt came to office, disaster has been hovering over the United States and it has never really descended with full force yet. The people have never really suffered in this country even though during World War II there was sacrificial suffering but this was a result of good motivation. The United States of America has not known what it is like to have total lawlessness in society where in order to protect oneself one needs to use his own abilities. When there are masses of people being victimized by crime, terror, dictatorship, communism and every form of Evil then we have disaster. Because The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History he restrains disaster and catastrophe because of the pivot and thus the key to preservation of the client nation resides in the believers of the nation and their attitude toward Bible Doctrine.

Essential of Pivot Politics

The Christian Way of Life demands entrance into Pivot Politics and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. While power politics emphasizes change Pivot Politics emphasizes GRACE. Spiritual advance is the basis for Pivot Politics and it is also for the believer to glorify The Lord Jesus, The Christ through persistence in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Freedom is Essential for function in and resolution of the Angelic Conflict. Power politics tampers with human freedom to attempt to solve national crises and therefore inevitably destroys freedom. Pivot Politics offers solutions to national crises through GRACE without tampering with

human freedom. Power politics tries to change the leopard's spots while Pivot Politics simply changes the Leopard's direction. Power politics is social action, political muck raking, crusades, Self Righteousness, arrogance in every form, violence, terrorism, **brainwashing, propagandizing**, assassination and revolution; those things which Bible Doctrine totally rejects. Power politics disrupts normal Human Life in the name of Human Good, Self Righteousness and self sacrifice and these ultimately destroy human freedom. However, Pivot Politics rejects social action, reforming and crusading, as unnecessary radical surgery and demands the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of unchanging Bible Doctrine for application to the changing world. In biblical history the contrast between Lot and Abraham, Obadiah and Elijah is the contrast of power vs Pivot Politics. In the concept of power politics the believer becomes involved with distractors to Bible Doctrine and to the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine thereby entering into social action and the social gospel. Each believer must choose for himself between involvement in and improving the devils world under power politics or functioning under Pivot Politics and the Plan of God as per the **Equation of Hope**. Pivot Politics represents the Plan of God in contrast to power politics which represents Satan's radical surgery attempts to improve his own world system. This radical surgery always removes human freedom which is Essential for the perpetuation and resolution of the Angelic Conflict and is therefore an attempt by Satan to circumvent the inevitable loss of the Angelic Conflict to God.

Since The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History, Pivot Politics demands that the individual believer not forsake the assembling together for learning Bible Doctrine and the subsequent advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The changes which result from power politics have been clearly illustrated for us historically by the french and communist revolutions. In contrast to the events of these revolutions in history the pivot of mature believers breaks no laws, sponsors no violence as in assassination or revolution, confiscates no one's property, tampers with no one's freedom or privacy but turns the world upside down through the invisible force and power of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the individual believer. Evil is and always will be EVIL and the leopard may coerced to change his direction but never his spots. Power politics uses Human Good produced from Evil while Pivot Politics uses Bible Doctrine and Grace to produce Divine Good as per the Equation of Hope. The function of the Client Nation to God demands collective regeneration and momentum in the Plan of God. Without believers there is no pivot and without a pivot there is no use or perpetuation of the spiritual heritage of the people. The real heritage of a people which must be perpetuated cannot be perpetuated by physical birth alone but only by regeneration.

Essentials & Non-Essentials of Civil Authority

The actual existence of civil authority with delegated civil power is an ordinance of the Laws of Divine Establishment and not a social contract and is most emphatically NOT designed to solve social problems. Christian duty is to establish power and authority not to revolt against it. Christian responsibility to the nation is obedience to the law of the land, to pay taxes even though they are confiscatory, participate in the military establishment and any and all additional civic duties. This infers that lawful means must be always involved in rescinding unlawful an unjust laws and violence never solves anything and Bible Doctrine never authorizes assassination. The men who killed Lincoln, King and Kennedy did this country a huge disservice. Believers must never use violence for problem solving and never get involved in assassination. Criminals should be executed by authorities and

assassinations always cause worse things to take their place. Christians can be involved in loyal opposition and legitimate protests but are never to become disobedient or traitorous in their function toward the state.

Civil Authority & Legislation

Civil Authority is designed to enforce laws dealing with the preservation of Life, Volitional Freedom, Privacy, Property and the Prosperity of the individual in the nation. If you have worked and now own things in life you have a right to dispose of them in any way you want. You have a right to buy 10,000 of ANY kind of gun but if you use this right with just one to shoot someone unjustifiably then you, yourself should be executed. One of the main principles of legitimate authority is that you cannot ever solve the problems of life by violence NOR BY LEGISLATION. Legislation is supposed to be limited to protecting the citizen's freedoms but it certainly is not designed to require a business to keep a person working if they want to fire him. No one has a right to pass a law saying you will be given a certain wage and receive regular wages and that you will not ever be fired. Government Legislation is designed to protect freedom so that a person has the opportunity to be evangelized and when under Positive Volition to grow in Grace and it is also to protect one's rights to privacy, property and life. Legislation is not designed to solve social problems and neither is VIOLENCE. Legislation requiring Gun registration is designed to consolidate the information of gun owners in order to enable future confiscation which ultimately makes these individuals slaves of the state and inevitably creates lawlessness. This would result in only the government and criminals having guns. The principle is simple: Little government should always remain little and its purpose is to enforce laws against CRIME WHICH VIOLATE VOLITIONAL FREEDOM, PRIVACY, PROPERTY AND ENDANGER LIFE AND THAT IS ALL. The founders of our nation were so suspicious of big government after seeing parliament under Lord North and King George III they designed an instrument of government under the principle which is so very lucid, "The Government is to be the SERVANT of the people not their MASTER".

Essential Solutions to National Problems

The only solution to the problems in our nation in the past and today is the advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by as many believers as possible. Order in the Human Race through the system of delegated authority and the function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions makes it possible for evangelism and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to occur thus for the Plan of God to advance. Civil authority is the direct servant of God designed for the purpose of protecting volitional freedom, privacy, property, evangelism and spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as a tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict. There never has been a single disaster in this nation's history which has hindered individual believers from tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict. When choosing leadership for the national entity the issue is not EVER whether the person is a believer or an unbeliever but whether they follow the Laws of Divine Establishment and will continue to do so in government service. Many unbelievers understand freedom much better than believers do and thus many unbelievers are better guardians of freedom than believers. A clear and lucid demonstration of the failure of a Christian as leader is Mr. Jimmy Carter. A person who clearly understands freedom and the Laws of Divine Establishment would as a national leader disband all bureaucracies in a nation. The government of the United States of America does not need the freedom destroying bureaucracies such as the ATF, HEW, Indian Bureau, OSHA, EPA, etc., none of these. What is needed is to create

more employment opportunities through free enterprise functions and way back in 1980 5,000,000 people in government employment could have been fired and forced back into the labor market and this nation would have been far better off. Employees in all systems of business and government should be required to function efficiently and fired if not doing so. Many if not most Government service people cannot compete in free enterprise and this is why they have left it for government service. When voting to choose representation in government we must always vote for the person who understands freedom, the Divine Institutions, and the Laws of Divine Establishment the best.

Reversionistic Christians are prone to **brainwashing** by Marxism and the Evil concepts of the greater good for the greater number. These are the principles which erode and eventually completely destroy freedom. Many of these kinds of believers who support Marxism thinks that it is Christianity and what they should be doing and that somehow they are glorifying God while they are in fact deluded and blinded by Scar Tissue and Emotional Revolt of the Soul. It is a Christian duty and part of the Royal Family Honor Code to respect civil authority and obey civil authority and this is just as important as recognizing the privacy of the royal priesthood and other parts of the Royal Family Honor Code. Christians are no exception to the rule and not excluded from this responsibility under the Laws of Divine Establishment which encapsulate and protect the Plan of God for the Human Race.

Essentials vs Non-Essentials of Ideal Government

American people and especially the children have been brainwashed into thinking that all the problems of life can be solved by the concepts of socialism and the welfare state and that the government is there to take care of their every need. The United States has had for a very long time now 'social security' which is neither social nor secure and these funds have been continuously stolen by government agencies who lacked the ability to control their own budgets. Now the government is working to destroy insurance companies, oil companies and all other industry in order to expand its capital base. Our government is no longer focused on capitalistic principles and no government official aside from Mr. Trump and a very few others has ever spent or contributed monies he has personally earned through his own ability. They generally have no ability to earn money but only to misuse taxpayers monies and therefore have NO ability under free enterprise and are jealous of and seek to destroy the free enterprise system totally. Obviously there are some very fine exceptions to these principles who do not fit this generalization at all. However, the only true and the best answer to this trend toward socialism is still the doctrinal way to function in any nation under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Socialism is anti christian to the core and many churches are universal in their adoption of the principles of socialism into their functions and therefore completely apostate.

The ideal form of government is where there is the existence of civil power compatible with human freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions and where it is free of the social opposition resulting in human good from Evil. The ideal government type is any one which follows the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and enforces these principles of volitional freedom, privacy, property and pursuit of happiness where each person can accumulate things for themselves and enjoy them. Power and authority must reside in the divine institution of the nation and not be seized by an administrator for personal aggrandizement as is being done today in this 21st century. In addition, for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the **Royal Family**

Honor Code includes duty to state or nation and patriotism as opposed to internationalism. Paul himself was protected by roman authority from Jewish legalism and fanaticism when they wanted to kill him and the Roman soldiers protected his privacy, property and freedom. 'SPQR' delivered Paul from the violence of that mob and from assassination. The Roman system of government was monarchy but it was a good government protecting the rights of its citizens. When any president governs a nation according to the principles such as are found in the United States Constitution and which is guided by the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions he becomes a double blessing to the nation. This was Mr. Donald Trump. When a president governs according to the Marxist system and theory of the greater good for the greater number and is ruled by apostasy and degeneracy from Evil he is a double curse to the nation. This was Barak Obama and is today Joseph Biden.

In order to have proper and effective government especially in a client nation to God, all activities not qualified for proper government function as per the Laws of Divine Establishment and under the principles of the Divine Institutions must be eliminated. Government should defend the lives, privacy, property and volitional freedom of all citizens equally this is the freedom guaranteed by our constitution where all men are created and must be considered EQUAL UNDER THE LAW. Every person has a right to life, free use of his volition, property, privacy and whatever prosperity he can eek out of life. Government must ONLY be involved in protecting willing exchange and restraining unwilling exchange and suppression, penalizing fraud and misrepresentation or any other predatory practice of crime. Government is to codify and then inhibit all destructive actions while leaving all creative production FREE. This free creative production therefore includes, charity, prosperity, concern for human welfare by individual citizens acting privately, cooperatively and competitively as they freely choose. Therefore having freedom of choice EACH person is responsible for HIS OWN LIFE and development of his own potentials within the limits of non interference with the equal rights of other persons. Personal accountability assumes responsibility for the products of one's creative efforts and the means by which life is sustained and establishes a basis for private ownership of private property. While possessing economic freedom each person may practice compassion and charity with what belongs to him and he leaves to government, which is organized force, the very LIMITED task of preserving life, freedom of volition, privacy, property and peace. This is a precise standard which may be used to test any activity of government.

Man's life and liberty are derived not from the state but from the creator. This is one of the greatest principles underlying the Laws of Divine Establishment. Therefore the ONLY responsibility of LITTLE government is to defend your right to live, make choices, as long as they don't interfere with others' choices and to privately possess property and to go about your business and advance self or not as your volition decides. There are some things the individual does owe to self which are intangibles such as respect, integrity and responsibility. These duties are not a debt in the sense of a repayable loan or obligation because when a person borrows from self he, in fact, owes no debt. In reality however, whenever a person has amassed a sizable debt it is a crucial matter when it comes due. When the **GOVERNMENT** borrows property from an individual **it is responsible to always repay that debt**. The government is paid taxes by all individuals and when it incurs national debt that debt MUST be repaid and not constantly perpetuated and increased. Today the overwhelming size of the national debt makes a real difference to all those who pay taxes AND THIS DEBT MUST BE REPAID.

One vital characteristic of the real institution of private property is that ownership and control rests with individuals and whether a person owns or owes makes a huge difference regarding how rich or poor he is considered to be. Universal ownership of private property presupposes a government of limited powers rather than one where government owns everything and private citizens have some small say regarding the extent to which government can tax or seize their property. Large National debt signifies that government has made certain claims upon private property above and beyond the due process of authorized taxation. Therefore, OBVIOUSLY, the greater the national debt the greater is the chance of having economic collapse. The government borrows money from the people and if it does not pay back that money the people no longer have capital and therefore cannot invest in business and the whole system collapses and then ALL property is in great jeopardy. Thus the greater the national debt the greater one's personal property becomes in jeopardy. If the government does not pay back what they have borrowed to their creditors then all property becomes valueless and all persons lose. When little government becomes a debtor it will not only become big government to cover its failures but also then engage in tyranny and destroy the basic principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and then the citizens personal property is in grave danger. Therefore, at this point there is no such thing as the "sacredness of property" when the government gets too deeply enmeshed in debt. This is what occurred under Louis XIV in France and when France was bankrupt the 2nd time this was the instigator of the French Revolution.

One of the greatest systems of government is Absolute Enlightened Monarchy which understands and adheres to the principles underlying the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions in governing. Therefore, it is not the form of government which makes the difference, but the attitude toward the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions in that government which make the difference. Government is not designed to and should never attempt to solve social problems in life since these emanate from the individual and collective Old Sin Natures of man and will be a part of the human condition for all of history. The only true solution for these is a spiritual solution with first Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and then the believer's advance to Spiritual Maturity. The responsibility of the individual under systems of great freedom is always obedience to properly delegated authority rather than rejection of it. However, in the form of the government in the United States of America, especially today, citizens are not precluded from LOYAL OPPOSITION to such things as the Marxist socialism and welfare state functions which predominate in our system today. We have, in the United States of America, functioned under the principles of Marxism for a very long time and our last great president was Herbert Hoover prior to Donald Trump. One of the worst periods of our history was after Hoover's presidency involving the degeneracy of and departure from and constant violation of our constitution with the creation of bureaucracies and the rise of labor unions with a tyrannical rise of power grabbing in all areas of government. This continued to thrive as a disaster period even to our current time but we still have some minor Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution functions and above all else The Lord Jesus, The Christ still controls Human History providing us with the freedom to operate in the Plan of God. Believers MUST remain as loyal opposition to the apostasy and degeneracy in the government of the United States of America. They must never advocate violent overthrow of the government nor assassination of any government official for only The Lord Jesus, The Christ knows when to remove them and unless he does it believers cannot and must not advocate it. The United States of

America has procedures in the constitution and in the nation, all which have been set aside and violated today, and it is only The Lord Jesus, The Christ who can deliver this nation at this time in history and it is a simple matter for Him to do but there must be an appreciation by believers of how He can do it.

Flexibility of Government & Essentials of Bible Doctrine

In an effectively functioning society there should be proper functions of freedom including free enterprise with motivation from profit, no or very low taxation and no bureaucratic functioning in government. Freedom has been eroded into the welfare state and socialism in the United States of America and this is EVIL. The only operative freedom in our time in this nation is the freedom of worship without coercion and the separation of church and state but even that has been infringed on by the government with the mandates for restricted social gathering as a result of the Chinese Communist Party Wuhan Virus infection. Religions also very often interfere with freedom of worship with their mandated ritual or complete antagonism to other systems of worship like that which occurs with islam. Separation of church and state and freedom of worship must include opportunity for evangelism and freedom from taxation for churches. Many times there are activist activities where they sponsor revolution and teach revolution and are pro-communism and these may set up a religion as a tax escape and these loophole systems constantly erode our freedom of worship.

Today we have so many weirdos in society and government because they are inflexible about the Non-Essentials and flexible about the Essentials. We see this in both foreign and domestic aid and foreign and domestic policy and these American policies are totally unconstitutional and destructive to this nation. For many many decades we have given taxpayers money to communist countries who have never repaid their loans to the United States. It is idiocy to support and cater to our sworn enemies both foreign and domestic by trying to BUY their friendship. The constitution however is an Essential in the life of the United States of America and we MUST be totally INFLEXIBLE with regard to it. Congressmen and Senators and those in the management positions of bureaucracies along with those in the judicial branches and the president of this country have totally lost their proper perspective in governing this nation being inflexible about the Non-Essentials and applications and totally flexible about the Essentials beginning with our constitution. The United States has in the past and continues today to give aid to countries who this nation has no business supporting and who will NEVER repay their loans nor in any way be supportive of the policies and principles of this nation. In addition this government has assumed the prerogative of running the country on an incomprehensible debt system which is both unsustainable and impossible to ever repay. This will be most likely continued beyond all imaginable levels with the support by government for the 'MMT', Modern Monetary Theory. This theory basically says that deficit spending can go on forever and the government simply has to print more money when it is needed and to avoid hyperinflation the tax system is to be manipulated to control it all based on the deficit spending being done in "Correct or Productive" areas. There is no excuse for this level of flexibility where an Essential is concerned. The people of this nation should not be tolerant of the ongoing shredding of the constitution and especially not for the blatant violation of principles of Bible Doctrine found in the Laws of Divine Establishment and under the Divine Institutions.

The Laws of Divine Establishment are designed to give everyone an EQUAL OPPORTUNITY in life and in the Spiritual Life the chance to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under the Plan of God by means of absolute inflexibility regarding Essentials and total flexibility regarding Non-Essentials. We must be totally flexible regarding the applications to Non-Essentials by others and totally inflexible about the Essentials of Bible Doctrine including the principles contained in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. There is obvious failure of this orientation in the people of the United States who are totally sold on socialism and welfare-ism as the correct way of life. In addition a majority of people believe we should be tolerant of everything especially islam and communism along with the total destruction or restructuring of our constitution.

Believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ in this Church Age are in fact eternal aristocracy as Royal Family of God and must shed all thinking related to the Human Viewpoint of Good and EVIL. As Royal Family of God Aristocracy we cannot ever approve of:

- Welfare state functions
- Socialism
- Marxism
- Government Interference with business
- Bureaucracies such as OSHA, BATFE, EPA, HEW, etc.
- Coercion for personal production
- Census
- Leniency for criminals
- Internationalism in any form both religious and political
- ETC.

The ultimate objective of the Christian Way of Life is to get Bible Doctrine to saturate the believer's thinking and actions in life. However, when under Negative Volition, the believer will inevitably latch onto Marxism or Socialism or Religion and gradually see the communists as brothers and thereby be conquered by their system of thought rather than their military action.

In the name of the Greatest GOOD for the greatest number erosion of freedom has been occurring in the United States of America since 1900 especially since Franklin Roosevelt was president and this country has thus become a VILE EVIL nation functioning under antagonism to the principles of our constitution and against the Laws of Divine Establishment provided by the Lord including:

- Reduction in force of the military
- Paying SCUM to stay alive instead of letting them starve to death from laziness
- Allowing SCUM to violate law instead of having to stay under authority
- Living in FEAR of revolution, communism, people causing trouble if not kept in their place
- The General nature of TV and Music (especially hard rock and rap)
- Lack of honor and integrity among men
- Lack of respect for womanhood causing women to demand rights and equality
- Acceptance of all aspects of sexual degeneracy including homosexuality and transgender functions, ETC.

Essential Fallacies of Socialism

The United States of America cannot go back to the good days when it was a great nation and not tainted by Marxist socialism. Marx was a middle European German peasant from Jewish extract with

an imbecilic mind who thought he was clever and going to solve man's problems using the philosophies of Feuerbach, socialism and communism. There arises confusion between technology and other aspects of life such as morality and political principles. In a book published originally in 1776 "The Wealth of Nations" Adam Smith addresses many aspects of the economics of nations also considering the proper development of technology by MARKET DEMAND not government interference as has occurred in the United States of America and the world in general through the 20th century. Failure of market drive for technological development results in varying degrees of social degeneration. With technological progress men find it easy to make the mistake of believing that all aspects of society are bound up with and determined by the state of technology in each historical era. Every advance in technology seemingly requires some change in all other values and institutions of man. Socialists cannot relate advances in technology to life. The constitution of the United States of America was framed during the horse and buggy era so by this socialistic interpretation it must mean that the railroad age required some radical changes in the constitution and the jet age even more so and the internet age vastly more so. Since 1776 our technology has been advancing and the role of government in economy and all aspects of society has also and erroneously grown. This nation started with a small central governments and great freedom and today we have HUGE central governments and very little freedom. Considering the proposition of Technology, the growth of government must have been required by the advances in technology BUT this is a TOTALLY FALSE premise. The error of thinking is in the concept that there is necessity for morality or political philosophy to change when technology improves.

Non-Essential False Principles of Technological Determinism

The writings of the Apostle Paul in the New Testament Scripture were evolved in a time when there was no technology and the fact is, and will remain, that there has never been any improvement regarding these writings nor anything else in theology back to the Decalogue, the 10 commandments, and even before. Technology may progress over the centuries but the advancement of the morality of man's actions are not assured by this but in fact may easily and rapidly retrogress as a result of improperly motivated technological advances. It did not and does not take centuries for men to learn to plunder and kill one another or reach for coercive power over others. NO matter how we improve technology in our lives we cannot change the Old Sin Nature and because of this, even with "good" advanced technology, big central government, as in the United States, is much more detrimental than in the days of tyranny in the colonies. Technologically speaking history is a record of progress but human morality has never improved and in fact only the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions have made it possible to have any control at all over the Old Sin Nature. The Old Sin Nature is controlled only by law and the potential of retribution under the law but it is encouraged by socialism and big central government. The trend toward "Good and Evil" from the Old Sin Nature is never greater than when the congress and senate in the United States are constantly passing laws to solve social problems and make people be nice to each other. This trend is emphasized when government passes laws to destroy freedom or to confiscate firearms, or any other means of self defense, to prevent people from exercising self defense when necessary and thereby make it easier for criminals to succeed and government, like communism, to enslave. Therefore, as we clearly know, the greater the government the smaller the people. The technology developed here in the United States has already been shared with those who could not ever begin to develop it including the Russians and Chinese who now are using that very same technology against us in all areas and this ironically shocks the people of the United States.

There is no religious freedom in Russia or any other communist nation, clearly demonstrated by the public persecutions and executions occurring in 21st century china, and therefore no thinking in opposition to communism anywhere it exists because the first thing communism does is to remove ALL religion and knowledge and belief in God. Communists function on the belief that Man is simply a smart animal without soul and without anything after death. There is no such thing as a good Russian or Chinese or good moslem for if he is alive living in Russia or china he has to be a communist or die and if alive in an islamic country he must follow islam or die. We have clearly seen this principle in action in the radical destruction of a religious sect in communist China in the very recent past. As long as communism controls Russia or China there cannot be anyone in either country who stands against communism and still lives. Man needs freedom to experiment, seek truth, discover, develop new ideas because every new idea comes from the individual's free imaginative thinking. Communism provides no environment for the creative thinking necessary to develop high levels of technology and there must be freedom and experimentation and free enterprise incentive and these don't exist in Russia or China, therefore they must get these advances in other ways. Russia obtained the inertial guidance systems for their missiles from the United States and China obtained their ability to genetically modify organisms by means of a genetic lab built and currently being funded by the United States and the Chinese then USED THIS TECHNOLOGY TO DEVELOP AND DEPLOY THE CCP WUHAN VIRUS OF 2019 under their principle of "total warfare". Freedom is needed for technological advance and when there is no advance in technology, and what exists decays, society then regresses into virtual barbarism. The world is on the verge of entering a 2nd dark ages like existed in medieval history and this is occurring as a result of an overall lack of freedom and these were and will again be the worst times in Human History. Freedom is the key to man's survival under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and the Human Race is not protected and perpetuated by technology nor by socialism nor the welfare state but only by the Laws of Divine Establishment which sponsors the principles of freedom.

Any form of government will work if it functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions EXCEPT Democracy which is the only EVIL form of government and is the final stage of civilization before revolution and the inevitable anarchy occurs. Today radical liberalism tries to link liberty and limited government with lack of technology and it implies that socialism and welfare state functions are tailored to the requirements brought on by great technology. The reality is that socialism and state planning such as in welfare functions are many centuries old and liberty and morality had to win their way slowly over the centuries until expanding liberty made possible the great technological advances of the industrial revolution and the flowering of modern capitalism. In the advance of any society first there must be freedom, then civilization comes and finally great prosperity. Communism offers to the whole Human Race **SLAVERY,** to everyone except the very few who rule. The concepts of technological determinism go back to Karl Marx and other such socialistic idiots of the not so distant past but it is not a completely new idea even for them.

Non-Essential Socialism vs Essential Laws of Divine Establishment

The United States of America has been facing since the 1980's and is now totally engulfed in incredible disaster and today is under the greatest attacks on freedom and free enterprise in our history. When the nation loses its economic stability and the weapons of individual citizens are

confiscated there will be no means of self defense and the women will be totally helpless during invasion or overreaching government mandates. When any person is anti-free enterprise and votes for socialists, as a woman, they and she specifically are asking to be physically destroyed by anarchy and invasion. The rise of socialism very often uses stupid women in order to advance their position in the world. Under socialism, welfare state functions which inevitably lead to communism, government authorities become a source of fear and terror no matter how an individual conducts himself. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment the purpose of authority is specifically to protect life, volitional freedom, privacy and property and there cannot be exceptions to this since:

- Life is meaningless without free choices from free will volition.
- You cannot have this freedom without privacy.
- You cannot have any freedom unless you can own property.

When people allow government to remove their freedoms either systematically or instantly then the government owns all the things which they possess and can take them from the people at any time. Compulsory Social Security contributions are another form of taxation in any socialized state and with income taxes some 90 percent of the citizens money is taken by government at various levels. Just consider, Federal, State and Local Income taxes, Sales Taxes, Property Taxes, School Taxes, Capitol Gains Taxes, Inheritance Taxes, ETC. The people in this country are in fact being taxed out of existence and the economy is bleeding money as it approaches death and smiling about it. It is OK though, the people today have received "stimulus" payments from the federal government to keep them smiling through the devastating government mandates during the FAKE CCP Wuhan Virus "crisis", and it continues as the United States approaches the end of the first ¼ of the 21st century.

Good works are the proper functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment. Good should be considered ONLY in the sense of not violating life, privacy, volition or property under the Laws of Divine Establishment. Authority and power in government vested in the Law Enforcement officer and judicial function of the courts is designed to protect the freedom of the citizen. In current history in this 21st century, socialism and welfare state functions have already killed England and are almost finished killing the United States of America. The people in the United States of America are incredibly stupid since they can constantly see what socialism has done in the destruction of other nations, like our mother country England, yet still they move in that direction. In contrast the Good of Intrinsic value concept is the courage of free enterprise with capital investment and business development under the Laws of Divine Establishment. This is not attempting to make all people equal nor trying to get people to be nice to others they do not like. This is the motivation and drive which allows an individual under his personal ambitions to go as far as possible in life. When a taxpayer's monies are used to try to solve social problems it is both the unconstitutionally illegal and immoral use of tax monies. Money cannot make people equal nor compatible socially or in any other way and certainly cannot give them what they need under freedom and privacy, however, it can be used as a part of property for the individual to purchase and possess other property items. This is the proper function of the Laws of Divine Establishment.

However, without civil authority the believer could never advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Just as the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is Essential for Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God so also freedom is Essential for the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception. An attack on freedom in one area is an attack on freedom in every place. Considering the desire of Satan to WIN the

Angelic Conflict appeal in order to avoid eternal condemnation in the Lake of Fire, attacks on freedom can prevent salvation for the unbeliever and spiritual advance for the believer. One such attack constantly occurs under governmental bureaucracies which make RULES which function like laws against possession of property as demonstrated by the BATFE making independent rules in complete violation of the bill of rights regarding possession of property ie guns and ammunition. If any one category of property can be made subject to this type of regulation then any and all categories of property can be subject to it. This is also the United States Internal Revenue Service establishing a 70,000+ page tax code to confiscate money from citizens totally outside the authorization of the Constitution. In any free society as goes the gun, via personal weapon legislation, so goes human freedom for weapons, or guns, possessed by law abiding citizens are the major part of freedom as their private PROPERTY. Once weapons are controlled and ultimately eliminated then any property or any part of freedom can also be removed. However, no matter how ludicrous the nature of the situation may be, The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and for believers who function under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine the only concern and primary priority must always remain Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The government which attacks freedom, private property and free enterprise and capitalism under the Evil aegis of socialism will tomorrow attack the freedom of worship. The reality of socialism which ultimately leads to communism is that the greater good for the greater number is the source of the Greatest EVIL.

Essential of Nationalism, Government and Civil Authority

Governmental authorities are not to be considered from the standpoint of their individual personalities and character but as officers of a Divine Institution with authority delegated from God. Human government under Nationalism is a permanent Divine Institution set up as a guarantee of the sanctity of individual life, privacy, property and freedom of choice. National Government is a true safeguard against internationalism which is a conspiracy from and tyranny of Satan to control the Human Race in the Angelic Conflict. All political international organizations, including communism in Russia, China, Cuba, Africa, Europe and elsewhere, are focused primarily on internationalism along with the former 'league of nations' and the current 'United Nations'. There is also religious internationalism found under such as organizations as the world council of churches, romanism, islam and others. The world council of churches sponsors revolution and advocates violence to solve social problems while islam overtly proclaims the goal to convert the world or kill those who do not convert. All forms of internationalism expose the satanic conspiracy geared toward world domination and directly oppose the Divine Institution of nationalism.

Civil authority and Law and Order which is supposed to be designed to protect freedom is an ordinance from God. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment which encapsulate the entire Plan of God, every step a believer takes in the Plan of God requires that he have freedom of choice. Individuals must be able to choose:

- Faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ or rejection of Him without coercion.
- Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine OR NOT.
- Function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, or NOT.
- Orientation to and function under properly functioning delegated authority OR NOT.

Individuals must have protection of their life with freedom of choice, privacy and property including money protected under properly functioning delegated authority to fulfill the Plan of God, therefore,

the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions are extremely important to the Human Race as a whole. Obviously then, one of the greatest enemies of the establishment principles of the Plan of God is socialism which inevitably leads to communism and which is totally harmful to people being totally viscous and completely based in EVIL. Socialism, today, is robbing the people in America of incentive and vigor which has in the past made this country the greatest of all nations in all of history and this concept and process is totally anti-christian and EVIL under the conspiratorial plan of Satan. Today Americans are too soft, flexible and politically correct and they cling to nonsense which has brought nothing but misery to other nations and have overall no concept of what freedom is and how it must be handled. A simple principle of what freedom must involve is that because the Constitution of the United States, the primary FREEDOM document, is written in English, to live in America one must be able to understand the constitution and what it stands for. However, because immigrants are not REQUIRED to learn our language and therefore have not and cannot read our constitution they know nothing of what the freedom is that it stands for. Today in the United States of America in the public schools cursive writing is no longer taught which means that this generation of the children of AMERICANS will no longer be able to even read the constitution or any other of our historically significant documents. This is the influx of both the idiocy of technology combined with the conspiracy of socialism to destroy this nation of freedom.

Therefore, as believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ we must support the Laws of Divine Establishment in our nation at all times and always support the government and never seek to destroy it. We have lost a great deal in our government and the only way to recover it is through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the individual citizen. If the only people who could vote were those who had served in the military and property or business owners over age 25 as is designed under the Laws of Divine Establishment, most of the people in office in government today would never even try to run for office. Believers are to take in Bible Doctrine as rendering to God and to pay taxes as rendering to Caesar no matter how fair or unfair they may be. Taxation which is the means by which we raise money to support local government is very important especially for supporting Law Enforcement, Firemen and Garbage collection, along with other necessary government workers. As a part of civilization these services must be paid for, it is obvious that we must pay, even though most city, county, state and federal governmental systems are corrupt that is no reason to not pay taxes. There is no justification for complaining about doctor bills in any situation since doctors had to sacrifice for 10 to 15 years to get to their professional status and deserve to charge whatever they see fit. Those who are to be supported without the use of tax monies are the ministers of God according to the principle that under God these people have authority to provide for the needs of believers according to the Laws of Divine Establishment principles of God. Believers especially must always remember that the faults of one person do not determine the character of all people especially when it concerns public servants. Therefore public servants must be supported through taxation and believers must legitimately pay their taxes.

It obviously becomes very clear then that government is ordained of God to protect human life and encapsulate human volitional freedom, privacy and property and thereby protect and perpetuate the Human Race through its proper function under the Laws of Divine Establishment. Not one person could have been evangelized or witnessed to without the Laws of Divine Establishment. Not one person would have had the opportunity to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God were it not for the Laws of Divine Establishment. Therefore, Christian responsibility to government

is in total compatibility with the Plan of God and includes respect for the police, military, fireman, garbage collector and all public servants. The average person easily forgets that freedom cannot exist without authority and that in any national entity gaining and maintaining internal freedom demands governmental authority to sustain it while gaining and maintaining external freedom depends on authority and strength in the military establishment. People in public service often make a career of public service so that others can have their time released for the functions of freedom. This allows especially for the time to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. This is a legitimate function in life and career public servants are Essential for the normal function of life, this however does not apply to career politicians.

Essentials of Proper Taxation

Citizens in a nation have as a responsibility taxation payments and public servants have the responsibility for effective and efficient public service all as part of the function under the Laws of Divine Establishment. Individuals with careers in public service MUST be supported by public taxes including the administrative functions in the nation along with Law Enforcement, Military and Government officials. The only proper taxation system is a biblical system of taxation which should be a straight percentage across all income levels of all citizens in all functions. This is the type of equality a citizen should expect and which is part of being equal before the law. Every person on the face of this earth is unequal in every conceivable ways except where equality counts under freedom and before the law. The word 'Tithes' in the Mosaic Law refers to taxation of all citizens and is NOT spiritual giving to a church or other religious organization. This was a system of taxation ORDAINED BY GOD is to provide for the functions necessary for the NATION under the Laws of Divine Establishment. 'Tithing' means equality in taxation and because no 2 of individuals have equal income each should pay the same percentage of their income in taxes. In effect under the Mosaic Law 'Tithe' means 10% and this is so that each person, regardless of his income, will participate in the support of the Essential function of the nation under the Laws of Divine Establishment by paying their equal percentage. This is ordained by God because it is fair according to GOD and therefore every citizen must pay the same percentage under the principle of equality.

In the United States of America we talk about equality constantly but what is actually ultimately inferred is superiority and this is totally EVIL. The taxation system we have is EVIL and basically is the government stealing from the wealthy and giving to those who have not attempted to engage in any developed of their own source of income. This is confiscation of wealth and redistribution of wealth which is totally EVIL resulting in destroying incentive in the nation as it systematically destroys the economy of the nation. Those who have ability to make large amounts of money inevitably invest it and thereby provide jobs for those who can't. A strong national economy depends on the great industries, "big business", not on what the average person makes nor on small businesses which cannot even exist without the need for strong industries. The federal government has no ability to support an economy and has also demonstrated no ability to stay out of debt and is constantly involved in the worst business procedures in the world. It is "big business" which makes the difference in an economy and if the federal government operated under the Laws of Divine Establishment it would do everything possible to protect these great industries in every way possible. The success under the Laws of Divine Establishment is dependent on motivation and drive. When the government interferes with the support of social failures in society, it inevitably destroys the motivation and drive of these people and also of the people who are working hard to pay the

EVIL taxes used to support this scum. This begins in a society when the unmotivated scum begin to complain about not being equal. The people who talk most about demanding equality have already recognized their inferiority and in their supreme arrogance are disturbed about it and in fact don't want equality but want superiority but want it GIVEN to them so they do not have to face their inability to obtain it for themselves.

3 types of valid taxes existed in Israel and each was a 10% tax. Because Israel was a theocracy there was a 10% tax to support the Levites in the spiritual heritage of Israel. (**Num 18:21+24**, **Lev 27:30-33**) There was an annual 10% tax for support of the government including feasts and sacrifices. (**Deut 12:18**, **14:22-24**). Then every 3rd year there was an additional 10% tax for the support of the poor of the land as charity for those who could not make a living and this was not the constant support as found under socialism. Offerings in the scripture is used for the spiritual giving of believers, (**Deut 18:1-5**, **Neh 13:10**) and we must learn to distinguish between 'Tithes' and 'Offerings'. 'Tithes' were the support for the government under the Laws of Divine Establishment while 'Offerings' where what the believer gave to support his local church from his own motivation. Therefore, the 'Tithes' of **Mal 3:7-10** are taxes, NOT spiritual giving. It is the Christians duty, just as for every citizen, to pay taxes and it is in this way that the believer pays to Caesar that which is his. Part of equality in the Human Race under the Laws of Divine Establishment means equal tax privilege and responsibility and the only way for this to occur is for everyone to pay the same percentage based on citizenship no matter what his income. The Sales Tax system in the United States is the fairest tax system in the nation because everyone pays the same percentages. All other taxes are immoral and EVIL in our system including and especially all taxes on businesses. (**Rom 13:6**)

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essential Thought & Client Nation Success

The main thing which has made the United States great is found in the thought processes Essential for a client nation found in **Rom 12:16** which is part of the **Royal Family Honor Code**. Any nation as a client nation must be involved in a collective positive Mental Attitude. There must be a large enough pivot of mature believers to set up the principle of what a positive Mental Attitude must be especially among believers. For believers to think the same or be "like minded" does not mean to have the same thoughts but to have the same attitudes as is found in the Royal Family Honor Code and for unbelievers it is to have the same attitudes toward the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Considering these 2 principles it becomes obvious why there is failure in the United States of America today. For the believer this includes respect for all others who have had Absolute Righteousness imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God who are most likely totally different in every possible way from every other believer. This is the common ground which gives rapport with others and has nothing to do with being overtly friendly nor exchanging proper words or amenities in life. This must start at its highest level in the Local Church under the Royal Family Honor Code and if it is destroyed in the Local Church it cannot exist at any lower level. This Royal Family Honor Code is the high level of function of the Royal Family of God just as the Laws of Divine Establishment are to be the high level of function of both believers and also those who are

not believers in any client nation. These systems of thinking and of acting both, provide authority orientation and freedom which makes the client nation something fantastic under the principle that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History by means of the pivot of mature believers.

Believers are to think with the same Mental Attitude and should have an extensive technical biblical vocabulary to think with and therefore must think in terms of words which are in effect one word paragraphs. When the communists began to conspire to rob the United States of its American thought, this began in Christianity in protestant and methodist denominations and with liberal professors in colleges and universities and these people were deceived and and thereby robbed of proper client nation oriented thought which they perpetuated to those under their systems of authority. They accepted the whole system of EVIL of the satanic policy system and this has expanded into every aspect of society in the United States today. Then when you have a biblical command like "Love the Brethren", because of a lack of understanding the proper vocabulary, it has been reduced to the most simplistic concepts and superficialities of overt smiles and pleasant greetings and performing kind deeds when around others. This is not the LOVE commanded by the bible which in fact is a Relaxed Mental Attitude and the thinking in similar categories toward each other as a result of Bible Doctrine resident in the believer's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It is a recognition of the privacy and freedom of every believer to have their own thoughts and ideas but that each believer should have these based on doctrinal principles at varying levels of personal assimilation into the soul. Every person alive has different opinions as to what one should eat or drink but some believers, because of their distorted background, claim that what you eat determines superficially what is spiritual. By this means the rapport is destroyed among believers and these Non-Essential simplistic things then divide believers. These Non-Essentials can include taboos which are strictly followed and then attempted to be superimposed on others. This results in judging other believers based on ones personal thoughts and standards and this must be clearly understood and avoided.

If believers are going to think the same thing toward each other they must have a level of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to understand what the Royal Family Honor Code is. In the United States an honor code has only been found in the United States Army honor code where officers could have a relationship to each other and function honorably. This code set up a system whereby men of totally different in background and personality could function as brothers in the system. This is what underlies all concepts of Honor. We have also had codes for conducting business in the past which no longer exist today where a person could enter into an agreement of any kind based on a handshake and his honor and would never dream of violating that agreement. For a client nation to God to function properly the people must function based on their personal Honor and Integrity above all else and this is what is sorely lacking in the United States of America today.

The unfortunate fact is that the things which most believers think are part of Christianity are in fact not at all accurate. Since all believers are members of the Royal Family of God the Royal Family Honor Code is the basis by which believers must live and have contact with each other and respect the life, volitional expressions, privacy and property of all individuals involved and thereby function as a Local Church or other Christian body. Motivation for this function is from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Metabolized Bible Doctrine of the word of God in the soul of the believer. The

Filling of God the Holy Spirit is easy to come by with the regular use of the **rebound procedure**. Metabolized Bible Doctrine amassed into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is, however, much more difficult to accumulate. This concept, although particularly pertinent to the believer, also applies to the unbeliever who must accumulate and saturate his thinking with the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution in order to function in life with honor and integrity.

Essentials & Possibilities in Life

In the client nation to God, people who think or say that some things are impossible are people who are ignorant of the real possibilities of life. All potentialities of life are either possible or impossible to the extent to which the person is ignorant of Bible Doctrine, the Gospel of Christ, the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions. It is knowledge of these Doctrines which gives capacity for life, love and blessing and without capacity everything in life, all the Non-Essentials are meaningless even if a person possesses all of them. Having or not having Capacity for all that one possesses is what makes the difference in life and God will never give the believer blessing until he has capacity for it. Capacity is Essential for possessing all things in life and when the believer has it God will provide more than the individual can even imagine for him; these are the potentialities and possibilities of life. This is specifically applicable to the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ but also to the collective of citizens in a client nation to God. The nation who falls into the degeneracy of Arrogance and the apostasy of Reversionism by rejection of the laws of God for protecting and preserving the Human Race detailed in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions LACKS CAPACITY FOR BLESSING FROM GOD and therefore blessing is either not forthcoming or if present, removed. (**Postulates of Divine Integrity**) ALL THINGS are possible when one has capacity for life and as a believer or as a client nation each is directly responsible to the Justice of God and God would never be unfair to give anything without the resident capacity to enjoy it. For the believer the function of the Royal Family Honor Code combines with the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and makes all things possible as a result of developing capacity for all things. Therefore, the Royal Family Honor Code brings to the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ capacity for life, love, leadership, blessing in every category, etc., just as understanding and functioning under the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution does for both believer and unbeliever in the client nation.

Essentials & Harmonious Living

It is not always possible to live in harmony with all people because some do not live under the principles of the Royal Family Honor Code or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. When this is not possible in the local church other principles must be applied ranging from separation to excommunication. Believers and also unbelievers must separate from those who violate privacy, interfere with volitional free will decisions and are not personal intimate friends. In every case for every kind of group including businesses when people disrupt the group they must be excommunicated from the group. In the local church, as long as individuals do not intrude on the privacy of others, as long as they remain under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine, they have a right to attend services in order to take in Bible Doctrine. In objectively thinking about self, believers inevitably must recognize that every person has an Old Sin Nature and often they can definitely know for sure at least that others have one. It is the believer's responsibility to control his own Old Sin Nature and always leave others to the control of theirs in privacy. For a believer to do his part in

obeying the command to live in harmony it is Essential for him to consistently use the rebound procedure in order to continue to be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and be able to take in Bible Doctrine. For the unbeliever it is imperative that he live under the freedom principle of "Live and let Live" and preserve the privacy of others by functioning with honor and integrity toward them at all times. This results in the believer living under the Royal Family Honor Code where loving the brethren means having a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward all believers and freedom from all Mental Attitude and Verbal Sins toward other believers. This also results in the unbeliever living under the guidance and protection of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions with honor and integrity and capacity for all possibilities in life. Those who are guilty of persistent mental and verbal sins toward others can never comply with the Royal Family Honor Code nor the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and this inevitably causes them to persistently stick their noses into other people's business violating their privacy and the principle of living in harmony. Therefore, in proper perspective, the concept of "Loving the brethren" is a synonym for "living in harmony" as believers and also unbelievers in the client nation to God.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility vs Inflexibility and Liberalism

Liberalism today is NOT what liberalism used to be considered. Liberalism used to be the open minded nature and the ability of individuals to allow others to have their own ideas and live their own lives while considering their viewpoints though not necessarily agreeing with them. Liberalism today is always total flexibility about the Essential and total inflexibility about the Non-Essentials in life. Liberalism today totally rejects the Laws of Divine Establishment Essentials and accepts such things as homosexuality, welfare functions, government interference in business, inordinate taxation, peace through pacifism, destruction of the military, and DEFUNDING OF LAW ENFORCEMENT (which is not working out too will in the big liberal cities in 2021). In this 21st century "liberalism" is better termed "radicalism" and here for a better understanding will be referred to as "radical liberalism". Abraham Lincoln was just this way and he said once that he believed that it is acceptable to bend the Constitution a little and he was totally flexible about the Essential of the United States Constitution and the FOUNDATION for our Nation. His calling of 50,000 volunteers to coerce the southern states to give up slavery was just the beginning. His so called freeing of slaves has resulted in every person in this country being enslaved by a huge uncontrollable federal government. Along with this his finding federal funds with which to bribe the state of Indiana so that they would stay in the union were demonstrations of his 'bending' of the constitution which we continue to pay for to this very day. His precedent of doing this with federal funds was picked up by Franklin Roosevelt and we are not the same nation we were between 1776 and 1850 not even 100 years. Today the use of tax payers money to buy international friendship and to appease the low life worthless scum on welfare is a prime example of the destructive nature of radical liberalism and its flexibility regarding Essentials as found in the Laws of Divine Establishment.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials vs Non-Essentials Regarding Evil

Precursor to Evil

As with all doctrinal information which I have learned and am now trying to compile into categorical documents I want this explanation of Evil to make sense and reflect accurately what God the Holy Spirit would have it say. Evil in the same fashion as Grace is a difficult and complex category of thinking to understand and explain because there are many false concepts and stigma involving it based on the use of the word in improper settings. Most people equate VERY VERY BAD things with Evil. This is not always the case. So from a doctrinal perspective I will try to give MY UNDERSTANDING of what Evil should mean to the believer. Therefore understand that the majority of my understanding of Evil has come from the teaching ministry of Col. R. B. Thieme Jr., and that I have tried to present this topic in a totally logical and understandable way. In this I may fail in that my concepts of Evil may be in error. Had I the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and the ability to analyze the passages in the bible using Exegesis, Isogogics and then Categorization this might have been avoided. We as humans have a limited ability to understand spiritual phenomenon and in the analysis and presentation of doctrinal concepts every man who has had a communication gift has made errors. I don't apologize for these when I have caused them to exist but simply have asked for guidance from God the Holy Spirit and for him to guide the reader to the truth. If there are concepts here with which you the reader disagree then KEEP ON STUDYING AND KEEP ON BEING MOTIVATED FOR CONSTANT PERCEPTION OF Bible Doctrine SO THAT YOU CAN FIND THE TRUTH.

Origins of Evil

Evil MUST have a definition to make it comprehensible to man. Therefore the overriding question should be WHAT IS Evil? This cannot and must not be an esoteric mystical definition but something logical and rational to fit with the principles of Bible Doctrine. God is logical, rational, reasonable, unchanging and absolute TRUTH, therefore principles of the Spiritual Life must also be so. According to the bible, Evil is the Plan and Policy originally initiated by Lucifer Son of the Morning derived from and motivated by his supreme **Arrogance**. Considering Evil and ARROGANCE the question is what came first the chicken or the egg? I would postulate that these 2 failures of Lucifer were most likely simultaneous in their occurrence. Arrogance may have occurred first and from it immediately developed this plan to be able to take the place of God. However, I don't think this is an overriding issue in understanding Evil. This plan and policy was established by Satan to act as a guide for controlling and ruling the angelic creation in place of God and subsequently also the Human Race when his appeal to avoid condemnation to the Lake of Fire in the Trail of the Angelic Conflict was granted by God. The arrogance of Satan in his saying, "I will be like the most High", drove his thinking to produce this plan and policy to rule angelic creation, as it were, the fallen angels, and subsequently human creation. We can speculate that he may have had a thought one day while roaming the throne room of God such as: "I can do this just as good as God can; and I would do it by setting up this and that and the other thing". So in my view of Evil as the plan of Satan is completely integrated with Arrogance and it really does not matter which came first because Evil is the plan and Arrogance is the underlying base for it.

This plan and the policy of Satan are NOT ACTIONS but principles upon which actions are based as with any plan or policy. The introduction to this plan and policy of Satan occurs early in the book of

Genesis when it details the prohibition which God gave to Adam, Ish, and eventually his wife Ishah. God gave to them everything in the garden some things for food some for pleasure and had only one restriction for them. (**Gen 2:9**) He specifically prohibited them partaking of the "fruit" of the Tree of the Knowledge of 'Good and Evil'. (**Gen 2:16-17**) We find in this proclamation and prohibition Evil as the plan of Satan and 'GOOD' as the functions originating from that plan. The idea of Lucifer was to set up a system of providing what was 'GOOD' for those he intended to rule IN PLACE OF WHATEVER GOD WOULD DO FOR THEM. We can call this 'GOOD' when its production is motivated in the Human Race from Evil as 'Human Good'. It can then be distinguish from the production motivated in the believer from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer called Divine Good. Therefore Evil is the plan and policy encompassing the thoughts and motivation to produce 'GOOD' in that plan.

Evil in Human History

Although Lucifer is an incredible super genius he is NOT omniscient and therefore most likely did not foresee the development of SIN as a result of the fall of man in the garden and certainly cannot control it. In both the Angelic and Human Race Evil is therefore thinking and motivation, and in the Human Race it drives the Old Sin Nature to PRODUCE Human Good, Sin and/or Crime. Human Good is the desired function of Evil in the plan of Satan. Crime is man's violation of laws set up under the Laws of Divine Establishment causing him to thwart God's Plan of protection for the Human Race. Sin is the result of the genetic Old Sin Nature influencing the volition of the soul to violate the mandates of God. Crime is considered here because proper Law and Order and systems of correct Jurisprudence in the Human Race are based on the doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions developed and put in place by God himself and defined in part under the Decalogue as violations of Freedom and very often as Sin. Sin itself is a violation of the "rules, plan, purpose, or policy" of God, a transgression of the standards of God, and is the result of the area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature becoming active under the influence of and motivation from Evil in the thinking and as a result dominating the soul of man. This is most likely something which Satan had not anticipated in initiating the fall of man. Therefore this unforeseen development of the genetic Old Sin Nature in man resulted in ramifications in the Human Race which Satan did not want and cannot control. Anything done against the proper implementation of the Laws of Divine Establishment or Divine Institutions can be, SINFUL, CRIMINAL or HUMAN GOOD functions. All of these FUNCTIONS or ACTIONS occur as a result of the distorted thoughtful motivation ie. Evil.

SIN is not an issue in the existence of mankind as a result of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross. Therefore, Personal SIN is not an issue in the judgment of man ONLY his attitude toward Christ. SIN is an inconsequential made so ONLY by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ thus continuing the purpose of mankind's existence to CHOOSE the Plan of God vs the Plan of Satan. Man must be free to express his positive volition toward Bible Doctrine, the mind or thinking of Christ, and negative volition toward sin after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through the use of the rebound procedure, both based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross. In addition, and by this means, he is able to express his volition in rejection, separation and divorcement from human good and Evil as Christ did on the cross. This is a rejection of the plan, policy and production from Satan, Human Good and Evil, and acceptance and adherence to the plan, policy and production from God, Divine Good and Grace. This takes maximum

Metabolized Bible Doctrine for the believer to accomplish experientially so that the believer's consistent positive volition toward doctrine develops divine viewpoint thinking which insulates him from and rejects Evil. This is the Essential of post-salvation epistemological rehabilitation requiring a daily consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine that must go on and on in order that the believer might be able to resist Evil.

When anyone commits a sin, he has become the promoter of the devil and his plan of Evil. (**1John 3:8**) The old sin nature is the source of temptation however human volition or free will choice which is motivated by Evil is THE ONLY SOURCE OF SIN. Decisions to sin are from the influence of Evil, from the Cosmic Dynaspheres, so that without the use of the rebound procedure this puts the believer immediately into the apostasy of reversionism, making him the AGENT or promoter of the devil. Satan seeks to frustrate the Plan of God and Will of God with every believer by causing him to begin to think according to his plan and policy, Evil, and independently of God and his plan and policy, Grace. This sets up a chain reaction regarding what he thinks, (**Eph 4:13-15**); where he is located, (**1Thes 2:18**); and what he does. (**James 4:7-8**). He especially seeks to keep believers from functioning under the momentum of the Divine Dynasphere, where they can learn and apply Bible Doctrine. Satan also seeks to destroy the believer's focus so that he gets his eyes on other people, on himself (in self-pity), or on material things, and thinks God's Provision of Logistical Grace is not sufficient.

It is vitally important to understand that Evil as the plan of Satan was to focus on GOOD as a production for those he wanted to rule but that Evil also was directed at GOD in order to frustrate and defeat his plan and thereby avoid the judgment of condemnation to the Lake of Fire. Satan's focus on destructive, disastrous and devastating means of frustrating the Plan of God is <u>not directed toward mankind</u> but toward God and when God indwells man in this church age after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God then he becomes also a target for the full wrath of Satan. The creation of man by God was for the explicit purpose of demonstrating that the Love of God always functions with the Justice of God and Righteousness of God and in fact that no part of the Essence of God can ever function independently of any other part. Man was put on the earth with the volitional characteristics of the angelic creation in order for him to decide for or against the Grace plan of God under the Love of God vs the Evil plan of Satan. This was presented to man in the garden as a prohibition clearly stated but without further elucidation against partaking of the "FRUIT" (clearly the Perception or Understanding) of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Man did not need to understand Good and Evil, this knowledge of the plan and policy of Satan is equivalent to (gr) GNOSIS knowledge used of doctrine which is USELESS KNOWLEDGE not able to be used for any application but simply UNDERSTOOD. There was no need for "USELESS" knowledge in order for Adam and Ishah to function in the Plan of God under the Love of God where everything was provided each day for their existence and they had the Tree of Lives to enable them to appreciate these provisions. The Deception of Ishah by Lucifer followed her unquestionable fall into arrogance as a result of her rejection of the authority of Adam, Bible Doctrine and Christ Himself. Her decision and the subsequent decision of Adam to partake of the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil resulted in the development of the genetic distortion in man we call the "Sin Nature" and their inevitable spiritual death which led subsequently to the Spiritual Death of all of mankind. The act of using fig leaves for clothing by Adam and Ishah in the garden was the

production from Evil of Human Good in their attempt to reconcile their nakedness with the morality required in the Evil plan of Satan. The existence of the "Old" (inferring the origin from the first of mankind) Sin Nature with its area of weakness results in the motivation or temptation for the production of personal sin which GOD can have nothing to do with. This took man in the garden, Adam and Ishah, out from under the Love of God and placed them under the condemnation of the Righteousness of God and judgment from the Justice of God. Therefore to demonstrate that the Love of God worked always with the Justice of God and Righteousness of God, God provided a means to eliminate all personal sin from the picture of choices in the appeal of the Angelic Conflict. This was to occur as a result of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for all human sin. SIN therefore though it occurs and is motivated by the influence of the Evil policy of Satan in one way or another becomes a non-issue in the Angelic Conflict appeal. The issue is now and always has been and always will be choosing for the Grace plan of God by making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone or the Evil plan of Satan by rejecting Christ and following the Cosmic Dynasphere systems of the policy of Satan to rule this world. By expressing Faith alone in Christ alone the unbeliever puts himself by means of his free will choice into the Grace plan of God. By rejecting Christ he freely puts himself directly into the Evil plan and policy of Satan under the 2 Cosmic Dynaspheres of Arrogance and Hatred. Grace as the plan and policy of God is a system of thinking which must saturate the soul of the believer as he advances in the Plan of God. Evil as the plan and policy of Satan will saturate the soul of the unbeliever and at times the believer who rejects the Grace system of God.

Involvement with Evil

Believers have a command from God regarding Evil, a mandate to avoid Evil. (**Rom 12:21**) The believer advancing in the Spiritual Life from constant, consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine will not be influenced by Evil. However, if the believer is not advancing in the Spiritual Life under the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** of Bible Doctrine he WILL come under the direct influence of Evil constantly since it is the system by which the entire world functions. Evil is the thinking or policy which resulted from a distortion of all Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Evil distorts law and order as establishment functions, substituting crime. Therefore, Evil is the process of thinking and motivation for accomplishing results outside the Plan of God in this life. Advocating the violent overthrow of government in revolution, considering self a conscientious objector and avoiding military service, cheating on income taxes are all violations of the principles found in Bible Doctrine and under the Laws of Divine Establishment and are all motivated by Evil. Advocating for socialism or communism or giving away American land to Indians, Alaskans, Panamanians or any other conquered groups are again violations of Bible Doctrine principles under the Laws of Divine Establishment. Opposing and seeking to undermine the authority of pastors involves activities motivated by Evil in the thinking. The motivating factors of Evil produce also altruistic humanitarianism, philanthropy, religion, legalism, reversionism, socialism, political internationalism, distortion of the law, bribery in government, cutting down the military, gun legislation, sociology, public welfare, the common good, the United Nations, the government trying to abolish sickness, mental illness, economic problems, social and personal frustrations, and human difficulties by legislation and human solutions, social action, the social gospel, restriction of human freedom for the greater good, the distortion of law to solve social and economic problems, the interference of government in economics, business and free enterprise, setting restrictive social and business

regulations, legislating product requirements, government mandated quotas, legislation to restrict self defense in any way, and catering to minorities. For the Individual stealing property or opposing the police are violations of the law thus sin and crime and these along with being anti-military are violations of the Laws of Divine Establishment principles all motivated by Evil. One of the greatest of all systems under Evil is RELIGION. Religion is an institutionalized system of Evil thinking and policy designed to distract the individual from the reality of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith ALONE in The Lord Jesus, The Christ ALONE. Religious legalism with the apostasy of reversionism produce some of the greatest manifestations of Evil. Believers or unbelievers involved and participating in any form of religion are therefore promoting Evil. In this status quo the believer is in spiritual blindness, thinking they are doing "GOOD" but being involved in the apostasy of reversionism are under Black Out of the Soul and therefore never able to come to a knowledge of the truth and not comprehending that their production of "human good" is simply promoting the plan and policy of Satan, Evil. This is the Cosmic Dynasphere degeneration resulting in Crime, Sin, and Human Good. (**Prov 12:20-21**, **Ps 23:4**, **Gen 50:20**, **48:16**)

It is Essential to understand that Evil is designed to produce a situation in the Human Race which will bring about the pseudo millennium of perfect environment before the 2nd advent of Christ can do so. This is "GOOD" for man but not the solution for man. However under the Plan of God, He has made certain "promises" to Israel and to oppose these Satan has used some very destructive and disastrous means under the Evil plan to prevent their fulfillment. Therefore, the issue in the Christian Way of Life for every believer is Grace Oriented thought versus Evil Oriented thought which determines the motivation for the production of either Divine Good or Human Good, Sin or Crime. Bible Doctrine and Establishment Principles invariably came first, being from the mind of God in Eternity Past BEFORE any creation occurred. Evil came from or along with the arrogant thinking of Satan in opposition to God. Saturation of the soul with Bible Doctrine results in the Divine Viewpoint thinking and with sufficient spiritual growth production motivated therefrom of Divine Good. Saturation of the soul with Evil results in the Human Viewpoint thinking and the production therefrom of Human Good, Sin, or Crime. Sin as the result of the fall of man and being unforeseen by Satan in his attempt to rule mankind and override the Plan of God simply clouds the issue of the purpose of the creation of man. Sin is a stumbling block for man because God cannot have anything to do with it. Therefore, The Lord Jesus, The Christ agreed to come to the earth as true humanity, perfect in every way and be judged for all human sin. This makes sin inconsequential in the Plan of God and purpose for mankind in the Angelic Conflict. The choice for man has always been and still is between the Plan of God and plan of Satan, Grace vs Evil. Therefore, for humans, recovery from sin is instantaneous through either Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or after salvation by the use of the rebound procedure detailed by **1John 1:9**. However, recovery from the influence of Evil takes a prolonged time even when it occurs after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God requiring extensive and consistent post-salvation epistemological rehabilitation, the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. For the unbeliever this would entail thorough inculcation, understanding and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

Essential of Avoiding Evil

All believers both those advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and those sliding down into reversionism will be subject, on a day to day basis, to a great deal of Evil for this is the

policy of Satan as ruler of this world. As Evil accomplishes its ends in the name of 'GOOD', and even though we will face all sorts of opposition from Evil, God will make it all divine good for the believer who is consistent in his Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God. Ultimately those involved in Evil will be broken with death or severe Divine Discipline. (**Ps 37:16-19**; **Ps 91:10**; **Ps 97:10**; **Ps 119:101**) Therefore, the more Bible Doctrine that resides in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the more the believer will advance toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the greater his appreciation of and function under the Divine Institutions, the Laws of Divine Establishment and Freedom. (**Ps 121:7**; **Prov 1:33**; **Prov 2:10-14**; **Prov 3:7**) No matter how great the saturation of Evil is in any period of human history in historical or national disaster that Evil will leave the positive believer **UNTOUCHED** as a result of his consistent intake of Bible Doctrine. However, Believers under the apostasy of reversionism with consistent Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine will be filled with Evil. (**Prov 5:13-14**) The issue for the believer is whether he is influenced by Evil with its Degeneracy of Arrogance and Apostasy of Reversionism or by Grace with the Absolute truth of Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. If by Bible Doctrine he will fulfill the principles of **Rom 12:1**. (**Prov 11:18-19**; **Prov 14:22**; **Prov 15:3**; **Prov 16:6**; **Prov 22:3**) Believers therefore have a choice in the Spiritual Life so that the difference between being wise or being stupid is the cognizance or ignorance of Bible Doctrine. (**Prov 24:1-4**)

Believers involved with and influenced by Evil always advocate violence and always gossip and judge. This is the warning regarding Evil and the only solution to Evil is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. (**Ps 54:5**) It is Evil which distorts the Plan of God, (**Ps 38:19-20**, **Ps 52:1**, **1Cor 15:33**) therefore, reversionists are always influenced by Evil. (**Ps 36:1-4**) There is severe Divine Discipline for those who become involved with the Evil of the social gospel. (**Is 5:20**) Also, Evil has obviously motivated the function of the governmental systems of the United States and the people in it for many decades. This confuses many people and especially the Christians who meet in the United States congress and ask for wisdom during morning prayer. Many of these are however radical liberals in their thinking who are systematically destroying this nation. These believers in our government need to spend time in learning Bible Doctrine even simply the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and rescind the laws which are eroding the nation's freedoms and which have been inspired by Evil. Conspiracy and revolution are always Evil and the true answer to these radical liberals is not conspiracy nor revolution but entrance into and function in the Plan of God. (**Ps 64:4-5**) Under the pressures of Evil radical liberal governmental policies, normal sweet people suddenly get angry and want to change things by violence because they are disappointed by the president or congress and want to use violence to solve the problems these people are creating. Neither violence nor conspiracy is the answer because this always destroys authority and the underlying system of authority and in effect freedom for everyone. (**Ps 34:21**, **Prov 24:19-20**)

Evil is Self Destructive

Believers must never have anxiety or worry because of Evil and its production and never spend time being concerned about it because they must be aware of the fact that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History. Many of the men in the military do this because the government is using the army for social experimentation instead of using it to fight and destroy communism and islam today. For many decades the most Evil thing we have had in our nation has been the media, the 4th

estate, who all consider themselves muckrakers and exposers of everything. Believers cannot be agitated ever by the Evil, apostasy and degeneracy in our nation and must not be used by their revulsion of these things because they must know that The Lord will control Human History and does so in part through mature believers. All the men who have been in power in the United States of America under the influence of great Evil and following Evil policies for distorting our constitution will have their lamp put out but it must not be by any believers. (**Ps 35:12**. **35:26-27**)

Evil Seeks to Build Happiness on Another's Unhappiness

First and foremost the dogmatic principle is that NO ONE can build their happiness on another's unhappiness. This can be avoided if the believer continues to focus his advance in the Spiritual Life through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God then results in Divine Good production and Christian service to the best of his ability. Understanding that the Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History, the believer in any governmental office, functioning in a way which is compatible with any policy setup there, is performing his proper function. Believers and Unbelievers both MUST wake up to recognize that The Lord has given mankind the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions to protect the Human Race from the Evil of the plan and policy of Satan, and above all else, that God does judge Evil. (**Ps 34:16**, **Is 13:11**)

Evil is Inevitably Related to Arrogance

Satan's thinking started the Angelic Conflict with Arrogance when he proclaimed, "I will be like the most High". From this he developed a systematic programmatic plan to oppose God called Evil. In the Plan of Satan a policy was required for that plan to function and it was termed in genesis as Good and Evil presented to the original humans as the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil which they in fact had no use for. In this plan of Satan Evil as a policy, thinking and motivation is impressed on mankind through the system involving the Cosmic Dynaspheres of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Hatred. As a result Arrogance in humanity is simply the SYSTEM derived from Evil by which Satan keeps the individual functioning in his world. His SYSTEM is designed to distract believers by involvement with the myriad of arrogance potentials in life and to provide them with locked in negative volition toward Bible Doctrine as a part of the apostasy of reversionism. Therefore, in the plan of Satan Evil is the policy and good is the production of that policy IN PART. Unfortunately Evil has been given the connotation of a being with red skin, horns and a tail when in fact it is very far from this illusion. When creatures follow Evil or the plan and policy of Satan their thinking is influenced by this plan and policy and this then is involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres of the **Interlocking System of Arrogance** and Interlocking System of Hatred. Evil is the motivation and thinking of the person who is consistently involved in the Cosmic Dynasphere systems. In spite of Evil The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History. (**Prov 16:3-4**) The Lord uses Evil and people influenced by Evil to accomplish his purpose. Believers who ignore the principles of **Rom 13** can expect to be destroyed by the great Divine Discipline of the Sin Unto Death.

Evil Does Not Understand Grace Functions

Every person has a right to think, say and do what they want with their own property especially under free enterprise, and a business owner has a right to do with his own capital what he wants. (**Matt 20:15**) Therefore, no labor group nor any governmental agency has any right to interfere as

long as the business is not involved in criminal functions. This is function under the Laws of Divine Establishment. **Grace** as the plan and policy of God has provided a system by which man is able to reestablish his relationship with God and advance in the Spiritual Life to spend eternity with God. Grace provides for mankind all things which he cannot ever earn nor deserve based totally on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross to eliminate the stumbling block of Human Sin in the Angelic Conflict. Grace is the plan by which GOD deals with man on the basis of WHO and WHAT GOD IS never based on who or what man is or does. Evil always promotes the thinking that in order to receive anything in life man must EARN or DESERVE it in some way therefore as a distortion of Grace, Evil says that man must constantly seek methods to prove himself worthy of God.

Evil is a Principle

War and disease are not Evil. (**Jer 28:8**) War itself is not Evil but can contain or be motivated by it just as disease in itself is not Evil but can contain or be motivated by Evil. JUST Warfare is very often the means of maintaining freedom and is honorable and the fact that Evil does occur in war does not change the fact that Evil occurs also both on and off the battlefields. Disease is not Evil in itself but causing disease for an individual's or nation's gain is motivated by Evil thinking and planning. This is the development and deployment of the CCP Wuhan Virus of 2019. Evil must be distinguished from sin because sin can be motivated by Evil or by other Old Sin Nature temptations. It is important to remember that God has nothing to do with sin and Satan did not perceive that in causing the fall of man the Old Sin Nature would be developed in man with an area of weakness which would produce the temptations to sin. Sin is transgressions of the "rules or mandates of God" and Satan overlooked the potential for mankind to sin because of his involvement in his own Mental Attitude Sins and Arrogance blinded him to the potential for it in man. Therefore in his plan and policy to rule man he simply overlooked sin but God provided the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross to make sin a non-issue in the Angelic Conflict so that the issue would always be choosing for the Grace Plan of God vs the Evil Plan of Satan.

Evil is Thought Which Motivates Action

In an honorable judicial system under the Laws of Divine Establishment the worst thing a judge can do is take a bribe because the Evil which motivates this distorts the law and destroys him as well as the country itself. These men are motivated by Evil and say it is really not there and as a result have rationalized Evil and thus destroyed self. (**Matt 15:9**, **Amos 5:14**) Believers must understand Evil and its functions and they slip up here when they fail to see the principal vs the functions of the principle. Evil which motivates corruption in the police or military does not demand removal of either institution. We must distinguish between the principle of Evil which motivates or causes the malfunction of the person in the office and the principle and function of the office or position. This is evident and obvious in what has been occurring in the executive, legislation and judicial functions of our current governmental body vs the principles of our governmental system. The failures of the people in government which are motivated by Evil does not change the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions for proper individual and collective actions. Failure of a person or group who are under a system of principles involved in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions does not mandate that we change the system to something motivated or designed by Evil such as socialism. Corruption in free enterprise practices does not change the principle that our blessing and freedom are related to free enterprise and not socialism or its

welfare functions. Even though Evil causes sin in the person in leadership, and often that Evil spreads to others because of the sin of the one, this does not make the principle of the necessity for leadership invalid. Evil must be understood and explained because a great deal of Evil is mistaken for "GOOD" especially where socialism or religion prevails. People often wait for good and when Evil comes they think this was their good, when in fact, as a result of being involved in reversionism, it was part of their Divine Discipline. (**1Chron 21:17**)

Good for the Unbeliever

All human good is the application or production of Evil to experience. However, the unbeliever, functioning under the Laws of Divine Establishment derived from Bible Doctrine, can also produce "good" of value. When a maximum number of citizens in a nation produce this Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions related and motivated "good" even though and especially if they are unbelievers, God blesses the Client Nation for functioning under the Grace plan, motivated by the Grace doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. However, when that relative "good", even from adherence to God's Laws of Divine Establishment or Divine Institutions is motivated by Evil the client nation falls under extreme divine discipline because God's Grace plan is rejected for Satan's Evil plan and purpose. Therefore, the domination of legitimate "good" in the client nation motivated by the Bible Doctrine principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions determines its historical prosperity, while the domination of Evil determines its historical judgment. (**Prov 12:20**; **Ps 34:16**)

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials & The Jew

It is imperative to understand that Jews are GOD'S chosen people even today and no individual, group or nation has any right to interfere with how GOD deals with them. This does not mean however, that the Jew must not be judged but that he must not be judged BASED ON HIS RACE. The Jews like every other gentile race must be judged based on their character and orientation to the Plan of God. In other words, Jews like Marx and Engels the originators of the communist principles can be judged as degenerate apostate individuals to be avoided or held responsible under the law just as Hitler and Stalin. It is not the prerogative of any group or individual to assume responsibility for disciplining the Jews THAT is ONLY God's prerogative.

Essentials of Client Nation Survival vs Antisemitism

It is Essential that any client nation to God in this Church Age provide a haven and give equal rights to Jews and ensure that antisemitism never rears its head in that nation. Antisemitism is like a grenade with the pin out waiting to be released and explode and it is the quickest way to destroy any nation while on the other hand, Prosemitism is the quickest way to have prosperity and blessing in a client nation. The United States has failed in many areas but the one thing which we have not failed in is providing an equal opportunity haven for Jews, however, today, once again, as it was under the Obama administration, the country is on the verge of total failure based partly on the rise of antisemitism. In this nation as long as we maintain the principle of prosemitism we have a slim chance of surviving the HOLOCAUST of world communist conquest which is knocking at our door

today. The average person who becomes antisemitic has no education beyond high school and has had no understanding of history yet has decided that the world's problems can be blamed on the Jews. The greatest of tragedies in our nation's history have occurred when allegedly strong politically conservative people have become antisemitic and embraced the concepts of Jewish conspiracy theories. Today's radical liberals have been at least initially prosemitic, whatever else they were confused about, and this is what has made it possible for the radical liberals to be in power in government for so long because they avoided the great Evil of antisemitism. In considering the status of radical liberals today this may be changing in the 21st century as exemplified by Obama bowing to Arab rulers and failing to support Jewish interests in the middle east. Education is not really an answer for anything in life but when people talk antisemitism it shows that they are stupid and academically incompetent and to say that any one group of people are responsible for the world's troubles is to be a certifiable idiot. The Jews are not responsible for anyone's problems and in fact were designed by God to provide great blessing for the people of the world. This has been demonstrated in this client nation where the United States has had the greatest prosperity and standard of living in the world as a result of having provided a home and haven for the dispersed of Israel.

Essential of the Righteousness of God & Eternal Heritage

Generally speaking individually and as a race and Jews are very intelligent but are blind to the reality of spiritual regeneration being Essential for inheriting through the line of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and they cannot enter into that inheritance based only on the genetics of their physical birth. The blindness is seen in their failure to understand that there is no physical ability or talent or relationship which can give you an eternal heritage. Since the Jews as a race originated as a result of the receipt of Eternal Life by Abraham they thereby have an eternal heritage based on God's unconditional promises to Abraham, therefore, regeneration as a result of making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is the only way the promises of God can come to the Jews. In other words, these unconditional promises can only be imputed to the Absolute Righteousness in the Jew in time and only to the Resurrection Body in eternity, both which require Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, for the Jew, just like any other human being, to have Absolute Righteousness in time and a Resurrection Body in eternity he must be born again or regenerated at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith ALONE in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone AS HE IS REVEALED DURING THAT DISPENSATION. The real Jew at any point in the Age of Israel at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God receives what is needed for blessing in time and fulfillment of the divine promises of God to Israel in eternity, namely the imputation of the Righteousness of God and Eternal Life. Just like every human being ever to live, a Jew must accept the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for all human sin on the cross to reach Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone. This, and only this, is what results in the one Essential factor being imputed to him, the judicial imputation of the Righteousness of God, as to each and every new believer. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, God the Holy Spirit is responsible for regeneration of the individual by providing him with a new Human Spirit to which Eternal Life is then also imputed. This is being "BORN AGAIN". This is Essential for blessing from God and thus distinguishes the genetically racial Jew from true Jew in the pattern of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. Without Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God there can be no imputation of the Righteousness of God and no imputation of Eternal Life and these are the prerequisites for a Jew receiving the fulfillment of the unconditional promises of the Abrahamic, Palestinian, Davidic, and

New covenants. Therefore, clearly "Racial" Jews are not qualified while regenerate Jews are perfectly qualified with Absolute Righteousness and Eternal Life. In all cases in all human beings, possessing God's Absolute Righteousness is Essential for receiving imputation from the Justice of God of temporal blessings. Logically therefore, Eternal Life is Essential for imputation from the Justice of God of eternal blessings. This regeneration of the Jews must occur in any part of the Age of Israel, in the Old Testament Scripture times or in the tribulation. Regeneration of the Jews in the Church Age results in the Jew becoming the Royal Family of God and no longer a Jew just as every now Jewish believer is no longer gentile.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Essentials vs Non-Essentials & The Mosaic Law

The Mosaic Law has deficiencies and is limited in its design and function but also has specifics and tells us, what to eat and not, what is crime and not, how to function under jurisprudence, and defines crime in terms of freedom and is specific in these areas and therefore is an Essential. The Mosaic Law is limited in its design and function but forbids those things which intrude on the life, privacy, property and free volition of others. The issue for the believer as a member of the Royal Family of God and a Royal Priest is "live and let live" with regard to the privacy of others in the Royal Priesthood. The principles of impersonal love or tolerance fulfill the deficiencies of the law's negative commands and permit toleration. Within the realm of the factors which it covers the law is totally intolerant and is made up of a series of negative commands which are extremely important. The law, though not designed to be tolerant, is holy, just and good along with being totally intolerant. The Mosaic Law is therefore specific but believers must also deal with **non-specifics** and Non-Essentials. Since there are specifics in life and non-specifics the non-specifics fulfill the law where the specifics cannot. Some specific examples include Murder, Adultery, Stealing, Lying, Coveting where these are sins as well as crimes. However, the Mosaic Law deals both in negative specifics and positive specifics as well but even when these are fulfilled our function in the Christian Way of Life has not been completed.

Brotherly Love, ie. Impersonal Love for Mankind, is toleration of the opinions of other's regarding Non-Essentials and having respect for the imputed Righteousness of God in other believers who may be totally different than we are. The Church Age believer fulfills the Mosaic Law with Impersonal Love for Mankind and respect for the privacy of and Righteousness of God in all other believers even when they have different opinions from his. People who only try to keep the specifics of the Mosaic Law are legalistic, self righteous bullies with regard to keeping the specific functions under the law. As part of the Royal Family of God functioning under the **Royal Family Honor Code**, believers must have Impersonal Love for Mankind and thus toleration for all things in life which are NOT IN ANY WAY Essential to our function in life under bible doctrinal principles. This principle is extremely important since much of the punishment which came to and is continuing regarding Israel has come because the Jews zealously kept the law but did not respect the opinions of others with regard to Non-Essentials of life as per Bible Doctrine. The believer must never become inflexible about Non-Essentials. However, believers must remain totally inflexible when it comes to Essential doctrine and totally reject false doctrine. (**Rom 13:7-**)

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Flexibility, Inflexibility & DEATH

The Royal Family Honor Code is the only system which makes dying part of living. Most individuals, when they are told that they are dying, give up and fall apart and get upset and hysterical about their losses. They do this when they discover that they have a fatal disease and know that they only have a shortened perceivable time to live. The idea of loss becomes very real to them and they change their pattern of living and enter all sorts of varied activities and attempts to stave off the inevitable death. This is human and normal but not a part of the Royal Family Honor Code and not part of the Christian Way of Life. As far as the Royal Family Honor Code is concerned **dying is part of living**. Therefore, under the principles of the Christian Way of Life, Life is composed of 2 aspects, the Living part and the Dying part. The **Royal Family Honor Code** assigns dying to life and under the principle of achieving Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and being in the status of Super Grace, dying is to be a greater blessing to the believer than all his living up to that time. The believer MUST recognize that dying is always part of living and should not be assigned simply to removal from this life. Dying is therefore the greatest issue for and test of the function of the Royal Family Honor Code. Dying is used by Satan to induce the strongest levels of FEAR into people in order to DISTRACT them from living and functioning in the Christian Way of Life as believers. When a person is prepared for death by making Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as a result of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul they can handle all the problems of dying and have the greatest blessing in all of their life.

Essentials of Dying

Momentum in the Spiritual Life is the primary issue and no matter the problems one faces the farther one advances in the Spiritual Life the greater are going to be the blessings in dying. Every person, every believer dies for himself under the principle that no matter who is around him or how sympathetic they may be he ALONE dies. Mature Believers inevitably come to realize:

> "When we live we live as unto the Lord, so also when we die under Dying Grace provisions, we die for the Lord, so not only if we live but also if we die and our life is over, WE ARE THE LORD'S".

Believers die for the Lord in the Plan of God to glorify God and this will be the greatest happiness in the life of the mature believer. DEATH can occur at any time and any place in any manner, however, under whatever conditions we may die it will be glorious and wonderful under the timing and sovereignty of God.

> "Even though I walk through a valley overshadowed by DEATH, I cannot, I will not and I do not FEAR anything about the time, place or manner of my death, BECAUSE YOU ARE WITH ME!"

Believers can have a glorious death in any situation and the only Essential thing is spiritual momentum from persistence in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. For the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, the relationship and connection between Super Grace in life and Surpassing Grace in eternity is found in Dying Grace. (**Heb 11:13**) From the distance of Dying Grace blessings men can salute and women embrace their future blessings of eternity. Dying is the time when the believer has no use for all his

accumulated property knowing he cannot take it with him into eternity. Dying is the time when priorities become very lucid and clear and Bible Doctrine must be first. Dying is a time when the person does not have to and should not look back on life but only forward to the imputation of blessings which will glorify God for eternity. (**Job 5:19-27**) The Lord will deliver during death and from its fear and violence will never be a cause for FEAR of death and if the Lord decides to take the believer out in some horrendous violent way it will be the greatest blessing of his life. *There is absolutely and unequivocally NO power, might or violence of this earth, NO weapon nor instrument of death nor dangerous animal which can take the believer out of this life UNTIL the Lord calls for him*. Once the Lord calls the believer to eternity all the power, science and money of the world cannot keep him here. The death of the believer is timed perfectly under the Plan of God and He will take each believer in His timing and never on theirs. Application of the Royal Family Honor Code is such that under this code believers live life as unto the Lord and die as unto the Lord to be with the Lord forever. Whether the believer dies the Sin Unto Death or under Dying Grace he dies under the timing of the Lord and to glorify the Lord.

One of the greatest blessings to be found in the dying phase of life for the mature believer is that the materialistic things of this life become very unimportant and the realities of Eternal Life become very important. Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ carries the mature believer in the dying phase of life so that they can have greater happiness in dying than in living. The unbeliever is opposite to this and can have his great happiness in living and dying is a nightmare for him having no hope for nor understanding of what awaits him in eternity. Dying, for the believer who has been living properly, is the greatest blessing in life because capacity for life from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul carries from capacity for living right on into capacity for dying and ultimately into capacity for life in eternity. In the biological human body the believer was born with he carrys as a believer Soul Life in the soul and Eternal Life in the Human Spirit. In physical death our Soul and Human Spirit both are liberated from this limited physical body and taken to be face to face with the Lord to be given an unlimited body. The departure from this life should not be a problem for the believer but it is the time logged prior to that departure which is the issue and therefore how the believer has lived up to the time of his departure which is of maximum importance. It is the EFFECTIVE USE of the time provided in life which makes the departure from this life the blessing it is designed to be. Under the Royal Family Honor Code DYING is part of LIVING but the believer will not and cannot know this unless he has used his time in life to accumulate a maximum level of the mind or thinking of Christ, Bible Doctrine, into his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

The Believer's Status Quo in Dying

Dying is therefore obviously a part of living so that when the Lord chooses to take the believer out of this life in whatever way he sees fit, that believer still has one day at a time to live in dying and has the same Lord, same Logistical Grace support, same Bible Doctrine, same capacity for life, same happiness and same blessing and NOTHING CHANGES. Dying for the believer who has lived and functioned under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine is the greatest demonstration in world of the dynamics of Bible Doctrine and the Grace provisions of God. The principle is that right thinking produces right motivation and right motivation produces right action in both the living and dying phase of the believer's life. The whole dynamic of Christianity is in what the believer THINKS, the inevitable result of Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in the Stream of Consciousness of

the Soul from proper use of time in life. Whether in the living phase or dying phase the Lord has no intention of withdrawing his support for the believer who remains under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine. Therefore, after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Bible Doctrine is the issue so that:

- Positive Volition == Advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and to Dying Grace.
- Negative Volition == Advance through the 8 Stages of the Apostasy of Reversionism to the misery of the Sin Unto Death.

It is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which gives capacity for every aspect of life including and especially DEATH. Therefore the concluding principle of the Royal Family Honor Code is most important and believers must understand the principles in living the Christian Way of Life as a normal life. However, very often when people find out they are going to die within the span of their comprehensible future, their life dramatically changes into a different life of hysteria, panic, trying to reconcile their problems and completely psychologically falling apart not being able to handle the knowledge of their impending death. It is interesting to consider that maybe this is why God takes the believer only in HIS time and not the believer's time. When a believer receives the news that he is dying in some near future time he should in effect take this information with a grain of salt BECAUSE his death WILL STILL ONLY OCCUR IN GOD'S PERFECT TIME for him. I knew a fantastic lady who was told she was going to die in 6 months from metastatic breast cancer. She did inevitably die from this disease but it was not for 6 more YEARS and her life and witness for the Lord in that time was absolutely incredible. There should be no difference in the living and dying phase of life when there is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Believers MUST understand that at the end of the dying phase of our physical temporal life that there will be no more sorrow, no more tears, no more pains and NO MORE DEATH. Believers who die will instantly be absent from the physical human body and face to face with the Lord and will be in a perfect state of happiness in a temporary body waiting for the distribution of the new Resurrection Body which is to occur at the rapture of the church, the Royal Family of God, and this new body will enable us to live forever in the presence of the Lord.

Essential vs Non-Essential Problem of Dying

The problem for believers may not be in living but in DYING, in his spending time dying of some disease, going through the long wait to die so that after he is bed ridden with disease for a while friends depart and will not be standing by to either commiserate or support him. The biggest problem for most believers is that in living there are always people around, friends and loved ones, but dying is a "do it yourself" system and no matter who is dying or when or where he is dying, he will do all the dying ALONE. In living we go places and do things with other people with whom we are compatible doing the things that are enjoyable. WHEN DYING the individual is TOTALLY ALONE no matter who or how many are there with him. This is what the mature believer has prepared for all of his life and is the purpose of having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Even when people die together, in groups, ALL STILL DIE ALONE, based on that which is resident in the individuals soul, which is what determines HOW THEY DIE. Dying alone with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine is something the believer can do alone without ever having one bit of self pity, feeling sorry for self or feeling slighted in life because of loss of material things or that someone will not come to see him die. No one can provide instruction or help

regarding how to do it, for each and every person alive in all of history dies alone in their own prescribed time and manner and therefore, it is the GREATEST TEST IN LIFE and is an integral part of living the Christian Way of Life. Each of the believers in the "honor role" of the Royal Family Honor Code in the salutations of Paul all eventually died alone. In the process of dying all individuals will have a sense of being totally alone and doing it totally alone, but the mature believer must remember **Psalm 23:4, He is with me**.

Essentials for Blessing in Death

Regarding Dying, HOW one actually does it is actually what determines their true Status Quo as a believer. When the believer dies with Bible Doctrine and under Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ it is a greater blessing than any thing ever was in life. There is no greater experience in life than the death of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God whether it takes minutes, hours, days, or years or however long; it is in fact designed to be the greatest blessing in that believer's life. Death is the ultimate demonstration of the functional dynamics of Bible Doctrine in a believers life. Many people die as cowards in panic, screaming, falling apart mentally, dying without dignity or courage because they have no inner resources in their soul with which to die. The aristocracy of France proved the necessity for having soul resources in the french revolution by dying with poise and moral courage so that they were truly aristocracy in their meeting with the Guillotine. Therefore the ultimate secret to dying is also the secret to living and if the believer can figure out how to die before he dies then he also knows how to live while he is living. The secret to living is found in what one thinks and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the Essential for the thinking of every believer therefore it is what goes on in the privacy of soul which is what is MOST important in living and also for dying. If the believer has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his soul he will have a great life and he will understand that Undeserved Suffering, received as he advances to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, is just a tune up for dying. The means of the believer's handling of Undeserved Suffering is the key to both his living and his dying. Undeserved Suffering is a marvelous thing when one knows he does not deserve it and handles it with the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and knows clearly that this is a dry run for dying.

When people turn against the believer he should never feel sorry for himself and become bitter, thinking that Bible Doctrine does not work and that people are no good (which unfortunately is more true than not). If the believer can be shocked by what people do he is not ready to Die because he does not have enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is the necessity for believers to understand that his time in life and the provision of logistical support is so that he can use the time to consistently prepare for DYING by Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Believers must get to a point in life of never being shocked by what people do because if they are shocked by people and what they do, they will panic if they find out they are going to die. Bible Doctrine clearly shows us that people are no damned good, every person has an Old Sin Nature and each person finds unique ways to use it to his advantage and to the detriment of those around him. The very doctrines which ultimately make the believer shock proof and where by he has perfect peace and blessing in Undeserved Suffering and which carry him in those situations will then also carry him in the best situation of all DYING. When a believer discovers his death is imminent he should thank God he is dying alone so that since his dying has become a reality he can hook it up with Bible Doctrine and revel in the greatest blessing in life.

Therefore, in both life and in death, it is the dynamics of thinking Bible Doctrine which is always the issue.

Essentials in Preparation for Death

Most believers are not ready to die NOT because they have not used their time in life to gain what is needed to prepare for death. They are not interested enough in Bible Doctrine nor think that Bible Doctrine has any importance to their life. These are the believers who inevitably flunk the minimal Undeserved Suffering tests which occur in their pathetic attempts to move ahead in the Spiritual Life. They flunk these small increments of testing and could never pass the big undeserved suffering which occurs at the level of Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace B status quo. People can live a very long time in ill health and not have any terminal disease and they moan and complain about their problems which changes their whole personality. These have no Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and have been flighty people all their life feeling and emoting their way through life. Strong, weak, good or bad emotion will never carry anyone when they are dying. People who are now DEAD and face to face with the Lord and who died well are ones who have found the greatest blessing in life during their dying. Therefore, death is part of the reality of life which demands both the greatest flexibility and inflexibility. During the process of dying there must be total Inflexibility about Bible Doctrine and absolute total flexibility about how one will leave this life while maintaining character, poise, honor and integrity. The greatest thing about life and dying is that no one knows how the Lord will take them out of this life, however, all believers should know that however He plans to do it He will give each believer enough days for the intake of Bible Doctrine so that each can be properly prepared. However, the use of these days is totally dependent on the volition of the individual believer and some use them wisely for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and some do not. With regard to these principles the Royal Family Honor Code has a peak found in **Phil 1:20-21**.

When the believer is dying he must concentrate on Bible Doctrine and must remember the 3rd HOPE of the equation of HOPE, particularly that upon his death after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he will receive from God for eternity blessing beyond comprehension. In addition he must focus on the 2nd HOPE hope of blessing in time which includes dying grace as the ultimate blessing of life. For each believer in dying he dies as he has lived when he has accumulated maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Believers, especially when dying, must have ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE in their eternal future as mature believers because there is only one way to avoid disgrace in dying and that is having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and to use it, relying on it for strength and orientation. This is the one thing each individual believer will do completely alone, because enjoying all aspects of life including dying, during life's final stages, believers must have the doctrine to exalt The Lord Jesus, The Christ in his dying. In living life and in dying as part of life the believer cannot function based on the Bible Doctrine found in someone else's soul. When the believer comes to the point of his life being a situation focused on Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then dying as part of life becomes incredible profit or gain and this gain is better than anything he has had before in life. Dying as the end of life is designed to be, and for the mature believer must be, the ultimate in life and it is tragic that this is not always so. Any believer who dies the Sin Unto

Death is at the low point of their living but the ultimate achievement in life is to die well under dying grace and adherence to the Royal Family Honor Code makes this a reality.

Essentials of Christian Death

Dying in disaster or violence such as in warfare shall not bring fear in any way to the believer under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine because of this manner of death. (**Ps 23:4**) The attitude of the believer must be that if there is nothing worth living for then certainly there is nothing worth dying for AND IF, and it is true, there IS something is worth living for then it is certainly worth dying for. Believers who have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with a completed Edification Complex of the Soul laugh at violent death and economic disaster because of the inner resources they have from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul. From bombing, artillery, ballistic missiles or from any other advanced weapon systems these believers have nothing to fear. The Lord has a time for each believer to die and take them home and until that time comes the believer will be here and nothing can remove him whether it is modern sophisticated or conventional weapon or disease and the greatest antagonism, hatred and danger in which one can imagine living cannot touch him until God's plan calls him home. Nothing can take the believer from this life until the Plan of God calls for him to be removed and this might occur during his Youth or during his extreme Old Age. In His total fairness if the Lord takes a believer in his youth he will have had enough time to take in the Essentials of Bible Doctrine to make his dying the best part of living. If God gives the believer a longer life then he will always have enough time to accumulate the Metabolized Bible Doctrine necessary to die with great blessing and happiness. IF A BELIEVER'S DEATH IS NOT OF THIS NATURE IT IS BECAUSE HE HAS PLACED HIMSELF UNDER NEGATIVE VOLITION TO BIBLE DOCTRINE AND PERSONALLY CHOSE TO ENTER THE APOSTASY OF REVERSIONISM.

The overriding principle for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God who has used his time on earth well, under the Plan of God is that dying as part of living is a part of the last blessing God can bring to him in time and it is designed to be phenomenal. In warfare, many times many men die in terrible situations, and in life in general some die in situations with people all around them; however, no matter the time or situation each person enters his own death shadowed valley completely alone. Some will die pitifully and some will die honorably because of the level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that doctrine becomes that which is worth living for and thus available for dying with. However, in every case, wherever and whenever the mature believer dies it is always the will, plan and purpose of God for him to come through dying with honor and blessing under dying grace. Those who cannot come through dying in an honorable way cannot do so because they have been casual about Bible Doctrine or have totally rejected it. With a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is nothing more honorable or greater in life and there can be no greater blessing in life than what is provided under Dying Grace and it demonstrates the incredible dynamics of the soul filled with Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Therefore, clearly and unequivocally, Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is what makes life worth living and what is worth dying for. One cannot ignore the Plan of God, whether believer or unbeliever, and God invented dying just as he invented life for the Human Race. Those who do not really live life will have a hell of a time in dying since they do not have the inner resources of Metabolized Bible

Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to die with. By rejecting or ignoring Bible Doctrine these people all miss the boat on why they are alive and forget that the one who gave them life at birth will also provide them the doctrine they need for living and dying. The concise summary of the Christian Way of Life is "YOU WILL KNOW" in **2Cor 5:1+5-8**, that you are absent from the body and face to face with the Lord. When the soul and spirit are absent from the body you will no longer have your current empirical sensory systems but you will KNOW!

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Passages:

1Chron 21:17; and David replied to God, is it not I who ordered the numbering of the people, indeed I am the one who has sinned and I have done evil, in doing evil I have caused evil, But these sheep what have they done. Let thy hand, I pray thee, O LORD my God, be against me and against my father's house; but let not the plague be upon thy people."

1Cor 2:9-16; But just as it stands Written (Is 64:4), or to use the language of Old Testament Scripture, "Things which Eye has not seen nor ear has heard (empiricism) nor things which have not entered into the Right Lobe of man (rationalism) all the things which God has prepared for those who Love him (Advanced Believers in Reciprocal Love for God) these have not entered their Right Lobes for to us, the God has revealed them (His plans) to us by means of or through the instrumentality of God the Holy Spirit, for the Spirit searches or investigates all things even the Deep things from God. For who among men or mankind inherently knows or understands the thoughts, motives, memories, deliberations or reflections of a man or all mankind except by means of the spirit of rationalism or empiricism which is in man, even so the thoughts of God no unbeliever knows except the spirit of God or God the Holy Spirit. Now we have not received or do not receive the source and seat of human discernment or the cosmic spirit but the Human spirit or divine source of discernment from the source of God, that we might have inherent and permanent knowledge of the things (Bible Doctrine) having been freely or graciously given to us under the authority of God. Which divine wisdom or spiritual phenomenon things or Bible Doctrine we also speak or teach or communicate by categories, not in words or categories taught by human wisdom, but in words or categories that are taught by or from the source of God the Holy Spirit; explaining or combining with the Human Spirit to teach, spiritual things or phenomena or doctrine to a spiritual apparatus or spiritual persons. But the natural or Soul-ish man or unbeliever (dichotomous) does not grasp or acquire or receive knowledge of the spiritual phenomenon or things or doctrine of or from the Spirit of God, to him they are foolishness or absurd to him, furthermore he is not able to learn or acquire or obtain knowledge of the spiritual phenomenon or the gospel, because they are discerned, understood or perceived spiritually or from the source of God the Holy Spirit. But he that is spiritual the believer with the Grace Apparatus for Perception, appraises or

investigates or evaluates 'The all things' of Bible Doctrine, yet he, himself is judged or evaluated of or by no man, living according to Bible Doctrine. For, Who has known the thinking of the Lord that we should instruct him, (NO ONE) but we keep on having the thinking of Christ.

1Cor 3:11-12; For no man can lay any foundation ever again, other than the one which already is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any one keeps on building upon this foundation: gold {Divine Good}, silver {Divine Good}, precious stones {Divine Good}, wood {human good}, hay {energy of the flesh}, stubble or straw {human good}.

1Cor 3:13-14; Every or each man's work or production shall become manifest obvious or evident for the ONE (1) day of the rapture or resurrection of the church at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which shall declare, reveal or show it, because the day shall receive revealing, be uncovered, in, with or by means of fire. And, the fire shall test the quality of every man's production. If any believer's work or production which he has built upon the foundation in time remains or stands up having been built on the function of the 3 Spiritual Skills, and it will, he shall receive a reward of conveyance of escrow Surpassing Grace Blessings for Eternity.

1Cor 3:15; If any believer's work or production shall be burned, and it is, he shall suffer loss of Escrow Surpassing Blessings and Reward for Eternity, But he himself shall be saved yet so as through fire.

1Cor 3:16; Do you not KNOW that your body keeps on being the temple of God and that the Spirit of God keeps on dwelling or cohabiting in you?

1Cor 5:10-11; Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters for then must you need to go out into the world. But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a BROTHER be: a fornicator, or covetous {lust motivated}, or an idolater {religious activity}, or a railer {gossip, malinger}, or a drunkard, or an extortioner ; with such a one ; do not have fellowship {idiom - literally is 'no not to eat'}.

1Cor 6:9-10; Do you not know that the unbeliever {does not have the imputed righteousness of Christ} shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived! Neither fornicators {in phallic cult}, nor idolaters {extremely religious judges}, nor adulterers {outside of phallic cult sex}, nor homosexual, nor abusers of themselves with mankind {another Greek word for a type of homosexual or pedophile}, nor thieves {these judges could be bought}, nor covetous, nor alcoholics, nor revilers {abusive type}, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

1Cor 7:2-4; because of fornication. Let every man have his own woman and let every woman have her own man. Let the man render unto the woman due benevolence, and likewise also the woman unto the man. The woman has not power of her own body, but

the man {has power over her body}. And, likewise also the man has not power of his own body, but the woman.

1Cor 7:9; But if they cannot control their libido, let them marry. For it is better to marry than to burn {with sexual desire}.

1Cor 8:4-8; As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice to idols. We know that an idol is nothing in the sphere of the world, and no one is God but One. For even if there be those being called 'gods' - and there are – whether in heaven or in earth (as there be gods many and lords many). But to us there is ONE GOD the Father from Whom are The all things {the designer of the divine plan} and, we related to Him through Christ and ONE LORD Jesus Christ through the instrumentality of Whom are all things {Jesus created the universe and all in it according to the plan of the Father} and we by Him. How be it there is not in every man 'that knowledge'? For some with conscience toward the idol unto this hour eat it as a thing offered unto an idol and their conscience always being weak is contaminated. But meat commends us not to God. For neither, if we eat are we the better. Neither, if we eat not, are we the worse.

1Cor 8:7; How be it there is not in every man 'that knowledge'? For some with conscience toward the idol unto this hour eat it as a thing offered unto an idol and their conscience always being weak is contaminated.

1Cor 11:31; And if we keep on judging ourselves rightly or accurately (1John 1:9) and nothing else, but we (Corinthians) are not and should be, we will not receive judgment from the Justice of God.

1Cor 15:33; Be not deceived, the communication of evil doctrine from friends corrupts establishment principles; or Evil companions corrupt good morals.

1Cor 16:15-16; Now brethren, you know the household of Steph'anas that they were the first converts in Acha'ia or Greece in Corinth, and they are addicted to the ministry of the saints; I urge you to be in subjection to or subordinate yourself to such a family of spiritual leaders, and to every fellow worker and laborer.

1John 1:9; If we Believers would acknowledge, admit, name, cite, confess our personal Post salvation sins, maybe we will and maybe we will not; He, GOD the Father, always keeps on being Faithful or dependable and Justified or Righteous, with the result that he might (If we will do this he WILL ALWAYS) forgive, cancel, pardon us the sins and cleanse or purify us from all unknown wrongdoing or wickedness or unrighteousness

1John 2:2
v2: And he, himself, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, is the propitiation or satisfaction for God, a substitute for our, Believer's, sins, and not a substitute for ours only but also a substitute for those sins of the entire world.

1John 2:15-17; Stop loving the Cosmic Dynaspheres or anything in the Cosmic Dynasphere, if anyone (Believer in the Cosmic Dynasphere) keeps loving the Cosmic Dynaspheres the love from the Father as Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal Love for Mankind is not in him because all that is in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Lust from the flesh the Old Sin Nature, lust from the eyes the mentality of the soul and the arrogant pattern of life in Cosmic Dynasphere residence and function, is not from the Father but from the Cosmic Dynaspheres. In fact the Cosmic Dynasphere is passing away along with its lusts, but anyone who executes the will of God, keeps residing or abiding forever in the Divine Dynasphere.

1John 2:27; and as for you the anointing of the indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit which you received from him abides in you, and you have no need for any one to teach you; as his anointing teaches you about all things by taking the Bible Doctrine you perceive and makes it a reality in life, and is true, and is no lie, just as it has taught you, abide in him.

1John 3:8; When any Believer commits a sin he has become the Agent of the devil (from the devil) for the devil has sinned from the beginning, for this reason the son of God was revealed or appeared, (1st Advent) that he might destroy, void, nullify the works of the devil.

1John 3:17; Moreover IF anyone has worldly wealth, and he observes or perceives that his fellow Believer is destitute or in extreme poverty, and he has NO compassion for him, How can this love from God (Impersonal Love) be residing in Him

1John 5:14-15; In fact this is the confidence which we have toward Him, that if we ask anything according to his will we know he hears us, In fact when we know that he hears us whatever we ourselves might or may have asked we know that we obtain the requests which we have asked from him.

1Kings 3:24-26; And the king, Solomon, said, "Bring me a sword." So a sword was brought before the king. And the king said, "Divide the living child in two, and give half to the one, and half to the other." Then the woman whose son was the living child said to the king, because her emotions yearned for her son, "Oh, my lord, give her the living child, and by no means slay it." But the other said, "It shall be neither mine nor yours; divide it."

1Kings 19:17-18; And it shall come to pass that the one who escapes from the sword of Haz'ael the syrian civil ruler shall Jehu the Israeli civil ruler put to death through Law Enforcement; and him who escapes from the sword of Jehu the civil ruler shall Eli'sha cause divine judgment in the Sin Unto Death. Furthermore I will leave seven thousand in Israel, all that have not bowed a knee to Ba'al, and every mouth that has not kissed him by engaging in all the aspects of the phalic cult."

1Pet 1:1-3; Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To the exiles of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappado'cia, Asia, and Bithyn'ia, who are elected According to the foreknowledge of God the Father and sanctified by God the Holy Spirit for obedience ot the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, may the grace and peace be multiplied to you for your very own benefit. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who through his great mercy (Grace in action) has caused us to be born again to a living confidence through the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ from the Dead.

1Pet 1:5; WE who are kept or protected by the power of God through Faith in salvation as Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, ready to be revealed in the last times.

1Pet 1:17; And if you address as father the one who impartially judges according to each mans work, conduct yourselves in fear or approach therefore in respect, during the time of your stay on this earth.

1Pet 2:3
v3: If you have tasted of the GRACE of God AND YOU HAVE

1Pet 2:13-14; Subordinate yourselves for the Lord's sake to every human institution, whether to a king as supreme, or to a governor as sent by him for punishment of those who do evil and recognition of those who do good.

1Pet 3:14; But if (4th Class) you also should suffer persecution because of (Dikaiosune), fulfillment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Ultra Super-Grace, I wish you had but you have not up to now, Happinesses or the blessings of Ultra Super-Grace would belong to you; now do not fear their intimidation, that of the opposition of evil, and definitely do not be worried.

1Pet 3:18; For Christ also, once and for all, died once in judgement having suffered for all, as a substitute for our sins, the righteous just one as a substitute for the unrighteous unjust ones, in order that he might bring us to face to face with God, on the one hand, having been put to physical death in the flesh (After Spiritual Death), but on the other hand having received Life by means of God the Holy Spirit.

1Pet 4:12-14; Beloved Ones stop being shocked by maximum pressure among you for your testing, as though some strange things were happening to you, but to the degree that you share the sufferings of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Ultra Super-Grace, you keep on having and sharing the happinesses of God in order that you also in the revealing of his glory, You might receive intense happiness with intense happiness which is the reward of Ultra Super-Grace, If you receive insult upon insult in the name of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, and you do in Ultra Super-Grace, happinesses is to you as an Ultra Super-Grace believer, because the spirit of glory even God the Holy Spirit refreshes you.

1Pet 5:1-3; So I exhort the elders among you, as a fellow elder and a witness of the sufferings of Christ as well as a partaker in the glory that is to be revealed. Tend the flock of God that is your charge, not by constraint but willingly, not for shameful gain but eagerly, not as domineering over those in your charge but being examples to the flock.

1Pet 5:4; (Addressed to the Pastor Teacher of the Local Church) And when the chief Shepherd is appears you will receive the unfading wreath or crown of glory.

1Thes 2:13-17; For this cause we also thank God constantly or without ceasing for the good followup, because when you received, welcomed or responded to the word of God at a point of time, which you heard from us, you accepted or received it it not as the word of men or Human Viewpoint but as what it really is, the Divine Viewpoint of The word of God, the thinking of Christ, which is effectively at work also in you as believers. For you believers, became followers or imitators of the churches of God elsewhere who faced these things (and failed) which are in Judea in Christ Jesus; for you suffered the same things from your own countrymen as they did from the hands of the Jews, who killed both the Lord Jesus and the prophets, and persecuted us, and displease God and oppose all men in the name of religion. Having forbidden us speaking to the Gentiles that they may be saved, and they keep filling up and getting drunk on their own cup of sins of persecution, torture and destruction. For the Wrath of God's has come upon them at last! But we brother believers were bereaved at having to leave in person from you for a short time, but not in heart or mind longing to be with you every minute, we endeavored the more abundantly to see you face to face with great desire;

1Thes 2:18; Wherefore we could have come to you, even I, Paul, once again but Satan hindered us.

1Thes 2:19-20; For what is our confidence, HOPE 3 of confident assurance or expectation, confident anticipation of seeing the people we have witnessed to in eternity, or our Happiness, or wreath or crown of exaltation or rejoicing, are not even you in the presence of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ where rewards will be imputed to your Resurrection Body, or our esprit De Corps or Wreath or Happiness or Rejoicing, Is it not even you the Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace believer the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in the presence of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the rapture. Ya'all, Even every one of YOU are our glory and happiness.

1Thes 4:1; Finally, brethren, we beseech and exhort you in the Lord Jesus, that as you learned from us how you ought to live and to please God, just as you are doing, you do so more and more.

1Thes 5:1; But, in contrast to 1Thes 4, concerning the times, when Gentiles dominate Jerusalem from Nebecannezar to the 2nd advent of Christ and the seasons specifically

the Church Age, brothers in the Royal Family of God, you have no need that I write anything to you.

1Thes 5:12; But we keep on asking you believers in the Royal Family of God, to KNOW from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, those Pastor Teachers who diligently labor to the point of exhaustion among you and both are benefited by their having charge or authority over you in the lord leading from in front of you, and admonish or put good sense in where there is bad sense and give you instruction via Bible Doctrine teaching.

1Thes 5:18; (Command) YOU In everything or all kinds of things give thanks and Do NOT display lack of Gratitude for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.

1Thes 5:19 (Lack of correct application of Bible Doctrine); (Command) YOU habitually Stop Quenching, Squelching, Hindering, Thwarting, Dampening or Suppressing God the Holy Spirit, get out of His Way!

1Tim 1:5; The object of teaching Bible Doctrine is tolerance and respect for Absolute Righteousness in other believers, from a pure Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and from a good conscience based on the doctrines of the equation of hope the Plan of God for our life without hypocrisy of false norms and standards.

1Tim 1:14; Moreover the grace of our Lord was exceedingly abundant or had super abounded with doctrine and associated with Category I love, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, which is in Christ Jesus.

1Tim 1:19; Be having and holding or Keeping the Bible Doctrine in the Human Spirit and Soul and keeping a good conscience which some Believers have rejected or repudiated and suffered shipwreck with regard to Bible Doctrine (cut the happiness from God out of your life)

1Tim 2:5-6; For you see, there is One God in Essence, and one mediator, umpire or arbitrator between God and Mankind, Unique man Christ Jesus. The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Who having given himself in exchange as a redemptive ransom from the slave market of sin, a substitute on behalf of everyone; His, God the Father's, testimony to be given in his own times or dispensations, OR at the proper time of Gospel Hearing.

1Tim 3:9; With a pure conscience be having and holding the mystery even doctrine.

1Tim 4:1-2; But that Same God the Holy Spirit who explicitly communicates or teaches that in latter periods of Time (Between the Advents), some Believers failed and will become apostate from Bible Doctrine paying attention to, concentrating on false teachers or Deceitful Spirits and Doctrines of Demons. By means of hypocrisy from the source of human liars sealed in their own conscience and with a branding iron of evil

(Scar Tissue of the Soul) precedence from the humility of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to the dispensation of the Hypostatic Union.

1Tim 5:14; Therefore, after careful deliberation it is MY, Paul's, command decision that the younger widows, not qualified for Local Church charity and with their own problems of libido, marry to get under the authority of a strong husband, have children, administer or manage their households as mistress of the Home, and give no or not one opportunity to the enemy, Satan himself, to abuse or reproach GRACE.

1Tim 5:18; For the Old Testament Scripture eternal absolutely or dogmatically says (Deut 25:4, 1Cor 9:9), "You shall not muzzle an aggressive hard working BULL while he is threshing," also, (Deut 24:15, Luke 10:7) "The workman labor is worthy, having fulfilled the standards of the job, of his wages."

1Tim 6:18-19; but, beginning in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under Super Grace and continuing through maturity, keep on being a producer of intrinsic or Divine Good, in order that you might be rich in Divine Good production, in honorable deeds, to be generous with love, manners, money, all things related to capacity for life, and liberal in giving of money. Therefore continually accumulating and storing up treasures of Surpassing Grace for eternity from Status Quo Spiritual Maturity under Super Grace, for themselves an honorable foundation for the future, in order that they may seize, take hold of the blessings of Surpassing Grace of what is really life.

2 Chron 21:7; Yet The Lord was not willing to destroy the house of David because of the Covenant he made with the house of David and since he had promised to give a lamp to him and to his sons forever.

2Cor 1:2; Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2Cor 3:17; Now God is the Spirit (Deity of God the Holy Spirit) and where the Spirit of God is (Indwelling God the Holy Spirit) there is Freedom (Spiritual Freedom)

2Cor 4:2; We have renounced disgraceful, underhanded things, the things hidden because of shame, the apostasy, false doctrine and evil, not walking in craftiness nor adulterating the word of God, but by the unveiling of Bible Doctrine commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.

2Cor 5:1+5-8; FOR WE KNOW that if the earthly tent our human body we live in is destroyed in physical death, we have a building from God in the Resurrection Body, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. Now He who has prepared us for this very purpose is God, who has given us God the Holy Spirit as a guarantee or down payment. Therefore being always confident or of good or Great courage, and KKNOWING that while we are at home in this body (living NOW), we are absent from the Lord, but when we die, then we are absent from the body and Face to Face with the Lord. Therefore We walk by means of Bible Doctrine, Faith and Not by Sight (this is the

way we must live and is stage 1 of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories).) Therefore we keep on having confidence are of good courage, and take mental delight in the fact rather to be absent from the body and at home, face to face with the Lord.

2Cor 5:10; For we must all appear before the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, that each one may be evaluated or recompensed for his deeds or accomplishments through the temporal body according to or face to face with what he has accomplished in advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, whether it is valuable Divine Good or worthless Human Good.

2Cor 9:8; For God is able (omnipotence) to make all Grace abound to you, that always having all sufficiency (temporal security) in everything you may have an abundance (super grace blessing) for every good function.

2Cor 10:5; Attacking assaulting and demolishing Cosmic Dynasphere thoughts of thinking Human Viewpoint and Human Good and every obstacle of subjective arrogant or proud thought which attacks the objective that is the objective knowledge of God in Divine Viewpoint, and making a prisoner every Cosmic Dynasphere or Human Viewpoint thought to the authority of Christ,

2Cor 10:8; For even if I boast a little too much of our authority, which the Lord gave for building you up and not for destroying you, I shall not be put to shame.

2Kings 18:14-16; Then Hezekiah the king of Judah sent to the King of assyria at Lechish and said "I have done you a wrong, withdraw from me again, whatever tribute you impose upon me I will pay you off". So the king of Assyria imposed on Hezekiah king of Judah, 300 talents of Silver and 30 talents of Gold (millions of Dollars of tribute). Therefore Hezekiah gave him all the silver which was found in the house of the Lord and the treasury of the kings palace. At that time Hezekiah mutilated the doors of the temple of the lord and the pillars which Hezekiah the king had plated with Gold, and gave all of these things to the king of Assyria.

2Pet 1:4;Through which things (Divine Dynasphere and virtue) he has given to us his precious and magnificent promises that by them you might become partners of the divine nature (virtue produced in the Divine Dynasphere), having escaped the corruption that is in the Cosmic Dynasphere by lust.

2Pet 1:12-21; Therefore or because of this, (shocks which came to Peter), I will always be ready (God uses prepared men), to keep on reminding you concerning these things (Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization, and Application of Epignosis Bible Doctrine) although you know them and having become mentally stabilized, or firmly supported, or sustained, by means of Bible Doctrine which has come to or is always with you. Moreover I consider it my duty, my solemn responsibility to the lord and those I teach, as long as I am in this body (tabernacle or TEMPORARY shelter of soul), to stir you up or turn you on, by means of repetition of doctrine. Because I know that

the laying aside of my tabernacle or human body (temporary residence for my soul) is imminent, just as our lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has made it clear to me. In fact (Peter recognizing he was going to die soon), I will always be diligent that you may have and hold the doctrine at any and all times after my death or departure, in order that you might remember these doctrines for application. (Peter shouted as he came into the congregation) For we have not followed cleverly invented myths when we made know to or taught you the Power of the coming of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ But when He (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the mount of transfiguration Matt 16:28) received from the immediate source of God the Father, Honor (humanity) and Glory (deity), and there came such a unique voice in this was carried or transmitted to Peter by his Majestic Glory of God the Father, "This is my beloved Son, with whom I am well pleased". Furthermore we (Peter James and John) heard this voice which was being transmitted or carried from Heaven, when we were with the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the holy mountain of God (mount of Transfiguration). And we keep on having and holding a more reliable prophetic doctrine. Regarding which doctrine, you do well or honorably to keep on giving attention as to a lamp shining in a dark place until the day dawns and the morning star arises in the right lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul. Know or Understand from study this, as a solution, first before dealing with any problems, that ALL prophecy of scripture DOES NOT originate or come into existence from one's personal or private explanation. For Prophecy or eschatology was never produced by the design, will, scheme or purpose of mankind, but holy men of God (human authors) communicated or expressed themselves in writing, as they were being carried along by God the Holy Spirit

2Pet 3:18; But keep on growing in the sphere of grace and knowledge of our lord and savior Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, To Him, God, Be the Glory, both now and to the Day of Eternity.

2Sam 7:8-16; Now therefore so shall you say to my servant David, `Thus says Jehovah of the Armies, I, myself, and only I seized you from the pasture where the sheep eat and sleep and defecate, from *following behind* the sheep, that you should be noble honorable prince ruler over my people Israel; and I have been with you wherever you went or marched, and have destroyed or annihilated all your enemies from before you; and I will manufacture or build out of grace for you a great name of celebrityship, like the fame of the great ones of the earth. Also I will appoint a geographic place (Palestinian covenant) for my people Israel, and will plant Israel at the 2nd advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, in order that Israel may dwell or sit under it prosperity in a place of his own, and be disturbed no more by invasion or the 5th cycle of discipline; because the sons of perversion involved in and influenced by reversionism, legalism, antisemitism, liberalism, all evil satanic policies, and violent men shall never again oppress them, as formerly, Even from the day that I ordered or commanded the judges to be over my people Israel; even from the time I have caused a prosperous peaceful interlude under David to you from all your enemies. Therefore Jehovah has made a formal proclamation to you that a dynasty Jehovah will manufacture for you forever. And it shall come to pass when your days are complete and you lie down with your

fathers, I will cause to raise up your descendant (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) after you, who shall come forth from your genetic line, and I will establish his kingdom. He, Solomon, the next king; shall build a house or temple for my person (Ex 40+ Millennial Temple), and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever. I will be like a father to him, and he will be like my son. When he becomes reversionistic, I will punish him with the rod of men the 4th cycle of discipline on the nation, and with the lashes of the sons of Adam the 5th cycle of discipline on the nation; But my grace or steadfast love shall never go away from him, David, as caused it to go away from Saul, whom I removed from before you. Both your dynasty or descendants and your kingdom of Israel, David, shall be established, durable, permanent or for ever before your face; your royal throne shall become established for ever.'"

2Sam 22:35-36; He, God trains my hands for battle, so that my arms can bend a bow of Bronze; You have also given me the Shield of your Salvation and your help makes me great.

2Thes 2:13; But we, believers of the Royal Family of God, are always obligated to give thanks, based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine, with reference to God concerning you, Royal Family of God Spiritually Mature believers, having been loved by the Lord, because The God the Father has elected you to privilege from eternity past with the result of or to eternal salvation, by means of the sanctification or set apartness from God the Holy Spirit whom we possess through indwelling and by means of belief in the truth or faith in gospel doctrine.

2Thes 3:6; Now we command you, mature Super Grace believers, in the name of our The Lord Jesus, The Christ , that, when it occurs in the future, you, yourself, separate or withdraw from every believer who constantly leads up to the present time, an undisciplined, disorderly, insubordinate pattern of life, rejecting authority of the communicator of Bible Doctrine and Bible Doctrine, not in accord with the tradition of constant Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to the tactical victory of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God doctrine that you received from the source of us through teaching or communication.

2Thes 3:14; And if anyone believer in the Royal Family of God, does not obey or subordinate themselves to our Bible Doctrine through this epistle letter, take special note of, mentally tag or evaluate this person for the purpose of avoiding, and do not associate nor make friends nor have any social relationship with that person in order that he may receive guilt or shame.

2Tim 1:3; I, Paul, keep on having GRACE by means of the instrumentality of OUR God, through whom I am absolutely serving under a system of grace, with a pure conscience, on account of my Super Grace Jewish ancestors who did, this is why I constantly keep having a memory concerning you, Timothy, constantly in my prayers, by day and by night.

2Tim 1:5-6; When I receive remembrances, When I remember or recall , (considering your (Timothy's) reversionism, recovery and Super Grace Status Quo and that your mother went through the same thing), the real or genuine high quality doctrine in you, which resident doctrine first resided in your grandmother Lo'is and also your mother Eunice now I have confidence or then I am confident, that it (doctrine) is also in you. Because of which cause, the spiritual heritage principle in history where every generation depends on, draws on, is blessed by its own spiritual heritage of Super Grace believers or LACK of them, for which reason, I continue to remind you, Timothy, that you fire up your life again and again or revive or rekindle the doctrinal communication gift of Pastor Teacher, from the source of God that is within you through the laying on of my hands;

2Tim 2:10; Because of this, For this reason, I, Paul, remain under pressure, endure all categories of suffering (2Cor 11:25-) because of the elect the Royal Family of God, in order that they may attain or acquire, by the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, THE God provided deliverance under pressure of Ultra Super-Grace which deliverance is provided for those who are in Christ Jesus along with eternal glory, Super Surpassing Grace blessings for eternity.

2Tim 3:5; religious, having from the past and continuing to hold to the external mold or form of Piety or Pseudo Godliness although they have denied, disregarded, renounced or repudiated the inner inherent power of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of that same experiential sanctification of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace, also be turning yourself away or avoid these reversionistic evangelists of evil.

2Tim 3:8-12; Moreover, just as or in the same manner or way as Jannes and Jambres who opposed or resisted Moses, so also these religious type reversionistic evangelistic apostles of evil on the wrong side of history antagonistic to believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace, who keep on opposing, resisting and rejecting, to their disadvantage, the truth of THE Bible Doctrine, hence they are men of depraved or corrupt mind or having been destroyed or corrupted in their mind, and worthless and disqualified with reference to the blessing, with regard to the body of Bible Doctrine, which they have rejected. But they, reversionistic evangelists of evil, will not advance one step nor make any progress further in their opposition for their lack of Common Sense understanding and judgment, madness, psychosis, total divorcement to reality, will be obviously evident to all their former admiring flattering contemporaries who are positive to Bible Doctrine as also that opposition of those men, Jannes and Jambres, those court magicians came to be. (Quick Reaction Response when one enters reversionism) But you having followed faithfully and closely with the mind, studying intensively for recovery from reversionism and advance into Super Grace moving toward Ultra Super Grace, MY doctrine, taught in presentation in public assembly as a mode of instruction of Bible Doctrine of the predetermined plan of God, MY guidance and instruction under self and academic discipline and MY presentation organization in preparation of lessons of the

body of doctrine, MY faithfulness and MY reliability, steadfastness, stability, endurance, patience, honesty, lack of Mental Attitude Sins, constancy, fidelity and affection to the Lord transcending all human failures, MY unshakable and immutable resolution in teaching the body of Bible Doctrine, my restraining from avenging wrongs toward self or the steadfast patient endurance of evil, MY Relaxed Mental Attitude and Impersonal Love for Mankind charity, MY ability to endure and remain relaxed under pressure of opposition and criticism and annoyance without giving up or succumbing to self pity. All persecutions including religious and satanic from the Wrong Side of History, and general undeserved sufferings such as or which came into existence or happened to me, Paul, during the 1st missionary journey at Antioch of Pasidia, At Ico'nium and At Lystra, such persecutions, the mantle of persecution for the Ultra Super Grace believer, which I underwent endured, bore, sustained under opposition and annoyance without giving up and succumbing to cowardice or self pity, and yet out from all of the categories of suffering and opposition the Lord God the Father, himself, snatched me out, rescued or delivered me from this difficult situation. Furthermore now also all Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers who keep desiring to continue living godly lives in Ultra Super Grace through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine resulting in a balance of residence in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, in Christ Jesus, WILL be pursued and suffer persecution by all satanic forces and systems for no reason.

2Tim 4:7-8; I have desperately fought with all my spiritual weapons in the campaign of the Angelic Conflict, that noble, honorable fight of combat, seizing and holding the high ground of Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace, I have finished, carried out or completed the race course of life in the past and not left anything unfinished and have no regrets of any kind, I have Guarded and retained therefore, preserved that which is believed, the inestimably valued Bible Doctrine resident in my Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, maintaining the High Ground of Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under Ultra-Super Grace. Beyond this time, in the future in Phase III of life, eternity, there is perpetually laid up, stored away, preserved or reserved for me, Paul, to my advantage, a decoration wreath or medal of that 'Dikaiosune' righteousness of fulfillment of every divine objective or statute for the Royal Family of God and total fulfillment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God spiritual progress to Super-Grace or onto Ultra Super-Grace to Dying Grace, which the Lord God Jesus, The Christ, the totally perfect, objective, incorruptible, divine, righteous, evaluator or judge knowing all the facts, will award to me on that day at the Judgment Seat of Christ and <u>not to me only but also to all those Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace believers</u> who have loved, with maximum category I Love, his appearance at the Exanastasis or rapture of the church, having Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in time.

Acts 1:8 (JC said this as he departed in his resurrection body); But You shall receive power when God the Holy Spirit has come upon you (power of the Spiritual Life) and you shall become my witnesses in all of Judea (southern kingdom) and Sumaria (Northern Kingdom) and even to the remotest parts of the Earth.

Acts 5:17-20; Then the high priest rose up; and all they that were with him (Sadducees - Ruling Class); and were filled with jealousy. And they seized the apostles violently (Beat them when they were arrested), and put them in the common prison. But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said, "GO FROM HERE, TAKE A STAND when you get there, and KEEP ON SPEAKING {until the issue is clear} in the temple to the people all the words of this life."

Acts 15:8; "And The God the Father who knows the thoughts and intents of the Right Lobe of our souls; bare witness, giving them God the Holy Spirit; even as He did unto us {Jews on the day of Pentecost}."

Acts 15:18; Says the Lord who does these things which are from old, or Known from the ultimate source of Eternity are all His works.

Acts 17:26-28; "And He {Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ} has made from the source of one {Adam} every nation {Divine Institution #4} of mankind for to live according to a norm or standard {4 Divine Institutions} on all the face of the earth, and has determined the dispensations or epochs of time before appointed or pre-designed planed periods of time, and the boundaries of their habitation or nations." "With the purpose that they should seek after The God using positive volition at God consciousness, if {4th class} perhaps they might grope in the dark after Him and find Him {gospel hearing}, I wish they were but they are not, and He exits not far from any one of us or within reach of any Positive volition." "For in Him {Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ} we are alive from the imputation of soul life, and move in our Biological life, and we ARE, as certain also of your own poets have said, 'For we also are His offspring or progeny.'"

Acts 24:16; "And in these things, do I exert myself to the utmost, to have always a conscience or norms and standards, void of offense or blame toward God, and toward men {obeying the Law of the Land} through all of this trial or procedure."

Amos 5:14-15; Seek doctrine and not evil in order that you may live; and therefore the LORD, the God of the armies, will be with you, as you have said. Hate evil, and love doctrine, and establish justice in the gate; and the LORD, the God of hosts, will be gracious to the remnant of Joseph.

Col 1:25; Of which {the Church} I have become a minister, according to the standard of the dispensation of God {Church Age} having been given to you {for your advantage} for the purpose of communicating it to you to fill up your deficiency in the word of God.

Col 1:26; The mystery {doctrine of the Church Age}having been concealed from the ages {past dispensations}and from the generations, but now has been revealed to His saints.

Col 3:18; Wives be subordinate or keep on voluntarily yielding yourselves to your husbands as is protocoled or fitting or proper in the lord (right thing in the right way)

Col 3:22; Employees submit to the authority - according to the standard of all things - of your masters not in the sphere of eye slaveries as men pleasers (brown noser), but by means of integrity in the 'right lobe'/heart respecting the Lord.

Dan 2:40-41; And there shall be a fourth kingdom, strong as iron, because iron breaks to pieces and shatters all things; and like iron which crushes, it shall break and crush all these. And as you saw the feet and toes partly of potter's clay and partly of iron, it shall be a divided kingdom; but some of the firmness of iron shall be in it, just as you saw iron mixed with the miry clay.

Dan 7:23-24;"Thus he said: `As for the fourth beast, there shall be a fourth kingdom on earth, which shall be different from all the kingdoms, and it shall devour the whole earth, and trample it down, and break it to pieces. As for the ten horns, out of this kingdom ten kings shall arise, and another shall arise after them; he shall be different from the former ones, and shall put down three kings.

Dan 8:22-23; Then the horn that was broken, Alexander, in place of which four others arose, his 4 generals Selucus, Ptolemy, Lysimicus, Kasander, who took over his Hellenistic empire, and four kingdoms shall arise from his nation, but not with his power. And at the latter time of the tribulation of their kingdom, when the transgressors have reached their full measure, a king of bold countenance, the Roman beast, one who understands dark sentences or black mysteries of the doctrines of Satan, shall stand up. (2Thes 2:7-12)

Dan 11:35-36; and some of those who are wise shall fall, to refine and to cleanse them and to make them white, until the time of the end, for it is yet for the time appointed. "And then the king, the Jewish dictator of Palestine the Antichrist or false prophet (Rev 13:11-18, 16:13, 19:20, 20:10) shall manufacture or do or accomplish out of this historical situation according to his will absolute dictatorial power; he shall exalt himself, glorify and magnify himself above every god as a Hero, passing himself off as Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the messiah returned, furthermore, he shall speak astonishing things blaspheming against the God of gods, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and he shall have success and prosper until the indignation or the tribulation is accomplished or comes to its conclusion; for what has been decreed in eternity past, that which is determined, WILL be accomplished in time.

Deut 6:6-9; And these doctrines which I am commanding you today shall be in your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul; and you shall teach them diligently to your children, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house, and when you walk by the way, and when you lie down, and when you rise. And you shall bind them as a sign upon your hand, and they shall be as front-lets between your eyes. And you shall write them on the door posts of your house and on your gates.

Deut 7:9; Know therefore that the LORD your God is God, the faithful God who keeps his covenant and steadfast love or Logistical Grace support to those who love him and keep his commandments, down to a thousand generations,

Deut 12:18; but you shall eat them before the LORD your God in the place which the LORD your God will choose, you and your son and your daughter, your manservant and your maidservant, and the Levite who is within your towns; and you shall rejoice before the LORD your God in all that you undertake.

Deut 14:22-24; "You shall tithe all the yield of your seed, which comes forth from the field year by year. And before the LORD your God, in the place which he will choose, to make his name dwell there, you shall eat the tithe of your grain, of your wine, and of your oil, and the firstlings of your herd and flock; that you may learn to fear the LORD your God always. And if the way is too long for you, so that you are not able to bring the tithe, when the LORD your God blesses you, because the place is too far from you, which the LORD your God chooses, to set his name there,

Deut 17:15; you may indeed set as king over you him whom the LORD your God will choose. One from among your brethren you shall set as king over you; you may not put a foreigner over you, who is not your brother.

Deut 18:1-5; "The Levitical priests, that is, all the tribe of Levi, shall have no portion or inheritance with Israel; they shall eat the offerings by fire to the LORD, and his rightful dues. They shall have no inheritance among their brethren; the LORD is their inheritance, as he promised them. And this shall be the priests' due from the people, from those offering a sacrifice, whether it be ox or sheep: they shall give to the priest the shoulder and the two cheeks and the stomach. The first fruits of your grain, of your wine and of your oil, and the first of the fleece of your sheep, you shall give him. For the LORD your God has chosen him out of all your tribes, to stand and minister in the name of the LORD, him and his sons for ever.

Deut 24:5; When a man takes a new wife he shall not go out with the army nor be called to active duty and shall be free to be home for 1 year and give pleasure to his wife whom he has taken.

Deut 24:8-9; "Take heed, in an attack of leprosy, to be very careful to do according to all that the Levitical priests shall direct you; as I commanded them, so you shall be careful to do. Remember what the LORD your God did to Miriam on the way as you came forth out of Egypt.

Deut 24:14-15; "You shall not oppress a hired servant who is poor and needy, whether he is one of your brethren or one of the sojourners who are in your land within your towns; you shall give him his hire on the day he earns it, before the sun goes down (for

he is poor, and sets his heart upon it); lest he cry against you to the LORD, and it be sin in you.

Deut 32:8; When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he fixed the bounds of the peoples according to the number of the sons of God in Israel.

Deut 33:26-27; There is no one like the God of Jeshurun, the upright righteous ones, who rides or mounts an offensive action in all three heavens in defense of Jeshurun believers, the upright righteous ones, to your help you Jeshurun Believers and on the clouds of the dust of his action, in the majesty or excellence of his essence and character. The eternal God is your refuge, fortress, stronghold you Jeshurun believers, the upright righteous ones, and underneath you are the everlasting shoulders of omnipotent power of God, continuously driving, by an unrelenting force of offensive military action those enemies or foes fighting against you, out and away from before your face you Jeshurun believers, the upright righteous ones, following and obeying the God, and He will continuously shout a battle command, and He will cause them to be utterly destroyed, eradicated, annihilated, exterminated.

Eccl 9:9; Enjoy living with the right woman who you have loved all the days of your life of emptiness (unbeliever or reversionistic believer) the Right Woman whom he has given you under the sun (Believer & Unbeliever) all the days of your life of emptiness, for this is your portion in life, and in your work or toil, profession, occupation, in which you are laboring or working under the sun.

Eph 1:3; Blessed or worthy of praise and glorification, the God and father of our lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the one having provided us (all believers) benefits or blessings of Logistical Grace, by means of every spiritual benefit or blessing in heavenly places because of Christ.

Eph 1:4-5; Just or even as He, God the Father, chose or elected us as Royal Family of God for himself in him (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ) before the foundation or beginning of the world, Eternity Past, for the purpose that we should keep on being set apart to God or holy and even unblemished or blameless before or in the presence of him, God the Father, through the agency of LOVE. In love or by means of virtue love having pre-designed us for the purpose of adoption, with the result of the appointment of adult sons for Himself through Jesus Christ according to the benevolent grace purpose from the source of His will.

Eph 1:11; in Whom {Jesus Christ} also we have {in eternity past} received a destiny having been pre-designed or predestined from or according to a predetermined plan and purpose from the One God the Father putting into operation the all things according to the decree from His will purpose or design

Eph 2:1; And you he made alive, when you were dead through the trespasses and sins

Eph 2:7; That, in the approaching Ages of the eternal future, He, God, might demonstrate his surpassing grace riches in generosity toward us who are in Christ Jesus.

Eph 2:8-9; For by Grace you have been saved now with the result that you keep on being saved always, through faith (alone in JC alone**) and that Salvation, not from yourselves, (nor anything you do) [it is] (**implied as a dramatic elipsis shouting at you**) the gift of God, not as a result of works, that no one should be arrogant or ever boast (going beyond his limitations).**

Eph 3:1-3; For this reason I, Paul, a prisoner for Christ Jesus on behalf of you Gentiles, assuming that you have heard of the stewardship of God's grace that was given to me for you, how the mystery was made known to me by revelation, as I have written briefly.

Eph 3:4-6; When you read this you can perceive my insight into the mystery of Christ, which was not made known to the sons of men in other generations as it has now been revealed to his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; that is, how the Gentiles are fellow heirs, members of the same body, and partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel.

Eph 3:14; For this reason, I bow my knee, kneel before God the Father (to recognize the blessing from him)

Eph 3:16-19; In order that he might give to you on the basis of the Riches of His Glory from antecedent grace that you might receive strength, become strengthened in reaching Super Grace, by means of Power of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, through the personal agency of God the Holy Spirit with reference to your inner being and balance of residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and God the Holy Spirit. In order that, Christ may be at home in your right lobes of your soul, by means of Metabolized Bible Doctrine assimilated in your right lobes through Filling of God the Holy Spirit, after you have been rooted by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and after having received the foundation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Human Spirit, or established (have a secure place) by agency of Reciprocal Virtue Love for God as Personal Love for God the Father, Impersonal Love for Mankind and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. That you may utilize the power (Power of GHS mentor John 14:26), to grasp the idea with all the saints (Believers), what is the Width [Problem Solving Devices from Metabolized Bible Doctrine], and Length [Filling of God the Holy Spirit & Operation Z Grace Apparatus for Perception] and Height [Execution of the Protocol Plan of God reaching Super Grace and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Pleroma, Winner Believer, Invisible Hero] and Depth [Love of God from E Past and the divine initiative of antecedent grace from Eternity Past & eschatological grace of

Eternity Future] and Come or Get to know the surpassing knowledge Love for Christ, which goes beyond Gnosis Academic Knowledge being Epignosis function of the 3 Spiritual Skills of Filling of God the Holy Spirit Metabolized Bible Doctrine and 10 Problem Solving Devices, so that we may be filled (Eph 5:18 Filling of God the Holy Spirit), resulting in all the unique fullness of blessings from the source of God.

Eph 3:20; Now to him, God the Father, who is able to do infinitely, exceedingly, abundantly more than all we are able to ask, think, or imagine, on the basis of or according to the power (Filling of God the Holy Spirit) which keeps on working or residing within us, (Spiritual Life Advance to pleroma from Epignosis Bible Doctrine)

Eph 4:13-15; Until we all have attained the Goal (Gate 8 of the Divine Dynasphere) because of the consistency of Bible Doctrine teaching and the Epignosis knowledge of the son of God and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, to a mature status to the standard of maturity which belongs to the fullness of Christ. In order that me may no longer be immature believers in reversionism and under the influence of Good and Evil being tossed hear and there by waves of reversionistic thoughts, being carried here and there by every wind of false doctrine, by the dice playing of men in cheating leading us astray easily through marxist principles, face to face with their cunning method of deception. but by the teaching of Bible Doctrine in the sphere of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Love complex or Divine Dynasphere, you may cause them to Grow up by the all things of Bible Doctrine teaching, with reference to him who is the absolute authority even Christ Jesus.

Eph 4:30; Furthermore Stop Grieving GHS, The God, by means of whom you have been sealed to the Day of Redemption.

Eph 5:1; Therefore be imitators of God, as beloved children.

Eph 5:10; and try to learn what is pleasing to the Lord.

Eph 5:15-16; Therefore beware how accurately you walk with regard to Bible Doctrine, not as unwise or stupid ones (CDS residence) but as wise, (DDS residence) constantly Redeeming or buying time through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine and attaining Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with Filling of God the Holy Spirit, because the Days are evil

Eph 5:22-33; The Women benefit from submission or rendering obedience to your own husbands as unto the lord (after marriage), Because the husband is the HEAD or ruler of the wife just as Christ also is head or ruler of the church he himself is the savior of the body, the body of the woman by his love care and tenderness. But as the church is subject to Christ, you wives are also subject to your husbands in all things. Husbands, love your wives, as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her, that having purified her, the Royal Family of God, he might consecrate or dedicate her by means of

the washing from the water from or with the word of Bible Doctrine, that he, himself, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, might present the splendid glorious church to himself not having stain of no Old Sin Nature in the Resurrection Body, nor wrinkle of Good and Evil or any such category of things related to the devils world, that she the Royal Family of God might be holy in ultimate sanctification and blameless with relationship to lack of Good and Evil. Even so husbands should love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. For no man ever hates his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, as Christ does the church, because we are members of his body. "For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh." This mystery is a profound one, and I am saying that it refers to Christ and the church; However each one of you also individually, let you husbands, so love your own wife as he loves himself, and the wife see to it that she respects her husband.

Eph 6:5; Slaves, be obedient to those who are your earthly masters, with fear and trembling, in singleness of heart, as to Christ;

Eph 6:18; With all prayer and petition pray at all times in the power of God the Holy Spirit, and with this in view be alert with prayer, for all the saints with all persistence and petition.

Gal 5:1; It is in the sphere of or for freedom that Christ has set you free, therefore keep on standing fast or firm (Execution of the Spiritual Life) and stop being enmeshed again in the yoke of slavery to Carnality or Good and Evil legalism.

Gal 5:4; Let there be no filthiness, nor silly talk, nor levity, which are not fitting; but instead let there be thanksgiving.

Gen 1:26-27; Elohim (trinity) decreed, "Let <u>us</u> manufacture (Adam) the Human Race personalities in the shadow image of our essence after our pattern of personalities, and they shall rule over the birds of the heavens, the fish of the sea, and over the domesticated animals, and over all the earth (Lower creation),and over all the reptiles creeping and gliding over the earth (insects and snakes). So Elohim (trinity) Created out of nothing the Adam (Soul) in His shadow image, in the image of Elohim created out of nothing He (God) Him (Adam), created he Them Male and Female souls, Right Man and Right Woman in Soul only.

Gen 2:9; And consequently Jehovah Elohim caused to Grow out of the Ground every Tree, being desirable to the sight (soul blessing), and Good for Food (bodies blessings), and in the middle of the Garden the Tree of Life (spiritual blessing), and the tree of the knowledge of Good and Evil (the test of Man's Volition).

Gen 2:16-17; Jehovah Elohim commanded the Man, saying "From every tree in the Garden eating you may eat", (The Test) And from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good

and Evil you MUST not eat from it, because in the day that you eat from it Dying (spiritually) , you will die (physically). DEAD DEAD

Gen 2:18-25; The Lord God (Jesus Christ) said, "Not Good, is the being of man in his aloneness and separation, I will manufacture of something in existence for him an associate responding to him to help him. Now Jehovah Elohim had fashioned out of the ground every beast of the field and every bird of the heaven, and he caused them to be brought to the man to see what he would call them. So Adam called (gave) the names to all the domesticated animals, to all the birds of the Heavens, to the wild animals of the Field, but for Adam there was not discovered a Helper corresponding to him. So Jehovah Elohim caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he kept on sleeping, while He (God) took one of his ribs, and covered the wound with flesh and healed it completely, and out of the rib which he took from man he constructed 'Ishah', and he caused her to be brought to the man (First Marriage). And the Adam Said, "This Now, bone from my bone, and Flesh from my flesh (Adam's Cognizance of Sex), she shall be named Ishah because this one was taken from Ish (the man), therefore because of this principle (prior Verse) 'Ish' (man as an individual) shall leave the authority of his mother and father, and he shall be intimately united with his wife in Sexual Intercourse . Therefore A Man shall leave his father and mother (Adam didn't have one but this assures that marriage would be perpetuated beyond Adam's fall) and he shall have sexual relationship with his wife, so that they will become one flesh (Intercourse). Both of them were constantly naked, and furthermore they were not confused nor disappointed (with this nakedness).

Gen 5:1-2; This is the Book of the Generations of Adam, in the day in which he, Elohim, God created out of nothing Man (Soul & Spirit), he constructed him in the Likeness of God (invisible, immaterial, real essence of soul), Male and Female he created them, He blessed them and called them Mankind, or ADAM, in the day they were created.

Gen 9:6; Whoever sheds Man's Blood, by man shall his blood be shed, for in the image of God he made man

Gen 10:5; From these are separated or divided the habitable lands of the gentiles divided in their lands each man according to his language, after their national organization or Clan's, by their families and in their nations.

Gen 11:1-9; The Whole earth was of one language and of one speech, (300 years after the flood) and it came to pass as they journeyed from the east that they found a plain in the land of Shainar and they dwelt there (Babylon or Messopotamia). And they said one to another, let us make brick and burn them thoroughly, and build a city and a tower whose top may reach into heaven, and let us make a name lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. And the Lord came down to see the city and tower which the children of Man had constructed. And behold the Lord Said, "Behold the People are one and they all have one language and this they began to do (United Nations) and nothing will be restrained from them which they have planned to Do. Let

us go down and confound their language that they might not understand one another's speech and behold the Lord scattered them abroad from thence from on the face of the earth and they ceased to build a city. Therefore the Name of it was called Babel, for the lord did there confuse or babeled the languages of all the earth and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad on the face of the earth.

Gen 43:30; Then Joseph made haste, for his emotions yearned for his brother, and he sought a place to weep, and he entered into his chamber and wept there.

Gen 48:16 (Jacob in Super Grace); The Angel, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who redeemed me from all evil bless the lads, and in them let my name be perpetuated, and the name of my fathers Abraham and Isaac; and let them grow into a multitude in the midst of the earth."

Gen 50:20; As for you, you intended evil against me (They were going to kill him and then instead sold him into slavery); but God meant it for good, in order to bring about as it is this day, to preserve many people alive.

Heb 2:14-15; since therefore the children share blood and flesh, he also himself JC took hold of blood and flesh in order that he through Sp Death might neutralize the one who has the power of Spiritual Death that is the devil, and deliver all those who through fear of death were subject to lifelong bondage.

Heb 4:13; And there is not a created thing hidden from his sight but all things are naked and exposed to his eyes face to face with whom we must give an account.

Heb 4:16; Let us be approaching the throne of Grace with CONFIDENCE that we may receive mercy and acquire grace with reference to seasonable help

Heb 7:4-5; Now observe how distinguished was this one, whom Abram the patriarch had given a 10th part of the best booty. And those descendants of Levi who receive the priestly office have a commandment in the law to take tithes from the people, that is, from their brethren, though these also are descended from Abraham.

Heb 7:11-17; Now if perfection had been attainable through the Levit'ical priesthood (for under it the people received the law), what further need would there have been for another priest to arise after the order of Melchiz'edek, rather than one named after the order of Aaron? For when there is a change in the priesthood, there is necessarily a change in the law as well. For the one of whom these things are spoken belonged to another tribe, from which no one has ever served at the altar. For it is evident that our Lord was descended from Judah, and in connection with that tribe Moses said nothing about priests. This becomes even more evident when another priest arises in the likeness of Melchiz'edek, who has become a priest, not according to a legal requirement concerning bodily descent but by the power of an indestructible

life. For it is witnessed of him, "Thou art a priest for ever, after the order of Melchiz'edek."

Heb 7:24-25; On the other hand the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, abides forever, Consequently he holds his priesthood permanently. Henceforth he is able to deliver completely those who draw near to God, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ since he always lives to make intercession for us.

Heb 10:5; Therefore when He, The Lord Jesus, The Christ came into existence as humanity in the world, He said as an infant from his deity in the cradle (Psalm 40:6-8}, "The act of giving animal sacrifices and food offerings You, Oh God, do not desire or make a command decision requiring, but *You Father have prepared or equipped for Me a human body.*" (To qualify him as equal mediator between God and man)

Heb 10:8-14; Look back at v5-6 when He said in Ps 40:6, "{Blood} Sacrifices and {food} offerings and whole burnt offerings and concerning sin offerings, You did not desire, nor have you been propitiated by them which are continually being offered according to the law." At that time {again from the cradle} said He {Jesus} - in the past with the result that it stands said forever - "Behold, I have arrived to accomplish Your will or plan or purpose or design.", " He abolishes the first Old Testament Scripture sacrifices in order to establish the second propitiation by his sacrifice on the cross. By means of which will or purpose or design {of God the Father} we have been sanctified in the past with the result that we remain sanctified or separated unto or aristocracy to God or ear-marked as Royalty, forever, through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ at one time once and for all as opposed to the Levitical priests numerous offerings over 1500+ years. And every Levitical priest stands daily at his service, publicly officiating and offering repeatedly the same sacrifices, which can never make an expiation for or take away sins. But when Christ had offered for all time a single sacrifice for sins, he then sat down at the right hand of God, from that time on waiting until his enemies should be alloted the footstool for his feet. For by means of one or a single offering he has perfected for all time those who are sanctified or being consecrated as aristocracy.

Heb 10:35-36; Therefore do not throw away as worthless your confidence in Bible Doctrine, which confidence keeps on having rich distribution of blessing. For you keep on having need of perseverance or persistence , in order that when you have accomplished the will of God of taking in Bible Doctrine you might carry off in yourself the promise of blessing from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

Heb 11:5; By means of Bible Doctrine, Enoch was transferred so that he should not see death; and he was not found, because The God had transferred him. For before his transfer he was attained the testimony in the past with the result that the deposition stood that he had pleased God.

Heb 11:6; And without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul it is impossible to please God. For when one is occupied with God in maximum Category I Love or Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, He must be convinced by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul that God exists and that he becomes a rewarder with blessing in time and eternity of those who diligently seek him to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Heb 11:9-12; By means of Bible Doctrine, He (Abraham) lived as a temporary resident with reference to the land, as a foreign land, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, Joint Heirs of the same promise. For he himself kept waiting with anticipation for a city having foundations whose designer and builder was The God. By means of Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul even Sarah herself received sexual power or ability for the deposit of seed to conceive, even though she was beyond the proper time of life for conception in the menopause, because she concluded God, faithful the one who had promised. And therefore from one hopeless couple was born Isaac, furthermore these same ones, Abraham and Sarah, having become sexually dead in contrast to the promise (Gen 15:5), descendants were born, "Just as the stars of heaven in number and as the grains of sand by the shore of the sea, innumerable".

Heb 11:13; According to Bible Doctrine resident in the Soul of the mature Believers all these died according to the promise of Dying grace, not having received the surpassing grace promises but having seen the same from a distance, but having saluted them (men) and embraced them (women) upon reaching Super Grace or Ultra Super-Grace and embraced them upon dying and having acknowledged that they were strangers and transients while living on the earth.

Heb 13:4; Marriage must be honorable to all, and sexual intercourse must be undefiled, for God will judge both fornication and adultery.

Heb 13:7; Be thinking about, concentrating on, remembering and sticking with those, Pastor Teachers, who themselves as an expert leader guides you through doctrine and rule and govern with authority by policy first enucleated from Bible Doctrine, *over you* in the Royal Family of God, who are such a high quality category, who have communicated the word FROM THE God, Bible Doctrine to your greatest advantage; from the source of whom, you are to be imitating or emulating THEIR DOCTRINE and still retain your individuality, concentrating on the doctrine when tempted to leave the Local Church and Pastor Teacher carefully considering the end of the issue of their manner of life to reach Ultra Super-Grace.

Heb 13:17; Keep obeying those pastors who themselves are ruling over you and submit to their authority; for these same ones, Pastor Teachers, keep watching being alert for the benefit for your souls, as those who have to render an account. Keep obeying them that they may do this accounting with joy or inner happiness and not with groaning for

this accounting with groaning will be unprofitable for you as discipline for the congregation and future loss of reward.

Hos 3:4-5; For the children of Israel shall dwell many days without king or prince, without sacrifice or pillar, without ephod or teraphim. Afterward the children of Israel shall return and seek the LORD their God, and David their king; and they shall come in fear to the LORD and to his goodness in the latter days.

Hos 5:15-6:1; I will return again to my place, until they acknowledge their guilt and seek my face, and in their distress they seek me, saying, "Come, let us return to the LORD; for he has torn, that he may heal us; he has stricken, and he will bind us up.

Is 5:20; Woe to them who call evil good and good evil, who substitute darkness for light and light for darkness, who substitute bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter (ex love everyone)

Is 7:13-15; And he, Isaiah, said, "Hear then, O house of David, king Ahaz of Judah! It is a small thing for you to weary men, but will you weary my God also? Therefore in conclusion, the Lord himself, God the Father, shall give you, Ahaz, a sign, a supernatural manifestation or a miracle; behold a virgin shall conceive and become pregnant, consequently bearing a Son, (Is 9:6) and therefore you will call his name Emmanuel, or God With Us. He shall eat curds or butter and honey when he knows how to refuse the evil and choose the good.

Is 9:6; For a child is born (humanity of JC) to us a son (Son of God Diety) is given to us and the government of the world will rest upon his shoulders (millennium) and his name shall be called, the wonderful councilor, the mighty God, the father of eternity, the prince of prosperity.

Is 11:10; Then it shall come to pass in that day of the 2nd advent the root sprout of Jesse, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in virgin birth, resurrection, ascension and session, who stands as a guide-on or rallying point under pressure of the peoples; for him the gentiles shall be motivated from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to also search, and his temple shall also become his glory a resting place of prosperity. (fulfilled in Rev 5:5, 22:16)

Is 13:11; Thus I will punish the world for it's evil and the wicked for their iniquity, I will also put an end to the Interlocking System of Arrogance related to the proud and I will humble the pride of tyranny.

Is 37:30-31; "And this shall be the sign for you: this year eat what grows of itself, and in the second year what springs of the same; then in the third year sow and reap, and plant vineyards, and eat their fruit. And the remnant of the House of Israel who remain (those who do not succumb to terrorism) shall increase by taking the root downward

(planting Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the soul during 5th cycle of discipline)

Is 58:11; Therefore the LORD will guide you continually, and satisfy your soul in the dried up or scorched places of disaster, even in time of catastrophe, disaster or hard times he will satisfy your soul, and he will give great strength to your bones and prosperity; therefore you shall be like a watered garden with great production, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not or do not deceive.

Is 65:24; And it shall come to pass in historical disaster, Before they call I will answer, while they are yet speaking I will hear.

James 1:12; Happinesses or blessed is the man, the Ultra Super-Grace believer, who perseveres under maximum testing of Undeserved Suffering, crossing No Man's Land between Super-Grace A and Ultra Super-Grace, for when he has stood the test he will receive the wreath the crown of life which God has promised to those who constantly love him in Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

James 1:25; But he the one having looked intently through Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine into the perfect law, the law of liberty or freedom, and having persisted or persevered in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, that one having become NOT a hearer of oblivion that rejects doctrinal teaching and forgets but a doer of assigned occupation that learns and applies doctrine after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, this believer shall be HAPPY blessed in all of what he does

James 2:12-13; So keep speaking and so keep doing as they who through the law of freedom from Bible Doctrine taught are about to receive evaluation at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ. For judgment is without mercy for those not having produced mercy in the attainment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God; mercy exalts in that judgment.

James 4:6; Moreover He gives to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Greater Grace or super-grace, therefore it the Old Testament Scripture says in Proverbs 3:34 "The God makes War against the Arrogant Believer, But he gives Grace to the Humble Believer".

James 4:7-9; Therefore be subordinate or submit to The Authority of God with residence & function in the Divine Dynasphere resist or oppose the devil and the Cosmic Dynasphere and he will flee from you. Draw near to The God through Gate 4 of the Divine Dynasphere by means of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine and he will draw near to you, cleanse your hands you sinners through rebound and purify your right lobes you hypocritical double minded people from the pollution of evil. (the alternative) Be afflicted miserable and lament and weep. You Laughter will be turned to grief and your happiness turned to dejection.

Jer 4:19; My bowels or Emotions, my bowels or Emotions! I am pained and writhe in pain at my very heart, the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of my Soul because of Emotional Revolt of the Soul! My heart or dominant Right Lobe is screaming within me because Metabolized Bible Doctrine has no place to go for response; I cannot hold my peace for lack of tranquility; because you my soul have hear the sound of the trumpet, the alarm of war.

Jer 6:13-14; "For from the least of them the poorest in the land even to the greatest, every one is greedy for unjust gain and security consciousness; and from prophet even to priest, every one manufactures lies with total loss of integrity. And they allege to solve the problem, improved conditions of the people on the surface, or dress the wounds of my people as though it were not serious, giving a small measure of tranquility, saying, `Peace, peace or Perfect Peace,' when there is no peace.

Jer 8:11; They dress the wound or heal the hurt of my people slightly giving false tranquility, saying, `Peace, peace,' when there is no peace.

Jer 11:19-20; But I, and only I was stupid enough to be Naive about this, like a little gentle tame pet lamb has been caused to be brought to the slaughter of the plot. I knew not they devised schemes organized a plot of conspiracy against me, saying, "Let us cause to destroy a Tree, Jeremiah, and keep after him until we do it, with the basic staple principle food of Bible Doctrine of his messages, let us cut him off from the land of the living, kill him, that his name not ever again be remembered." But, O LORD of the Armies, who constantly judges from his Justice and Righteousness, who tests for function or puts on trial the emotions as responders to authority in the Right Lobe and the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, I, Jeremiah, will see and perceive your justice exercised upon all of them conspirators, for unto you, God the Father, under faith rest have I uncovered or unburdened my soul turning the entire matter of conspiracy over to You.

Jer 11:22; Therefore thus says the LORD of the armies: "Behold, Therefore I will keep on causing to indirectly punish them; the vigorous conspiring men without self discipline, Authority Orientation, and without Metabolized Bible Doctrine shall die by the sword in battle; their sons and their daughters shall die by famine or economic depression;

Jer 14:13-16; Then I, Jeremiah, replied: "Oh, Lord GOD, behold, the religious leaders are telling the people, `You shall not see the sword or war, and you shall not have famine or economic depression, but I will give you guaranteed permanent peace in this place.'" Then the LORD said to me: "The prophets are prophesying lies in my name; I did not send them, nor did I command them nor did I speak to them. They are prophesying to you a false vision, using worthless divination, and a thing of nothing idols, and the deceit of their own Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of false doctrine. Therefore thus says the LORD concerning the religious leaders or prophets who prophesy in my name although I did not send them, and yet they keep on saying,

`there shall be no military invasion or disaster and no economic disaster in this land' the Lord Adds: Therefore by military disaster and economic crisis these prophets will be finished off or destroyed. And the people or congregation to whom they prophesy shall be cast out in the streets of Jerusalem, because of economic depression and military disaster, and there will be no one to bury them, nor their wives, nor their sons, nor their daughters. For I will pour out their wickedness upon them.

Jer 28:8; The prophets who were before me and before you from ancient times, prophesied against you from many lands against great kingdoms prophesied of war and of evil and of disease.

Jer 14:18; If I go out into the field, behold, those slain by the sword! And if I enter the city, behold, them sick with the diseases of famine! For both prophet and priest ply their trade through the land, and have no knowledge.'"

Jer 33:3; Call to me and I will answer you (your prayer give you the blessing) and I will tell you great and mighty things which you did not know.

Job 5:19-27; From six troubles, crises, catastrophes or disasters, he will deliver, preserve or rescue you by your concentrated thinking and applying Bible Doctrine, mature Believer in Super-Grace status, furthermore in seven the evil of satanic Doctrine will not meddle with nor touch nor produce its desired effect on you, as long as you are insulated by Bible Doctrine. In famine, depression or economic disaster he will redeem or deliver or purchase or preserve you, Mature Believers, from death from Eternity Past, in war or military disaster from the power of the sword in battle, you will be protected and hidden by the Integrity of God, delivered from the lash or scourge of the tongue in social disasters from maligning, judging and gossip, neither will you be afraid being unable to think under the pressures of destruction, violent death, ruin, oppression, tyranny, when it comes because of Dying Grace. You will relax and laugh with great capacity for life and a sense of humor from Relaxed Mental Attitude from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and maximum relationship with the Integrity of God, at violent physical death and at economic depression because of dying grace and super grace status in time, neither will you be afraid of wild animals or violent death nor any dangerous instruments of death because of maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God. For your contract will be with the stones of the battlefield the artillery or bombs or missiles or other weapons of destruction of the military, and the wild animals of the field which kill man like conventional weapons will be at peace with you and pass you by, or will not destroy you until the Lord is ready for you to die. Therefore you have already learned that your human body is in a state of prosperity in peace while dying (Mature believers die with minimum pain) and you will visit your pleasure home in heaven and not fear forfeit of your rewards or blessings, and You will also know from application of Bible Doctrine that your descendants will be prosperous and the pivot great and that the Human Race will continue on and be able to adjust to your death and the nation perpetuated and your spiritual offspring shall be as the grass or young shoots of the field from blessing by association and historical

impact. You will come to your grave in full vigor at the peak of your life for the mature believer at the perfect time to die, like a shock of corn comes in its season as the Timing and Plan of God in Grace are perfect. Behold this doctrine of Death and Dying Grace, we have researched, investigated and studied it, this is the point of it, Hear, learn and know it applying it for yourself for your own good. Therefore you have already learned and will know that your human body is in a state of prosperity and peace while dying (Mature believers in Z Radical die with minimum pain) and you will visit with great pleasure your home in heaven and not fear forfeit of your rewards or blessings, And You will also know from application of Bible Doctrine that your descendants will be prosperous and the pivot great and that the Human Race will continue on and be able to adjust to your death and the nation perpetuated and your spiritual offspring shall be as the grass or young shoots of the field from blessing by association and historical impact. You will come to your grave in full vigor at the peak of your life for the mature believer at the perfect time to die, like a shock of corn comes in its season as the Timing and Plan of God in Grace are perfect. Behold this doctrine of Death and Dying Grace, we have researched, investigated and studied it, having the principle and experience of it, this is the point of it, CONCENTRATE, learn, inculcate into your soul and know it applying it for yourself for your own good.

Job 9:32-33; For he, God, is not a man, as I am, that I may answer himin judgment, or that we may come together in judgment. There is no umpire between us, who can lay his hand upon both of us.

John 3:36; He who believes in the son, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has eternal life, he who does not believe does not see life but the wrath of God abides on him.

John 4:24; God is spirit, and those who worship him must worship by means of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and doctrine."

John 7:37-38; On the last day of the feast, the feast of the tabernacle, Jesus stood up and shouted , "If (3rd class) anyone is thirsty (Positive Volition) let him come to me and drink (Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ)." "He who believes in me as the scripture has said, from his innermost being shall flow rivers of living water (God the Holy Spirit ministry) "

John 8:32; You will know the Bible Doctrine (truth) and the Truth of Bible Doctrine shall make you free (To execute the Spiritual Life under the Royal Family Honor Code)

John 14:13-14; (Jesus said to us) Whatever you ask in my name, that I will do, that the father may be glorified by the Son, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ if you ask anything in my name, I will do it.

John 14:26; But the paraclete, our Mentor GHS, whom the Father will send in my name, he will teach you all things and will bring to your remembrance and recall all that I have said to you.

John 15:7; If you abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask whatever you will, and it shall be done for you.

John 15:12-13; "This is my commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. Greater love has no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

John 16:12-14; I (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ) have yet many things to say to you but you are not able to comprehend them now. But when he the spirit of truth (energizer) has come, he will instruct or guide you into all truth or doctrine, for he will not speak from his own initiative but whatever he hears he will communicate and he will disclose to you things which are coming in the future, He will glorify me, he shall take of my doctrine and he shall communicate it to you.

Josh 11:23; So Joshua took the whole land, according to all that the LORD had commanded Moses; and Joshua gave it for an inheritance to Israel according to the divisions of their tribes, therefore the land had peace from war.

Judg 3:1-2;Now these are the nations which the Lord left to test Israel by them in military training under combat conditions, all who had not experienced the previous wars of Canaan having lived in Joshua's generation. In order that the generations of the sons of Israel might be taught war, those who had not experienced it formally.

Lam 1:20-2:11; {only v20&11 corrected} "Behold or look, O LORD, at how distressed I am, my soul Emotion is tormented within and dominating the soul, and my Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has turned withing me and I am disturbed, because I have grievously rebelled. Outside in the street or abroad the sword bereaves; inside the house or home there is only death. "Hear how I groan; there is none to comfort me. All my enemies have heard of my trouble; they are glad that thou hast done it. Bring thou the day thou hast announced, and let them be as I am. "Let all their evil doing come before thee; and deal with them as thou hast dealt with me because of all my transgressions; for my groans are many and my heart is faint." How the Lord in his anger has set the daughter of Zion under a cloud! He has cast down from heaven to earth the splendor of Israel; he has not remembered his footstool in the day of his anger. The Lord has destroyed without mercy all the habitations of Jacob; in his wrath he has broken down the strongholds of the daughter of Judah; he has brought down to the ground in dishonor the kingdom and its rulers. He has cut down in fierce anger all the might of Israel; he has withdrawn from them his right hand in the face of the enemy; he has burned like a flaming fire in Jacob, consuming all around. He has bent his bow like an enemy, with his right hand set like a foe; and he has slain all the pride of our eyes in the tent of the daughter of Zion; he has poured out his fury like fire. The Lord has become like an enemy, he has destroyed Israel; he has destroyed all its palaces, laid in ruins its strongholds; and he has multiplied in the daughter of Judah mourning and lamentation. He has broken down his booth like that of a garden, laid in ruins the place of his appointed feasts; the LORD has brought to an end in Zion

appointed feast and sabbath, and in his fierce indignation has spurned king and priest. The Lord has scorned his altar, disowned his sanctuary; he has delivered into the hand of the enemy the walls of her palaces; a clamor was raised in the house of the LORD as on the day of an appointed feast. The LORD determined to lay in ruins the wall of the daughter of Zion; he marked it off by the line; he restrained not his hand from destroying; he caused rampart and wall to lament, they languish together. Her gates have sunk into the ground; he has ruined and broken her bars; her king and princes are among the nations; the law is no more, and her prophets obtain no vision from the LORD. The elders of the daughter of Zion sit on the ground in silence; they have cast dust on their heads and put on sackcloth; the maidens of Jerusalem have bowed their heads to the ground. My eyes do fail with tears; my bowels or emotion is troubled from Emotional Revolt of the Soul; my Liver or Right Lobe is poured out in grief on the earth because of the destruction of the daughter of my people, because infants and babes faint in the streets of the city.

Lam 3:19-27; Remember my afflictions and restlessness, the bitterness and venom of my soul from incarceration, I will remember. My soul still has them in remembrance and it is humbled within me. This DOCTRINE I recall to mind, therefore I have confident expectations or faith under pressure (HOPE) in time of disaster. It is because of the Lord's gracious unfailing love or mercies which never ceases that we are not CUT OFF or Consumed, His Gracious Mercies or functions (temporal security) never cease for His compassions never end or fail, they are renewed every morning, His faithfulness continues. (logistical grace is received 1 day at a time) (what GOD has promised HE will deliver) The Lord is my portion says my soul, therefore I am caused to have absolute confidence in Him in the midst of pressure (part of virtue is personal love directed to GOD, impersonal love directed to man, confidence directed to GOD, courage directed to man) The Lord is divine good to those who endure patiently in absolute confidence of hope or trust in him, to the soul who constantly seeks Him (Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine) great is his faithfulness. (The faith rest drill used in adversity with integrity {spiritual strength} from constant +volition for perception, cognition, metabolization and application of Bible Doctrine) Divine Good it is for a man to wait and be silent for the physical deliverance of the Lord. It is good for a man or person that he bears his yoke in his youth. (if he has Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul)

Lev 27:30-33; All the tithe of the land, whether of the seed of the land or of the fruit of the trees, is the LORD's; it is holy to the LORD. If a man wishes to redeem any of his tithe, he shall add a fifth to it. And all the tithe of herds and flocks, every tenth animal of all that pass under the herdsman's staff, shall be holy to the LORD. A man shall not inquire whether it is good or bad, neither shall he exchange it; and if he exchanges it, then both it and that for which it is exchanged shall be holy; it shall not be redeemed."

Luke 8:25; He said to them, "Where is your faith?" And they were afraid, and they marveled, saying to one another, "Who then is this, that he commands even wind and water, and they obey him?"

Luke 11:27-28; Now it came to pass that while he (JC) was teaching these things (Luke 11:14-17), a certain popular woman from the audience interrupted having spoken up with shouting with a loud voice she said to him (JC) "Happy is the woman whose Womb carried you, and the woman whose breasts gave you suck (fed him as an infant)". But Jesus, himself, replied 'Wrong' or 'On the contrary', happinesses belong those who keep on hearing and guarding the word of God (BD) they are the ones who are blessed.

Mal 3:7-10; From the days of your fathers you have turned aside from my statutes and have not kept them. Return to me, and I will return to you, says the LORD of hosts. But you say, `How shall we return?' Will man defraud God? Yet, God Says, you are robbing me. But you say, `How are we defrauding or robbing you Oh God?' But he, God, Says, In your 10% taxes and offerings. You are cursed with a curse, for you are defrauding or robbing me; the entire nation in reversionism defrauds me. Bring the entire tax of 10% into the treasury of the nation (NOT THE Local Church), so that there may be food in my house; and prove me now in this thing, says the LORD of the Armies, See if I will not open for you the windows of heaven and pour out blessings for you until there is not room enough to contain it.

Mark 4:41; And they were filled with awe, and said to one another, "Who then is this, that even wind and sea obey him?"

Mark 11:24; Therefore I say to you for your advantage, all things in your content of prayer for which you ask or desire when you pray, believe that you will receive them and you shall keep on having or they shall be given to you.

Matt 1:25; but he did not have sexual intercourse with her, he kept her a virgin, until she had given birth to a son and when he had given birth he called his name Jesus.

Matt 5:10-14; Happiness' to the ones, Ultra Super-Grace believers, who have been persecuted for the sake of Adjustment to the Justice of God, because for them the Ultra Super-Grace, is the kingdom of Heaven and eternal blessings. You Ultra Super-Grace Believer are happy when they heap insult on you, they both persecute and speak all kinds of evil against you, they themselves constantly lie against you on account of me, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ. Keep on having happiness even becoming extremely happy with intensified happiness in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, because your reward in eternity is great or extensive in the heavens, for in this manner they have persecuted those Ultra Super-Grace believers who have lived before you. You, Ultra Super Grace Believers, are the salt of the land and the preservation of the Nation, but if the salt becomes tasteless, foolish, insipid in reversionism under the influence of Evil, how shall it function as a preservative of the nation or as a flavor of the society, it is efficient for nothing anymore, totally useless, except having been cast outside in the Sin unto death to be trampled down by men and the 5th Cycle of Divine Discipline for the nation. You Ultra Super Grace Believer are the light of the world, a city located on the top of the mountain cannot be hidden.

Matt 6:8; Do not be like them, for your Father knows what you have need of before you ask him.

Matt 6:9; Pray like this, “Our father who is in the third heaven (the Source of Power in Prayer), Sacred is your Name”

Matt 6:33; But, through Positive Volition at gospel hearing, first seek the kingdom, of divine power of regeneration, in a relationship with the king resulting in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God; and his, God's, imputed Absolute Righteousness and then in fact all these things related to temporal security shall be added or provided to you.

Matt 7:7-8; Keep on Asking and it shall be given to you, keep on seeking and you will find, keep on knocking and it will be opened to you. Everyone who keeps asking receives, and he who keeps seeking finds, and to him who keeps knocking it will be opened to you

Matt 8:18; Now when Jesus saw by intensely studying the great crowd of the mob around him (30,000), he commanded and gave orders to embark over to the other shore across the sea of Galilee and separate from the mob.

Matt 8:27; And the men were utterly amazed and astonished, saying with great emotion over and over again, "What kind of a person is this, that even winds and sea obey him?"

Matt 10:34-39; "Do not begin to presume that I have come in the 1st advent to hurl or thrust peace upon the world; I have not come to hurl thrust peace but to thrust or hurl a machira sword among you which splits and divides and separates and causes antagonism. For I have come in the 1st advent, to to turn a person against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law; And A man’s enemies are the members of his own household or family; When anyone loves father or mother more than the sword of Bible Doctrine or Me, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, is not worthy of me, the one loving son or daughter more than the sword of Bible Doctrine, or me, he is not worthy of me, And he who does not pick up his cross putting Bible Doctrine first, going against social tradition and or severing family ties and follow after me through the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, is not worthy of me. The one having made intellectual discovery of his soul or gains doctrine in his soul through the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception thus developing capacity for life from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, will progressively destroy or nullify your old soul and scale of values for details of life, and one having voided or canceled his old scale of values in his soul for my sake will discover it by developing capacity for life.

Matt 15:8-9; `This people honors me with their lips, but their Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is far from me, using Self Righteousness gimmicks to

avoid worshiping me; but in vain do they worship me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men.'"

Matt 18:18-19; Truly, I say to you, whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Again I say to you, if two of you shall agree on earth about anything they ask, it will be done for them from my Father in heaven.

Matt 20:15; Is it not lawful for me as a capitalists to do what I desire with my own capital, or are your jealous because I am generous, or is your eye evil because I am Good (agathos intrinsic good).

Matt 21:22; And Everything you ask in prayer, believing you shall receive (Faith Rest Drill 4 stages)

Neh 4:13-15; Therefore I, Nehemiah, placed, stationed and garrisoned troops as a mobile reserve on the lowest dugout areas in a command post hidden by the wall, and on the higher places I stationed the observation posts and also stationing troops according to and along with their families to protect the civilians and as a defensive perimeter, with their swords, their spears, and their bows. And I, Nehemiah, rose up and looked, inspected the defenses and stabilized the perimeter then I spoke to the general officers, commissioned officers and men in ranks and the rest of the non military people and this is what I said to them, "Do not be afraid of them, having the doctrine use it and remember the Lord of the armies is great, the mighty warrior, the terrible fighter, therefore military men fight in battle for your brethren, your fellow citizens, fight for your sons, your daughters, your families, your wives, and your homes." And it came to pass when our enemies heard that their plans were known to us and God, Elohim, had brought their conspiracy to nothing and they all departed then we returned all of us to the wall and everyone to his work and his own home.

Neh 13:10; I also found out that the portions of the Levites had not been given to them; so that the Levites and the singers, who did the work, had fled each to his field.

Num 1:2-3; Take a census of all the congregation of all the sons of Israel 20 years old and upward, whoever is able to go to war in Israel you and Aaron shall muster them by their armies.

Num 12:1-10; Then Miriam and Aaron maligned Moses because of the Ethopian woman whom he had married, for he had married a White Cushite woman; and they said, "Has the LORD indeed spoken only through Moses? Is he the only teacher among us? Has he not spoken through us as well?" (all the people agreed and this started the revolution) And the LORD heard it. Now the man Moses was very humble more than anyone or any person on the face of the earth and suddenly the LORD said to Moses and to Aaron and Miriam, "Come out, you three, to the tent of meeting." And the three of them came out. And the LORD came down in a pillar of cloud, and stood at the door of the tent,

and called Aaron and Miriam; and they both came forward. And he said, "Hear my words: If there is a prophet among you, I the LORD make myself known to him in a vision, I speak with him in a dream. Not so with my servant Moses; he is entrusted with all my house. With him I speak mouth to mouth, clearly, and not in dark speech; and he beholds the form of the LORD. Why then were you not afraid to speak against my servant Moses?" And the anger of the LORD was kindled against them, and he departed; and when the cloud removed from over the tent, behold, Miriam was leprous, as white as snow, and Aaron turned towards Miriam, and behold, she was leprous.

Num 18:21-24; "To the Levites I have given every tithe in Israel for an inheritance, in return for their service which they serve, their service in the tent of meeting. And henceforth the people of Israel shall not come near the tent of meeting, lest they bear sin and die. But the Levites shall do the service of the tent of meeting, and they shall bear their iniquity; it shall be a perpetual statute throughout your generations; and among the people of Israel they shall have no inheritance. For the tithe of the people of Israel, which they present as an offering to the LORD, I have given to the Levites for an inheritance; therefore I have said of them that they shall have no inheritance among the people of Israel."

Num 31:3-5; And Moses spoke to the people saying Mobilize men for war among you in order that you may attack Midian to execute the lord's vengeance on Midian you shall send to war 1000 from each tribe from all the tribes of Israel therefore there war mobilized from the thousands of Israel in training 1000 from each tribe trained men for war

Num 32:6-7; But Moses said to the Men of Gad and to the men of Reuben who were still on the other side of the Jordan, "Shall your brethren go to the war while you sit here? Now you are discouraging the sons of Israel from crossing over into the land which the LORD has given them?

Num 32:14; Now behold you have risen up in your fathers place a brood of sinful men to add still more to the burning anger of the Lord against Israel.

Num 32:20-23; So Moses said to them, "If you will do this thing, and if you will still arm yourselves to go before the LORD for the war, and every armed man of you will pass over the Jordan before the LORD, until he has driven out his enemies from before him and the land is subdued before the LORD; then after that you shall return and be free of obligation to the LORD and to Israel; and this land shall be your possession before the LORD. But if you draft dodgers will not mobilize for war and refuse military training, behold, you have sinned against the LORD; and be sure your sin will find you out and you will lose freedom.

Phil 1:8; (lit) For you see, God (is) my judicial witness, (idiom) I am telling you the truth, how I, with greatest affection, continually miss you, long or deeply desire all you Philippians, with the same affections of Christ Jesus.

Phil 1:20-21; According to my earnest expectation and intense concentration on Bible Doctrine and resultant confidence expectation that I shall not be put to shame or disgraced in anything, but that with the integrity of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, even now as always Christ shall be exalted in my person (On earth) whether by my living or by my dying. As I (Paul) see it, as far as I am concerned, to continue Living, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ; likewise to die, Gain, Profit, Riches of Glory, Magnetism beyond life.

Phil 1:28-30; Likewise in the sphere of not one thing or in no way be intimidated, being stupidly frightened or terrified or stop thinking because of them or panicked repeatedly from reversionism by your enemies, which intimidation is to them in reversionism under the influence of evil, an evident public token or proof or sign of your destruction or neutralization from a successful ambush, but with reference to you physical deliverance from the ambush, in fact this deliverance from the ambush is from the source of God. In fact because it has been given, on a grace basis freely without any requirements as a favor from God, to you the unique ones, the believer in the countdown of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace B No Man's Land, in substitution for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ not only to believe by faith alone with reference to him alone for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, but also to emphatically suffer intensively in behalf of him in Super-Grace B No Man's Land, since you have, from the past continuing into the present, the same intensive combat conflict suffering of the Angelic Conflict for Super-Grace B, such as you have seen in me and right now hear through my writing to you.

Phil 2:6-8; Who though he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, eternally preexisted in The form or The Inner Essence of The Eternal God, He did not think or regard an attitude of Equalities with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit as something he did not have, a profit or gain to be violently seized as from vulnerable prey and held (He had enforced and genuine humility) to hinder the fathers plan for the 1st advent, or at the expense of not coming to the earth. But, in contrast, he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, deprived or emptied himself of the proper function of his Deity (Kenosis) when he had taken on or received the form of a bond servant a slave, although he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, had been born in the highest quality of overt not inward likeness of mankind, homosapien, with the Human Spirit, without the Old Sin Nature, in fact having been discovered in outward appearance looking and acting as a man in every respect. In fact, although, having been discovered, being stripped naked during the cross, in outward overt appearance as a man, He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ humbled himself (Volition & Self Motivation with Priorities) by becoming obedient to the point of Spiritual Death that is even THE unique Substitutionary Spiritual Death of the Cross.

Phil 2:12; So then my beloved just as you have always obeyed not in my presence only but also in my absence, be accomplishing your own preservation in danger by Advance to Ultra Super Grace with reverence toward Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, the living Word, and respect toward Bible Doctrine the Written Word.

Phil 2:13; for it is God the Holy Spirit who is at work in you, both to will, motivation to take in Bible Doctrine, and to do, execution of the intake of Bible Doctrine for spiritual growth, above and beyond his will and good pleasure reaching Ultra Super-Grace.

Phil 3:3; For we and only we, in the Royal Family of God in Super-Grace, keep on, because of persistence in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, being the true circumcision for the Church Age, who worship in and by the spirit of God, under Filling of God the Holy Spirit, and boasting, glorying and pride oneself from Esprit DE Corps from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, being totally confident in Christ Jesus, and have absolutely no confidence in the human ability or thinking or talent or any factor which intrudes on Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine nor the infirmities of the flesh as adversities.

Phil 3:10; that I may, during my life, come to know him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, through Ministry of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception, and the inherent omnipotent power, of God the Father and God the Holy Spirit, of his, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, resurrection and the fellowship, association with and participation in his Undeserved Suffering or Evidence Testing, taking on the same form as the oppositional sufferings related to his physical death.

Phil 3:12-16 (seizing the high ground)
v12: Not that I have before now received or attained permanent Ultra Super-Grace status nor have I before now reached the objective of Ultra Super-Grace but now then I keep on pressing on that I might also seize and hold the high ground of Ultra Super-Grace on account of which high ground objective of Ultra Super-Grace I was also seized and held by Christ, Jesus. Members of the Royal Family of God, I do not regard or evaluate myself to have attained or overtaken and seized and held the ultimate of Pleroma or ultra super-grace but now one thing on which I concentrate, forgetting or deliberately assigning to oblivion that which lies behind the things of the great sins related to reversionism, and constantly and eagerly advancing or straining or pressing toward the front or what lies ahead through the function of Grace Apparatus for Perception as the Ultra Super-Grace objective. I keep on advancing toward the next objective of Ultra Super-Grace across no man's land, for the purpose of reward in paragraph Super-Grace 2 & 3, decoration belonging to the upward call or station highest potential blessing at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ from that self same God, God the Father by means of Christ Jesus. Therefore as many as are already believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace A or B, let us continue objective thinking of Impersonal Love for Mankind, in fact if you have a different attitude toward something, The God will reveal that to you also. However the objective to which we have attained in Super-Grace status, by the same function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, let us keep advancing in ranks by means of enforce & genuine humility and academic discipline by the same rule of the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception in persistent Momentum in the SL.

Phil 3:18-19 (Alternative to Effective Rebound for Believers); For many reversionistic believers keep walking from the past and making wrong decisions falling into various stages of reversionism and under the influence of evil, concerning, with reference to whom I have constantly, regularly, repeatedly communicated to ya'all honestly, faithfully many, many times and now, even though momentarily weeping for former friends and Christians, I continue, faithfully, to communicate that these not taking responsibility, have made themselves the enemies of the cross of That Same Christ. (1Sam 28:16) (The reversionists as enemies of the cross), Whose termination, cessation or conclusion of this life keeps on being or is ruin, the destruction which one experiences from administration of the Sin unto death discipline, whose god is his emotion in Emotional Revolt of the Soul and emotional arrogance, who have a way of life which is to glory in their shame or dishonor, or whose fame comes by cheating, lack of integrity and dishonor from involvement in the Cosmic Dynasphere #2, who keep on thinking and form and hold opinions about human viewpoint or earthly things being under the influence of evil from Satan's policy and plan.

Phil 3:20-21; For (the state or commonwealth or body politic, uniting in common interest, the profit percentage) the Sphere of our citizenship or our aristocracy, keeps on existing forever in heaven, even from which place, the palace in heaven, we eagerly wait and anticipate the savior, The Lord Jesus, The Christ at the permanent transfer of the Royal Family of God in the Rapture. Who shall change or transform the form of the body of our humble station, contamination or humility (Old Sin Nature in our Human Body), into conformity with the Resurrection Body of his glory according to the operational power from which the same one, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, keeps on being able to bring into subjection all things to himself (Angelic and Human).

Phil 4:1; Therefore My beloved brethren, Church Age believers in the Royal Family of God, deeply desired brethren on Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, whom I long to see, My object or source of happiness because of your Positive Volition, and my Victory Wreath of Glory, so in this way from your persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception from the Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace teacher, stand fast, keep on being stabilized by advancing not retreating in The Lord, reaching and holding experiential sanctification while waiting for ultimate sanctification, ones worthy of love from God.

Phil 4:5; Let or allow what is fitting, right, equitable; your over reasonable orientation to reality Super-Grace Mental Attitude and adaptability and kindness, be known to all mankind, the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is near or in interposition to provide all Logistical Grace provisions as Bravo Grace.

Phil 4:6; Stop having anxiety or being concerned or worrying about anything not even one thing the smallest of things, but in contrast, in everything, all circumstances in No Man's Land advancing toward Ultra Super-Grace and also in your life before reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, through prayer, as part of the Royal Family

of God, and entreaty for specific special personal needs for Bravo Grace logistics, AFTER thanksgivings, let the things sought, your requests be declared and revealed in the presence of face to face with The God.

Phil 4:19; Now My God will keep on implementing, fulfilling up the deficiency of all of your every spiritual and material need on the basis or according to the standards of his wealth or riches in glory by agency of being in union with Christ Jesus.

Prov 1:33; But he who listens to Bible Doctrine will live in security and be at ease from danger or dread of evil.

Prov 2:10-14; For wisdom or Bible Doctrine will enter your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and knowledge of Bible Doctrine will be pleasant in your soul (Superabundance of Happiness) application of Bible Doctrine will guard you, Understanding of Bible Doctrine will watch or mount guard over you, to deliver you from the way of evil, from the person who speaks distorted things, from those who leave the path of the righteous in reversionism to walk in the way of darkness (Blackout of the Soul) who delight in doing evil and find happiness in distortion of evil

Prov 3:7; Do not be wise in your own eyes be occupied with the lord and therefore turn away from Evil.

Prov 5:13-14; I have not listened, I have not obeyed the voice of my instructors (his father & Nathan), nor concentrated on their instructions, message of those who have taught me. (Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine) Then I was almost immediately in all kinds of evil in the middle of the worshiping congregation listening to Bible Doctrine.

Prov 8:18-21; Riches and Fame or HONOR are with me in Super-Grace blessings (Bible Doctrine), enduring wealth (integrity) and righteousness or spiritual production are with me. My production is better than pure gold, furthermore my profits surpasses the choicest silver. I, Bible Doctrine, march or advance in the way toward Honor and in the middle of the road of integrity. That I may cause those who love me (Bible Doctrine) to possess their (antagonists of believers) possessions and wealth, that I may fill their treasuries with escrow blessings from the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God in the believer.

Prov 8:33-36; Concentrate on communication of Bible Doctrine, you become wise (application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to life), DO NOT REJECT nor NEGLECT it. Happiness belongs to the one who listens to me, Bible Doctrine, guarding DAILY at my gates, waiting at my door posts. For he who finds me finds capacity for life furthermore he receives grace from the Lord. For he who fails in learning Bible Doctrine injures his own soul, and all those who hate me, Bible Doctrine love the sin unto death. (John 14:26)

Prov 11:18-19; The Reversionist earns deceptive wages, but he who sows Absolute Righteousness in super-grace has true reward. He who is persistent or maintains super-grace maturity gains Life in eternity, but he who pursues Evil will end up with his own Sin unto Death as his portion.

Prov 12:20-21; Deceit in the Right lobe of those who devise evil, but counselors of prosperity or Laws of Divine Establishment have happiness in the Right Lobe of the Soul. No Evil happens to the righteous or super-grace believer, but the evil are filled with trouble.

Prov 14:22; Will they not go astray who devise evil, but Grace and Doctrine to those who devise or are under the device of Good

Prov 15:3; The Eyes or Omnipresence of the Lord are in every place he is the observer of the evil to provide Divine Discipline and the absolute Good to provide divine blessing.

Prov 16:3-4; Commit your work to the LORD, and your plans will be established. The LORD has made everything for his own purpose, He has even manufactured the wicked for the day of evil.

Prov 16:6; By Grace and Bible Doctrine one recovers from reversionism and by Occupation with the Lord one keeps away from evil.

Prov 22:3; The Wise or super-grace believer sees evil and hides himself, but the Stupid or negative volition Believer goes on and is punished for it or destroys himself.

Prov 23:7; for as he thinks in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so he is. He says to you "Eat and drink my food and beverage!"; but his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is not with you but in fact against you and despises you.

Prov 23:15-17; (Father now speaking to his son having disciplined him properly and applied Metabolized Bible Doctrine from his own Right Lobe) My son, if your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is wise having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, Frame of Reference, norms and standards and Divine Viewpoint, my heart or Right Lobe will rejoice even my very own. Yes my reins or emotions shall rejoice when your lips speak what is doctrinal. Do not let your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul envy sinners outside the Plan of God, but live in Fear or Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ all day long.

Prov 24:1-4; Be not envious or jealous of evil persons who have the Human Viewpoint of life, nor desire to be with them; for the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul studies reversionism and plots and devises violence and revenge and is obsessed with tyranny seeing all authority as tyranny, and their lips talk of mischief or

speaking things to make people miserable, gossip, maligning, judging, etc. Through wisdom or Bible Doctrine applied a house or Edification Complex of the Soul is constructed, and by understanding of the truth of Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, one prepares himself for life; by means of knowledge from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine through the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception the rooms or chambers of categorical storage in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, are filled with something of value and something stimulating from spiritual super-grace blessings in time and physical super-grace blessings in time.

Prov 24:19-20; Do not fret yourself because of evil doers or be jealous of evil doers or be jealous of the reversionist for there will be no future for the evil one and the lamp of the evil will be put out

Ps 18:34; He trains my hands for war, so that my arms can bend a bow of bronze.

Ps 18:46-50; The LORD lives; and blessed by my rock of Zion or circumstances, Therefore exalted be the God of my deliverance, the God who executes vengeance for me and subdues peoples under me; He, delivers me from my enemies; surely you promote me above those who rise against me; you rescue me from the violent men. Therefore I will give thanks to you, Oh Lord, among all the gentiles of my staff and body guard and I will sing praises to your person. He gives great deliverance to his king, David, and shows Grace and steadfast love to the one commissioned, his anointed one, to David and his descendants for ever.

Ps 22:22-23; I will write concerning your person, God the Father, to my racial brethren; in the assembly of the congregation of destroyed Zicklag I will praise thee: You in my battalion who respect Jehovah, join in and praise him! all you sons of Jacob born spiritually dead in need of grace, become his honor in supergrace, and respect or be occupied with him, all you sons of Israel!

Ps 23:1; Because the Lord Jehovah, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, is the one who keeps on shepherding, guiding, protecting and providing for me in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, I CANNOT, will not, and do not lack anything nor suffer loss in anything in Living Grace

Ps 23:4; Also, when in this life, I, *as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God*, walk through or in a valley overshadowed by physical death, I cannot, will not, and do not fear anything about the manner of my death, about harm, malignancy, sting of death, violence of death from another person's or any category of evil, because or since you, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as God, are with me (reciprocity), Your rod of Blessing from Divine discipline from the Justice of God and your staff of Blessing and protection from Divine Deliverance and Bible Doctrine from the Justice of God, They both console and comfort me.

Ps 32:8; I (God) will teach you through Grace Apparatus for Perception and instruct you through intensification of pressure to the point of total inculcation so as you are not able to forget Bible Doctrine and thus gain wisdom for application of Bible Doctrine to life, and I will repeat your instruction over and over, again and again so you cannot forget it so that you can march under self discipline and concentration and fulfill the plan of God for your life, I will guide you with my Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul and Logistical Grace provision.

Ps 33:17-20; The War horse is a strong delusion for a victory or deliverance therefore despite it's great strength it cannot deliver or save anyone. Behold the eyes or omniscience of the Lord are on those Believers who are occupied with or respect, fear, stand in awe of him, on those who have absolute confidence or trust in time of crisis from the Faith Rest Drill 4 Stages in his unfailing love or grace. To Rescue or cause to deliver their souls from the dangers of death by dying grace and keep them alive in economic depression or crisis or other adversity. Our souls as mature believers, wait in full confidence for the Lord, he is our aid or help, he is our shield or defense in disaster. For our right lobes having put together doctrinal rationales will express superabundant happiness in him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, in disaster or under pressure, because we trust in his holy person or essence. Oh Lord, let your unfailing love or Grace be upon us according as we have ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE in You under pressure

Ps 34:16; The face of the Lord is against those who do evil in judgment and it will cause to cut them off from the memory of the world.

Ps 34:21; Evil of Reversionism will destroy the reversionist through the Sin Unto Death; and those who hate the super-grace believer will be in great agony.

Ps 35:12; They repay me evil for good to the bereavement of my soul.

Ps 35:26-27; They shall be put to shame (boshe) and caused to be brought to disgrace and shame Abner and Ishbosheth united, who gloat over my calamity! They shall be clothed with shame (bosheth) and dishonor who cause themselves to be magnified over me! Let those who desire my vindication shout for joy and be glad, and say evermore, "Great is the LORD, who delights in the welfare of his servant!"

Ps 36:1-4; A divine word withing the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of my soul concerning the rebellion or defection of the reversionist of Kelah, who have no respect of God before his, God's, eyes. For he, the reversionist of Kelah, flatters or complements himself in his own eyes, to find his own egotistical sins of pride or megalomania is to hate his sin, The flattering words of his, the reversionist of kelah, mouth are emptiness or vanity and deceit, he has ceased to be wise or lost all their doctrine in reversionism, he has ceased to be pleasing to God, He, the reversionist of Kelah, plans or plots vanity, wickedness, nothingness, or evil to hurt someone in his bed before he sleeps, he takes a stand in a way that is not Good being treacherous, and

praise a person to his face while cursing him behind his back, he does not reject evil and will do whatever he can get away with.

Ps 37:16-19; Better is A little of the mature believer than the abundance of many Evil unbelievers. So the arms of the evil unbeliever will be broken from Divine Discipline and reversionism and they will loose all the details of life and develop a greater capacity for self induced misery but the Lord sustains the Mature believer. The Lord knows the days of the mature believer in time and their inheritance will be forever. They will not be ashamed in times of evil in historical disaster, and in the days of economic depression they will have abundance and be filled and satisfied.

Ps 37:25; I have been young but now I am growing old, yet I have never seen the one with imputed divine righteousness or the super-grace believer (Divine Righteousness) forsaken nor his seed begging bread.

Ps 38:19-20; But my enemies are vigorous and numerous and many who hate me wrongfully, they repay evil for Good, they oppose me because I pursue the absolute Good. Those who repay evil for good they oppose me because I pursue the good.

Ps 46:7-9; The Lord of the Armies Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is with us, an impregnable fort is the God of Jacob who gave him salvation and prosperity, selah (REST and think about it). Fall in and pass in review or march in review, to see the works of the Lord, how the Lord has caused desolations in the land of Judah, or who is responsible for this punishment, The Lord Jesus, The Christ who causes wars to cease to the end of the earth, he smashes the bow of the Assyrian infantry and cuts to peaces their spears, he destroys the war chariots, he burns them with fire,

Ps 48:14; This God is our God forever and ever. He will be our guide even unto death.

Ps 52:1; Why do you boast in evil you mighty men or hero (sarcasm), while the Grace of God endures all the or continues every the day long.

Ps 54:5; The Evil will return to those who lie in wait for me, but put them to silence with your doctrine.

Ps 64:4-5; They that shoot in secret or from ambush at the one equipped with Metabolized Bible Doctrine the honorable, shooting at him suddenly and by sneaking and do not fear. They encourage each other to hold fast to their evil purpose or plans; they discuss laying snares secretly, thinking, "Who can see them?

Ps 89:20-37; I discovered David, My Servant (out keeping the sheep), with my holy oil and I have anointed him. David, with whom my hand will be firm in discipline with him, my arm will also make him strong. The enemy, Satan, and his policy of evil, will not lead astray or deceive him, and the son of wickedness the attractive reversionist will not control him. And I shall route and crush and shatter his enemies before his face and

strike down those who hate him (terrorists). Consequently My faithfulness and my grace or unfailing love and superabundance of happiness shall be with him, and in my name his power or strength in authority shall be exalted. I shall also establish his hand in the sea with the kingdom of the Phonecians under Hiram King of Tyre; and his right hand in the rivers defeating Moab, Amon Egypt Damascus etc. (Jordan & Euphrates and Nile) And he will call to me, "You are my father, my God, and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, the rock of my deliverance or salvation". I, God the Father, will also give to David, my first born, the highest of the kings of the earth (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ). In My unfailing love forever I, God the Father, will guard for him my grace therefore my covenant will be permanent for HIM, David. Therefore I have appointed or establish his descendant, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, forever and his throne like the days of heaven. (Prodasis) If his, David's, descendants forsake my law, the covenant or code of Moses, the doctrine needed for rulership, and do not walk in my judgments, Codes III of the Mosaic Law, the Laws of Divine Establishment, (Jews in carnality) If they violate or profane my statutes or ordinances in codex II the spiritual code, and do not keep my commandments in the decalogue the freedom code. (Apodasis) Then I will punish their transgressions with the rod of Military Invasion (here Shishak) and their iniquity with disasters of the 5th cycle of discipline. But with regard to my Grace and unfailing love I will not make null or void or abolish it from Him, David, And I will not violate my faithfulness. My covenant I will not profane or violate, nor will I alter what proceeds from my lips. One thing I,myself, have sworn by my holiness or Righteousness of God and Justice of God, That I will not lie to David. His descendant in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, shall endure forever, and his throne as long as the sun before me. He, himself, shall be established forever, like the moon and the witnesses in the sky is faithful. Selah stop and allow God to continue to work

Ps 91:10; The range of pressures or misfortunes or adversities do not touch or harm or get to me though they are trying to destroy me, neither will any totally destructive disaster even though they approach me ever destroy my inner being.

Ps 97:10; You who love the Lord Hate evil, the Lord who preserves the Souls of the Spiritual Gift ones he delivers them from the hand of the Evil one.

Ps 105:16; When he summoned a famine on the land, and broke every staff of bread

Ps 116:1-2; I love the lord, because he has heard my voice and prayers Because he listened to me, therefore I will call to him in prayer as long as I live

Ps 116:3-4; The snares of death close in on me, and the terrors of the grave have found me and overwhelmed me, I am captured by anguish and distress. Then I kept calling on the name of the Lord, "and Now I beseech you, Oh Lord, deliver my soul"

Ps 116:8-9; For thou have rescued my soul from death, my eyes from tears, my feet from stumbling, in order that I may walk before the LORD in the land of the living, precious in the sight of the lord is the death of his saints

Ps 116:15; Precious, the number 1 priority, in the sight of the lord is the death of his set apart Godly ones in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Ps 119:45; And I will seek or walk in freedom by comprehensiveness of doctrine for I seek your categorical Bible Doctrine.

Ps 119:101; I have refrained or separated my feet from every evil way or false doctrine, in order to Guard your Doctrine.

Ps 121:7; The Lord will guard you from all evil he will guard your soul with Metabolized Bible Doctrine from evil

Ps 139:1-6;Oh Lord Jehovah, you have searched me in Eternity Past and have always known me. You have known me when I sit down relaxing and when I stand up in action, from afar you understand my thinking from Eternity Past before I have existed. You have computed my journey or investigated my path through life even my lying down in sleep in fact you are intimately acquainted with all my ways. Even before there is a word formed on my tongue, behold Oh Lord, you have always known it all. You have surrounded and encircled me with protection of Logistical Grace wall of fire security behind and before, or fore and aft, and you have laid your hand upon me imputing Logistical Grace support stabilizing me and even with Divine Discipline. Your knowledge is too wonderful or too high for me, I cannot attain it (Humility response in fact we can attain it by maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul).

Ps 144:1; Being adored in Category I love is the Jehovah, my rock, strength, who trains through discipline and constant repetition my hands for hand to hand combat, and my fingers for weapons of war;

Rev 2:10; Do not fear those things which you, Ultra Super-Grace believers, are about to suffer, AD96. Behold, the devil is about to cast some of you into prison, that you may be tested, also you will have pressure and affliction for ten days. Become faithful unto death as martyrdom, and I will give you the wreath or crown of life the Bravo Cross.

Rev 2:20-23; (Thyatyra) For I have this against you, that you tolerate that woman Jezebel (Phalic Idolatry False Teachers) who calls herself a prophetess, she both teaches and seduces my servants to fornicate and eat food sacrificed to idols. But I gave her time to change her mind (rebound) however she did not wish to change her mind about her fornication (Phallic Idolatry). I will cast her into a bed (of punishment) and those who commit adultery with her into great disaster unless they change their minds about their deeds. Furthermore I will execute her followers, kill her children, by the Sin unto death, and all the churches will know that I am He who searches or investigates the emotions (Lust for illicit sex) and the right lobe of the Soul and I will administer punishment according to your activities. (Thyatyra and Corinthians)

Rom 3:3-4; For what, or Well then how stands the case with regard to the two alternatives, if certain ones refused to Believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and they do, shall their lack of faith or unbelief as maladjustment to the Justice of God at salvation, cancel the reliability or the faithfulness of the Integrity of God? No, No, No. Definitely Emphatically Not or HELL NO! Rather let the Integrity of The God be proved or demonstrated constant, valid, trustworthy or reliable even though every man or person be proved a dishonest liar; As it stands written in the past with the result that it stands written forever in Ps 54:1, 116:11"In order or for the purpose that your eternal integrity, God, may be vindicated and demonstrated just or right, by means or because of your doctrines, that you, God, might prevail and overcome and be the victor when you are slanderous judged for judging."

Rom 5:12-14; Therefore in conclusion or for this reason, just as through one man, ADAM, THE Original Sin of Adam and the Old Sin Nature, entered into the world, (created originally with the universe and after its destruction as a result of the Angelic Conflict restored for man), and so the Spiritual Death through Adam's Original Sin imputed to the Old Sin Nature and so this spiritual death from Adam's Original Sin spread, through Adam & Subsequent Pregnancies, to all mankind, because all the Human Race sinned genetically when Adam sinned. For from Adam until the Mosaic Law was given, the principle of and practice of personal sin defined by the Mosaic Law and the imputation of Adam's Original Sin to Adam's Sinful Trend in each human, was in the Cosmic Dynasphere world of Satan; but the principle or practice of personal sin was not imputed when the law did not exist. Nevertheless in contrast the spiritual death reigned or RULED from Adam until Moses (when the Mosaic Law did not exist and throughout Human History from physical birth), even over those who had not sinned personally in the likeness of Adam's Original Sin or transgression, Adam, who is a type of him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who was to be destined by Divine Decree to come.

Rom 8:1; Therefore now there is absolutely no punishment following sentencing or doom or judgment (referring to the execution of the sentence of the Lake of Fire), to those who are in union with Christ Jesus.

Rom 8:2-4; For the principle of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God who is the source of Eternal Life has set you free in Current Positional Truth in Christ, Jesus from the principle of the Old Sin Nature and the resultant Spiritual Death. For the inability of the Mosaic Law or for what was impossible from the Mosaic Law as marriage counselor because it was weak or powerless through the flesh the Old Sin Nature, The God has accomplished by having sent the unique mature adult son of himself (having the same essence as deity) Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in the LIKENESS of the flesh the human body of sin of the Old Sin Nature (humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) but he was not sin, and for a sin offering, judged the Old Sin Nature in the flesh in order that the commandment or legal

requirement or the actualization of judgment demanded by the Mosaic Law, which is divine blessing to match the Righteousness of God imputed to us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, might be filled up in us who keep walking, one day at a time, not according to the Old Sin Nature but according to God the Holy Spirit.

Rom 8:8; Moreover those carnal or reversionistic believers who are in the flesh or under authority or control of the Old Sin Nature are not able to please perfect God (Nor any unbeliever).

Rom 8:14-16; Greet, Salute, pay my respects to the great incomparable judge Asug'kritos, Phlegon the pastor at Marathon, Hermas the pastor of Dalmatia, Pat'robas the roman martyred 11 years later, Hermogenes of 2Tim 1:15 who became a reversionist, and the other believers not in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in their church who are associated with them. Greet, Salute, pay my respects to Philologos, and Ioulia, and Nereus and his sister Olympas, and all the saints consistently under Positive Volition associated with them. Greet, Salute, pay respects to each other with a holy kiss treating each other with Impersonal Love. All the Local Churches of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ greet, salute or pay respects to Ya'all the Local Churches in Rome.

Rom 8:21; Therefore the material universe or nature itself also shall in reality in the future be set free from the bondage or slavery to corruption or peasantry and into the freedom of the glory, ultimate sanctification with Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and Human Good, with reference to the children of the God.

Rom 8:24; For with reference to that future hope or expectation, we were saved at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone. Now when hope or expectation is being seen it is not hope or expectation. For who hopes or has expectation for what he sees?

Rom 8:28-34; Therefore, we, Consistently Advancing Believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace or Ultra Super-Grace, have learned dogmatically to KNOW from reverse concentration, IN FACT, that to those mature believers ONLY who are elected according to privilege, forming the pivot, as a part or on the basis of a predetermined plan (Execution of the Plan of God, X + Y + Z = Maximum Glorification of God) who persist in Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who love THE Unique God, from Reciprocal Love for God Motivation, HE, God, CAUSES all things, both blessing in time and Undeserved Suffering, to continue to work together for good of intrinsic value, to the advantage of those, both individual mature believers and the client nation. Because we know, from doctrine, that whom he, God the Father, has foreknown before hand from Eternity Past, he also decided beforehand, predesigned, foreordained or predestined us into the perfect Plan of God for our life; to be conformed ones, as Royal Family of God in the Church Age through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit, to the image of his son (who provided our Spiritual Life), in order that He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, might become the first born through

resurrection, ascension and session to the right hand of God, among many brothers of the Royal Family of God. And whom He, God the Father, decided beforehand, predesigned, foreordained or predestined, providing a plan for us to share all Christ had in Hypostatic Union, these same ones, church age believers, as Royal Family of God, he also elected to privilege, giving responsibility for execution of the plan, moreover these same ones he also justified or declared righteous or vindicated at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and execution of the Spiritual Life, and whom he justified these same ones, he also glorified or gave a share of glory from imputed blessing in time and eternity. THEREFORE or CONSEQUENTLY, face to face with these things (prior context Rom 8:28-30), to what conclusion are we forced? If the GOD [is] (ellipsis) for us or on our side, and it is true He is, who [can be] (ellipsis) against us as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God? The God the Father who did not even spare his very own unique adult son, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union, but He, God the Father, delivered him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, over through judicial imputation of all personal sins to Substitutionary Spiritual Death judgment as an act of justice, as a substitute on behalf of all of us; it is surprising that you cannot understand this logical concept; how shall he, God the Father NOT also, with him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, graciously or beneficially in grace give to us from the Justice of God the all things as temporal blessing, He DOES. (ALL Grace Blessings in time) Who shall bring charges or accusations or judicial proceedings against or judge the elect or chosen Royal Family of the God? God is the one who always vindicates or justifies; Who is the one carnal reversionistic believer who condemns through maligning and judging a believer's status as a Christian? Christ Jesus is the one who died spiritually in substitution for us, Yes rather, having been resurrected or raised from the dead, who is ascended and seated at the right hand of God the Father, who indeed as our royal high priest intercedes with prayer and petitions and appeals the Supreme Court of Heaven on behalf of us as our defense attorney?

Rom 8:31-32; THEREFORE or CONSEQUENTLY, face to face with these things (prior context Rom 8:28-30), to what conclusion are we forced? If the GOD [is] (ellipsis) for us or on our side, and it is true He is, who [can be] (ellipsis) against us as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God? The God the Father who did not even spare his very own unique adult son, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union, but He, God the Father, delivered him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, over through judicial imputation of all personal sins to Substitutionary Spiritual Death judgment as an act of justice, as a substitute on behalf of all of us; it is surprising that you cannot understand this logical concept; how shall he, God the Father NOT also, with him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, graciously or beneficially in grace give to us from the Justice of God the all things as temporal blessing, He DOES. (ALL Grace Blessings in time)

Rom 8:35; (rhetorical question) Who shall divide or separate us from the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and his love for us? (answer NO ONE) Shall extreme circumstantial pressure afflictions or oppressions of historical disasters, or pressure of mental anguish, or persecution because of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, or

deprivation of food, or nakedness from being deprived of clothing, or natural dangers, or suffering from military defeat or disaster, or revolution, or crime or violence?

Rom 10:1; Brethren, fellow believers in the Royal Family of God, now concentrate, on the one hand, the wish, earnest desire, or mental motivation of my Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and my prayer to or face to face with the God on behalf of them, unbelievers in Israel, even though they through their own negative volition have refused to believe in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, is for their salvation.

Rom 11:5; Therefore In the same manner also, there has come to be at this present period of time in the Church Age, a remnant or pivot of mature believers according to a selection or election to privilege by grace from the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, which has come into existence from the past.

Rom 12:1; Therefore, I (command) urge, encourage, exhort, seek to persuade you, NOW, believers in the Royal Family of God, by means of God's rational compassionate sympathetic mercies of grace blessing from the Justice of God, that you constantly place your bodies under orders as a living holy sacrifice, by using the rebound procedure constantly and the resultant Filling of God the Holy Spirit, this is acceptable and well pleasing to our God; which is your rational and spiritual service or worship.

Rom 12:3-; For I say or communicate through the grace (the policy of God for mankind and for blessing for believers) which has been given to me, to everyone, all believers in the Church Age, who is among you who have the potential for becoming invisible hero's and part of the pivot, STOP persisting in over thinking of self in terms of arrogance in your thinking, beyond the point of what you ought to think, but think objectively in terms of sanity for the purpose of being rational without illusion about self or others, as the God has assigned to each one of us a standard of thinking from Bible Doctrine the Royal Family Honor Code.

Rom 12:8; If counseling for comfort and encouragement, then counsel in the sphere of the gift of counseling; he who intensively gives from the spiritual gift of giving, let him give with generosity; he who manages administration, do so with diligence; he who performs acts of mercy, do so with graciousness.

Rom 12:9-10; Your Impersonal Love for Mankind should be non hypocritical and must function without hypocrisy; hate, detest, avoid always despise the evil as policy of Satan as ruler of the world and the function of the Old Sin Nature as ruler of life, adhere to the good of intrinsic value Plan of God; With reference to your brotherly or Impersonal Love, be devoted with a family affection to each other; with reference to your honor the Royal Family Honor Code, let each one esteem others in the Royal Family of God more highly than self, thus make it a matter of honor to give precedence to others in the Royal Family of God.

Rom 12:16; BE or KEEP ON thinking with the same Mental Attitude and categories of thinking based on the Royal Family Honor Code, toward one another; do not be thinking high lofty things in terms of arrogance, but constantly associate under the Royal Family Honor Code, with people you consider humble or below your station in life; Stop becoming or being wise in your own conceited estimation and opinions.

Rom 12:21; Stop being overcome or conquered by EVIL but overcome or conquer EVIL with the Absolute Good of intrinsic value (Rom 8:28) of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thus the Plan of God (X + Y + Z)

Rom 13:1-8; All human beings be subordinating yourselves to duly constituted governing authorities under divine institution #4, for there is NEVER any authority except those delegated by or from the source of God that is those authorities which do exist are established or have been delegated by God. Therefore, in view of v1, he, the reversionistic believer, who forms a battle line of resistance to delegated authority in the Laws of Divine Establishment, especially in Divine Institution #4, nationalism; have opposed the ordinance of God the Laws of Divine Establishment and divine institutions, in fact also these reversionistic, apostate, anti establishment, liberal, socialistic Believers who oppose the Laws of Divine Establishment, will receive condemnation, punishment or judgment as Divine Discipline in time on themselves from God. For government rulers or authorities or officials of national state, are not a cause of fear for Good of intrinsic value or moral functions under Laws of Divine Establishment Good of freedom, privacy and property, but for the evil of crime, revolution, conspiracy for violent overthrow of the government, assassination, socialism, communism, any system which deprives the individual of freedom, privacy and property in the name of common good, really now, (sarcasm) do you desire to continually, not or have no, fear of authority then keep on doing what is Absolute Good in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and good in the time in which you live and fulfill the equation of hope under Royal Family Honor Code, and you will have legitimate recognition, praise, approval from it, the authority of human government. For it, Human Government authority functioning under Laws of Divine Establishment, is a minister of God or one with delegated authority to serve from God to You for the purpose of the Good under the Laws of Divine Establishment for your advance to Spiritual Maturity, but if you do what is EVIL ie criminal activity, being a traitor or communist or draft dodger, cheating on income tax, advocating liberalism, supporting welfare panaceas, maybe you will and maybe you will not, you should keep on fearing or being afraid for Government does not wear the sword of authority and bear the sword of capitol punishment for nothing or in vain, for you see certainly it, government, keeps on being the civil servant minister of God with delegated authority as government, a punisher for the purpose of divine wrath to him who accomplishes or practices evil. Therefore for this reason it is necessary to be in subjection or subordinate to or in recognition of governing authority not only because of the wrath or punishment for rejection of establishment by Law Enforcement also because of the conscience. For this reason also (v5) keep on paying taxes, for this reason they in authority are public servant ministers of God for they who are making a career of and persisting in

devoting themselves full time to these things of public service. Therefore, Render or discharge one's obligation fulfilling one's duty and giving back in return therefore to all in civil authority what is due them, direct taxes to whom direct tax is due, indirect taxes or custom duties where indirect tax or custom duty is due, give respect or fear for the authority especially law and Law Enforcement agencies where respect or fear is due, honor to whom honor is due. Owe nothing to anyone, have a personal sense of obligation in all relationships, except to tolerate (love) each other of the same category as other believers, for when he tolerates (loves) the believer with a different personality or opinion as part of his duty under the Royal Family Honor Code with Impersonal Love and toleration with respect for the Righteousness of God imputed by God to all believers, he who tolerates (loves) the other believers has fulfilled the deficiencies of the Mosaic Law.

Rom 13:10; The Love required by the Royal Family Honor Code, namely Impersonal Love, does not produce evil to a neighbor or those in our periphery, therefore the love is the fulfillment of the law and the Royal Family Honor Code.

Rom 13:14; But put on the Lord Jesus Christ by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and entrance into Status Quo Super-Grace and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, and STOP making provision for or giving forethought to the Old Sin Nature because of Lusts or distractions from Bible Doctrine in crusades or by persons or business or anything which involve sin, Human Good or evil.

Rom 14:1; Now receive or accept or welcome that one who is deficient in Bible Doctrine and thus feeble or weak, not for the purpose of getting into quarrels or disputes about non-essential opinions.

Rom 14:2-3; On the one hand, one, the strong mature believer, believes and is convinced holding the opinion from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, that he may eat any food or drink any beverage, while, on the other hand, that one because of weakness from lack of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and resultant reversionism, the weak legalistic or antinomian believer eats only vegetables. Let him who eats, the strong believer, stop despising or regarding, treating or rejecting with contempt, him who abstains, the weak believer, furthermore he who does not eat or abstains, the weak reversionistic or infant believer, stop judging that one mature strong believer who keeps on eating everything; for the God has admitted him the strong mature believer into friendship.

Rom 14:4-; You there, Who are you, who do you think you are, the one who keeps judging the (female) domestic slave belonging to another? To his own Lord, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, he stands firm and stabilized with steady advance without emotion to take the objective under maximum pressure under discipline and authority or he becomes a casualty falling or being slain in the battle from reversionism. For the

Lord has the power to cause him to stand fast to hold his ground and when you judge stand he will.

Rom 14:8; For just as when we, believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, live, we live to the Lord, so also when we, believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, die under dying grace; we die for the Lord, so not only if we live maybe we will and maybe we will not based on the timing of God, but also if we die when life is over, we are the Lord's.

Rom 14:9; You see, for this reason, Christ died, and lived, in order that or for the purpose that he might be the Lord over both dead and living.

Rom 14:10-12; But You there, weak, legalistic and antinomian growing and reversionistic believers, why do you always judge, malign, gossip about your fellow Believer, or you also strong believer why do you despise or regard your fellow weak Believer with contempt as their not being as spiritual as yourself? For all believers, the Royal Family of God, shall be present or stand by under orders at the Presiding Judgment Seat or Tribunal Throne of The God, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. For it stands written, (Is 45:23) "As I keep on living, having perfect attributes and essence and integrity, and By myself I have sworn the Lord communicates, 'Every knee shall kneel in genuflex to me, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, and every tongue in every language shall confess to the God the Father." So Therefore, each one of us, the Royal Family of God, shall give an account to God, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, concerning himself

Rom 14:13; Therefore let us, from our own motivation of Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, not, from now on judge each other but rather distinguish, prefer, or determine this, instinctively and instantaneously, not to place an obstacle, distraction or trap in front of his fellow weak Believer.

Rom 14:14; I absolutely know and have received true complete confidence; based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine being persuaded; in the sphere of the Lord Jesus; in union with him from the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit, the Plan of God for the Royal Family of God; that there is nothing either ceremonially nor commonly unclean by means of itself; except for any weak believer, without Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thus with a false standard of conscience, who presumes something to be unclean, to that one weak believer it is unclean.

Rom 14:15-16; For If, and it is true, because of food, your brother, the weak believer in the Royal Family of God, is becoming sad, distressed or distracted in his arrogant subjectivity, you now are no longer walking according to the standard of love. Because of that food or meat, STOP destroying or ruining him the weak immature believer, or do not let what you eat cause the ruin or destruction of one, the weak believer; for whom Christ, in receiving imputation of all personal sins on the cross, died spiritually. Therefore let not the absolute good of intrinsic value of Maturity Adjustment to the

Justice of God attained by you be slandered, defamed, injured by false accusations or maligning.

Rom 14:18; For he who serves The Christ, the anointed appointed savior of the earth, thus in this, is well pleasing to The God and respected by men.

Rom 14:20; Because of or on account of Food, do not destroy, pull down, nullify, or demolish the building of the Edification Complex of the Soul in another believer, the work or plan of God. In fact to be sure, every category of food is indeed ceremonially clean or pure with regard to the soul or thinking and is edible, but it becomes evil for that man, the strong mature believer, who is inflexible about non-essential applications, who by eating gives offense to the positive weak believer;

Rom 14:21-23; It is honorable not to eat meat nor to drink wine, under the Royal Family Honor Code, in certain specific situations, or do anything else (formula elipsis) by which your brother weak believer stumbles because of your violation of his taboos. You there, advancing and mature strong believers, the doctrine which you have and hold, be having it, Bible Doctrine, in an inflexible relationship to yourself in the sight of and before The God; happinesses to the one mature strong believer who is Sharing the Happiness of God, who does not condemn nor judge himself in what he tests and decides through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to approve. But he, the weak believer, who has worrying doubts, taking issue with self and wavering from his own Norms and Standards, has already been condemned by his conscience, and is therefore in a state of self condemnation if he eats or drinks his personal forbidden things, because he does not act in eating or drinking by means of doctrine; and everything which is not eaten by means of Bible Doctrine is tantamount or equivalent to sin.

Rom 15:1-4; Now we, the strong in doctrine or mature believers are obligated under the Royal Family honor code to keep on bearing the weaknesses of the weak in doctrine or baby believers who will eventually grow; don't hinder their growth and do not accommodate or strive to please ourselves. Let each one of us mature believers accommodate or strive to please or accommodate his neighbor those to whom you have contact for the purpose of the good or the weak believer's momentum in advancing to spiritual maturity developing the edification complex. For even the Christ did not accommodate or strive to please Himself but as it stands written in the past with results that last forever {Psalms 69:9} "the 'blasphemous insults' of those who insulted You, God the Father, fell on Me." {Christ on the cross} For or in explanation, as many things that have been written before or in former times for our, Church Age believers, instruction or teaching or inculcation were written in order that we through perseverance or patient endurance and through encouragement or comfort of the scriptures may have and hold Hope or absolute confidence in the Integrity of God.

Rom 15:5-7; Now may The God of perseverance and encouragement or comfort or Hope give to you (for your advantage or disadvantage based on your attitude toward

consistent daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine) to be constantly thinking and sculpting thought selecting the same category of doctrinal thoughts (Royal Family Honor Code) pertinent for the moment, in the presence with one another, according to Christ Jesus, In order that with one mind, objective or purpose, one unified motivation from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, by one doctrinal message taught by your right Pastor Teacher, you may glorify the God even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. Obviously, therefore be receiving one another as believers of the same kind, from the standards of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul even as The Christ has received us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God despite our saturation with sin, Human Good and Evil, for the purpose of the glory of The God.

Rom 15:6-; In order that with one mind, objective or purpose, one unified motivation from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, by one doctrinal message taught by your right Pastor Teacher, you may glorify the God even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Rom 15:11-12; and citing another passage, (Ps 117:1), "Celebrate and Praise the Lord from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, all you Mature Gentile believers, and applaud him all you people"; and again Isaiah communicates in the past (Is 11:10), "There shall in the future, at the first advent of Jesus of Nazareth The Christ, be a root sprout from Jesse, the messiah, even he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who shall rise up into existence historically and in bodily resurrection, to rule over the Gentiles; therefore in the future GREAT mature Gentile believers shall have confidence."

Rom 15:16-17; That I should be a servant such as a government official or minister a communicator of the doctrines of Christ Jesus to the Gentiles, ministering as a priest using physical visual training aids such as the sacrifice altar, the gospel of God, in order that the offering consisting of the Gentiles to God through the Local Church, might be acceptable to God, having been sanctified or set apart by the God the Holy Spirit. Therefore in Christ Jesus as aristocracy in the Royal Family of God, I, Paul, have from the past and continue always to have Esprit DE Corps, functioning under the Royal Family Honor Code understanding essentials vs non-essentials, in those things of Bible Doctrine, pertaining to The God.

Rom 15:18; For I, Paul, will not dare or presume to speak about anything except what Christ has achieved or accomplished or brought about through me as a missionary, resulting in obedience, due to Adjustment to the Justice of God (X + Y + Z), of the Gentiles because of doctrinal communication by word and professionalism as a missionary staying with fact being objective avoiding pettiness and recriminations.

Filling of God the Holy Spirit, with the result that I, starting from Jerusalem even on a circuit as far as Illyricum, have implemented preaching and evangelizing, to fill up a deficiency where there is Positive Volition, fulfilling the good news of the gospel and doctrines of Christ,

Rom 15:27; In fact, For or Yes, they have decided with pleasure to do this, to give, in fact, they are or keep on being indebted or have self imposed obligation under the Royal Family Honor Code, to them. For you see, if the Gentiles have shared in spiritual things belonging to them, the Jewish believers, and they have throughout the whole Church Age, and they, the Gentiles believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, are also obligated to minister by service in material things to them throughout the Church Age.

Rom 16:17; Now I urgently appeal to, exhort, comfort, encourage, beseech or energetically urge you advancing or mature Believers in the Royal Family of God, keep your eyes on or mark or be discerning or take critical notice of being alert with regard to, those weak believers who keep on causing dissensions, divisions, apostasies and temptations or strife and hindrances or offenses, trapping by causing enticement of people to get out of fellowship contrary to the Bible Doctrine which you have consistently learned from a Pastor Teacher, IN FACT, keep avoiding, shunning, separating yourself or turning away from them.

Rom 16:19; Certainly, I am confident, the report of your obedience or authority orientation has reached or become known to the ears of everyone, consequently because of you I rejoice and am delighted with and admiring you, But I keep wanting you to be wise, smart or learned, sagacious ones with reference to the Divine Good, the Plan of God, and unravaged or unharmed or not destroyed maintaining integrity with reference to the evil;

Rom 16:20; In Fact the God of the prosperity imputed to believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from their persistence and consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, will soon smash, crush break in pieces Satan under your feet in a short time (the 2nd advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ). The grace of our Lord Jesus be with you. Amen

Rom 16:25; Now to him, God the Father, who is, because of his essence, able, under the divine decree, to stabilize, support, sustain, hold upright and immovable, strengthen, establish you through Logistical Grace, according to the historical presentation of my gospel or good news of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the whole Christian Way of Life, and the public communication or proclamations of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, according to the unveiling revelation and disclosure of the mystery of Church Age doctrine, which has been concealed, kept silent with reference to past history, long ages past.

Titus 1:1; Paul a Slave of God and an apostle of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, according to the faith or Bible Doctrine of God's Elected ones to privilege and the full knowledge of Bible Doctrine according to the norms of godliness which leads to Spiritual Maturity.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Glossary

39 Irrevocable Assets – These are imputed to each new believer at the MOMENT of his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone.

Efficacious Grace. Eph. 1.13
Eternal Life. Jn 3:15-16, 3:36, 10:28, 6:47; 1 Jn 5:11-13.
Sealing of God the Holy Spirit. Eph 4:20; Eph 1:13; 2 Cor 1:22.
Regeneration. Jn 3.
Righteousness of God.Rom 3:22; 1 Cor 1:30; 2 Cor 5:21; Phil 3:9.
Justification. Rom 3:28, 4:1-5, 25, 5:1-2, 9, 8:30; Gal 2:16, Tit 3:7.
Reconciliation. 2 Cor 5:19; . Rom 5:10; Col 1:20; Col 1:22.
Propitiation. Rom 3:22-26; 1 Jn 2:2, 4:10.
Unlimited Atonement. 2 Cor 5:14-15, 19; 1 Tim 2:6, 4:10; Tit 2:11; Heb 2:9; 2 Pet 2:1; 1 Jn 2:2.
Redemption. Gal 3:13; Eph 1:7; Tit 2:14; 1 Pet 1:18-19.
Baptism of the Holy Spirit. 1 Cor 12:13; Gal 3:26-27
Indwelling of God the Father. Jn 14:23; Eph 4:6; 2 Jn 9; Eph 1:3, 6, 12.
Indwelling of God the Son. Jn 14:20, 17:22-23; Rom 8:10; 2 Cor 13:5; Gal 2:20; Col 1:27.
The Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit. Rom 8:11; 1 Cor 3:16, 6:19-20; 2 Cor 6:16.
Election, Eph 1:4.
Predestination, Eph 1:5.
Equal Privilege and Equal Opportunity of DIVINE Assets.
Positional Sanctification. Heb 1-2.
Related to God the Son by Biblical analogy.
New Spiritual Species. 2 Cor 5:17; Gal 6:15.
Royal Family of God Jn 1:18, 6:46; 1 Tim 6:15-16, 1:17; 1 Jn 4:12; Rom 1:3-4; Rev 17:14; 19:16.
Universal Priesthood . 1 Pet 1:5,9; Rev 1:6, 5:10, 20:6.
Royal Ambassadorship. 2 Cor 5:20.
Royal family of God gift to God the Son, Jn 10:29, 17:2, 6, 9, 11.
Eternal Inheritance. Eph 1:14; 1:18, 3:6; Rom 8:17; Gal 3:29, 4:6-7;; 1 Pet 1:4, 3:7; Heb 9:15.
Distribution of Spiritual Gifts. Eph 4:7-11.
Availability of Divine Power.
Entrance into the Protocol Plan of God.
Transferred into the Kingdom of God. Col 1:13b.
Judgment Removed. Jn 3:18; Rom 8:1; Heb 9:27-28.
Deliverance from the Kingdom of Satan. Col 1:13a.
Deliverance from the power of the old sin nature. Rom 2:29; Phil 3:3; Col 2:11; Eph 4:22.
Access to God. (in prayer), Rom 5:2; Eph 2:18; Heb 4:14, 16, 10:19-20.

All scar tissue is removed from the soul. Isa 43:25, 44:22.
Blessings deposited – Escrow Blessings for Time & Eternity.
A secure foundation. 1 Cor 3:11, 10:4; Eph 2:20.
Eternal Security. John 10.
A Guaranteed Resurrection Body. Jn 11:25

Adjustment to the Justice of God – Divine grace is administered through the essence of God. Ultimately, all blessing or discipline from God to us must be filtered through His justice. As goes the justice of God, so goes blessing or cursing to us. It occurs in 3 areas, Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God, Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Afortiori Logic – This is a Greek debaters technique which basically says that if something which is more demanding or difficult or requires more effort to accomplish IS accomplished then that which is LESS demanding or difficult or requires less effort is sure to be accomplished.

Angelic Conflict – The unseen war which exists between Lucifer, son of the morning, called today Satan or the Devil and those angelic creatures who chose to follow him and GOD, which originated because of the Arrogance of Lucifer deciding he could do the same job as God in running the universe when he said, "I will be like the most High".

Apostasy – Falling away from the system of belief arrived at through the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization and Application of Bible doctrine, 2Th 2:3. Rejection of Bible Doctrine for the believer is entering into reversionism which is apostasy.

Baptism of God the Holy Spirit -- One of seven salvation ministries of God the Holy Spirit whereby the omnipotence of the Holy Spirit enters the believer into union with Christ, making the Church Age believer a part of the royal family of God.

Blackout of the soul – The status of the believer with persistent negative volition to doctrine, which results in erasure of any Metabolized Bible Doctrine previously accumulated in the soul.

Category I Love – The love for God expressed as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ but also includes loving God the Father and God the Holy Spirit.

Category II Love – The romantic love involved with 1 special person in life of the opposite gender in romance and ultimately marriage.

Category III Love – The love involved in close friendship with other individuals.

Church Age – The dispensation of intercalation inserted when the Age of Israel was temporarily halted by the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline in 70 AD as a result of Jewish overwhelming apostasy.

Client Nation – a national entity under the principle of divine institution #4, nationalism, which is responsible for custodianship and dissemination of the Word of God, Bible doctrine in the Church Age taking the place of Israel which is under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline.

Cosmic Dynasphere I – The system of Satan to control this world based on the Interlocking System of Arrogance which involves many areas of Arrogance sins and function.

Cosmic Dynasphere II – The system of Satan to control this world based on the Interlocking System of Hatred which involves Emotional Sins.

Dispensation – An administrative period of Human History under the auspices of God. A divine categories of human history; therefore, both the divine outline and the divine interpretation of human history. A period of time during which a particular revelation of God's mind and God's will is operative, and during which man is tested as to his obedience to that specific manifestation of God's will, purpose, and plan.

Divine Decree – The decree of God is his eternal, holy, wise and sovereign purpose comprehending at once all things which ever were, are or will be in their causes, conditions, successions and relations and determining their certain futurition. The decree of God is his eternal and immutable will regarding the future existence of events of time and the precise manner and order of their occurrence. It is the sum total of the Plan of God for the Human Race encompassing all of Human History anticipated by the omniscience of God in Eternity Past and simultaneously put into the decree as reality. It is the purpose of God relating to all events in history as one single all encompassing, all comprehensive, intention perceiving all events, the free as free, the necessary as necessary, together with all their causes, conditions and relations as one indivisible system of things every link which is essential to the integrity of the whole.

Divine Discipline – The punitive action taken by the justice of God under his Grace Policy to correct, punish, encourage, train, and motivate the believer's free will toward the plan of God for all dispensations. This occurs collectively for nations under the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline.

Divine Dynasphere – God's Power system for the believer in the Church Age with 8 areas or gates of entry and function including Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, Enforced & Genuine Humility, Bible Doctrine Orientation to reality, Personal Love for God the Father, Impersonal Love for Mankind, Momentum Testing, Spiritual Maturity.

Divine Good – Production in the Spiritual Life of the advancing or mature believer under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

Divine Institutions – The systems created by God for the proper function and protection of the Human Race in the Angelic Conflict to allow a resolution of the Angelic Conflict appeal trail. There are 4 Divine Institutions including, Freedom (Volition), Marriage, Family, and Government each with its own specific area of and structure for function.

Divine Viewpoint – Orientation of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul.

Election – A system of privilege designed by the Integrity of God in Eternity Past relating each believer to the Plan of God through Grace without regard to his status in the Spiritual Life .

Enforced Humility – Any system of discipline instilled and based on the proper function of some organizational authority whether it be outside the individual or based on his personal self discipline.

Essentials – The absolute truths in life of the gospel of Christ, the Laws of Divine Establishment, and all other Bible Doctrines

Equation of Hope – The outline of the Plan of God by R. B. Thieme Jr.

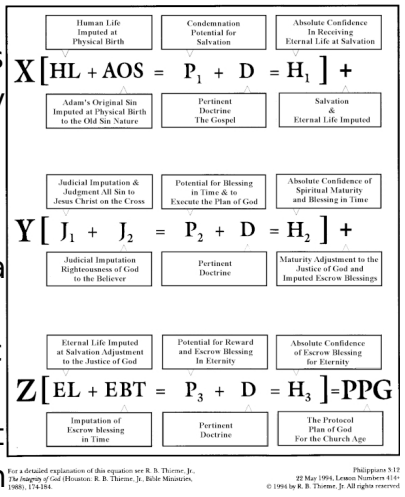
Evidence Testing – This occurs for the believer who reaches the status of receiving Ultra Super Grace blessings in advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in 2 Categories:

- In relationship to Life or Man
- In relationship to God

This requires of the believer a maximum orientation to GRACE and a maximum Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

Evil – The plan and policy of Satan to rule this world. It is satanic THINKING and satanic doctrine.

Filling of God the Holy Spirit – Is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in every believer to control the soul which is initiated at Salvation



Adjustment to the Justice of God and is lost as a result of the believer committing any sin but which is regained by the use of the rebound procedure of 1John 1:9.

Foreknowledge – Is the understanding of God of what has been decreed as reality from the omniscience of God which knows what will occur as opposed to what might occur.

Forward Line of Troops – The development and deployment by the believer from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine of the 10 Problem Solving Devices into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to provide a defensive barrier against all soul interference and distraction.

Genuine Humility – The voluntary conformity to the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and / or Bible Doctrine developed as a result of properly functioning under Enforced Humility.

Grace – The plan and policy of God toward mankind which is all that God can do for man which he CAN NOT earn nor deserve based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross.

Grace Apparatus for Perception – The mechanic for the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for the believer based on the ministry and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

Hamartiology – The study of Sin.

Human Good – The function or production resulting from operating under the principles of the satanic plan and policy for this world, EVIL.

Human Viewpoint – Orientation of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer and Unbeliever based on maximum involvement with EVIL.

Jeshurun, (heb) – The remnant of mature believers who have advanced into and beyond Super Grace Statue Quo in the face of a declining number in the Pivot. Moses was the founder of the unique fraternity of mature believers that think that Bible doctrine is more important than anything else in life, Jeshurun. This Hebrew noun is used four times in the Old Testament—JESHURUN, and it was taken verb (heb) JASHER, which means to go straight to an objective, to be upright, to be blameless, to be righteous in a good sense, to have integrity. The noun denotes believers whose spiritual life is compatible with the righteousness of God. Therefore the noun (heb) JESHURUN means "righteous ones" and from that comes the fraternity of "upright ones." The noun is found in **Deut 32:15; 33:5; 33:26** and **Is 44:2**. Entrance into this elite fraternity of believers is by becoming a spiritually mature believer. You stay in the fraternity by the consistent use of rebound and consistent persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Jeshurun is the surname of that group or fraternity of Jews who lived in harmonious rapport with God after salvation. Jeshurun is not formed through physical birth, nor does salvation guarantee it. It is a result of harmonious rapport with God by the believer who fulfills the spiritual life provided for him by God. There are a small group of Jeshurun believers in every generation of human history, even when the sustaining pivot of mature believers of the client nation is gone, but they are removed when the fifth cycle of discipline to a nation is administered. Jeshurun are ordinary people with extraordinary invisible impact. The fullness of blessing from God is the love gift of God to the Jeshurun. In every generation of the Jewish Age and Church Age God is glorified by this small group of believers called the Jeshurun. Jeshurun exist during the Church Age but not under that title because we have a universal priesthood of believers. Jeshurun ends with the Rapture of the Church. This status of the believer is the highest rank of promotion in all human history. In order to make it this far in the spiritual life you must not ever be discouraged by your sins but remain consistent in the use of Rebound and then keep moving forward as did Paul **(Phil**

3:13). Spiritual maturity plus cognitive invincibility plus occupation with Christ plus evidence testing equals maximum glorification of God or the status of Jeshurun.

Judicial Imputation – Is when some aspect or characteristic or attribute is provided as a result of the Sovereignty of God and Righteousness of God and Justice of God deciding to so provide it without the recipient deserving to receive it and without it having a home or target in which it should reside. At the point of the crucifixion of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, while he was on the cross, for 3 hours God imputed to him all human sin for all of Human History and then judged them in him. Therefore also as a result of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, the believer becomes the recipient of the Absolute Righteousness of God as a judicial imputation which balances the scales.

Kardia – Greek for Heart referring to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Law of Expediency – Is directed primarily toward the unbeliever dealing with the believer's testimony in witnessing or evangelism of the unbeliever. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will restrain his liberty, in conduct and responses, with regard to the erroneous thinking of false standards in order to provide the unbeliever with a clear understanding that the primary issue of his life is the Bible Doctrine of the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and that Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. (1Cor9:16-23)

Law of Liberty – Is directed toward self so that the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God has the right to do certain things that will not cause him to sin and lose fellowship and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. He is at liberty to conduct himself following a Modus Vivendi along the lines of Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth in the society in which he lives without succumbing to legalistic taboos from religion or false doctrine. 1Cor 8:4+9)

Law of Love – Is directed toward God in motivational virtue as Personal Love for God the Father and toward Man in functional virtue of Impersonal Love for Mankind. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will restrain his conduct in public or in the presence of immature positive believers or positive unbelievers regarding his freedom and liberty or any other false issues in order to NOT distract these weak believers from the primary issue in life, Bible Doctrine. (1Cor 8:13)

Law of Supreme Sacrifice – Is always directed toward God and requires the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to often forsake normal living and legitimate functions in life to serve the Lord in a specialized capacity or in a historical crisis. This believer while engaged in undeserved suffering for blessing as a part of his testing in the Spiritual Life will never make an issue of his condition or situation but maintain the primary issue for all immature believers and unbelievers as Bible Doctrine. Under this law a few normal things in life are set aside when they interfere with concentration on a special ministry or leadership function in the Spiritual Life. This status is designed by God for maximum production and is where God has provided something better in place of whatever the believer normally would have had in life, as with Jeremiah and Paul. (Jer 16:2, 1Cor 9:1-15)

Laws of Divine Establishment – Laws or rules God has ordained for the survival, protection and freedom of the human race during the course of human history to allow completion of the Angelic Conflict appeal. They provide the freedom to fulfill the divine plan as ordained in the divine decrees and are designed and directed toward both believer and unbeliever.

Liberalism – Is the toleration of all systems of thinking despite not agreeing with them nor accepting them. This is NON-EXISTENT today and what is called Liberalism is in fact RADICALISM.

Loser Believer – The loser believer combines emotional sins of the Interlocking System of Hatred and arrogance sins of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and functions under the 3 Arrogance Skills. He has problem solving incompetence resulting in perpetual carnality and has severely neglected or totally rejected Bible Doctrine and as a result is the Enemy of the Cross, the Enemy of God, and has become a Hater of God. (**John 15:23**)

Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God – Is the result of the believer fulfilling the Plan of God and his purpose in life of consistent and persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine moving from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual infancy through progressive stages of development to Spiritual Maturity having accumulated a maximum quantity of Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It is where he receives a package of 5 categories of incredible blessings for his life in time and a guarantee of special blessings for his life in eternity.

Metabolized Bible Doctrine – Bible doctrine which has been taught, understood academically and accepted by faith under the ministry and Filling of God the Holy Spirit therefore usable for application to life's experiences.

Momentum Testing – Occurs to test the believer in spiritual adulthood prior to reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in 4 categories:

- Thought Testing
  - Mental Attitude vs Mental Attitude Sins
- People Testing
  - Dealing with obnoxious people
- System Testing
  - Unfair systems or organizations such as in Job or Education or Military functions.
- Disaster Testing
  - Historical, Natural, and National catastrophe and disaster.

Nous – Greek for the Left Lobe of the Soul where academic comprehension or understand of Bible Doctrine occurs when it is perceived.

Non-Essentials – The accourdaments and accouterments of life, the DETAILS of life, over and above Bible Doctrine.

Operation Z – The structural involvement and mechanical process of learning Bible Doctrine based on the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Positive Volition Faith as a non-meritorious system of perception on the part of the believer. It involves God the Holy Spirit providing Bible Doctrine to the Human Spirit when it is taught by a qualified prepared Pastor Teacher. This Doctrine is then, in addition, immediately transferred to the Left Lobe of the Soul for academic comprehension where it is staged for the believer to accept or reject on the basis of Faith. Accepting the Bible Doctrine by faith results in its being transferred by God the Holy Spirit to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for distribution into the memory and categorical storage areas, the norms and standards, Frame of Reference, and viewpoint and made available for application to life.

Postulates of Divine Integrity

Advantage == Integrity of God, Capacity from Metabolized Bible Doctrine + Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Potential == Imputed Absolute Righteousness

Capacity == Metabolized Bible Doctrine from GAP, the thinking of Christ, the Justice of God.

Potential + Capacity == The Advantage, the Righteousness of God + the Justice of God == the Integrity of God in the believer.

Advantages == blessing from the Integrity of God

Personal Postulates***:***
There are no advantages to the advantages without the advantage.

If you have the advantage; Absolute Righteousness imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for capacity and maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God for reality; you have the advantages

Without the advantage; Absolute Righteousness imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for capacity and maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God for reality; there are no advantages, no blessings from the Justice of God.

Disadvantages and Maladjustment to the Justice of God cannot cancel the Advantage, imputation of Absolute Righteousness.
Potential + Capacity PROVIDE Advantages

National Postulates
No nation can have the advantages, blessing by association with a large pivot of mature believers, without the advantage, a large pivot of mature believers with total relationship with the Integrity of God.

A nation without the advantage, having a small or shrinking pivot of mature believers, loses its advantages, blessing by association with a large pivot of mature believers.

No nation can recover its advantages, blessing from the Integrity of God by association with a large pivot of mature believers and imputed Absolute Righteousness and capacity from comprehended Bible Doctrine and reality of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, without the advantage, the potential of imputed Absolute Righteousness, capacity from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and reality from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God of an enlarged or large pivot of mature believers.

Loss of both the advantage and the advantages removes that nation from Human History through administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline

Therefore: *Atrophy of the pivot of mature believers results in national disaster****.***
Problem Solving Devices – The mechanics for overcoming all pressure, adversity, disaster and testing in the life of the believer as he advances in the Spiritual Life. There are 10 Problem Solving Devices including; Rebound, Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Faith Rest Drill, Grace Orientation, Bible Doctrine Orientation, Personal Sense of Destiny, Personal Love for God the Father, Impersonal Love for Mankind, Sharing the Happiness of God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.
Predestination – Also called Foreordination or Predetermination and doubles for the divine decree as well as a statement of output from the decree and is only used for the believer NEVER for an unbeliever. It refers to the Plan of God for the believer ONLY inferring that being in the Plan of God

means God is responsible for him in all situations thereby removing any possibility of the fear/panic ploy and is thus an application of the mature believer is super faith rest functions.

Problem Solving Incompetence – Failure to develop and deploy the 10 Problem Solving Devices and then use them to apply Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the circumstances of life.

Providential Preventative Suffering – Is suffering for blessing for the adolescent believer to offset the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Arrogance Skills and Interlocking System of Hatred influence by forcing the consistent application of the basic Problem Solving Devices and to provide the blessing of enhanced momentum for the Acceleration of Spiritual Growth into the Adult Spiritual Life.

Radicalism – Is the total rejection of any and all opposing thoughts concerning conservative values or fundamental Christian principles.

Real Imputation – Is when some aspect or characteristic or attribute is provided to a recipient which deserves to receive it and as a result of that characteristic having a home or target in which to reside. Because man is born with an Old Sin Nature as a result of the genetic distortion caused by Adam's Fall in the garden being passed down in the Human Race by all males during conception, all human beings receive from God the REAL imputation of Adam's Original Sin to the Old Sin Nature at physical birth.

Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God – The Grace process provided by God for the believer to be able to be restored to fellowship with God and regain the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine and function under the Royal Ambassadorship for Christ. (**1John 1:9, 1Cor 11:31**)

Reverse Process Reversionism – The final stage of reversionism in the soul of the believer where he now subject to the ultimate Divine Discipline of life, the Sin Unto Death as a result of being useless to God as a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict appeal trial. It is a saturation of the soul with the Moral Degeneracy of Legalism or with the Immoral Degeneracy of Antinomianism from an interaction with the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Reversionism – The 8 stage process in the soul of the believer where he reverts to a status in his Spiritual Life which is equivalent to his being an Unbeliever as a result of rejection of Bible Doctrine. It is a reversal of priorities, attitudes, affections, accompanied by the destruction of impersonal love, and a change in the manner of operation and personality to what it was prior to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul – Is called the (gr) Kardia or Heart in the scripture and is the residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul of the believer from which this doctrine can be applied to life.

Royal Family of God – Is the title and station given to the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ in this dispensation of the church age which has been inserted into Human History in order to allow Christ to have a royal family for his royal patent of King of Kings and Lord of Lords his titles for his battlefield royalty having achieved a strategic victory in the Angelic Conflict as a result of his Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sin on the cross. This is the result of every believer at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God being placed into union with Christ by means of the ministry of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit. This makes every Church Age Believer ARISTOCRACY.

Royal Ambassador – is the title and function of the Church Age believer encompassing his responsibility to represent The Lord Jesus, The Christ to mankind and involves the function of Divine Good production by the mature believer.

Royal Priest – is the title and function of the Church Age believer encompassing his responsibility to represent himself before God and the means by which he can achieve spiritual growth and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God – In the relationship between God and Man in Human History man must adjust to God and must do so according to the standards of the Righteousness of God under the auspices of the Justice of God. In other words man must adjust to God through his justice in order to have a relationship with God. This can only occur for mankind by Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone at the instant of Salvation.

Scar Tissue of the Soul – This is the distortion of the soul as a result of persistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine which results from Emotional Revolt of the Soul where the emotions no longer respond to the Right Lobe but now control it, Black out of the Soul where all previously metabolized Bible Doctrine is systematically erased and replaced by Human Viewpoint Evil of the plan and policy of Satan. This makes it unlikely that the believer will respond to Bible Doctrine at any time.

Sin unto Death – The death of the believer who has rejected God, Bible Doctrine and the Spiritual Life of the Church Age for function under the plan and policy of Satan, EVIL. This results in his no longer being useful in the Plan of God as a witness for the prosecution in the Appeal of the Angelic Conflict Trial therefore being taken out of this life by God under a system of maximum misery.

Spiritual Adolescence – The status of spiritual growth between spiritual infancy which occurs at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual adulthood which occurs when the believer has accumulated enough Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to have developed Grace Orientation to life and Bible Doctrine orientation to reality.

Spiritual Adulthood – The status of the believer who has accumulated enough Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe to have developed and deployed the Adult Problem Solving Devices of a Personal Sense of Destiny, Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal Love for Mankind onto his Forward Line of Troops of his soul.

Spiritual Infancy – The status of the believer immediately following Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and remaining until there has been sufficient Bible Doctrine intake to provide a basic understanding of the Spiritual Life in the Plan of God.

Spiritual Skills – Include the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, 10 Problem Solving Devices developed and deployed onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul.

Spirituality – The ABSOLUTE status of the believer being under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit or NOT as a result of consistent use of the Rebound procedure after personal carnality to restore this status.

Super Grace – The Status Quo of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where he receives 6 categories of EXTREME or SUPER Grace blessing from God as a result of his execution of the Protocol Plan of God. These blessings include Spiritual, Temporal, Association, Heritage, Historical and Dying blessings.

Surpassing Grace – The Status Quo of the believer in eternity who has demonstrated his successes in execution of the Protocol Plan of God in time by accumulation of a maximum level of

Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and therefore is the recipient of unimaginable blessing and reward for all eternity.

Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God – The process which is supposed to occur in the believer on a daily basis resulting in consistent and persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond.

The Church – The Body of Christ, the sum total of all believers in the Church Age from approximately 30 AD to the removal of all believers at the rapture of the church which is at the beginning of the Tribulational Period of the end of the Age of Israel

Ultra Super Grace – The Status Quo of the believer who is persistent in his progression in the Spiritual Life after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving his Super Grace package of blessings, where he is the recipient of blessing beyond imagination in time despite extreme pressure in life.

Undeserved Suffering for Blessing – As the believer advances from spiritual infancy to Spiritual Maturity by the consistent accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, in order for this doctrine to be of any value to him in application to his life he must be able to access and use it. Therefore as different levels of spiritual advance occur different levels of testing are provided by God to allow the believer to use his accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine in application to the tests. This testing is designed to enhance and accelerate the spiritual advance of the believer and move him ever closer to completion of the Protocol Plan of God. This testing occurs as several categories and at different levels of intensity including:

- **Providential Preventative Suffering**
- **Momentum Testing** (4 Categories) at 2 levels
- **Evidence Testing** (2 Categories)

Virtue – The quality of the individual based on the content of his soul and the decisions and actions he makes in life which includes:

Motivational Virtue	*Functional Virtue*
• Confidence toward God	Courage toward man
• Personal Love for God	Impersonal Love for Mankind
•	Sensitivity toward Others
•	Thoughtfulness toward Others
•	Courtesy toward Others
• Worship toward God	Morality toward Man
• Genuine Humility toward God and Man	Enforced Humility toward Authority

Virtue Love – Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal Love for Mankind

Wrongdoing – Wrongdoing is NOT the same as sin, but is greater than sin. It is rejection of the power of the Spiritual Life given to us by The Lord just before he left this earth. Wrongdoing encompasses such things as the Activism and Crusader functions of whitewashing the devil's world along with greater involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

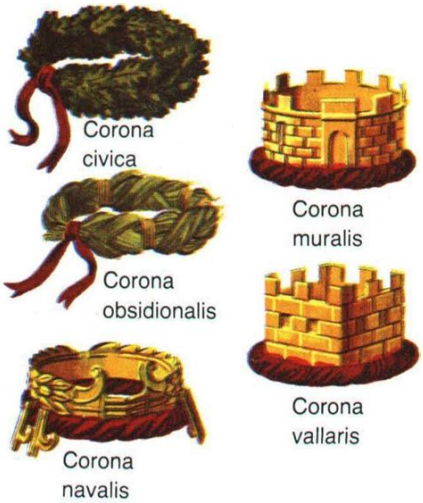
Return to the **Table of Contents**

Medals, Decorations & Awards

It is truly essential to understand that a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must have properly established and entrenched priorities. The most important thing in the life of the believer must be first and foremost The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Along with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit and the information that they have provided for the Human Race to know and understand them and their plan for history, Bible Doctrine. This MUST BE the 1st priority in the life of the Christian as a member of the Royal Family of God. The next most important thing in life must be FREEDOM. Without freedom there can be NO evangelism and therefore NO Christians and therefore NO support for any nation from God and as a result of this self destruction in the Human Race under the rule of Satan. Considering that Freedom is a very high priority in life one must then understand that FREEDOM only comes through military victory and is only sustained and preserved by a strong military establishment. As an essential for the client nation to God the military and the men who serve in it must be recognized for their honorable and valorous service and this is accomplished through varied systems of Awards, Medals and Decorations. The Apostle Paul was held under military arrest several times for prolonged periods and much of what he wrote related back to military service and analogies. When he wrote of the decorations and rewards for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receives his Super Grace blessings from God and holds this status as he passes into eternity he used the military analogy of the HIGHEST decorations available in his time. The Military service men of the major nations in the world all have some system of recognition for honorable and valorous service. The Christian in his life participates in the greatest battle of all of creation, the Angelic Conflict Appeal. As such the Christian who perseveres in this life and comes out successful in his advance to Spiritual Maturity and beyond is promised incredible rewards in heaven over and above the ultimate sanctification of receiving a Resurrection Body. The analogy between these rewards for the positive believer and especially those who reach and surpass initial Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God can be readily seen in the decorations of the military establishments of these major nations in history.

Roman Awards & Decorations

The Romans were the greatest military men in all of Human History and recognized the importance of doing above and beyond the call of duty and they gave great decorations for valor and also gave a huge monetary stipends to go along with them. They started with Arm Bands like our Bronze Star, of bronze, silver and gold. Then they had necklaces' worn around the neck, then campaign medals like we have today wearing a leather cross strap with small bronze disks giving battles, battle stars, campaigns and wars and the emperor at the time and the commanding officer of the time. The highest of all decorations like our Medal of Honor or the British Victoria Cross or the Vermacht Knights Cross of the Iron Cross with crossed swords and Oak leaves and Diamonds the highest possible decoration in all of Human History were worn by roman soldiers who won these on the head and all were made of woven gold. The lowest was the Oak Leaf Wreath, the next was the Laurel Wreath and the final and highest decoration was the Woven Gold Grass Wreath. These were the highest decorations in Rome for some 1000 years of their victorious war history.



It is particularly interesting and appropriate to note how many decorations in all the great nations of history used the CROSS as a designation of honorable and valorous service since the Cross was the greatest victory for the Human Race in all of Human History and believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ represent the victory of the cross in their lifetime as Royal Ambassadors for Christ to mankind.

Return to the **Table of Contents**

Forty Things God Provides Every Believer at the Moment of Salvation

(Thirty-Nine Irrevocable Things and One Revocable Thing)

Compiled by Lewis Sperry Chafer • Revised by R. B. Thieme, Jr.

© 1995 by R. B. Thieme, Jr. All rights reserved

Thirty-Nine Irrevocable Things

1. The believer resides in the eternal plan of God (shares the destiny of Christ). He is
   a. Foreknown: Acts 2:23; Rom. 8:29; 1 Pet. 1:2;
   b. Elected: Rom. 8:33; Col. 3:12; 1 Thess. 1:4; Titus 1:1; 1 Pet. 1:2;
   c. Predestined: Rom. 8:29–30; Eph. 1:5, 11;
   d. Chosen: Matt. 22:14; 1 Pet. 2:4;
   e. Called: 1 Thess. 5:24.
2. The believer is reconciled (removal of the barrier between man and God)[1]
   a. By God: 2 Cor. 5:18–19; Col. 1:20;
   b. To God: Rom. 5:10; 2 Cor. 5:20; Eph. 2:14–17.
3. The believer is redeemed (purchased from the slave market of sin):[2] Rom. 3:24; Col. 1:14; 1 Pet. 1:18.
4. The believer's condemnation (eternal judgment) is removed: John 3:18; 5:24; Rom. 8:1.
5. All sins are judged by the substitutionary spiritual death of Christ on the cross: Rom. 4:25; Eph. 1:7; 1 Pet. 2:24.
6. Every believer receives propitiation for sins (God satisfied with the work of His Son): Rom. 3:25–26; 1 John 2:2; 4:10.
7. The believer is dead to old life (old sin nature), but alive to God (retroactive positional truth). He is
   a. Crucified with Christ: Rom. 6:6; Gal. 2:20;
   b. Dead with Christ: Rom. 6:8; Col. 3:3; 1 Pet. 2:24;
   c. Buried with Christ: Rom. 6:4; Col. 2:12;
   d. Raised with Christ: Rom. 6:4; 7:4; Col. 2:12; 3:1.
8. The believer is free from the Mosaic Law. He is
   a. Dead to the Law: Rom. 7:4;
   b. Delivered: Rom. 6:14; 7:6; 2 Cor. 3:6–11; Gal. 3:25.
9. The believer is regenerated: John 13:10; 1 Cor. 6:11; Titus 3:5. He is
   a. Born again: John 3:7; 1 Pet. 1:23;
   b. A child of God: Rom. 8:16; Gal. 3:26;
   c. A son of God: John 1:12; 2 Cor. 6:18; 1 John 3:2;
   d. A new creation: 2 Cor. 5:17; Gal. 6:15; Eph. 2:10.
10. The believer is adopted by God (placed as adult sons because of positional truth): Rom. 8:15; 8:23 (future); Eph. 1:5.
11. The believer is made acceptable to God: Eph. 1:6; 1 Pet. 2:5. He is
    a. Made righteous (imputation): Rom. 3:22; 1 Cor. 1:30; 2 Cor. 5:21; Phil. 3:9;
    b. Sanctified positionally: 1 Cor. 1:30; 6:11;
    c. Perfected forever: Heb. 10:14;
    d. Qualified for inheritance: Col. 1:12.
12. The believer is justified (declared righteous): Rom. 3:24; 5:1, 9; 8:30; 1 Cor. 6:11; Titus 3:7.
13. The believer receives the unique availability of divine power: 2 Pet. 1:3.
14. The believer is guaranteed a heavenly citizenship based on reconciliation: Luke 10:20; Eph. 2:14–19; Phil. 3:20.
15. The believer is delivered from the kingdom of Satan: Col. 1:13*a*; 2:15.
16. The believer is transferred into the kingdom of God: Col. 1:13*b*.
17. The believer is now on a secure foundation: 1 Cor. 3:11; 10:4; Eph. 2:20.
18. Every believer is a gift from God the Father to Christ: John 10:29; 17:2, 6, 9, 11–12, 24.
19. The believer is positionally delivered from the power of the sin nature: Rom. 8:2; Phil. 3:3; Col. 2:11.
20. Every believer is appointed a priest unto God. We are
    a. A holy priesthood: 1 Pet. 2:5, 9;
    b. A royal priesthood: 1 Pet. 2:9; Rev. 1:6.
21. The believer receives eternal security: John 10:28–29; Rom. 8:32, 38–39; Gal. 3:26; 2 Tim. 2:13.
22. The believer is given access to God: Rom. 5:2; Eph. 2:18; Heb. 4:16; 10:19–20.
23. Every believer is within the "much more" grace care of God: Rom. 5:9–10. We are
    a. Objects of His love: Eph. 2:4; 5:2;
    b. Objects of His grace
       (1) For salvation: Eph. 2:8–9;
       (2) For keeping: Rom. 5:2; 1 Pet. 1:5;
       (3) For service: John 17:18; Eph. 4:7;
       (4) For instruction: Titus 2:12;
    c. Objects of His power: Eph. 1:19; Phil. 2:13;
    d. Objects of His faithfulness: Phil. 1:6; Heb. 13:5*b*;
    e. Objects of His peace: John 14:27;
    f. Objects of His consolation: 2 Thess. 2:16;
    g. Objects of His intercession: Rom. 8:34; Heb. 7:25; 9:24.
24. The believer is beneficiary of an inheritance as heirs of God and joint-heirs with Christ: Rom. 8:17; Eph. 1:14, 18; Col. 3:24; Heb. 9:15; 1 Pet. 1:4.
25. Every believer has a new position in Christ: Eph. 2:6. We are
    a. Partners with Christ in life: Col. 3:4;
    b. Partners with Christ in service: 1 Cor. 1:9
       (1) Workers together with God: 1 Cor. 3:9; 2 Cor. 6:1;
       (2) Servants of the New Covenant: 2 Cor. 3:6;
       (3) Ambassadors: 2 Cor. 5:20;
       (4) Living epistles: 2 Cor. 3:3;
       (5) Servants of God: 2 Cor. 6:4.
26. Believers are recipients of eternal life: John 3:15; 10:28; 20:31; 1 John 5:11–12.
27. The believer is created a new spiritual species: 2 Cor. 5:17.
28. The believer is a light in the Lord (part of the angelic conflict):[3] Eph. 5:8; 1 Thess. 5:4–5.
29. The believer is united with the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. We are
    a. In God: 1 Thess. 1:1; cf., "God in you," Eph. 4:6;
    b. In Christ: John 14:20; cf., "Christ in you," Col. 1:27
       (1) A member in His Body: 1 Cor. 12:13;
       (2) A branch in the Vine: John 15:5;
       (3) A stone in the Building: Eph. 2:21–22; 1 Pet. 2:5;
       (4) A sheep in the Flock: John 10:27–29;
       (5) A portion of His Bride: Eph. 5:25–27; Rev. 19:6–8; 21:9;
       (6) A priest of the kingdom of priests: 1 Pet. 2:9;
    c. In the Holy Spirit: Rom. 8:9; "the Spirit in you."
30. Every believer is the recipient of the ministries of the Holy Spirit. He is
    a. Born of the Spirit: John 3:5–8;
    b. Baptized with the Spirit: Acts 1:5; 1 Cor. 12:13;
    c. Indwelt by the Spirit: John 7:39; Rom. 5:5; 8:9; 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19; Gal. 4:6; 1 John 3:24;
    d. Sealed by the Spirit: 2 Cor. 1:22; Eph. 4:30;
    e. Given spiritual gifts: 1 Cor. 12:11, 27–31; 13:1–2.
31. The believer is glorified: Rom. 8:30.
32. The believer is complete in Christ: Col. 2:10.
33. The believer is possessor of every spiritual blessing granted in eternity past: Eph. 1:3.
34. The believer receives a human spirit (an integral component of Operation Z, along with the Holy Spirit): Rom. 8:16; 1 Cor. 2:12; 2 Cor. 7:13; 1 Thess. 5:23.
35. The believer has all sins and transgressions blotted out:[4] Isa. 43:25; 44:22.
36. The believer is the recipient of efficacious grace: Eph. 1:13.
37. The believer is guaranteed a resurrection body forever: 1 Cor. 15:40–54.
38. The believer is the beneficiary of unlimited atonement: 2 Cor. 5:14–15, 19; 1 Tim. 2:6; 4:10; Titus 2:11; Heb. 2:9; 2 Pet. 2:1; 1 John 2:2.
39. The believer has equal privilege and equal opportunity under election and predestination: Rom. 12:3; Eph. 3:16–19.

One Revocable Thing

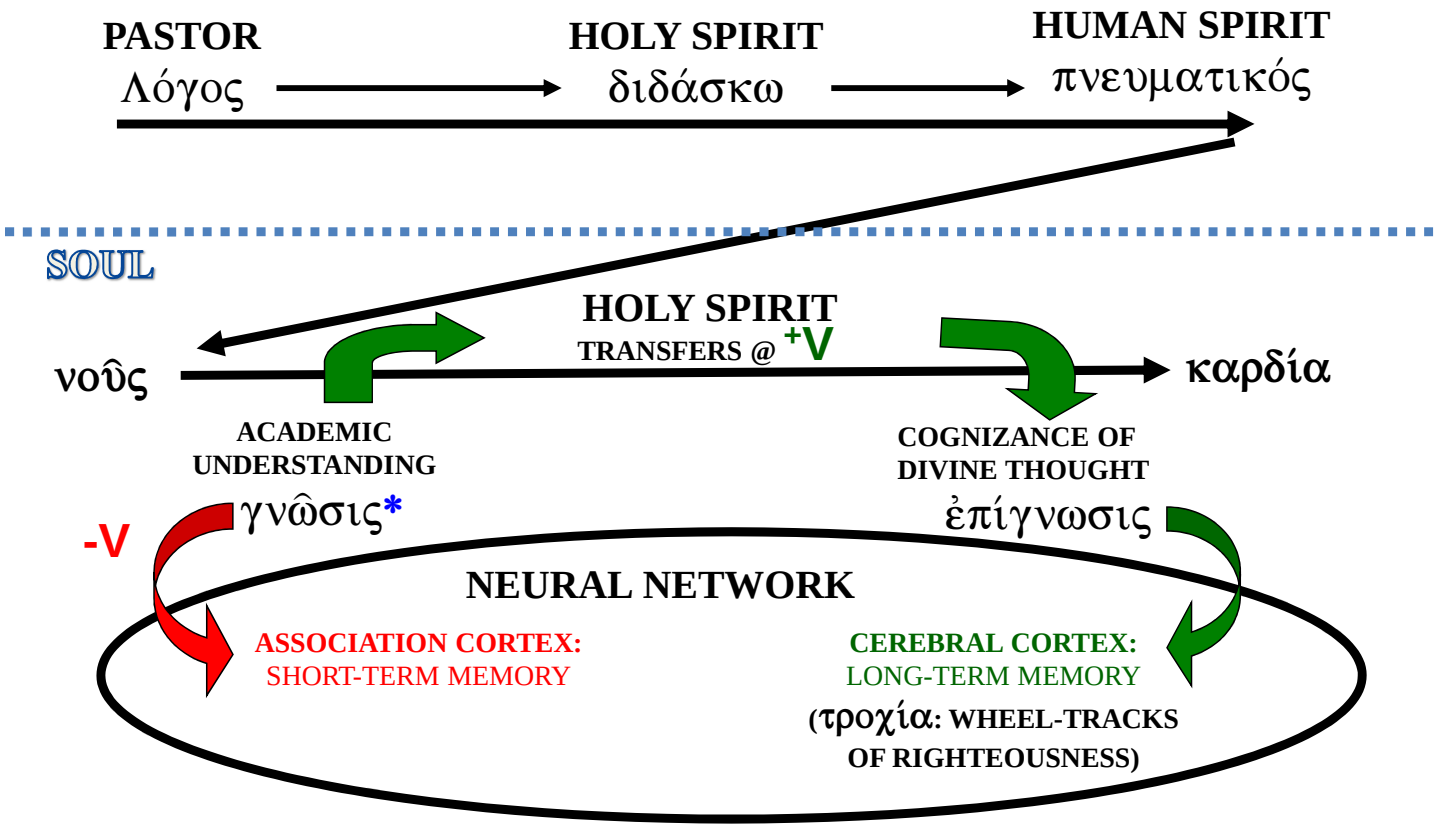
40. The believer is filled with the Holy Spirit at the moment of salvation: Gal. 3:3.
    The filling of the Holy Spirit received at salvation is revoked when the believer sins. The filling of the Holy Spirit is recovered when the believer rebounds.

1. Thieme, *The Barrier* (2003).
2. Thieme, *Slave Market of Sin* (1994).
3. Thieme, *Anti-Semitism* (2003), 11–13, 94–99, 101–02, 110–13.
4. Thieme, *Reversionism* (2000).

Operation Z – The Grace Apparatus for Perception

Grace Apparatus for Perception – Operation Z

1 Corinthians 2:1-16



© 2012 by Joe Griffin Media Ministries.
All rights reserved.

* VOLITION CHALLENGED: NEGATIVE (-) or POSITIVE (+)?

Alphabetical Index

A

Alcohol.....8, 21, 79, 112, 203, 234f., 237, 261, 316
Alertness.....6, 143ff.
Antisemitism.....9, 306f., 324
Apostasy....19, 70, 74, 81, 97, 100, 111, 121, 133f., 203, 214, 230, 277, 279f., 284f., 296, 300, 302ff., 311, 314, 322, 371
Aristocracy.....8, 70, 93, 113, 142f., 254f., 259f., 287, 312, 337, 352, 368, 377
Arrogance.....8f., 14, 18f., 23, 33, 38f., 42f., 48, 52, 63, 70f., 81f., 85ff., 90ff., 96, 98, 103f., 106f., 110, 115, 121, 127, 138ff., 152, 158ff., 163f., 171, 186, 189, 196ff., 200, 215, 217ff., 227, 229, 231, 236, 238ff., 247, 250ff., 262, 264, 266ff., 271, 276, 280f., 294, 296, 298, 300f., 303ff., 339, 352, 363f., 371, 375, 377, 379
Authority.....7ff., 14ff., 21, 23, 31, 41, 49, 53, 58, 71, 74, 77, 84, 87, 90ff., 97, 100, 103, 109f., 112, 116, 120ff., 124, 129, 162, 165ff., 170, 172ff., 178f., 182ff., 194ff., 207ff., 219f., 224f., 230, 232, 234, 241, 244, 248, 251f., 255f., 260f., 270f., 273ff., 278, 281ff., 287, 290ff., 295, 300f., 303, 315, 321ff., 325, 329, 333, 335, 338, 340f., 354, 358, 361, 364f., 369, 372, 379
Authority Orientation. .7, 15, 49, 74, 90f., 174ff., 179, 186, 188, 195ff., 199, 201ff., 213, 234, 252, 261, 295, 341, 369

B

Blackout.....353, 371

C

Capacity. 8, 17, 19, 28ff., 40ff., 48, 58, 72, 78, 84, 86, 91f., 104, 106, 111, 126, 132, 137, 142f., 155, 186, 216, 233, 235, 252, 263, 265ff., 280, 296f., 310f., 322, 342, 347, 353, 357, 374ff.
Catastrophe.....20, 82, 105, 107, 125, 140, 161, 275, 279f., 340, 342, 375
Category I Love.....262, 321, 327, 338, 359, 371
Category II Love.....207, 262, 371
Category III Love.....262, 371
Christian Way of Life. 2f., 11, 13ff., 18f., 29f., 32, 34f., 40, 42ff., 57, 61, 66ff., 70, 72ff., 77, 79, 82ff., 92ff., 96, 101, 106, 109, 113ff., 117, 127, 132ff., 137, 142f., 145ff., 160f., 165, 168, 170ff., 177, 187f., 198, 202, 221f., 226f., 229ff., 233, 235f., 238, 240, 246, 250ff., 258, 260, 264ff., 268, 270f., 280, 287, 302, 308f., 311f., 315, 369
Church. 4f., 13, 16, 18, 22, 47, 49, 51, 54ff., 60f., 65f., 68, 77, 80f., 87, 91, 93, 99f., 108, 112f., 115ff., 119ff., 126, 128, 130ff., 136, 140ff., 146, 152, 154, 161, 166ff., 178, 182, 186f., 193, 195, 198ff., 203f., 206f., 211, 223ff., 232, 236f., 240ff., 249, 253, 256ff., 268, 270, 275ff., 283, 286f., 291, 293ff., 300, 306, 308, 311, 316, 320ff., 327f., 333f., 338, 346, 351f., 359, 361ff., 367ff., 371ff., 377ff.
Church Age. . .4, 13, 47, 51, 54ff., 61, 65f., 77, 81, 93, 108, 113, 116f., 119, 121, 126, 128, 130ff., 136, 142, 146, 152, 154, 170, 172, 182, 204, 223, 237, 242, 249, 253, 270, 276f., 287, 300, 306, 308, 321, 328, 351f., 361ff., 367, 369, 371ff., 377ff.

Client Nation....9, 27, 32, 78, 132, 164ff., 173f., 183ff., 189ff., 195, 207, 214f., 246, 259, 274ff., 284, 294ff., 306f., 361, 371, 373, 380
Common Sense.....3, 20, 49, 75, 77, 92, 107, 117, 138f., 147, 156ff., 162, 165, 224f., 229, 235, 250, 252, 256f., 264, 326
Communism. .88, 120, 138f., 153, 167, 174, 177f., 180, 189ff., 210f., 214f., 221, 225, 255, 280, 286ff., 301, 303, 364
Concentration...6, 33, 62, 66, 71, 73f., 84, 88, 90f., 100, 107, 119, 136f., 146, 153f., 157, 163, 166, 199, 225, 230, 239, 269, 350, 356, 361, 374
Confidence. 60, 76, 79, 118f., 135, 143, 193, 225, 254f., 313, 318ff., 323, 326, 336f., 345, 350f., 356, 366ff., 379
Cosmic Dynasphere I.....318, 371
Cosmic Dynasphere II.....371
Courage....6, 28, 33, 51, 78, 82f., 85f., 88, 102f., 106f., 109, 123, 127, 137, 142ff., 157f., 165, 184, 196ff., 201, 210, 217, 238, 240, 245, 248, 251, 254, 260f., 288, 290, 312, 322f., 345, 357, 363, 367, 369, 372f., 379
Courtesy.....55, 80, 119, 173, 379
Coward.6, 89, 105ff., 123, 137, 144, 146ff., 150, 153, 157, 164f., 182, 192, 217, 260, 312, 327
Cowardice.....6, 105ff., 137, 144, 146ff., 150, 153, 217, 327
Crime. . .7, 101, 103, 112f., 125, 134, 151, 163, 174, 178ff., 191, 194f., 202, 210, 213, 252, 280, 282, 284, 299, 301f., 308, 363f.
Criminal..7, 49, 51, 70, 99, 104, 108, 123, 149, 151, 153, 171, 174, 178ff., 185f., 191, 194, 201f., 204, 206, 210, 222, 263, 281f., 287f., 299, 305, 364
Criminality.....7, 70, 99, 178, 201f.
Crises.....6, 105f., 153ff., 158, 274, 280, 342
Crisis. . . .6, 14, 20, 105ff., 109f., 123, 126, 133, 153ff., 217f., 273, 278, 290, 342, 356, 374
Crisis Personality.....6, 107, 155ff., 165

D

Death.10, 21ff., 28, 32, 37ff., 44ff., 49, 52, 54f., 62, 64, 68ff., 76, 86, 96, 105, 108, 127, 133f., 140, 147, 152, 154f., 165, 167, 177, 179, 184, 192, 194, 198, 205, 208, 221f., 233, 235, 258ff., 273, 275, 287, 289f., 299ff., 303ff., 307, 309ff., 318f., 322, 324, 336f., 342ff., 346, 350ff., 362, 373, 377f.
Deity of Christ.....25
Disaster. 5f., 20, 31, 43, 48f., 53, 69, 82f., 99, 104ff., 125f., 133ff., 145f., 153ff., 160ff., 175, 197, 200, 214, 218f., 228, 251, 256, 259, 273ff., 278ff., 282, 285, 289, 303, 314, 340, 342, 345, 356ff., 362f., 375f.
.....
Survival.....5, 9, 99, 104ff., 136, 144, 160, 209, 289, 306, 374
Discipline. 5, 14f., 20f., 27, 33, 37, 39, 44f., 51ff., 58, 63ff., 70, 74, 79, 86, 88, 90f., 105, 107f., 111, 118f., 122, 126, 130, 135, 147, 152, 164, 166, 170, 173, 176, 182, 184, 186, 189, 191, 195ff., 201ff., 206, 208, 211f., 215, 222, 230, 232f., 235, 241, 245, 248, 251f., 257, 261, 264, 274f., 277, 303f., 306, 324ff., 339ff., 346, 351f., 354ff., 364f., 371ff., 376f.
Dispensation.....15, 27, 46, 108, 121, 130ff., 142, 184, 195, 307, 321f., 328, 371f., 377

Divine Decree.....6, 108f., 126, 129, 277, 360, 369, 372, 374, 376
Divine Dynasphere.....300, 318, 323, 333, 340, 372
Divine Good. 4, 26, 37f., 45, 52, 55, 63f., 117, 227, 247, 250, 281, 299, 302ff., 316, 322f., 345, 369, 372, 378
Divine Institution7, 14, 16, 19, 22f., 30f., 72, 74f., 98, 120, 124, 133, 149, 152, 165f., 172, 176, 180f., 183f., 189ff., 193, 195, 200, 204ff., 215, 217, 224, 271, 274, 276, 282ff., 291f., 294, 296f., 299, 301ff., 328, 364, 371f.
Divine Institutions7, 14, 16, 19, 22, 30f., 72, 74f., 98, 120, 124, 133, 149, 152, 165f., 172, 176, 180f., 183f., 189ff., 193, 195, 200, 204ff., 209ff., 215, 217, 224, 271, 274, 276, 282ff., 291f., 294, 296f., 299, 301ff., 328, 364, 372
Divine Viewpoint.....5, 58, 67, 72f., 104f., 108, 130, 138, 160ff., 171, 235, 260, 265, 300, 302, 320, 323, 354, 372
Drugs.....8, 195, 216, 234, 261f.
Dying...10, 12, 15, 31f., 43, 49, 52f., 57f., 62, 65, 86, 123f., 133, 148, 177, 192, 227, 233, 241, 298, 309ff., 326f., 335, 338, 342f., 347, 350, 356, 366, 378

E

Education.....8, 16, 88, 93, 175, 195, 216ff., 270, 307, 375
Election.....5, 66, 108f., 215, 218, 276ff., 363, 370, 372
Emotion 8, 22, 45, 49, 65, 69, 72, 80, 83, 85, 106, 112, 114f., 123, 125, 128, 145ff., 152f., 181, 191, 200, 202f., 205f., 208, 218, 230, 232ff., 252f., 256, 268, 272, 283, 313, 318, 336, 341, 344f., 347, 352, 354, 359, 365, 371, 375, 378
Emotional Revolt.....8, 22, 69, 106, 200, 233ff., 283, 341, 345, 352, 378
Enforced Humility.....14, 119, 123, 372f., 379
  Authority.....7ff., 49, 84, 90, 100, 120, 165f., 170, 172, 174f., 179, 183ff., 189, 195ff., 210ff., 219, 225, 256, 281f., 290f., 340f., 379
Equality..8, 102, 106, 121, 132, 143, 162, 166, 169, 173, 176f., 191, 200, 206, 219ff., 237, 244, 287, 293f.
Essence of God.....3, 24ff., 28ff., 36f., 40, 108, 272, 300, 371
Essentials.2ff., 13ff., 26f., 33, 65, 68ff., 82ff., 89ff., 102f., 106ff., 110ff., 117ff., 121ff., 128f., 133ff., 138ff., 146ff., 152, 154ff., 161ff., 165, 167, 172, 174f., 177f., 180, 185, 187f., 191, 193ff., 199f., 204, 213, 216ff., 224, 226ff., 234ff., 274, 276, 281, 283, 286f., 293, 295ff., 306, 308f., 312ff., 368, 372, 375
Evangelism..7, 56, 128, 131f., 165ff., 174, 177, 181, 183f., 188f., 206, 211, 275, 279, 282, 286, 374, 380
Evil....7, 9, 22, 26, 28, 30, 37ff., 47, 50ff., 62f., 67ff., 79, 89, 100, 102ff., 109, 121, 130, 133f., 149, 151, 153, 156f., 163, 167, 175, 177, 180ff., 185, 188f., 194, 197, 201ff., 206, 208, 210, 213ff., 220, 224, 235, 238, 241, 245, 249f., 252ff., 261, 263, 275, 279ff., 283f., 286ff., 291ff., 298ff., 315ff., 321f., 324, 326ff., 333ff., 339f., 342, 344, 346, 348, 350, 352ff., 363ff., 367ff., 371ff., 378f.

F

Fear...6f., 49, 63, 69, 73, 105, 137, 148, 153, 164, 178ff., 287, 290, 309f., 314, 319, 330, 334, 336, 339, 342f., 354ff., 359, 364f., 377

Flexibility 2ff., 13ff., 17ff., 31ff., 70ff., 74ff., 84, 86f., 90ff., 94, 98f., 102f., 106ff., 110, 115ff., 121ff., 128, 133ff., 155, 157ff., 161ff., 170ff., 175, 177f., 185, 187f., 192ff., 200, 215ff., 221, 225ff., 234, 236ff., 240ff., 264ff., 272f., 279f., 286f., 297, 309, 313
Frame of Reference.....5, 67, 72, 80f., 98, 100, 203, 205, 227, 354, 375
Freedom....4f., 7f., 21, 24, 31, 49, 51f., 73, 75, 78, 81, 83, 95, 99, 101, 103, 107ff., 112f., 117, 119ff., 124, 129, 131ff., 139, 141, 151, 154, 156, 159, 161, 165ff., 170ff., 197ff., 215f., 220ff., 232f., 239f., 242, 244ff., 248, 250, 256, 263, 267f., 270f., 274f., 280ff., 295, 297, 299, 301, 303, 305, 308, 322, 334, 340, 349, 358f., 361, 364, 372, 374, 380
Friendship.....6, 138f., 199, 286, 297, 365, 371
Functional Virtue.....374, 379

G

Genuine Humility.....12, 14, 350f., 372f., 379
Glorification of God.....5, 27, 51, 97f., 117, 361, 374
Glorify God.....47, 55f., 58f., 61, 93, 105, 118, 127f., 199, 236, 258, 309f.
God the Holy Spirit.....
.....
Baptism.....18, 39, 132, 142, 222, 255, 361, 366, 370f., 377
Filling.....4, 12, 14ff., 22, 29, 35, 39, 44f., 55, 57f., 61, 65ff., 71f., 74, 81, 90f., 95, 108f., 113f., 117, 120f., 125ff., 142f., 175, 177, 202f., 216, 223, 234, 257f., 264, 266ff., 290, 295ff., 299, 318, 320, 332f., 343, 351, 353, 363, 365, 369, 372ff.
Indwelling.....65, 258, 318, 322, 325, 370
Government 9, 19, 51, 66, 104, 106, 108, 120, 130, 132, 148ff., 153ff., 163, 165ff., 174f., 177ff., 182, 184ff., 188ff., 196f., 201f., 204, 206, 209ff., 213f., 218, 220, 222ff., 271, 274ff., 278, 282ff., 297, 301ff., 307, 339, 364, 368, 372
Grace....2ff., 9ff., 15ff., 19, 21f., 26f., 29ff., 34ff., 67ff., 72ff., 81, 90ff., 97, 101, 109f., 113ff., 117, 120, 126ff., 133f., 137, 147, 156f., 159ff., 163, 167, 172ff., 177, 183, 186, 199, 207, 218, 221, 223ff., 227ff., 234, 237, 240f., 244, 247, 250ff., 266, 271, 274ff., 279ff., 290, 293, 298ff., 309ff., 313ff., 319ff., 330ff., 336, 338, 340, 342f., 345ff., 350ff., 361ff., 365f., 368ff., 376ff., 383
Grace Apparatus for Perception.....3, 10, 15ff., 27, 29, 35f., 61, 69, 72ff., 81, 90ff., 117, 120, 137, 156f., 173, 177, 207, 228, 234, 240, 250f., 290, 293, 301, 315, 326, 332, 340, 347, 351f., 355f., 363, 368, 373, 383
Guilt.....8, 66, 69, 106, 115, 152f., 169, 209, 230, 239, 253, 297, 325, 339

H

Hamartiology.....373
Happiness 4, 9, 28, 31, 35, 48, 50ff., 56, 60f., 63, 75, 90, 107, 132, 140f., 151, 155, 161f., 204f., 207, 209, 216, 234f., 266, 272, 283, 304, 309ff., 314, 319ff., 338, 340, 346, 352ff., 356, 358, 367, 376
Hero.....6, 82f., 85, 156ff., 197, 236, 329, 332, 356f., 363
History 6, 9, 15, 19, 24f., 27f., 31, 38f., 46, 49, 53, 61, 68, 74, 77, 83, 88, 106, 108f., 124, 129ff., 134, 136, 138ff., 142, 146f., 149ff., 159, 165f., 175, 179ff., 188, 193, 202, 204, 207ff., 213ff., 224, 231, 242, 256ff., 264, 274ff., 285f., 288ff., 295, 299, 303f., 307, 312, 326f., 360, 369, 371ff., 376ff., 380f.
Holiday.....8, 136, 242

Human Good. 7, 26, 30, 37ff., 45f., 52, 54f., 61, 67, 103f., 109, 134, 180f., 220, 252, 281, 283, 299, 301f., 306, 316, 323, 361, 365, 368, 373
Human Viewpoint.....100, 133, 239, 287, 302, 320, 323, 352, 354, 373, 378
Humanity of Christ.....3, 25f., 45
Humor.....4, 33f., 92, 97, 106, 140, 157f., 197, 226, 228, 238, 240, 252, 266, 342

I

Impersonal Love. 5, 9, 16ff., 75f., 93f., 102f., 113, 115, 117, 129, 134, 136, 143, 145, 147, 159, 162, 170, 173, 178, 185, 187, 216, 226ff., 232, 237, 240f., 243ff., 247, 249, 253f., 256, 261ff., 273, 308, 318, 327, 332, 345, 351, 361, 363, 365, 372, 374, 376ff.
Imputation 3, 19, 21, 23, 25f., 28ff., 33f., 36, 38, 40ff., 47, 75f., 110, 117f., 129, 133, 147, 155, 157, 162, 181, 183, 208, 222, 229f., 250f., 257, 266f., 272, 275, 307f., 310, 328, 360, 362, 366, 374, 376f.
Imputed 5, 24, 27ff., 33, 37, 40ff., 46, 73, 75, 94, 98, 110f., 126, 134, 170, 181, 205, 208, 216, 220, 227, 263f., 268, 272, 294, 307f., 316, 320, 347, 357, 360ff., 365, 369f., 374ff.
IQ 8, 24f., 46, 60, 62, 72, 124, 131, 137, 144, 191, 217f., 250, 256, 258, 312, 321, 324, 333, 339, 349f., 358, 360ff., 371, 373
Islam.....120, 125, 139, 153f., 174, 178f., 189, 192f., 210, 214, 275, 286f., 289, 291, 303

J

Jeshurun.....159, 276, 331, 373f.
Justice of God. 3, 5, 14, 18ff., 23, 25ff., 35ff., 42ff., 46ff., 50ff., 67ff., 72ff., 78f., 81ff., 91ff., 97f., 102, 105, 108ff., 113f., 116ff., 120f., 126f., 129, 131ff., 137, 140f., 154ff., 159ff., 164, 167, 169ff., 176f., 179, 181, 185f., 189, 195, 197ff., 205, 208, 211, 214ff., 220ff., 233f., 237, 241, 244, 246ff., 254, 257ff., 262, 264ff., 275ff., 285, 287, 290, 292, 294, 296, 299ff., 307ff., 311ff., 317, 319f., 322f., 325ff., 338, 340, 342f., 346f., 350ff., 355, 358ff., 365ff.
.....
Maturity Adjustment 3, 5, 18ff., 27, 29ff., 35, 42f., 47f., 50ff., 67ff., 75f., 79, 81ff., 91, 93ff., 97f., 102, 105, 109f., 113f., 116ff., 121, 126, 129, 131ff., 137, 140f., 154ff., 159ff., 164, 169, 171ff., 176f., 185f., 195, 197ff., 205, 215f., 221f., 225ff., 237, 244, 246ff., 254, 257ff., 262, 264, 266, 269, 272, 275ff., 287, 290, 292, 302ff., 309, 311ff., 319f., 322f., 325ff., 338, 340, 346, 350ff., 355, 359, 361f., 365f., 369, 371f., 374ff., 378ff.
Rebound Adjustment.....371, 377
Salvation Adjustment 14, 18, 21, 23, 25, 28ff., 33, 35f., 38f., 42ff., 46f., 54, 57, 60f., 67f., 72ff., 78, 84, 94f., 98, 108, 114, 120f., 127, 133ff., 160, 167, 170, 173, 181, 189, 198, 205, 211, 220, 222ff., 230, 233f., 250, 257f., 267f., 270, 272, 277, 285, 294, 299ff., 307, 311, 319, 340, 343, 347, 350, 360ff., 368ff., 374ff.
Temporal Adjustment.....371, 379
Justification.....3, 5, 27ff., 42, 110, 115, 121, 192, 244, 292, 370

K

Kardia.....374, 377

L

Law of Expediency.....73, 78f., 248, 374
Law of Liberty.....73, 77ff., 102, 177, 228, 244, 248f., 260, 266, 340, 374
Law of Love.....73, 77f., 141, 228, 244, 246, 248f., 266, 374
Law of Supreme Sacrifice.....73, 79, 102, 228, 248, 374
Laws of Divine Establishment. 6f., 9, 14ff., 19, 22f., 30f., 33, 51, 72, 74f., 95, 98, 100ff., 104, 109f., 112f., 120f., 123f., 133, 149, 152, 165ff., 172ff., 186f., 189ff., 193, 195, 197, 200, 204ff., 215, 217, 220, 224, 238, 256, 262ff., 271, 274ff., 278f., 281ff., 296f., 299, 301ff., 354, 358, 364, 372ff.
Leadership. . .6, 20, 32, 49, 52, 97, 106, 123f., 141, 144ff., 149f., 152, 175, 196, 216, 228, 257, 276, 282, 296, 306, 374
Legislation.....9, 176, 180, 210, 225, 282, 291, 301f., 305
Liberal.....9, 19, 22, 87, 104, 139, 183f., 193f., 203, 214, 218f., 262, 276f., 279, 289, 295, 297, 303, 307, 322, 324, 364, 374
Liberalism.....9, 19, 104, 183, 193, 279, 289, 297, 324, 364, 374
Loser Believer.....375
Love 5, 9, 16ff., 21, 24, 29ff., 36f., 39, 44, 48ff., 54, 60, 62, 71, 73ff., 92ff., 102f., 109f., 113, 115, 117, 129, 134, 136, 139ff., 143, 145ff., 150, 159, 162, 170, 172f., 178, 184f., 187, 198, 207f., 216, 226ff., 232, 235, 237, 240f., 243ff., 253f., 256, 260ff., 273, 295f., 300f., 308, 311, 315, 318f., 321f., 324f., 327f., 330ff., 338ff., 344f., 347, 350ff., 355f., 358f., 361ff., 365f., 371ff., 376ff.

M

Mature Believer.....3, 6, 8, 16ff., 31f., 34, 49, 54f., 61ff., 65, 71, 73, 76ff., 88, 92, 94ff., 112, 114, 116ff., 125f., 128f., 141ff., 146ff., 151, 154, 156ff., 167, 171ff., 177, 185, 199f., 202, 214f., 217, 221, 225ff., 235ff., 251, 255, 259ff., 263ff., 268f., 273, 275ff., 294f., 304, 309ff., 325, 333, 338, 342f., 356f., 361, 363, 365ff., 369, 372ff., 376ff.
Metabolized Bible Doctrine. .14ff., 26f., 29ff., 33, 35f., 43, 48, 55, 58, 66, 68f., 72ff., 77, 79, 81ff., 92ff., 98f., 101f., 105ff., 110, 112ff., 116, 118, 122, 124, 127ff., 132f., 137f., 140f., 143, 146ff., 152, 154ff., 159ff., 168, 173, 185, 202f., 215, 222, 227ff., 231, 234ff., 240f., 243, 246ff., 258, 263ff., 275, 280, 292, 295f., 299f., 303, 309ff., 321, 325f., 332f., 338f., 341, 345, 347, 351, 353f., 356f., 359, 364ff., 371f., 375, 377ff.
Military. .7, 22f., 33, 51, 53, 55, 72, 79, 88, 111, 113, 118, 120, 144ff., 149f., 152f., 156f., 164, 176, 178, 180ff., 188ff., 192f., 195, 197, 200f., 208ff., 212f., 215, 219, 225, 242, 274, 276, 279, 281, 287, 292f., 297, 301ff., 305, 331, 342, 344, 348f., 358, 363, 375, 380
Missionaries.....8, 115, 166f., 173, 189, 254ff., 276
Missionary.....8, 66, 115, 131f., 174, 183, 189, 254ff., 279, 327, 368
Morality.....5, 28, 70, 109, 112f., 140, 174, 184f., 187, 210, 213, 215, 227, 247, 252, 256, 270f., 273, 276, 288f., 301, 379

N

Nationalism.....7, 9, 130, 204, 208ff., 284, 287, 291, 301, 364, 371
Negative Volition....3, 14, 22f., 33, 66, 70f., 74, 80ff., 90, 115, 121, 128, 130, 135f., 139, 206, 211, 217, 221f., 225f., 229ff., 250ff., 255, 265, 277, 279f., 287, 299, 303f., 311, 314, 353f., 363, 371, 378
Neurosis.....19, 140, 142

Norms and Standards. .5, 16ff., 67, 72, 74ff., 80ff., 84ff., 89, 92ff., 98ff., 112, 119, 132, 136, 138f., 142, 157ff., 162, 172, 185, 199, 205, 209, 227, 230f., 234ff., 239f., 244f., 247, 249ff., 254, 261, 263ff., 269ff., 321, 328, 354, 367, 375
Nous.....35, 177, 188, 251, 257, 259, 375

O

Operation Z.....10, 15f., 27, 29, 35f., 69, 72ff., 81, 117, 137, 157, 234, 332, 375, 383
Opinion.....5, 8, 11f., 16ff., 70, 76, 80, 82, 87f., 93f., 101f., 112, 119f., 122ff., 133f., 144, 149, 151, 168ff., 178, 201, 208, 223, 225, 228f., 231ff., 236, 238ff., 243, 248, 250ff., 260f., 263f., 266ff., 273, 295, 308, 352, 364f.

P

Pivot.9, 32, 49, 78, 120, 132, 142, 167, 195, 214, 246, 275ff., 294f., 342f., 361, 363, 373, 376
Plan of God..6, 15, 18, 21, 26ff., 30ff., 35, 37ff., 41, 43ff., 51, 54, 57, 66, 68f., 71, 74ff., 82, 95, 98, 106, 108ff., 113, 116ff., 128ff., 132ff., 156, 159, 166, 168f., 172ff., 177, 180, 186, 194, 197, 202, 206ff., 221, 224f., 227, 229f., 233, 244, 246f., 249, 251, 257, 262, 266, 272, 274f., 278f., 281ff., 285, 287, 291ff., 299ff., 305f., 309f., 314, 321, 326, 332, 343, 354, 356, 361, 363f., 366f., 369f., 372, 375f., 378f.
Positive Volition.4, 14, 17ff., 21f., 31f., 36, 40, 45, 47, 49, 54, 57, 60, 64, 68f., 72, 74ff., 80ff., 84, 91f., 97, 102, 105f., 110, 112, 114, 117, 119, 122, 126, 128, 130, 132, 135f., 155, 157, 162, 167, 172f., 177, 184, 195, 198, 203, 206, 211, 221f., 225f., 228, 230, 233f., 240, 246, 249ff., 257, 263, 266, 269, 275ff., 279, 282, 291, 296, 299f., 303, 310f., 314, 328, 340, 343, 345, 347, 352, 361, 369, 375
Prayer. .5f., 66f., 73, 91, 114, 125ff., 178, 188, 273, 303, 325, 334, 342, 346ff., 352, 358, 362f., 370
Prejudice.....4, 17, 92, 99, 109, 227, 232
Priesthood7f., 17, 74ff., 81, 93, 96f., 99ff., 112, 116f., 120ff., 126, 132f., 162, 169f., 180, 187, 198, 200, 204, 226, 228, 232, 238, 243f., 247ff., 260f., 263f., 268, 270f., 283, 308, 336f., 370, 373
Primary Essential.....3, 21, 23, 69, 93, 135, 148, 167, 169, 273
Privacy....7ff., 17f., 31, 47, 49, 74ff., 80ff., 89, 92f., 95ff., 99ff., 110, 112f., 117, 119ff., 129, 132ff., 162, 165ff., 178ff., 183ff., 190f., 194, 198ff., 204ff., 208ff., 220, 224ff., 232f., 236ff., 240ff., 247ff., 256, 260f., 263ff., 267ff., 275, 281ff., 290ff., 295ff., 308, 312, 364
Privilege.....5, 108ff., 126, 132, 166, 277f., 294, 325, 361ff., 370, 372
Problem Solving Devices.....15, 98ff., 118, 216, 256, 332f., 373, 376ff.
Problem Solving incompetence.....375, 377
Production...4, 18, 28f., 37f., 40, 45, 52, 55f., 66ff., 115ff., 127, 159, 194, 196, 220, 227, 232, 246f., 249f., 260, 284, 287, 299ff., 306, 316, 322, 340, 353, 372ff., 378
Property.....7, 31, 49, 75, 95, 99, 105f., 110, 112f., 119, 129, 153, 165ff., 170ff., 174ff., 184ff., 193f., 200ff., 204, 208, 210, 224f., 232, 256, 263, 265, 267, 275, 277, 281ff., 290ff., 295, 302, 304, 308, 310, 364
Protocol.....9, 14, 51, 71, 107, 153, 272ff., 276, 329, 332, 370, 378f.
Providential Preventative Suffering.....42, 48, 125, 157, 216, 377, 379
Pseudo Intellectual.....8, 107f., 137, 217f., 225

Pseudo Intellectualism.....8, 217
Psychosis.....6, 19, 22, 139f., 142, 326

R

Reality.....4ff., 14f., 19f., 22f., 28, 33f., 67, 70, 75f., 84ff., 93, 96, 98, 100, 103, 106f., 114f., 117, 122ff., 129, 136ff., 142f., 151f., 154, 156ff., 162, 165f., 171f., 175, 179, 182, 187f., 198, 200, 205, 208, 212, 216, 218ff., 223ff., 229, 233f., 237, 243, 248, 250, 256, 264, 267, 284, 289, 291, 302, 307, 312ff., 318, 326, 352, 361, 372f., 376, 378
Rebound...3f., 14f., 22, 33, 45f., 66, 68f., 85, 91, 95, 109, 125f., 142, 148, 164, 175, 187, 260, 296f., 299f., 302, 340, 352, 359, 363, 371, 373, 376ff.
Religion 6, 19, 77, 132, 134, 142, 153, 165, 180, 193, 203, 211, 286f., 289, 301f., 306, 320, 374
Responsibility..3, 7f., 16, 18f., 21, 39, 45ff., 49, 58, 80, 82, 86, 89, 93, 97, 101, 113, 115, 120, 122ff., 135, 143, 148, 151, 168f., 171ff., 176, 182ff., 186, 189f., 195f., 198f., 207f., 210, 213, 215, 219f., 228, 236, 246, 249, 253, 255, 263, 265, 268, 274, 278, 281, 283ff., 292ff., 296, 306, 323, 352, 362, 378
Reverse Process.....235, 377
Reversionism....15, 17, 52, 65f., 70, 74, 78, 80, 91, 97, 100, 103, 131, 133, 135, 154, 173, 203, 221f., 229f., 233ff., 241, 248, 250f., 277, 279f., 296, 300ff., 306, 311, 314, 324, 326, 333, 346, 350ff., 356f., 365, 371, 377
Right Lobe...16, 26f., 33, 35f., 43, 58, 66f., 69, 72f., 75, 80, 93, 95, 98ff., 110, 124, 127, 129, 132, 137, 162f., 184, 203, 205, 228, 234f., 246, 264, 273, 312, 314f., 321, 324, 328f., 332, 340f., 344f., 347, 353ff., 359, 363, 372ff., 377f.
Righteousness of God.....3, 9, 21, 27ff., 33, 36ff., 42, 44, 67, 73, 75, 82, 110f., 126, 134, 170, 181, 222, 227, 247, 257, 263f., 267f., 271f., 300f., 307f., 353, 358, 361, 365, 370, 373ff., 378
Royal Ambassador.....4, 8, 18, 53, 67ff., 98, 116f., 198, 246, 249f., 255, 370, 377f., 381
Royal Ambassadorship.....4, 8, 67f., 98, 116f., 198, 249f., 370, 377
Royal Family Honor Code 3f., 6f., 16ff., 21, 30f., 47, 67ff., 71, 73ff., 84ff., 92, 94f., 97ff., 101ff., 107f., 110, 112f., 115ff., 128, 132, 136, 141ff., 146ff., 152, 159, 161f., 164, 169ff., 176, 178, 180ff., 185ff., 195ff., 202ff., 211, 227ff., 237ff., 242, 244ff., 249ff., 253ff., 263ff., 276, 283, 294ff., 308ff., 343, 363ff., 367ff.
Royal Family of God.....7, 16, 18, 28, 39, 46f., 53ff., 58, 65, 67, 75, 78f., 81f., 93, 95, 97, 113, 117f., 120ff., 124ff., 131, 133, 135, 142, 161, 170, 172, 175, 182, 197, 204, 222, 227, 229, 243, 247, 250f., 254f., 264, 267ff., 271, 277f., 287, 294f., 308, 311, 321, 325ff., 331, 333f., 338, 351f., 361ff., 366, 368ff., 377, 380
Royal Priest.....18, 53, 76, 96, 116f., 170, 172, 186, 222, 227, 246f., 308, 378

S

Salvation Potential.....3, 24, 159, 165
Scar Tissue.....15, 22f., 139f., 200, 217, 235, 280, 283, 322, 371, 378
Security.....6, 18, 26, 31f., 47, 49, 66, 82, 90, 110f., 135ff., 142, 149, 159, 163, 190, 205, 220, 278, 283, 290, 323, 341, 345, 347, 353, 359, 371
Self Pity.....8, 34, 85, 111, 215f., 232, 253f., 311, 327
Self Righteous.....3, 27, 32ff., 70, 73, 109, 134, 141, 153, 161, 164, 178, 220, 227, 231f., 238f., 241, 247, 251f., 259, 279, 281, 308, 347

Self Righteousness 3, 27, 32ff., 70, 73, 134, 141, 153, 161, 164, 178, 220, 227, 231f., 239, 247, 252, 281, 347
Sensitivity.....79, 97, 119, 138, 141, 143, 170, 249, 263ff., 379
Sin.....3ff., 10, 12ff., 19ff., 84ff., 90, 92, 94ff., 99f., 102f., 105, 108ff., 115ff., 125ff., 132ff., 141, 143f., 146ff., 152ff., 161ff., 167ff., 175ff., 183f., 186f., 189, 191ff., 215f., 218ff., 225, 227, 229f., 232ff., 238f., 241ff., 257ff., 262ff., 274ff., 278ff., 292ff., 326ff., 331ff., 336ff., 340ff., 346ff., 359ff.
Socialism 7, 9, 106, 120, 138, 167, 174f., 177, 180, 189, 191, 210, 214f., 218ff., 224f., 252, 283, 285ff., 294, 301, 305f., 364
Sovereignty.....3, 24, 27, 36, 166, 309, 374
Spiritual Adolescence.....378
Spiritual Adulthood.....48, 215, 375, 378
Spiritual Gift.....5, 12, 47, 57, 59, 67, 120ff., 131, 198f., 256ff., 298, 358, 363, 370
Spiritual Growth.....5, 12, 16ff., 31f., 41f., 47, 64, 71, 74ff., 78ff., 93, 95, 97ff., 101f., 110ff., 116ff., 122, 126, 133, 137, 154, 166f., 171, 180, 189, 195, 197, 202f., 207f., 211, 215f., 229, 237f., 243f., 246, 248, 252, 271, 273ff., 302, 351, 374, 377f.
Spiritual Infancy.....47, 375, 378f.
Spiritual Life 5, 7, 10ff., 22, 29, 31, 35, 37ff., 41, 43, 47f., 50f., 53ff., 61, 65ff., 70ff., 74, 76, 80, 84, 89, 92ff., 101ff., 109ff., 114, 116ff., 124f., 134, 139, 144, 149f., 154, 157, 159, 161f., 164, 167, 169, 172ff., 176f., 180ff., 187, 195, 197ff., 205, 207, 210f., 219, 222f., 225ff., 233, 235f., 238ff., 244, 246, 248ff., 254f., 261f., 270f., 276f., 287, 298, 301, 303ff., 309, 313, 327, 333f., 343, 361f., 372ff., 376ff., 382
Spiritual Maturity 13, 35, 47ff., 54, 56ff., 62, 65, 76, 80, 95, 110, 162, 205, 207, 227, 236, 245, 274, 278, 285, 322, 364, 367, 370, 372, 374f., 379f.
Spiritual Skills.....316, 333, 378
Spirituality.....33, 66, 70, 97, 131f., 170, 175, 177, 188, 206, 238, 253, 378
Stream of Consciousness...14ff., 22, 26f., 29ff., 33, 35f., 43, 48, 55, 58, 66ff., 71ff., 75, 77, 79ff., 89, 92ff., 98ff., 105ff., 110ff., 116, 118f., 122, 124, 127ff., 132f., 136ff., 140f., 145, 148f., 152, 154, 156ff., 168, 171ff., 177, 184f., 193, 197, 202f., 205, 215, 217, 222, 227ff., 233ff., 246ff., 254ff., 258f., 262ff., 275, 280f., 295f., 299, 303, 309ff., 321, 324, 326f., 329, 332f., 338ff., 344f., 347, 351, 353ff., 359, 363f., 366ff., 372ff., 377ff.
Strength.6, 8, 18f., 22, 50, 83, 86, 99, 102f., 107, 119, 124, 135, 140ff., 145ff., 152, 159, 161, 169, 185, 228, 233f., 236f., 240, 243, 245ff., 251, 254, 264ff., 269f., 293, 313, 332, 340, 345, 356, 358f., 369
Strong Believer.....5, 8, 17, 78, 100, 102, 122, 145, 157f., 226f., 229, 231, 236f., 239ff., 251f., 365ff.
Stupidity.....8, 14, 70, 108, 148, 152, 169, 175, 194, 217, 248, 255, 262f.
Submission.....7, 213, 333

T

Taxation.....8f., 106, 153, 178, 188, 194, 210f., 222, 285f., 290, 292f., 297
Thoughtfulness.....8, 19, 74, 80, 115, 119, 141, 143f., 173, 196, 215f., 263f., 274, 379
Tragic Flaw.....4, 83ff., 91, 135
Tyranny....4, 77f., 82, 132, 165, 167, 174f., 177, 188ff., 193, 201, 207, 210, 213ff., 222f., 225, 233, 245, 270f., 285, 288, 291, 339, 342, 354

U

Unionism.....8, 149, 221

V

Virgin Birth.....23f., 26, 38, 339
Virtue.....14, 35, 58, 102, 107, 115, 147, 150ff., 196, 252f., 264, 323, 331f., 345, 374, 379
Volition3f., 7, 14, 17ff., 21ff., 26f., 31ff., 36f., 39f., 44f., 47ff., 54, 57, 60, 64, 66, 68ff., 74ff., 80ff., 84, 90ff., 96f., 99, 102, 105f., 110, 112, 114f., 117ff., 121ff., 126ff., 135f., 139, 155, 157, 162, 165ff., 172ff., 180f., 184, 186ff., 191, 194f., 198, 203ff., 210f., 217, 221ff., 225f., 228ff., 238, 240, 246, 249ff., 255ff., 260, 262f., 265f., 269, 274ff., 279f., 282ff., 287, 290ff., 295f., 299f., 303f., 308, 310f., 313f., 328, 334, 340, 343, 345, 347, 350, 352ff., 361, 363, 369, 371f., 375, 378

W

Weak Believer.....8, 19, 78f., 101f., 118, 122, 226ff., 236ff., 265, 270, 365ff., 369, 374
Weakness 37, 76, 79, 83f., 103, 107, 118f., 135, 140ff., 148, 150, 198, 200, 210, 228, 233, 237f., 242f., 245f., 250, 252ff., 264f., 299, 301, 305, 365, 367
Will of God.....5, 31, 110, 114ff., 126, 253, 260, 300, 318, 321, 337
Word of God...11, 16, 25, 27, 49, 53, 60, 81f., 90, 169, 201, 208, 213, 215, 232, 243, 256, 295, 320, 322, 328, 346, 371
Works.....11, 34, 36f., 67, 86, 133f., 140, 165, 290, 318, 328, 332, 357
Worship toward God.....379
Wrongdoing.....269, 317, 379